

Nomvelo

PROLOGUE

The air was suffocating even though everyone in the room had the same problem as me. I felt like my clothes didn't hide my nakedness enough, a part of my brain convinced me that they could see my shame underneath what I was wearing. When my turn finally came, all eyes were on me Hell dare! I don't even know why they hold these meetings I find them useless they help no one.

I didn't want to stand up but I was forced too after all it's tradition, when the next person is done talking the next person has to stand up and say something too. The weakness in my soul dragged down my physical being from standing up but I had too, I had to find the strength to face all these people and share my shame. At least they don't know me or else this could've been more difficult. It was very quiet

only their eyes raised a lot of questions without their mouths even uttering a word, I also felt like I was being judged before I even got a chance to tell my story..

Me: My name is.. My name is Nomvelo

A few minutes passed and they said nothing.

I would've been more comfortable with a bit of encouragement something like "Hello Mvelo" isn't that what they supposed to say? Or the movies exaggerated as always?

Me: I am..

I looked at my hands trembling, this was hard for me..

Senzeni: Take your time Sisi

She is the one who runs these meetings. From her Facebook page her followers seemed to be happy with her, she was like Moses leading them to the promised land or Mother Theresa

giving them inner peace. I took a deep breath and my eyes wondered around, I saw him standing at the door. He had his arms folded and was leaning against the doorframe looking at me. How did he know I was here? Why is he here? Is he here to make me feel more ashamed? Is he here to judge me? I am already down I don't need him putting me more and more down

Senzeni: Take another deep breath and relax we are here for you, we're not going anywhere

She could've made a good psychologist..

I did as I was told, I took another deep breath but it didn't make the situation any better.

Instead, it made me more paranoid..

Me: My name is.. I am.. I.. Am Nomv..

Didn't I say that already? I don't think I wanna be here anymore if I say another word I'm going to drop dead and die right here in front of everyone.

It's going to be the end of me.. A lot was going through my mind but the best thing to do right now was to walk out, walk away from this suffocating situation and save myself the embarrassment..

I didn't even apologize nor looked at anyone I walked out of there faster than I could let my breath out. Finally! A breath of fresh air, I could feel the breeze against my skin that's all that I needed a breath of fresh air..

Him: Nomvelo!

I stopped, his voice carried soo much authority. I was struggling to breath, his presence has always been unsettling. I turned around and looked at him, he made his way to me. Stop right there! Don't get too close, it's almost as if like he heard me. He stopped a bit far from me with his hands buried deep inside his pockets a habit of his, He looked different without his clerical collar. I had a lot buried inside, there's a

lot I wanna say but be steady Velo after all he is the sanctified one..

He didn't say anything his look did more of the talking than his lips..

Me: It's very hard.. It has been hard

He was torturing me with his silence, at least say something dammit! Tell me that my pain is an excuse for my unholy deeds. He is probably waiting to tell me that I'm going to hell ain't that what they tell people at church? Ain't that what they preach? Ain't that what they tell sinners and the broken, instead of comforting them? They tell them that the lake of fire is awaiting them were they going to spend all eternity..

Me: I know that I'm going to hell

I shrugged my shoulders in defeat..

Me: I know that I'm not worthy to be in your presence right now

He might have a lot to say but the human in him probably doesn't allow him too, so he does have a human heart after all?

Me: You know what? Just stay away from me

I turned and walked away while unzipping my bag, I buried my hand deep inside trying to find my car keys in that pile of unnecessary things.

Him: I'm human too

Did he have to speak? Couldn't he keep quiet and let me leave in peace? I didn't wanna feel the ground trembling under my feet at the sound of his voice..

Him: You not the only one who lost him, I lost him too. Have you thought about how I feel?

I wanted to trust his statement but it was difficult, I mean he never shed a tear nor showed any emotion all he did was to pray and read his bible. My eyes started burning, my lower lip trembled and my vision became blurry..

Me: Then tell him..

I cleared my throat so that he could hear me loud and clear..

Me: You tell your God to bring him back

Him: Velo..

Me: Until then.. Stay away from me! You could heal anyone but you failed to heal him!.. Stay away from me, before I take you to hell with me!

I wiped my tears as I walked away from him.

..

MY NAME IS NOMVELO AND THIS IS OUR STORY

01

NOMVELO

A FEW YEARS EARLIER

Nomsa: How about this one?

I looked at the pair of skinny jeans that she was

holding and they were too basic for me, totally not my style. Not something I would wear even on a normal boring day at home..

Me: No

She went for another one..

Nomsa: Well.. What about this one?

I rolled my eyes because she was starting to irritate me now, I don't even know why she was here.

Nomsa: They nice clothes just a bit pricy

Me: It's not like you the one paying for the clothes that I'm going to get so I don't know why you complaining

She let go of the jeans..

Nomsa: Yazi Velo I'm really trying here, this was supposed to be our quality time spent together

Me: It would be a quality time if you were actually my Mother! You nothing to me other

than my Uncles Wife!

There was a long pause between the both of us after my statement..

Nomsa: I think I should go and wait in the car,
You will come when you done..

Me: Finally she gives me a breather!!!!

(Silence)

Nomsa: You know Velo one da...

Me: I thought that you were leaving

A state of disappointment overwhelmed her,
she walked away leaving me to continue with
my shopping peacefully..

Reading that portion of my story might already
give you a slight picture of the person that I am,
You would be exactly that person too if you
were in my shoes. Being treated as if like the
world revolves around you, you tend to have
less regard of the people around you those who

are below your standards. Let me tell you a bit about myself and my family..

I don't really have a clear memory of my parents, I only know what my Maternal Uncle and Grandmother told me. I was told that I came from a very warm home and I was born to loving Parents, until an unfortunate event fell on us when I was just 4 years old. My Parents weren't rich but they were content with what they had, Mom was a manager at Ackermans and Dad was a groundsman working at our local hospital. They occupied a 4 room house that my Father inherited from his Parents as the only child when they died, My Mother became the woman of the house after my father had paid Lobola for her. Life wasn't perfect but it was beautiful so I heard, until my Father started gambling for whatever reason. The little that he won encouraged him to go back more and more until he became addicted..

His whole pay would go to gambling and at a certain point he lost everything there, that he started selling our furniture and went as far as abusing my Mother financially as to get dime to feed off his addiction. My Mother stayed for a while hoping that he would change but he just sank deeper and deeper until he became very stressed that he became an alcoholic, then that's when everything went left. When my Mother threatened to leave because she had.. had enough my Father did the unthinkable. That night when we were supposed to leave he butchered her to death with an Axe and then fled the scene, leaving her there on the floor lying in her pool of blood. My Uncle told me that no one suspected any foul behavior seeing that we were an almost perfect family until days passed and neighbours didn't see any activity from our house then they decided to investigate what was happening. When they came to check they found me sitting next to my Mother's

lifeless body, they said I was severely traumatized that I needed psychiatric intervention. The state that my Mom was in cannot even be put to words..

After a few months of what happened my uncle adopted me since he couldn't have children of his own, he often said that he had problems with his reproductive system and only leaves the matter there without explaining further on what caused it. My Grandmother would often say that I became his lucky charm because after he had adopted me success remembered him. Today he owns more than 30 taxis, he has two butcheries, shares at some company and still venturing in expanding his businesses. He is a very successful individual. I thought that as time went on he would adopt but he didn't, he once hinted that he would fail to love a child that holds no relation to him whatsoever therefore I remain the only child. My Uncle was

married before but divorced when his first wife and I weren't seeing eye to eye, then when I was 16 he married again, he married a woman named Nomsa. They don't have kids of their own but Nomsa has a Son and a Daughter from her previous relationship, they staying with her Mother as my Uncle wants nothing to do with them since they not his kids..

–

SBONISO

My phone rang and it was my Mom..

Me: Hello?

Her: Niso

Me: Ya?

Her: Sowukuphi manje? (Where are you now)

Me: I am waiting at the gate, Only 5min left until they let us in. Wena ukuphi? (Where are you)

Her: Eish.. I still have to attend a meeting yama

home cell, church came out early mara nje yile meeting ezongibambezela (the meeting is going to delay me)

Me: That's bad

Her: If I don't make it.. Send my love to Ma

Me: I will

Her: Bye

Me: Bye

My name is Sboniso Khuzwayo, I am 24 years old. I currently live with my Mother and my Grandmother. I have an older Brother Snazo who is never home, he chose the easy way out of life that always lands him into trouble making him not keen on staying in one place for a long time. We not a very rich family my Mother was a live in maid but she was forced to quit her job when my Grandmother's mental illness started, since there was no one else to care for her. We have no other income other than my

Grandmother's monthly pension money, we surviving on that since I'm not working it covers our grocery most and electricity. I'm currently doing my last year in the education field, I'm completing my Diploma in Grade R teaching, at Lyceum College. I am using Nsfas and I travel everyday by train. I sell weed, cigarettes and do other form of things to get money for transportation and other necessities. Doing teaching was not my highest calling but then again I needed a career field that can provide me with a Job after graduation, I can't afford to stay at home with a qualification especially considering the state that we in. Unemployment is not really an option. My Brother Snazo used to help around alot but we haven't seen nor heard from him for almost 5 years now. At home they don't know that I sell weed, I come from a serious religious background my Mom and Grandmother they live for the Lord and nothing more hearing that I sell weed would be

an abomination..

They finally opened the gate and let us in I made my way to the psychiatric ward. My Grandmother claims to see things, things beyond human understanding and things that aren't physical. The last "vision" that she had ended up in a seizure and that's how she was admitted. She could've stayed in a normal ward but things that she talks about are the reason why the Hospital has found her mental unstable with psychotic episodes, totally unnecessary. I know my Grandmother and though she loses touch with reality more often than a normal person would, she is not a mental case..

I looked for her everywhere until they told me that she's outside, basking at the sun with a friend. Indeed I found her sitting outside of the ward with a friend, but they were kept under strict supervision..

Me: Ma..

We call her "Ma" because she raised me and Snazo while my Mother was working a bit far from home, when she was still a live in Maid..

Her: Niso my boy

I greeted the friend too. I brought her nothing but fruits and a juice, business hasn't been booming lately that's all I could afford for now. She looked at her friend.

Her: Umzukulu wam' (This is my Grandson)

Friend: Kunjani mzukulu? (how are you Grandson)

Me: Ngiyaphila (I am well)

The friend got up..

Her: Let me go inside.. Mhlambe nami I might have a visitor

She walked inside and left us there..

Her: Kunjani? (How are you)

Me: I should be asking you that

Her: By the grace of God I am well.. I am surviving

I looked down. I am not religious, especially after I've seen how religion has enslaved my family turning my Grandmother insane..

Her: Uphi uGugu? (Where is Gugu)

Me: She is still at Church, she mentioned that they delayed them because of a home cell meeting

Her: I understand.. She will Come Tomorrow

Me: I brought you these

I handed them to her..

Her: Thank you.. God bless you

She took them..

(Silence)

Her: Snazo hasn't made contact?

Me: It's been almost 5 years now Ma, Snazo will not make contact

Her: Ungabi njalo (don't be like that)

Me: What you expect me to say?

I still don't understand her undying love for my Brother, she has always prayed for him, fasted and what not but Snazo kept on getting worse and worse.

Her: You know what I have? I have faith and faith is all I need to believe that Snazo will change his ways one day.. The God I serve has never disappointed me, I serve the same God who was with Joseph throughout even after his Brothers had sold him. The same God who made him Governor after he had been falsely accused of..

Me: Ma please.. These things you talk about are the same things that ended you up here if you keep this up you never coming home!!

She smiled and glanced down at the fruits..

Her: How is the pain on your chest?

Me: How did you know?

Her: I can see the sword of Anger plunged in your chest, you bleeding internally that's why at night you always woken up by the same pain in your chest

I looked at her..

Me: Gugu told you about that right?

Her: No one told me Niso I can see..

Me: Maybe I should go

Her: You have always been stubborn I guess you take that from your Mother

My Mother has never been open about my Father, when I ask her she loses it! Judging from how Snazo and I look "Mixed race" there's a deeper truth that my Mother and my Grandmother aren't telling us..

I stood up..

Me: Bye Ma

Her: Go well Son, may you always be under
God's grace and protection

I shook my head and walked out..

.

To be continued

02

NOMVELO

Fashion has always been a diverse and popular style. It trends in the lines of clothing, footwear, lifestyle, accessories, makeup, and hairstyles just to name a few. I have always taken an interest in the design part of it, clothes that I wear most of them I have designed myself and my main goal is to be a very well recognized fashion designer for high profile and rich individuals globally. I wish not to be based

overseas I wanna attain my success solely in Africa, I think the states already have successful Fashion designers already. The likes of Michael Kors, Hubert de Givenchy, Alexander McQueen, Ralph Lauren and a whole lot more. I am currently doing my first year in Fashion design at Oakfields College, I am studying at the Campus in Pretoria since we now reside at Pretoria west. We used to live at Johannesburg but moved for safety reasons, there was once a taxi gun violence and my Uncle being the most dominating taxi owner our lives were in danger, so we had to move. Reason why I was delayed, I was supposed to have started tertiary when I was 19 years old now I'm 21..

I chose Oakfields college because at the end of each year as a fashion student, you will showcase your garments in a fashion show held in the presence of industry professionals and peers. You will design and make various

garments including skirts, dresses, shirts, pants, evening wear and wedding dresses. Provided if your final results and sketches are impressive. My Uncle has little hope on my choice of career, to him I should've been a Dr, Nurse, you know those professions. I want to prove to him that I am actually doing something that has hope and success. I want to show him that his money won't go in vain. The course is only for two years and I'm comfortable with that, as soon as I get my certificate I wanna work at a boutique gain more experience and exposure before starting my own company..

This morning I was late, I was 30min late for my morning class. I will have to skip it, because by the time I get there they will be out. I threw my bag on the chair, Nomsa was standing at the stove cooking oats. She turned and looked at Me..

Her: Good morning

Me: Morning

Her: Kunjani? (how are you)

Me: I'm well but very late

Her: Ya you very late by this time you already
ou..

Me: Tell me something I don't know Nomsa

Her: Velo you 21 years old, when do you think
you will ever let go of this disrespect that you
have for your elders?

I rolled my eyes as the kitchen door opened, my
Uncle and his lap dog Danger walked in. Danger
has been my Uncle's right hand man for as long
as I can remember, he is not a man of many
words too..

Uncle: Morning.. Morning

They call my Uncle J.J, his full name is
Jameson..

Nomsa: Morning

Me: Morning I have to be on my way.. I'm late
I took my bag..

I walked to the door kissing my Uncle on the
cheek before walking out..

Him: Enjoy your day Dodo..

Me: You too

I made my way out to my car, I drive a Chevrolet
spark. My uncle bought me the car last year..

–

SNAZO

It was refreshing to breath fresh air, to have the
sun fully shine right on my face. Hear the sound
of cars though they were a bit far away, hearing
the gates close behind me knowing that they
not closing me inside. I looked up and then
closed my eyes trying to feel the beauty of my
freedom..

"Angibe yi man of the match and hold the bigger

cheque, phand' ivika S'krape sil'fase Z'hlala zisha Entlek"

I looked at him, he was leaning against the Citi golf, playing the song a bit loud. I made my way to him and we exchanged greetings through our Gangster handshake..

Him: Bebathini Nja yam'? Bebacabanga ukuthi angeke uphume, ubalayile mza wam' (What were they saying? They thought you wouldn't get out)

Me: "Bebang'robha mangithi ng'checka iScore line (they framed me) Bang'sabotager batheng'ureferee but it's alright (they sabotaged my case by buying a judge)"

He joined in..

Him: Kanti abazi ukuthi sinama lines (they didn't know we had alliances) ak'phakam'iflag ba offside (let's raise the flag they now offside)

We started dancing...

Him:" Khululeka iT.S ishay' enye iSubstitute, ifake lentwana edlala ngama ane attitude"

Me: "Idl' ingoma nge sliding tackle bese khala abo- ahhchuu, Baphuma nge stretch egame-ini masekukhala ibhathu"

We laughed and did the handshake again then we got in the car. A few years ago we were dealing with gold, we had someone who held a high position at the mine who helped us to get access to the gold. Wasn't easy since security was tight but we always made a way until the bastard was caught and he framed me, I was meant to do more than 5 years but somehow I got 5 years. Serving my sentence was the hardest ontop of that I couldn't live with the fact that I had disappointed my family..

Me: umtholile? (did you find him)

He shook his head..

Shine has always been my boy, he has been

true to me in every possible way since from day one..

Him: Sizoythola lebhari ungapheli umoya bozza
(we will get that fool, don't give up now)

No one chooses to wake up and be a thug, being a person who never completed high school and coming from a financial disadvantaged background I had to do what was necessary to provide for my family. Though my Grandmother never accepted my money saying it's not clean but my Mother and My Brother were forced too..

Me: Injani iNtwana yam'? (how is my Brother)

Shine: Le yakini uyayazi Joe, uncwadile (you know your Brother he is very smart)

Me: So he made different choices than I did?

Shine: Uyenza lezinto zakhona zama diploma
(he is doing a diploma)

Me: That's my boy

He cleared his throat..

Him: Mara.. (but)

Me: Ismoko? (what's the problem)

Him: uphusha iSmokolo (he is selling weed)

I looked at him..

Me: Awuyikhiphele esidini (pull over)

Him: Sure

He pulled over..

I got out and made my way to his side, I opened the door and pulled him out. I punched him twice and then he pushed me.. He spat blood on the ground..

Him: and then nou?

Me: Intwana yam'ize iphushe iSmokolo wena bowukuphi? (where were you that my Brother resulted into selling weed)

I kicked him on his crotch..

Him: Ahhhhhhhhhh (Screaming)

I spat on the ground and put my hoody hat over my cap..

Me: Nx!! Ngizoy'reva! (I'll drive)

I pushed him and then got in the driver's seat..

—

SBONISO

Me: Ta (thanks)

There's a few students and other guys who buy my weed early in the morning at the train station. The train is usually here at 06:45, Today it delayed it was 07:00am already. I am from a very popular township called Tsakane, I travel everyday to school by train. My college is at Pretoria (Lecyum college). I usually take the train in the morning then I come back with a taxi..

I have already made R150 this morning, at least I'll be able to get to school and come back, I'll even have change to buy myself lunch. The train finally arrived and we made our way in, I had My Nikey back pack, it was fake if you wondering. As we took off the cops invaded the train my heart stopped, I have a lot of weed in my back pack that can get me into serious trouble, I kept my composure and one of them stood right in front of me. I looked up at him..

Him: Uya emsebenzini? (are you going to work)

I shook my head no..

Me: I'm going to school

He looked at me for a while and then walked away..

I was able to breath after that, that was very close..

.

To be continued

RIP LINDA "PRO KID" MKHIZE

03

NOMVELO

I think the word "Late" should be my middle name, I had missed my first class and now I was 10min late for my second one. I didn't expect to come across traffic, it really ate out the little time I had. I am not a morning Person and I get worse when I had drank the night before, last night I had a night out with my girls had a few cocktails and came back home pretty much late. The things is I don't get to see my high school girls that much since I moved from Johannesburg so whenever we plan to meet up I have to tag along because only heaven knows when we gonna see each other again. I walked in and everyone was walking around, it was more like an ant mode going on. I don't blame

them seeing that it's going to be the biggest week for us, we have a huge task awaiting us. This is the turning point of our course, this is what we came here for. 3 months of theory and now it's just sketches and design, sketches and design..

Ms Wright: Well.. Well.. Look what the cat dragged in?

She made her way to me, in those denim shorts and knee high heel boots. She folded her arms and looked at me..

Me: I'm sorry Ms Wright

Her: You not holding me back I'm unaffected, you holding you back and your team back!

I looked around again..

Her: They on station 8

I made my way to them..

Me: Guys I'm really sorry

Tori and Amandla have been my clique since from day one, they currently the only friends I have around here and I mean that not only at school but in general. Tori is our white gay friend, he is very jolly, fun, free spirited but he can sting if you rub him off the wrong way.

Power: Your apology won't help us much

Amandla's nickname is "Power" don't know how it came about but I like it..

Tori: With these bum ass colours I might as well clean toilets at a fast food restaurant for a living

Me: What do we have?

Power: Look for yourself

Me: Brown.. Black..Turquoise Blue

Ms W: listen up Designers!! You now have your material start sketching, start sharing ideas.

Remember you creating an outfit for summer, make all those colours pop! Quite easy right?

Ms Wright is British, she was married to a very rich South African guy but they divorced last year and she pocketed a lot from the divorce because she has a clothing store..

Power: This does not spell out "Summer"

Tori: Biatch we might as well design a cute outfit for a funeral

Me: Biatches come on! We can do this hey! We can make this work

Tori: Black in summer is mad hot, we not planing a heat stroke death now are we?

Power: Next time I am going with a different crew yall are tripping!

Tori: She is tripping!! Don't put me in the same category with failure and being late

I know that Tori and Power are made at me but we will have to make this work, though we were the last to get the material because I was late

but we will have to make this work..

–

SNAZO

After dropping off Shine at his crib I drove to my place, he doesn't live far from me. He lives 4 streets away from mine. I parked the car next to my house and remained inside for a while, I am not a Person who takes in too much when it comes to emotions but here I was finding myself very nervous. I have disappointed my Family more than once, the tears my Mother cried the endless prayers that my Grandmother said for me and at the end I surprised them with more and more disappointments. I let out a sigh and then got out of the car, not much has changed. Everything is still as how I remember it except for a few houses being renovated. I made my way in and went to the back, my outside room was locked. I saw a bit of dust at the doorstep. I went to the kitchen door and

took a deep breath as my hand held the door handle, fear kicked in..

I turned the door handle and opened the door, I was welcomed by someone humming. It was Gugu..

I closed the door and stood there..

Her: You home early today Niso

I didn't say anything..

She turned around with a mug in her hand and it slipped as soon as she saw me. We both stood there looking at each other not saying anything, again what do you say to someone that you haven't seen for 5 years?

Her: Sn.. Snazo?

Me: Yeah it's Me

A few seconds passed without anyone saying a word..

Her: Wha.. Whe.. I thought that..

Me: I'm.. I'm good ng'grand

Her: ubukuphi sonke les'khathi? (Where were you)

Me: I was.. Beng'se Danyanya (I was in jail)

Her: Snazo why you never called?

Me: I didn't want to worry you guys

Her: You didn't want to worry us? So disappearing for 5 years wasn't worrisome? The sleepless nights we had? Not knowing ukuthi kwenzakalani ngawe

Me: Hade ke Gugu (Sorry)

(Silence)

Her: Unjani kodwa? (How are you though) we hear a lot of horror stories about jail

Me: Ngi sharp, I made it out in once piece

Her: Uzohamba futhi? (Are you going to leave again)

Me: No I'm not going anywhere this time.. I promise

Her: I was making tea and bread.. Would you like some?

Me: Ya but first I wanna see my room

Her: I'll get the key

She made her way to the bedroom..

Her: Welcome home Snazo

–

SBONISO

I stood at the door and looked at her, she seemed very occupied today. She was fully concentrating on that paper in front of her, she had completely shut out the world. I walked in and closed the door, that's when she looked up and saw me. I made my way to her desk..

Me: Eyy

Her: Hey

I went all around to her and placed my hands on her shoulders, I leaned over and kissed her on her neck..

Me: How are you?

Her: I'm okay

I kissed her again and sucked her a bit this time..

Me: You just okay?

She nodded..

My other hand sank lower to her cleavage, I squeezed her right breast while still sucking her on her neck..

Me: Wanna take a break?

Her: No I have to finish up here

Me: You have never said No to me?

She kept quiet. I stood up straight and turned

the chair so that she could face me..

Me: What's wrong?

She kept quiet but my stare pierced through her skin..

Her: You were supposed to come to my place this weekend and you didn't, you didn't even call I sighed..

Me: About that I was held up with something

Her: Or held up by someone?

Connie is a lecturer for first year students, she was my lecturer too when I was doing my first year. She is married to a soldier who is hardly around and out of loneliness our relationship started. At first it was just a harmless student and lecturer relationship, she would hint on a daily basis that I'm very handsome and flirt with me until we gave it a try. It was supposed to be a no strings attached type of thing but lately

she has been catching feelings. I can say it's a beneficial relationship, She helps me out financially and I satisfy her needs and take her loneliness away..

Her: I'm sorry I know that I'm not supposed to be clingy

Me: It's cool.. I promised that I was going to come and I stood you up, I'm sorry

I leaned over and kissed her all over her face..

Me: I'm terribly sorry

Her: Stop it (Laughing)

Me: I mean it

She pushed me back a bit..

Her: Well then my husband will be here in no time to bring me lunch so..

Me: I understand

Her: He came back this morning

Me: Dammit! Couldn't he stay in whatever shit hell bush they sent him too?

She laughed..

Her: Don't be like that

Me: Stand up

Her: Why?

Me: Just stand up

She stood up and I pushed the chair away.

I picked her up and placed her on the table..

Her: Babe we can't

I parted her legs and got in between them, I kissed her..

Me: I'm going to be quick

I kissed her again and took off her underwear, I put it in my pocket..

Me: Was he there when you were getting dressed this morning?

Her: He was

I unbuttoned her blouse and unclipped her bra. I kissed her one last time..

Me: Let me see how you going to explain to him were your Bra and your underwear is

Her: What?

I stepped back, as she put on her blouse.

Her: Niso no please..

I made my way out of her office..

Her: Niso!!.. Seriously?

I put the bra in my pocket, the one from my jacket.

.

To be continued

04

SNAZO

I was now helping Gugu with the dishes, she was washing I was wiping and putting them in their respective places. It was good to be back home and I'm glad that my Mother welcomed me back with open arms not everyone can be afforded the same courtesy after they had been jailed for 5 years, some families find such as shaming them in the community. My family has never been one to care much about what "society" thinks or say about us, People will always find something to talk about. It's always like that..

Gugu: Your Brother is very stubborn akafuni uk'tshelwa nex (he doesn't wanna be told anything)

Me: Seng'khona manje all that is going to change

Gugu: cut him some slack though he is really making us proud

Me: Heard he's in college

Gugu: Yes it's his last year.. He is doing teaching

Me: I thought he wanted to do engineering

Gugu: He wanted to do something that would get him a job

I nodded..

Gugu: Are you going with me to see Ma?

Me: I would rather not

Gugu: You are all that she talks about Snazo

Me: Gugu I don't wanna give her a heart attack, when is she coming home?

Gugu: I think in the next 3 days or so

Me: I will see her then

She looked at me...

Me: Yini? (What)

Her: Nothing

She drained the water and stood at the sink with her eyes closed..

Me: uSharp?

Her: No..Yazi I always get a cramp on my left ankle

I pulled a chair for her..

Me: Sit down let me see

She sat down...

I crouched and removed her slipper.. It was swollen

Me: Have you seen a Dr before?

Her: Ngayiphi imali? (With what money)

I massaged her a bit and something snapped..

Her: Awww!!

Me: Sorry

I let her go..

Me: Askies.. Uright?

She put it down..

Her: That's strange I don't feel pain anymore

Me: Serious?

Her: I'm dead serious.. Wow Snazo

I literally saw a small lizard coming off from her ankle, it came off from that swollen area. I closed my eyes..

Her: Serious I no longer feel pain, you have a magic touch, and it looks like.. It looks like the swelling is going down

The lizard rushed through the kitchen floor and went under the fridge..

Gugu: Snazo

I looked at her..

Gugu: Are you okay?

Me: Ya I'm fine

I got up. This is not the first time, It's something that started last year in jail after I had attended a few church services. I would randomly see things that others can't see and things that I can't explain. I haven't told anyone about it, I don't want anyone thinking that I'm crazy..

Me: Athi ngishaye ijika lapha eMall (let me go to the mall) I need a few things

Her: Okay I will see you jumpas

Me: Jumpas? Who are you?

She laughed..

Her: I'm trying to learn your language phela I don't wanna be left behind

Me: Careful.. You might learn certain words that aren't meant for you

I looked at the fridge thinking that the lizard would come out but it didn't..

Me: Send my love to Ma

Her: I will

Me: Do you have taxi fare money?

Her: Aren't you sweet.. Yes I do have

Me: See you later then

I kissed her on her cheek..

Her: Okay baby be safe and stay out of trouble
you just got released

Me: Yeah I know

—

NOMVELO

My Day was a mess, Ms Wright gave us 8/20 for our sketch. We had decided to go with black shorts, a turquoise blue crop tee and we didn't know were to fit the Brown. It was very embarrassing because we the only ones who got the lowest mark, Tori and Power were very

mad at me that they avoided me in class until break. I was so down that I didn't even stay for my last class, at lunchtime I drove straight to my boyfriend's place. I am dating a guy named Jacione, he is a soccer player and he's 27 years old. We have been together now for 6 months, we had met through a mutual friend at some restaurant.

My previous relationship didn't work out because my Uncle wasn't happy with the guy that I was dating, he didn't have an impressive job and my Uncle told me that if a guy cannot afford me half of the things that he buys me, then he is not worth my Love. He hasn't met Jacione and I'm hoping that when the time comes, he will like him. He is originally from Kenya but his family moved down here when Jacione was very young, he completed his primary and secondary education here. He enrolled at University but dropped out to follow

his passion, he loves soccer more than anything
I was glad to find him around, he is hardly at home. Last weekend he was playing so I didn't see him. He picked me up, I wrapped my legs around his waist and his were under my butt making sure that I don't fall..

Me: I missed you so much

Him: I missed you too

He kissed me and then put me down..

Him: I thought you would be at school

Me: You don't wanna know

His puppies ran to him from the lounge...

Me: You got new puppies?

Him: Ya I got them 2 weeks back

Me: They so cute.. Who looks after them when you not around?

Him: My mom does

Me: They very cute

Him: At what time are you leaving?

Me: I don't know maybe at 18:00

Him: Then we have time to catch up on everything that we missed last weekend

He made his way to me..

Him: I guess we do

He kissed me and squeezed my butt..

–

SBONISO

Before going home I made my way to Connie's office to check up on her. Unfortunately she didn't find the underwear and bra joke funny.

Her: That wasn't sweet.. I had to make up a story for him not to come

I squeezed her cheek a little..

Me: Disadvantages of cheating

Her: Just give me back my things

She tried reaching for my bag but I stopped her.

Me: Not so fast.. What's in it for me If I give them back?

Her: Stop playing

Me: I'm not playing, I need compensation for keeping them do you know how embarrassing it would've been if someone found them in my bag?

She laughed..

Me: Don't laugh it's not funny

Her: I didn't say take them

I leaned over for a kiss and she pushed me back.

Her: Not at work it's too risky

Me: That's what makes it fun

Her: You really out to ruin my life aren't you?

Me: We'll be quick then after I'll give you back your things and you can go home to hubby dearest how's that?

Her: I don't know

I pulled her closer and kissed her, she didn't resist she followed through. I dropped my bag on the floor then picked her up and placed her ontop of her desk while still kissing her. She helped me to remove her blouse making sure that no button falls on the floor. Connie has a good body not too slim and not thick either, though she was gifted when it comes to her breasts. I kissed her neck and then went down to her stomach, I ran my tongue around her belly button and then I lifted her legs up to the table, so that I could get a better view of her shaved cookie. She was wearing a skirt, and I lifted it up to her stomach. My tongue came in contact with her bean while my thumb pressed against her already wet hole. She had her hand

at the back of my head and was moaning softly, she couldn't keep still. I continued with that until I noticed that she was close to coming, judging from her reaction. I went up and kissed her..

Me: You liked that?

Her: Yes I did

We continued kissing while she was grabbing my crotch and squeezing me a bit..

Her: Do you have condoms?

Me: I do

I always make sure that I got condoms with me. I went and got one from my bag and then she helped me to roll it down. We weren't completely naked, well I wasn't after all it's stolen sex..

I parted her legs and then made my way in she gasped with her hands on my shoulders, I kissed her to prevent her from making noise as

I made the rest of me inside of her..

This is basically our relationship summed up, a beneficial affair..

.

To be continued

05

NOMVELO

Jacione and I have little time for each other with our busy schedules, especially on his side.

Whenever we have to spend time together it's either he has a match, an interview or has training for his upcoming matches. It's really draining weeks can pass without us seeing each other. I was meant to go home at 18:00, but I ended up going at 15:00 because he was called Home. Mama's boys are a headache at times..

I got home and all I wanted to do was to relax or

watch my favourite movie "The devil wears Prada" so that I could uplift my spirit on what happened today at school, but unfortunately my plans were short lived when I stumbled upon Nomsa and her Daughter Mpilo in the lounge watching Tv. They seemed to be having a good time, eating, talking and laughing. It was a serious Mother and Daughter moment..

Nomsa: Hey Velo come and join us

I didn't say anything I just ran my eyes around at the snacks that were ontop of the table..

Nomsa: Mpilo came to visit, she will be here for a week

Mpilo studies at TUT, she is a private paying student I know very well that it's my Uncle's money that's putting her through school. Her Mom is a broke ass housewife..

Me: How sweet? Is your Son here too, to complete the perfect family moment?

Mpilo: Askies? Are you talking to my Mother like that?

Nomsa: Myeke mpilo (leave her) don't let a Dog's bark scare you

Me: Are you calling me a dog? I am so going to get my Uncle on you

She chuckled..

Nomsa: I cannot wait for the day that life will humble you, and don't forget Uncle J.J is not God. He is mortal, he can die anytime

I remained quiet..

Nomsa: Let us not keep you from your majestic life

She turned to Mpilo..

Nomsa: What movie were we supposed to watch again?

Mpilo: This one.. Monster in law, one of my favorites

I walked away and stood at the doorway looking at them..

Nomsa: I have never watched it before

Mpilo: Ahhh Mama you joking right? (Laughing)

Nomsa: Hau yini ehlekisayo lapho? (what's funny about that)

They both laughed. It was difficult observing that moment considering the fact that my Mother was taken away from me when I was just 4 years old. I don't even have any memory of her nor remember how she looked like other than in the pictures. I had to go through certain things alone, like having my first period, my body changing and a few other things. My Uncle is always there for me but there's things that I can't talk to him about and my Grandmother is old, she's lived in the ancient times she doesn't understand modern life. I went outside to breath because I felt like being around them

was suffocating, I held my tears back. I spotted Danger washing one of my Uncle's cars I made my way to him..

Danger: Kaz' uk'hlopheka kwavelaphi, sekungathi ngakuthenga.. Ngamalini, sengaze ngihlopheke nje (Singing)

Me: Uhm Danger

He dropped the sponge in the water..

Him: Nkosazana

I could see that I was making him nervous..

Me: Where is my Uncle?

Him: Usaphumile (He is out)

I leaned against the car..

Him: Bona imoto leyo imanzi (the car is wet)

Me: It doesn't matter

Him: ngathi awuphathekile kahle? (You don't seem well)

Me: I'm fine

(Silence)

Him: Waze wafana noMawakho, indoni yamanzi
(You look just like your Mother, she was a real
beaut)

Me: You knew my Mother?

He paused for a while and then nodded..

Him: I have known your Uncle and his family for
a very long time

Me: ubekade enjani? (how was she)

Him: She had a beautiful smile, a good heart..
She was friendly with everyone and was always
there when one needed help

Me: I wish I had known her

Him: Were you ever told what happened?

Me: Apparently my Father butchered her to
death

Him: I'm very sorry Nkosazana

Me: You shouldn't be.. It's not your fault. I'm glad he is rotting in jail

The gate opened and my Uncle's car drove in..

Me: Finally!!!.. When you done Danger can you also please wash my car?

I gave him the keys..

Him: Yebo Nkosazana (Yes princess)

He parked right next to us and got out..

Uncle: Akumelanga ngabe usesikolweni? (aren't you supposed to be at school)

Me: Came out early

The other door opened and my Grandmother came out..

Me: Duchess!!!

I ran up to her and hugged her..

Her: Velo

Me: I didn't know that you were coming

Her: Aich.. Indaba zama last minute

Uncle: Ngizolethe izikhwama (I will bring in the bags)

At least my mood has changed now..

–

GUGU

Today I decided to pass by at the mall and buy my Mom streetwise two and a 100% fruit juice with grapes and pears, it was a beautiful day and I was very grateful that my Son was back at home still in one piece..

Ma: Uyithathephi imali? (where did you get the money from)

Me: Bonga nje kphela Ma (Just say thank you)

She smiled..

Ma: Thank you

Me: How are you holding up?

Ma: I am holding up very well, by the grace of God

Me: That's good

Ma: Niso is not coming Today?

Me: He is still at school

Ma: Maybe uzoza late (Maybe he will come later)

Me: Maybe

Ma: Hau.. When you walked in I didn't see you limping

Me: Uhm.. Ma.. I have to tell you something but please don't freak out

Ma: Yini? (what is it)

Me: uSnazo..

Ma: What about him?

Me: Don't worry nothing happened to him.. He is back

Ma: cishe wang'thusa (you almost scared me)

Me: He came back this morning

Ma: God heard my cries and my prayers

Me: Matter of fact I'm not limping anymore because of him

Ma: Wenzeni? (What did he do)

Me: He touched my ankle and as he was busy massaging me, something snapped then I was okay

Ma: Serious?

Me: Ya it's still surprising but he is good with his hands

Ma: Has he.. Has he said anything

Me: Huh?

Ma: Anything that's out of the ordinary?

Me: Like what?

Ma: Things like.. Seeing things

Me: Ma what are you talking about? Have you been taking the meds that the Dr prescribed? Do you drink when the Nurses give you?

Her: Of course I do.. Forget I said anything

Me: You have to drink the meds

Her: I know and I am drinking the Meds

Me: That's good

I hope my Mother pulls through, She doesn't seem to be getting better..

—

UNCLE J.J

Me: What were you talking to her about?

Danger: Nothing.. Ubecasukile nje (she was upset)

Me: Good now finish up

I started walking away..

Danger: Ube buza ngo Ma wakhe (She was

asking about her Mother)

I stopped and turned around..

Me: What did you say?

He shrugged his shoulders, I made my way to him and put my hand on his neck. I pinned him against the car..

Me: Utheni kuye!! (what did you say to her)

Him: Nex.. (nothing)

I let him go..

Me: I told you that I don't want you talking to her!

Him: Iqiniso lizophuma ngelinye ilanga

Jameson, lizophuma noba kusenkungwini (The truth will come out one Jameson, no matter how misty it can be)

Me: Stay away from my Daughter

Him: You mean my Daughter?

Me: Are you trying to test me?

Him: You think I don't know why you adopted her? Why you treating her like this? It's because you hiding off your guilt, you cleansing your conscience with her but no amount of money will ever clean your conscience Jameson

Me: Danger I am warning you, what good life was Velo going to have? My Sister used to cry everyday you were an alcoholic and very much addicted to gambling, you were drowning in debts!

Danger: So you thought killing her and letting me take the fall for it was the best thing?

Money and power mattered that much to you? You murdered your own Sister I spent years in jail for something I didn't do! You took my wife from me!

Me: Enough!!!!!!..

He kept quiet..

Me: We will never have this conversation again!!!

You should know your place!!!.. Now get back to work and stay away from Nomvelo, she's my Daughter now I legally adopted her!

I started walking away..

Me: Ohh and.. I wonder who she is going to believe between you and me because according to her you rotting in jail, let it stay like that! What good life can you afford her? None! This is for the best. If you truly love your Daughter don't let those skeletons out of the closet she has been through enough! She has a very good life and let it be like that

.

To be continued

06

Niso

My Mom and I had just finished eating dinner, she was washing the dishes and I was supposed to dry them. We don't leave dishes in the sink overnight, we trying to avoid roaches and what not..

Gugu: Bekunjani eskolweni? (How was school)

Me: Was as usual

A few seconds passed without us saying a word to each other..

Gugu: What are you busy with on your phone?

Me: Nothing much just checking a few things on Facebook

In actual fact I was starring at Connie's Facebook profile picture. It was her and her husband. Connie is 35 years old, Yes this was supposed to be a no strings attached type of relationship but I like her maturity and her personality. She's not a nuisance, we sort out our issues like adults thinking of going for my

age group is another story.

The door opened and to my surprise Nazo walked in, the last time I saw his Ass I was 19 years old..

Nazo: Sanibonani (Greetings)

Gugu: Nazo.. You just missed dinner but your plate is in the microwave

Nazo: Thank you..

He looked at me..

Him: Niso

Me: Good night Gugu

Gugu: Hau aren't you going to dry the dishes anymore?

Me: They will dry on their own

Nazo: Eyy

I stopped..

Nazo: Dry the dishes

Gugu: Myeke Nazo it's okay

Nazo: Ng'beka iStory kayi one (I only say something once) if ngiyaz'phinda uzoswaba blind (if I repeat myself you will be sorry)

(Silence)

I put my phone on the table and started drying the dishes, Gugu smiled a little..

Gugu: In that case Good night then boys

Our house is a 4 room house, My Mom and my Grandmother they share a bedroom and the other bedroom is mine. Nazo has it's own room outside the other room we used it to store things, though I really wanted it for myself but.. I just can't wait to move out and have my own space.

Nazo started moving the fridge, I wonder were he was the whole 5 years..

Him: Why so many tats?

Me: They not many and they in one arm, tattoos are my therapy

He put the fridge back in it's position..

He took another cloth and helped me with the dishes..

Him: How is school?

Me: School is fine

(Silence)

Him: Cava I know that I haven't been around but now I'm back and things are going to change, I promise

He says that all the time but nothing changes..

Him: Tell me something how is Nkuli?

I chuckled.. Nkuli is Nazo's girlfriend or should I say ex girlfriend. She was a very sweet girl, well behaved and very much of an introvert until she started varsity, she was enrolled at UJ and everything changed. As we know how fast life

can be in Johannesburg she met a few girls who were slay queens and just like that our sweet Nkuli changed..

Me: You have to forget about that one

Him: Why?

Me: I'll show you her Instagram and Twitter she's a slay queen now and you below her class

Him: What the fuck is a slay queen?

I took my phone and showed him her pictures on Instagram..

Me: Hade Bro (sorry Brother)

—

NOMVELO

I was massaging my Grandmother you know how old people are, when old age catches up with them their bodies start to give them problems.. She has a problem with her knees, shoulders, arms and what not. She was

supposed to go for a knee surgery but she has been procrastinating

Grams: Thank you Dodo yazi I struggle a lot at home

She was living with my cousin Nkuli, they from a township called Tsakane. She now lives alone since Nkuli is no longer living at home. My Grandmother had 3 kids, my Uncle being the first born. My Mother was the second born and Nkuli's Mother is the last born. Her Mother got married to some guy when Nkuli was young and she couldn't take Nkuli with. Her reasons made sense, she married a man who likes women so she was scared that he might turn and sexually abuse Nkuli. Nkuli's life is a life of glamour, her apartment is to die for, she wears designer clothes, she has a car all that coming from rich Politicians that she entertains and sleep with on a daily basis. She changed her image, she went for breast implants and butt lifting she fixed her

nose she is way too different now..

Grams: Did your Uncle tell you that this weekend we going to do a traditional ceremony? To honor and acknowledge our ancestors?

My Uncle is cultural grounded, you can't tell him anything about ancestors and traditional ceremonies..

Me: Again?

Her: Dodo it's part of who we are.. Plus we going to visit your Mother's grave. It's been a while

Me: Okay I'll come

Her: Ithi ngilale

Me: Good night

Her: Night Dodo

—

SNAZO

For the past few months every night when I sleep at around 2am or sometimes 3am, I hear a faint voice whispering in my ear saying "Beloved" it never stops until I wake up. Weird things have been happening to me, things that I cannot explain. I don't know if it's witchcraft or what but all I know is that this is not normal..

"Beloved"

I opened my eyes and looked around but I was alone in the lounge, I had passed out on the couch. The Tv was on mute..

I sat up straight and rubbed my eyes, what I heard and what I saw about Nkuli earlier got to me. I love that girl, always have loved her and I thought we were going somewhere..

Niso walked out of his bedroom, as he made his way to the couch I saw a big blood stain on his chest. Judging from his face I could see that he was in a lot of pain..

He sat down..

Me: uGrand?

Him: Ja

I looked at him..

Him: I don't know.. I always have this sharp pain on my chest, it wakes me up every night

Me: When did it start?

Him: It's been a while now, ever since you left

I don't know if I was seeing the blood stain alone, but if he was also seeing it then he was going to ask to go to the hospital. It's all in my mind..

Me: You should consult

Him: I've lived with it for years! Ngizoba sharp

Me: Niso

Him: Nazo don't start!! You have been gone for 5 years don't come back now and play the big

Brother card

When he said that I saw a sharp sword pressing in..

Him: Ahhhh!!

I blinked a few times..

It was a disturbing thing to see..

I stood up and went to him, I tried to touch him but the voice disturbed me..

Voice: "Don't Beloved.. The wound is too deep it has to heal first, before the sword can be removed"

I backed up and closed my eyes..

Me: Gugu!!!

He was really hurting..

Me: Gugu!!

She came out after a few seconds..

Her: Yini ebusuku so? (what is it so late)

She saw him..

Gugu: Snazo get those pills in the cupboard and a glass of water quickly!

I went to get the pills and a glass of water.

She made him drink two of those pills..

Gugu: He will be fine as soon as the pills kick in

I wouldn't say the same though especially with that sword in his chest..

.

To be continued

07

SNAZO

A FEW DAYS LATER

My Grandmother was getting discharged today and I had no choice but to go and fetch her since I have a car, in her state of mind Gugu doesn't want her to take a taxi. They just caught

me off guard on a Friday afternoon when I had plans of my own. I am not a fan of hospitals, another reason why I haven't been there to see her but most of all I wasn't looking forward to us meeting, especially since I have disappointed her a lot of times. As far as my life goes I still see things that logic cannot explain, I don't know what's happening and I don't know how to solve this problem of mine...

When I walked in, the atmosphere wasn't very welcoming. I felt negative energy all around, and it was weighing down on me very hard that I felt a bit light headed. I spotted her sitting on the bed and I made my way to her..

Me: Ma...

She slowly turned and looked at me..

Her: Nazo?

She got down from the bed and made her way to me..

Her: Gugu told me that you were back and..

She put her hand on my cheek..

Her: I am so happy to see you

Me: It's good to see you too

I couldn't hold my composure things were just not good in this ward, there were dark shadows everywhere and I kept on hearing voices talking a language that I didn't understand. The voices were many it wasn't just one voice and definitely not the one I hear most of the time. The one I hear most of the time it's very calm, it's very soft and it comes with peace. I feel a wave of peace each time when I hear it, these ones I was hearing weren't for peace at all. Looking around I could see dark shadows moving around the room fastidiously. Everything that was happening was weighing down on me, it was draining me of my energy and it brought about unexplainable fear because I felt like I

was losing my mind..

Ma: Nazo

I looked at her..

Her: Are you okay?

Me: Ya.. I'm okay. Gugu gave me clean clothes you can change and then we can go

She took the plastic. I could go and wait for her in my car but I don't think she can make it on her own to my car, and Gugu would kill me if my Grandmother disappeared..

Me: I'll be sitting there on the bench in the waiting area

Her: Okay

I walked out of the ward..

–

NOMVELO

I was not in a good mood, last night I called

Jacione and I heard a female voice in the background. He claimed that he was out with friends and obviously in the club there's both girls and guys but I wasn't buying any of that. I should've known that Jacione comes with a lot of headache, I mean he is a soccer player and obviously girls would always throw themselves at him. I really thought that he was different but I guess I was wrong.

I missed school today because we had to drive to my Grandmother's place for the traditional ceremony tomorrow, Nkuli said she was going to arrive late I was already getting bored. It was Me, my Grandmother, and Nomsa around the house. My Uncle had gone with Danger to buy a sheep and chickens, I didn't know it was going to be something big..

Grams: Velo

I looked at her..

Her: Accompany me somewhere because I can see that you bored

Me: Okay

I got up and then we went. I don't come here very often, the last time I was here I can't even remember. There hood is way different, it's noisy, and on weekends you hear a lot of drunk people making noise in the street. You hear gunshots and a lot of fighting, it's not really a safe place..

Me: Where are we going?

Her: I am going to my friend's place, to see if she is home and invite her to come to our place tomorrow

Me: Ohw

Her: You used to like it here when you were young, you would play in the street with other kids

Me: I don't remember

We made our way in at some house, the yard was very clean. We went to the back and she started knocking..

Grams: MaButhelezi!!

She knocked again..

Grams: Vula bo!! (open)

I cannot wait for this traditional ceremony to be over so that I can go back home..

She knocked again until someone opened the door, it was some guy..

Grams: Niso kunjani? (how are you)

He was the exact definition of "Handsome".. Beautiful eyes, pinkish lips, just way too light but in a very attractive way though. He looked more mixed race than black...

He let us in. I never knew that such guys existed in the hood, I liked his tattoos...

My Grandmother sat down..

Grams: Ukhona uMaButhelezi? (Is MaButhelezi around)

Him: cha! uSnazo usayomlanda (Snazo went to fetch her)

Grams: hau! uSnazo ukhona? (Snazo is around)

His voice I don't know how to describe it, it was a bit scratchy as if like he was coming down with flu. Nevertheless it wasn't irritating just very fascinating to hear him talk...

Some woman walked in..

Her: Yazi ngiyezwa ukuthi kunabantu la ekhishini (I heard voices)

Grams: Kunjani kodwa Gugu? (How are you)

Gugu: Ngiyaphila unjani wena MaNgcobo? (I am well and how are you)

Grams: Ngiyaphila (I am well)

(Silence)

Gugu: Haibo akusu wuNomvelo lo? (is that Nomvelo)

Immediately all attention was on me, I tried my outmost best to avoid eye contact with him. Such guys you can easily loose yourself in their charm..

Grams: Yes it is

She came to me and shook my hand..

Gugu: Kunjani sisi? (how are you)

Me: I am well

Gugu: Yazi ngak'gcina umncane kanjani? (the last time I saw you, you were very young)

Grams: It's been a while since she was last here

She looked at him..

Gugu: Umzala kaNkuli (she is Nkuli's cousin)

Him: Serious?

His look made my knees weak..

Gugu: Ya kodwa uhlala no J.J

Him: I see

From thereon his eyes never left me..

Gugu: awusemuhle ufana noMamakho (You are so beautiful just like your Mother)

Me: Thank you

Grams: uSnazo ubuyile? (Snazo is back)

Gugu: ubuyile (he is back)

Grams: Siyabonga yazi (we are grateful)

Gugu: wuye olanda uMa esbhedlela (he is the one fetching my Mother at the hospital)

Grams: Speaking of that I wanted to invite you guys tomorrow we have a traditional ceremony nyana uyamazi uJ.J

Gugu: Ohw akunankinga sizozza (we will come)

Grams: In that case Velo let's go, we still have a

lot to do

Gugu: Siyabonga MaNgcobo... Velo sisi it was nice seeing you

I nodded. My Grandmother stood up and then we walked out..

Me: Duchess who are these people?

Her: These people are good family friends of ours. That was Gugu and her Son Niso. She has another one by the name of Snazo

Me: That was her Son?

Her: Yes

Me: How possible? They don't look alike he looks mixed race

Her: Maybe they look like their Father, abantwana bakhe bahle even Snazo (her kids are handsome)

Me: I can see that

–

SNAZO

We finally arrived at home, the ride home wasn't very pleasant. My Grandmother talks a lot and most of what she talks about makes no sense..

I opened the door and we walked in..

Me: Welcome home

I closed the door..

The pots were boiling on the stove meaning Gugu was cooking, we found them sitting in the lounge..

Ma: Sanibonani phela (greetings)

Gugu: Ma it's good to see you

I sat down, I had a headache..

Gugu: Siyabonga ukuthi ubuyile (we glad that you back)

Ma: Niso kunjani? (how are you)

Niso: I'm well Ma..

(Silence)

Ma: Nazo are you alright?

Me: Ya just a headache

Ma: I'm glad that we are all here because I have something to talk to you guys about

Gugu: What is it?

Ma: It's time I tell you the truth about our family

Niso: What truth?

Ma: Our family is not just another ordinary family.. We gifted and this gift has been passed on from generation to generation

Niso: Nazo ke (Here we go)

Ma: I am not crazy Niso ungang'deleli (don't disrespect me)

Gugu: What are you talking about Ma?

Ma: We have the gift of healing with our hands

and also through words, the gift has always been passed on to females. Some sicknesses are brought by witchcraft and some are demonic, it was not God's will for humans to suffer in sickness. Some sicknesses it's just generational curses and those ones we classify them as being "hereditary"

Gugu: Ma what exactly are you saying?

Ma: What I am saying is that Gugu you were a twin and your other twin passed on a few minutes after she was born

Gugu: I know that Ma

Ma: The gift skipped you that means you weren't the chosen one probably your twin was, and now one of your kids has the gift.. Snazo has the gift of which I don't understand how because he is supposed to have it when I'm no longer around, he truly is special he is the first male in our family to have the gift

Me: What?

Gugu: Ma you haven't been out of the hospital for even 24 hours and already you back at it again

Ma: I am not crazy! Why do you think Niso has a sharp pain in his chest? He has the sword of Anger and resentment piercing through him, the anger he has been holding against Snazo for years. It is no secret that Niso and Nazo have always been close, Nazo was always here to protect him and take care of him when he started disappearing that's when Niso felt neglected and his Anger towards his Brother grew and grew

Gugu: Ma just stop it!!!

Niso: This is madness I'm going out

Ma: Snazo you know what I'm talking about, I saw you at the hospital and how you reacted to the environment. A lot of demons live there in

that ward playing with People's ment..

Gugu: Ma I said stop it!!

I stood up and walked away but stopped.

Me: Is it a God given gift?

She made her way to me..

Ma: Yes my boy

I looked at her..

Me: Then you crazy than I thought

Gugu: Snazo!!

Me: I don't even know the difference between God and Jesus! All I know is that religion was enforced to us by white people through slavery, this fictitious God you proclaim soo much doesn't exist! He is an image created by white people to brainwash us into forgetting our own culture and traditions. They have enslave us hence why they took our land, they brought us a book that is full of lies just so we can believe in

a white God or Jesus whatever he is to..

She slapped me..

There was silence for a while in the room.

I looked at Niso..

Me: Let's go

He got up and we went..

Gugu: Ma yabona ukuthi wenzeni manje? (you see what you have done now)

.

To be continued

08

GUGU

I am trying to make sense of everything that my Mother said earlier on and unfortunately I can't, I mean she has never mentioned this gift thing before until today. I stood at the door of the bedroom and looked at her as she read her

Bible.

Ma: When they arrived, Samuel saw Jesse's son Eliab and said to himself, "This man standing here in the Lord's presence is surely the one he has chosen." But the Lord said to him, "Pay no attention to how tall and handsome he is. I have rejected him, because I do not Judge as People Judge. They look at the outward appearance, but I look at the heart."

I knocked..

Me: Ma..

She kept quiet and then closed her Bible.

I walked in and sat next to her, I had to talk to her because the boys will be here soon and I don't want any tension in the house anymore. We should be celebrating that my Mother is back from the hospital not fighting amongst each other..

Me: Unjani? (How are you)

She kept quiet for a long time and her next statement was accompanied by tears...

Ma: I expected such disrespect from Niso but not Nazo

I held her hand..

Me: Askies Mama

It was hurtful seeing her that hurt..

Me: Why you never told me about this?

Ma: Asiyeke Gugu(let's leave it) I've been hurt enough today, I'm tired of people calling me crazy

She doesn't really take offense but I think it's because she loves Nazo so much and she didn't expect him to act like that towards her, I know wherever Nazo is he is also hurt. He loves his Grandmother and they have always been close..

Ma: Please give me some space I wanna read my Bible and pray

I got up and walked out then closed the door behind, seeing my Mother that hurt, something deep inside of me moved..

–

MVELO

Life got better when Nkuli arrived, I can finally breath and talk to someone. I have been surrounded by elders all day busy sending me back and forth, asking me irrelevant things and telling me things that don't make sense. She arrived in her Mercedes Benz A45 AMG, it's white in colour and it attracted a lot of attention. Nkuli's life has changed drastically, once upon a time she was just ordinary and today she's living it up. I am happy for her but at the same time I hope that she's playing it safe and this doesn't lead her into an early grave.

We were in the bedroom, I was looking at some pictures on her phone of a trip she took to

Mauritius..

Me: You are really living it up

Her: The last thing I wanted was to be stuck here all my life, I have always known that I was destined for good things

She changed her heels and put on flat shoes as my Grandmother walked in.

I don't think my Grandmother is all for the life that Nkuli has chosen, she even dropped out of school..

Grams: How are you holding up?

Nkuli: I'm good

She sat on the bed..

Grams: Your Mom is going to come tomorrow morning

Nkuli: Not surprised

Grams: Your boyfriend is back.. Nazo

Nkuli: Koko he's not my boyfriend

Grams: You didn't tell me that you broke up

Nkuli: He disappeared and I never heard from him for years, Nazo has always pulled disappearing acts

Grams: Now he is back for good

Nkuli: I don't know why you like Snazo so much Koko he is a thug! What good life could I possibly have with him?

Grams: So you saying that the life you living now is okay?

Nkuli: I'm surviving

Grams: By doing what? Sleeping with rich men for money, expensive clothes, and expensive cars? You left home saying you going to school and then you come back like this? Where did I go wrong with you?

Nkuli: I shouldn't have came.. If you like Snazo

soo much why don't you date him

Me: Nkuli please..

Nkuli: I am not seeking your approval just let me live my life how I see fit! I am not a child anymore!

(Silence)

Grams: Fine you will never hear me saying anything from hereon just make sure you have a funeral cover! I don't have money to bury you! Funerals are expensive

She stood up from the bed and made her way to the door and walled out..

Me: Wow!

—

SNAZO

We drove to the mall and went to Nandos to have lunch, be away nyana from the drama at home. I regret saying half of the things I said to

my Grandmother but what she said scared me a bit, the last thing I want is to be crazy like her..

Niso: You think the Hospital made a mistake by realising her too soon?

Me: I don't know anymore

Niso: She never used to be like this back when we were young

Me: She has always been like this, you were just too young to understand what was going on

(Silence)

Niso: Tell me something do you know Nkuli's cousin? Her name is.... Nomvelo?

Me: Yeah ngiyamcava (I know her) her Mother was killed by her father when she was young then J.J took her in.. Why?

Him: Nothing she came to our house with her Grandmother earlier on

Me: The last time I saw her she was very young

Him: Sha has grown up now and she's a beaut,
haven't seen such a beautiful dark skinned girl

Me: If you thinking about going after her don't..
That's J.J's pride and joy he will hang you

Him: ngiyancoma nje (I'm just complimenting
her)

Me: Ang'dlali njalo (I'm not playing) I cannot
protect you from him he is a very dangerous
man, you can fuck around with any girl you want
just not that one plus ang'safuni ukuzwa nex
ngalama ntombazana kaButhelezi yizikhekhe
bonke (I don't wanna hear anything about the
Buthelezi girls they all hoes)

He chuckled..

Him: uNkuli wasn't going to wait for you, you
have been gone for too long

Me: Yeah whatever Joe just finish eating I have
some errands to run

There wasn't a lot of people which was good for me, I don't like crowded places..

As we were sitting there and eating some woman walked in with a child and she was followed by a man wearing a black robe, very tall and I couldn't see his face because the robe had a hat and he wore the hat which covered his whole face..

Me: Niso

Him: Hmmm?

Me: You see that woman at the counter?

Him: Ya?

Me: How many people is she with?

Him: Huh?

Me: How many people is she with?

Him: Really Snazo?

Me: Just answer me Dammit!

Him: Just her and her child

I heard the calm voice again whispering..

"Beloved..."

Niso: Are you okay Bro?

Me: I'm fine

The voice continued...

"Beloved.."

Something weird happened, I saw the man extending his hand to her and touching her shoulder, then she collapsed. The Man's hand didn't look normal or human..

"Beloved.. She's about to be attacked by an evil entity, she's going to have a heart attack and only you can help her. Only you can prevent the entity from bringing about a premature death and trapping her soul in darkness, it is not her time yet"

Niso shook my hand..

Him: Nazo

I snapped out of it and looked at her, the entity was still attached to her. She was all talking to the cashier smiling and what not, her child was next to her..

Me: That woman is about to have a heart attack

Niso: What?

I stood up and made my way to the counter as the entity stretched it's hand to her..

Me: Someone call an ambulance! This woman is about to have a heart attack!!

Niso: Snazo what are you doing??

Me: Someone call an Ambulance right now!!

People looked at me as if like I was crazy..

Niso: Dude you acting weird and it's embarrassing!!

The entity touched her on her shoulder and

she went down..

Me: No!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!

I ran to her as she went down, the waitress screamed and her daughter was frightened. I knelt down and looked at her I saw her spirit leaving her body..

Me: No!!!!!!!

The entity stretched out it's hand and the woman's spirit went to him, and then they disappeared. Just like that, she was gone..

.

To be continued

What was meant to be last night's insert, apologies I don't feel well when it's that time of the month especially when it's too cold.

09

SNAZO

A little girl just lost her Mother without even understanding what's happening. What was meant to be a sweet day between Mom and Daughter, turned into a tragedy. The look on her face is probably going to haunt me for a very long time, She was standing there all frozen while a close relative was being contacted. Thank goodness the Mother's phone didn't have a password. In a matter of minutes Nandos became a spectacle, people stood outside starrng in through the windows and I was concerned by the Police. I don't know what's happening with me, whatever is happening ain't normal. No human being is supposed to see a spirit de-attaching from a human body, some other things we not meant to see with the naked eye..

Officer: Witnesses say that you screamed, saying the woman was going to have a heart attack a few seconds before she went down.

How did you know?

We have been through this over and over again..

Me: I had a hunch

I just got released from jail, I am not trying to go back there again..

Him: You had a hunch?

Me: If I may ask.. Am I being arrested?

Him: No.. We just asking you questions to figure out how everything happened and how you knew that it was going to happen

Me: Like I said I had a hunch

Him: Did you know the victim personally?

Me: No.. Look I just came here to have lunch with my Brother and I had no contact with the woman other than when she was already on the floor

He nodded and looked at my Arm..

Him: You an ex con?

My tatts gave me away..

Niso: What's that got to do with what happened here?

Him: Son I wasn't talking to you

Me: Can I go now?

Him: Yes but know that we will be keeping a close eye on you

I got up and walked out with Niso following me..

Niso: Mind explaining what happened back there?

Me: What happened is that your Grandmama has a lot of explaining to do! Shit ain't sweet anymore

My Grandmother will be forced to explain what's happening to me...

—

NOMVELO

Nkuli and I went out to get a breather from everything that's happening at home and the fight that she had with our Grandmother. I cannot wait to go back home, just get back to my life the hood is not my type of place..

We were chilling at this other place a bit close to home, I don't really know what to call the place but it's sort of like a mobile container that sells booze and there were chairs around where people can sit after buying and a big gazibo provided the necessary shade. It wasn't hot anymore, the sun was already setting. We were drinking ice tropez and Nkuli was the one who bought..

Her: How are things between you and Jacione?

Me: Not so good

Her: Why?

Me: It's like I'm the only one invested in the

relationship, I am the only one calling and texting him. Jacione is always busy and he is hardly around

Her: I hate to be this honest with you but Babe you have invested too much of your feelings into this relationship and it seems as if like Jacione isn't quite committed, he is a soccer player after all. We might be sitting here talking and he might be getting pussy somewhere else

Me: I don't know what I was thinking

Her: Such relationships you just go in for the benefits. Sex, money, and a good time. Look at me I am not committed at all to anyone but I am living a very good life

Me: What about Snazo? Was it also a beneficial relationship?

She exhaled..

Her: No.. The truth is I loved Snazo. I didn't have much but I didn't care because I had him, it was

us against the world

Me: Sounds like you were in too deep

Her: I was but unfortunately there was no future with him, Snazo is a thug he would disappear a lot and my biggest fear was that he would be locked up for a long time or maybe he might be gunned down and then what was going to become of me? When he disappeared that's when I decided to put me first I had to think about my future

Me: I wish I could know how it feels like to be loved, I mean truly loved. Not what Jacione is doing to me

Her: Then why are you still with him?

Me: I don't know.. I really don't know

Her phone rang..

Her: Eish it's Aunt Sheila..

She answered..

Her: Hello??.. Ya.. Sise gazibo (we're at gazibo)

After a few seconds she rolled her eyes..

Her: Okay.. Bye

She put her phone on the table..

Her: She wants us to buy her iCastle lite

She looked around..

Her: I'm glad I made it out of here, the hood has no future for girls. I'd probably be pregnant by now or just sitting and watching life pass me by

Me: Grams was putting you through school

Her: I was dependent on Nsfas and it didn't even pay for my first year, it was catastrophic. At least you, you have always had Uncle J.J in your life. You blessed

Me: I guess so

A Citi golf pulled up playing music very loud...

"You give me the love I need, You let me be who

I wanna be (ndiyakuthanda)

You give me the love I need, You let me be who I
wanna be (ndiyakuthanda)

Yimithandazo yenu, Nobubele benu..

Oh you could've been doing something else with
your life, But you chose to be here by my side...

"

The driver reduced the volume, but we could
still hear the song on a much acceptable level..

"Umntu ngumntu ngabantu nam ndingumntu
ngabantu (you got to know that), Umntu
ngumntu ngabantu nam ndingumntu ngabantu
(what you done know).. Ndiyabulela bhuti,
ndiyabulela sisi (you got to know that)
Ndiyabulela mama, ndiyabulela tata (you got to
know that).. "

Nkuli freaked out..

Nkuli: OMG!! It's Snazo..

Me: What?

Her: We have to go right now!!

They got out of the car..

Me: Wait.. What about Aunt Sheila's beers? You know she going to be making noise

We hurried to get the beers, How frightened Nkuli was made me a bit uncomfortable. They gave us the two castle lite beers and when we turned, Sazithela phezu kwabo (We bumped into them)

Nkuli almost dropped the beers..

They came face to face with each other and the serious look on Snazo's face terried me. Snazo just like his Brother he is very handsome but he is very intimidating too. That scar under his eye made him more intimidating. He had his hands buried deep in his pockets and he was looking at Nkuli from head to toe while sniffing, Nkuli was even shaking.

Niso had this smirk on his face that I could just wipe off with a clap..

Snazo cleared his throat and then bumped into Nkuli on purpose, making the two castle lite bottles that she was holding to fall and break..

Niso: Eish sizothini umuntu makame endleleni? (what can we say when someone is standing in the way)

Nazo: Umuntu agcwale indlela nje (A person occupying the whole space)

I didn't expect such immaturity from the both of them..

Snazo pushed Nkuli a bit who was close to crying now..

Snazo: Eish s'cela ukudlula please (Can we please pass)

Niso chuckled.. I clicked my tongue..

Me: Such immaturity from two grown men

I felt a hand grabbing my arm in a very rough way, he turned me around so that I could face him. My heart skipped a bit..

Snazo: Askies uyakhuluma? (Are you saying something)

I kept quiet..

Him: I didn't think so

Niso laughed, like literally laughed and his laugh pierced through deep inside and made me more upset. Nkuli and I left..

Me: Wait until I get my Uncle on them

I took out my phone and called him, he answered on the 3rd ring..

Him: Dodo

I broke down in tears..

Him: What's wrong?

Me: Some guys they.. They..

Him: What guys? Where are you?

Me: We.. I am with Nkuli and..

Him: Give Nkuli the phone

I gave Nkuli the phone and she talked to him..

–

NISO

Nazo: awus'shaye nge 6 pack ye Heineken

Me: Was thats necessary mara?

Him: What?

Me: Dissing those chicks like that?

Him: Tsek nabo bayatefa (they cry babies)

I think I like Nomvelo a bit, I would like to know her more but what Snazo did might ruin things for me..

.

To be continued

10

SNAZO

My Homie Stokies joined us, Stokies and Shine are my squad. I've been doing this with them and they have been here since from day one we have been doing shady dealings together for as long as I can remember. After what happened at Nandos I really needed this, crazy talks, few beers, and weed. This is my way of relaxing..

Me: Stokies cava, ngine situation la (Stokies I have a problem)

Him: Smoko? (What's wrong)

Me: things have been happening to me, izinto nje that I cannot explain. So I need something into ezogeza les'nyama namabhadi wase jele (I need something that's going to cleanse me from all this bad luck that I got from jail)

Him: No ungawari ntwana ngik'phethe (don't worry.. I got you)

Me: You still consult to that woman?

Him: Yebo! uyayenza into yakhe (she does her thing)

Me: Sure ntwanas sizombona ksasa (We will see him tomorrow)

Niso was awfully quiet which is not at all like him..

Me: u Grand? (are you okay)

He nodded while busy on his phone..

Stokies cleared his throat while looking at Niso, then he looked at me..

Him: Bekela mina, manje iJob? (Tell me what about our dealings)

Me: Sizoy'ceda ksasa (We will discuss it tomorrow)

I didn't wanna have such talks in front of Niso. As we were sitting there just having a good time and listening to some music, a taxi pulled up.

J.J got out with his hooligans, he was holding his gun...

Niso: Shit!!

He made his way to us..

Stokies: Eyy Bra J, k..

J.J: Voetsek!!!.. Voetsek

He clicked his tongue and then looked at me..

J.J: Ucabanga ukuthi ubani wena? (Who do you think you are)

I picked up the can and drank from it..

J.J: Eyy wena swine!! Ng'khuluma nawe (I am talking to you)

Stokies: K'hambani Bra J? (What's happening)

J.J: Ng'the Voetsek wena!!

He looked at me again..

J.J: Kube k'dala nga deala nawe that time umosha umntwana wase ndlini (I should've long

dealt with you, that time you messed up with Nkuli)

Me: Entlek is'khalo s'thini? (what's your problem)

J.J: Ngiyanyanya mag'busy ng'delelwa abafana abancane (I get irritated when small boys disrespect me)

He looked at his hooligans..

J.J: Mthatheni (Take him)

Three of them made their way to me and roughly grabbed Me..

Stokies: Ahh Bra J.J

He looked at the other two and they went straight to Stokies preventing him from standing up..

Niso: If this is about Nomvelo and Nkuli, we were just joking with them

J.J: Well they didn't find the joke funny because they weren't laughing

Niso stood up..

Me: Sit down Niso

He sat down. J.J looked at me as his goons held me..

He gave one of them his gun and started punching me repeatedly on my face, I couldn't really defend myself since I was overpowered and Stokies couldn't help me too. After the punches they let me go and all three of them started attacking me, kicking me senseless as I went down. Niso tried to come to my rescue but they held him back..

Stokies: Bra J.J, kanti kwenzakalani? (what's happening)

J.J looked at me..

Him: ngik'thole uhlupha abantwana bam' futhi, kini bazocula amagugu (if you trouble my girls again, at your house they going to sing funeral songs)

He spat on me and then made his way back to the taxi, his goons followed him.

Niso: Shit Nazo are you good?

Stokies: Entlek uz'thole kanjani sowuqala izinkinga no J.J? (How did you find yourself beefing with J.J)

They helped me to get up, I was in serious pain..

–

NOMVELO

Nkuli was pacing up and down all worried and upset, we were in the bedroom..

Me: Nkuli you making me dizzy

Her: Did you really have to call uMalume? Me: Yes I had too.. Those guys were jerks!!

Her: Do you have any idea what you have done? What if your Uncle kills Snazo?

Me: I don't care!!!

Her: Well you better care!! The world doesn't revolve around you miss universe, you better start acknowledging that your Uncle won't be around forever and when that happens I wonder what's going to become of you!

Me: So you defending them?

Her: I'm just trying to make you see that you should grow up Velo! You not 16 anymore not everything is about you!

Me: Whatever Nkuli

Her: Take that back

Me: Or what?

Her: I am not your friend I am your big sister you better show me some respect

I chuckled..

Me: It's not like you a good role model

Her: Uthini? (what are you saying)

Me: What exactly are you teaching me big Sis?
That I should prostitute myself?

She did the unthinkable, in a matter of seconds she was slapping me and throwing me on the floor. She went on full attack mode and I don't know how to fight, I have never fought physically before and I was getting ass whooped. All I could do was scream. Nkuli was very angry. The door opened and Nomsa walked in, she laughed first before neutralizing the situation..

Nkuli: Ngizokutrapa girl! (I will beat you up)

That statement made no sense because she had already whooped my ass..

Nomsa: Okay Nkuli that's enough

Nomsa got her off me...

Nomsa: What happened? (Laughing)

Nkuli: Iyadelela lento (this thing is disrespectful)

My Grandmother walked in..

Grams: What's going on here?

Me: Nkuli attacked me (Crying)

Grams: What?

She looked at Nkuli..

Grams: Usuka la usuka khona, uzoshaya umntwana? (You from where you from to come here and beat this child)

Nkuli: Are you ever going to be fair or defend me? Nja..

Grams: Yey!!!

Nomsa: Kodwa Gogo no Velo naye uyadela (Velo is disrespectful)

Grams: uVelo umntwana (Velo is a child)

Nkuli: Let me just get my things and leave (Crying)

Nomsa: Nkuli come on

Nkuli: uGogo vele uyang'zonda mina (Grams hate me)

Grams: Myeke ahambe! (let her go)

My Grandmother pulled her closer to me..

Grams: Akakulimazanga kodwa? (Did she hurt you)

I couldn't answer because I was crying..

Grams: Askies phela

Nkuli: La ayoshona khona uMalume angifuni nokwazi, umbabe angashoni (there day that he is going to die, I don't wanna see. You better pray he doesn't die)

Grams: Sisi we! Pakisha uhambe! (Pack your things and go) you found us here in peace, leave us in peace!

Nomsa looked at me and shook her head in disappointment, not that I cared. She means nothing to me..

–

SNAZO

Niso drove us home, I was in a lot of pain to even drive. My Mother flipped out when she saw me in that state..

Gugu: Nkosi yami!! Kwenzakaleni? (my God!! What happened)

Niso helped me to sit down..

Gugu: Papa are you okay?

Me: Gugu I'm fine

Gugu: You not fine!! Look at Me

I looked at her..

Gugu: Kusho kuthi nje thina siyazala sizalela abo J.J ukuthi bashayaye abantwana bethu?
(So now we give birth for J.J to beat our kids)

I forgot that Gugu can overreact..

Gugu: umamakhe as'khohlwe ksasa! (His Mom

must forget us tomorrow)

My Grandmother walked in..

Her: Umsindo wani? (Why so much noise)

Gugu: bona ukuthi uJ.J umenzi uNazo(look at what J.J did to Nazo)

Ma: Bekwenzakalani? (What happened)

She moved closer to me..

Ma: ithi ngibone? (let me see)

She stretched her hand to me..

Me: Please don't touch me

Gugu: Snazo!!

Me: Yini? (What) I don't want her to touch me

My Grandmother exhaled..

Ma: Good night everyone

She walked out to the bedroom..

Gugu: What's wrong with you?

Me: Nx!!

I stood up and then slowly walked out to my room..

Gugu: Snazo!!!!

I unlocked and walked in, I sat on the the bed and thought for a while...

Me: What's happening to me?

I wish I knew what was happening to me, I wish I knew why I was losing my mind.

As I was lost deep in my thoughts I heard a soft knock..

Me: Gugu if it's you.. I'm not in the mood!!

The person knocked again..

I stood up and went to open..

Me: I swear if..

It was Nkuli, she was standing there with her bag and tears were streaming down her cheeks..

Her: I didn't know where else to go

I opened and she walked in.. I closed the door and leaned against it..

Me: What happened?

She shrugged her shoulders and continued crying..

Me: Come here

She dropped her bag and made her way to me, I wrapped my hands around her as she laid her head on my chest all crying. For a moment I even forgot that I was injured..

.

To be continued

11

SNAZO

Sleep seems to elude me lately especially since

I started hearing this voice that I can't even make out if it's real or it's just in my head. My bruises also made it a bit harder for me to sleep, I didn't have pain killers around the room. I'll have to go inside the house to get some...

I stood against the wall and watched Nkuli as she slept, she looked soo different from how I know her. She has changed her looks and she is still beautiful but she is not my Nkuli. There way that she was sleeping made me think that she hasn't had such a peaceful sleep in a long time..

I don't understand what's happening to me and I am not going to accept something that I don't understand. I highly doubt that this is a religious calling, why would Gold leave all them good Christians at church and come for me? I am nothing but a down low sinner. I don't even acknowledge his existence so I highly doubt that he would want someone like me to serve him..

–

NOMVELO

The following morning we woke up very early and made our way to the cemetery. It was Me, Grams, my Uncle and other two elders. I don't know why I keep on doing this to myself because all I do is just stand at a far distance, I don't have the heart to go up to my Mother's grave. Her departure from this world ripped my heart out, I can't seem to accept her passing. She passed on when I was very young so that makes the pain worse, I wish I had more time with her. I wish she could've lived to see me now but my stupid Father decided to play God and took her away from me. I don't know him and I don't wanna know him, I will never even accept his apology. He has been writing me from jail, the letters would come with my Uncle but I throw them in the trash, I want no contact with him..

It was very chilly, the grass was wet and there was mist. I looked at them from a far distance, they were facing her marble tombstone head. My Uncle is another one who gets affected by these visits to her grave, his heart breaks every time when we come here. I tried very hard to keep myself from being emotional and waited for them to finish, when they were finally done we made our way to the car..

Uncle: Are you okay?

Me: I'll be fine

He put his hand around my shoulders. People keep saying that they wanna see what's going to become of me when my Uncle is no longer around, you know what? Their talks are starting to scare me a bit. All the money that he's going to leave me won't take away the fact that I'll be all alone, I'll have to face life alone..

—

NISO

Somehow I hate to see My Grandmother upset, she's old and she's been through a lot. She raised Me and Snazo alone while my Mother was not around, it wasn't easy but here we are today all grown up. I made my way in she was standing by the sink and starring out of the window, she seemed to be lost in her thoughts..

Me: Ma

She looked at me..

Me: Morning

Her: Morning

Me: Can I make you some tea?

Her: Yes please

Me: I know that I am not your favourite Grandson but I hate to see you this upset

She smiled..

Her: I love you the same way that I love Nazo,
both of you are my life

My Mother made her way in...

Mom: Good morning

We greeted her back..

Gugu: I wanna start with laundry while it's still
this early

Ma: I have to prepare myself

Gugu: for?

Ma: Mangcobo invited us to her house
remember?

Gugu: Ma asiyi lapho! (We not going there)

Ma: Aww Gugu

Gugu: Did you see what JJ did to my son?

(Silence)

Me: Speaking of Snazo weird things have been
happening to me

Ma: Weird things like?

Me: Yesterday at Nandos some woman had a heart attack

Gugu: hai wena, serious?

Me: Yes... What's shocking is that Snazo saw it before it happened, more like he had a vision of the whole thing

Gugu: what are you trying to say?

Ma: She was meant to save that woman, if he saw it before it happened it means that he was supposed to help her but he couldn't because he doesn't understand what's happening to him and he doesn't wanna accept it

Gugu: Yazi nje all of this doesn't make sense

Me: What if Snazo is going through this because of the fact that we don't know our Father and his family

Gugu: Niso don't start

Me: When are you going to be honest with us
Gugu? When are you going to tell us the truth?

Gugu: Today you will do your own laundry

She walked out and left us..

–

NOMSA

I was up very early to help with the cooking while JJ and his Mother went to his Sister's grave. My life with JJ was never good, Nomvelo has always been a barrier between us. She has always managed to get between us and start trouble. I am more hurt that I am forced to love this ungrateful child while JJ hates my own kids, I mean if he truly loved me then he would love my kids too. I am not happy in my marriage, apart from Nomvelo JJ is a very ruthless man. He has no regard for human life. His taxi business has shed a lot of blood, he has a lot of blood in his hands and has a protection of his

powerful traditional healer. He has a will and everything is going straight to that spoiles brat of his, I am really tired of this jail and shame of a marriage. I wanna kill my husband then take everything of his and I wanna see how the little brat is going to survive without her Uncle. All that glam life will disappear like a puff of smoke..

.

To be continued

No edits

12

NOMVELO

I couldn't wait for the day to be over, no actually I couldn't wait for the weekend to be over. I was missing home, missing my friends, and missing school. I really wanted to be out of here, I was getting bored by my Grandmother introducing me to everyone who came in. We didn't even

invite soo much People I wonder why black people fail to stick to the invitation and gate crash every event. Nothing much was happening now except for the old men who were drinking African beer and singing, they don't even look like they had a bath they looked very dirty. Such a disgusting thing to see..

Grams: Velo

I looked at her she was holding a Tupperware

Her: Iza ngikuthume (let me send you)

Me: Where?

Her: Remember MaButhelezi's house?

Me: Duchess No..

Her: Velo ngimdala (I am old) If I don't send you who will I send? Should I got there while you sit and be on your phone?

Me: No

Her: Good! Now go there and give her this, I

don't know why she didn't come maybe she is sick. She loves scones so she will be happy

I exhaled and stood up..

I took the Tupperware from her..

Her: Thank you

I took that dreadful walk to the enemy's house..

–

SNAZO

I looked at him and I couldn't read him..

Shine: Manje uthini? (what do you say)

Me: The most important question is, can we trust him?

Him: You can trust me gentlemen

Me: A few years ago I was fucked in such a similar deale

Him: Look I know that you went to jail for something that you didn't do but I promise you,

this deal is clean

Shine: You asking us to steal black stones
there's nothing clean about that

Him: Look it's not like you guys are going in to steal, you will be going in as workers, you will be working but there's a specific place were you supposed to dig and then get those stones for me

Me: Why are the stones so important to you?

Him: That's my business

Right now Shine and I we getting ourselves a job, a different one from from the last one. In a hood close to mine they erecting a shopping complex, the space were the complex is supposed to be situated is not appeasing. It's a bush that needs serious working on and it's going to take some time to work on it. This guy who is sitting infront of us Deon, he wants us to go into the project as construction workers

because according to him his wife is a geologist who was hired to check out the place and she hinted to him that in that area there's certain stones that are worth a fortune.

Knowing no one who can pull off this job successfully he got Shine's contacts from the fucker that fucked me up and I went to jail for 5 years..

Me: Why should I trust you? Because your associate framed me 5 years ago

Him: I understand how you feel and...

Me: I did 5 years, you don't understand shit!

Him: We all going to benefit a lot from this deal, my wife told me that no one knows about the rocks. No one knows that the rocks are there and how much they worth, it's a clean job. My wife is just going to inform the shareholders that you two are good at what you do, we going to forge some papers and experience. The job

will only take you 3 months but your contract is going to be for 6 months, you will be getting R5 000 for the construction job and as soon as you give me the first 5 rocks you will each get 10k for the coming 3 months

Shine whistled..

Shine: in total it's going to be R30 000

Him: Yes

Me: How much is 1 rock worth?

Him: That is my business

Me: What if one rock is a million and you only giving us 10k? That's a rip off

Shine: I think 10k is worth it Nazo, this is a clean job plus combined with the R5000 it's going to be enough

(Silence)

Me: How much are the rocks worth?

Him: Let's cut a deal of 15k?

Me: 20k

He looked at me for a while..

Him: 20k it is then

He stood up..

Him: Well then gentlemen we have a deal

He stretched his hand for a handshake..

—

MVELO

I stood at the door step and looked at the door, I sighed and knocked. There was no answer, I knocked again a few times until someone opened. It was Niso..

He leaned against the door and looked at me, He made me a bit uncomfortable. He was shirtless, had on some shorts only. I didn't know that he had more tattoos on his body, they

didn't look bad though and they were small..

Me: I was sent by my.. I was sent by my
Grandmother

He opened the door wider so that I could come
in, I made my way in..

Her: These are scones for your Grandmother

He took the Tupperware from me and our
hands touched, I had goosebumps..

He put it ontop of the counter..

Him: I'll give it to her

Me: Thank you

I turned and opened the door..

Him: Sorry about last night

I stopped..

Him: Shouldn't have dissed you and your cousin
like that

I looked at him...

Me: It's okay

Him: Wouldn't have done that if we knew that yall were that soft and sensitive

Me: Goodbye

Him: It was a joke.. You damn sensitive do you know that?

Me: Make sure that your Grandmother get those scones

I walked out..

Him: Okay wait!!

I stopped again, he made his way to me..

Him: How about I take you out tonight just to show you how sorry I am about last night?

Me: I don't know

Him: We just gonna get a few drinks, have some fun then I'll make sure that you get home safe

I really didn't know what to say, he lifted my chin

up so that I could look at him..

Goodness me, I have never seen such cuteness..

Me: I don't know really

Him: Exactly what don't you know?

I shrugged my shoulders..

Me: Why should I trust you?

He folded his arms..

Him: If you could see what your Uncle did to my Brother I don't think I would diss you like that anymore

I chuckled..

Him: So that's a yes?

Me: Okay

Him: Gimme your phone

I unlocked it and gave it to him..

He was on it for a while then handed it back to

me..

Him: You will ring me up later to pick you up
maybe at 18:00

Me: Ohw

Him: Saved my number as "Babe"

I laughed..

Me: What? You are soo full of yourself!

Him: I'm thinking ahead here

Me: Woow I have never seen such confidence
(Sarcasm)

Him: Can I tell you something?

I nodded.. He came closer and put his hand
around my waist while whispering in my ear..

Him: You very beautiful but that nose ring
doesn't suit you, I feel some type of way with
girls who do those type of piercings they usually
hoes

I pushed him off..

Me: Bye

Him: And that wasn't a joke! (Shouting)

Me: A jerk will always be a jerk I guess!
(shouting)

I made my way out of the yard without looking back, I stopped in the middle of the street and took off the nose ring. I tossed it a bit far..

–

SNAZO

Shine and I we were now chilling at
Gazibo having some beers..

Shine: So what are we going to tell
Stokies?

Deon clearly stated that he doesn't want Stokies
to be a part of the team, he said that Stokies
looks like a thug and he is going to give us

away..

Me: How does he even know him?

Shine: Maybe that fucker told him about

Stokies

(Silence)

Shine: Can we trust him?

Me: Tomorrow we going to show up at his house for dinner, to show him that now we know where he lives and we know his family

Shine: How the hell we going to find his house?

Me: Leave that to me

J.J's taxi pulled up...

Me: You got to be kidding me!

He got out..

Shine: Ufunani manje? (What does he want now)

I picked up my can from the table and drank from it. He passed us and went to buy something, he was with some guy..

He looked at me and I looked at him.

Shine: I hope angeke asenzele amawaza waza
(I hope he won't start trouble)

Me: Nxa!!!

Shine: Sigcwale indlela? (Should we leave)
looks like they going to chill here

Me: Yeah asambe sogcwala istradi (let's go and
be in the street)

I have more to lose than JJ, I just got released
and I am not looking for trouble.

Me: Let me get a few cans then we can go chill
at your place

Him: Ta

I got up and went to get a few cans, JJ was still standing there so I waited for him..

JJ: Danger uyobana kwenzakalani uma umntu azenza ihuzu (Danger do you see what happens when someone acts all thuggish)

They both looked at me..

JJ: Kudaleka Izinkinga (trouble follows)

I ignored him and made my way to the counter but he pushed me back, I laughed while shaking my head..

JJ: ubong'mela ng'cede ukuthenga (you should wait for me till I'm done)

He turned back to finish placing his order. I glanced down and I had two handprints of blood on my tshirt, in the exact same place were he laid his hands when he pushed me. I looked at him and his hands were dripping blood. I closed my eyes and opened them again, I still saw his hands dripping blood. His boy

took the bucket that had beers and ice inside, when JJ turned and looked at me I saw blood also in his mouth. He passed me and I could've sworn that I felt some bad aura surrounding him. It was more like the Pandora box was opened and all the evil of this world was shadowing him...I felt very uneasy with his presence this time around..

.

To be continued

13

Nomvelo

I don't know why I was this nervous about the "date" I mean he is an ordinary ghetto boy I shouldn't even be this nervous, he has nothing to impress me with. It was still busy around the house, not everyone was gone so I called Nomsa so that I could talk to her in private..

Her: What's wrong?

Me: I know that you and I aren't really best of friends and that we don't really like each other

Her: I think that statement is wrong "You don't like me"

Me: Look I need your help

Her: Serious?

Me: Yes please

Her: Khuluma (Talk)

Me: It's somewhat complicated

Her: Just talk Velo

Me: I am going out so I need you to cover for me

Her: Wait I don't understand.. You going out? Going out where and with who? Phela wena awazi muntu la (You don't know anyone around here)

Me: Please just cover for me

Her: I am not going to cover for you ngento engingayazi, what if something happens to you your Uncle will kill me

Me: Nomsa trust me nothing is going to happen I just made friends so we going out

Her: Velo the hood is not for People like you, You don't know how dangerous it can be. Girls go missing and..

Me: Nomsa is it a Yes or a No?

She looked at me..

Her: Why should I do this for you when you don't even respect me?

I kept quiet..

Her: When are you coming back?

Me: A bit later

Her: I want you to call me at least every hour and don't come back later than 23:00

Me: So you will cover for me?

Her: As much as I hate it.. Yes

Me: Thank you very much

I tried hugging her but she pushed me back..

Her: Not so fast baby girl there's a few things that we need to understand each other on

Me: Like?

Her: Like from now on you going to respect me

Me: That can be done

Her: Good!

Me: Thank you

Her: Have fun, and be safe

Me: I will

—

SNAZO

I had borrowed Niso my car said he is going out

and he will be back later...

We were sitting in the lounge having dinner while watching Tv..

Me: I..I got a job

They both looked at Me..

Gugu: A job? Where?

Me: An old friend that I went to school with has a construction company, they building a complex so he needed a few men and I availed myself

Gugu: Wow Snazo that's good.. When are you starting?

Me: I am not sure maybe on Tuesday or Wednesday need to sort out the paperwork first

Gugu: That's very good.. Praise be to God

My Grandmother unfortunately had a different reaction..

Gugu: At least now you will be doing something concrete

Me: Yeah it seems so

We continued eating..

Gugu: Let me go get the laundry.. I think it's raining

Me: Sounds more like wind

Gugu: Either way..

She stood up and walked out, leaving me and my Grandmother alone. We kept the silence between us and let the Tv do all the noise..

(Silence)

I put my plate on the coffee table..

Me: I see things, scary things which I cannot explain. It started back when I was in jail and I kept on hearing a certain voice that I am not familiar with

I looked at her..

Me: What's happening to me?

Her: The voice you hear.. Can you describe it?

I shrugged my shoulders..

Me: I don't know it's a very calm voice mostly talks to me when I'm in a calm state, if I'm angry about something I can't hear it or when I'm in a noisy place

Her: Nazo the gift of healing has been passed to you, no matter how much you fight it or deny it, It is your destiny to serve God and save souls from the hand of the enemy

Me: It doesn't make sense.. Why me? There's nothing special about me. I don't even pray, I have never read the Bible before I am not a church Person and I certainly don't believe in this religion nonsense

She chuckled..

Her: God chooses what the world considers useless in order to shame the proud. God doesn't have the eye of a human being, he doesn't look at the outward appearance he looks at the heart. Despite your Ungodly actions Nazo but you have a very good heart. The voice you hear it's the holy spirit, the holy spirit is always here to guide you and give you wisdom. The holy spirit is the one that's supposed to be your guidance at all times as you work on accepting your gift. You need to remember the holy spirit is very sensitive, you cannot hear his voice when you not at peace. When there's too much war within you, the holy spirit cannot be one with you. Though I don't understand how you got the gift now because you supposed to get it when I'm no more, but God works in mysterious ways. You need to change your ways, answer to your calling and give yourself to God. After all it is your destiny

Me: Ma this is not Me, I can't do it. God has to find someone else

She smiled..

Her: You remind me of Moses right now when he had to go and rescue the Israelites from Egypt. Look Nazo I know it's not easy to wake up and hear that your life has to change, but don't challenge God

Me: I am not accepting something that I don't understand nor believe in, God must find someone at the church. Someone who believes in him, and that's not Me

The kitchen door opened..

Gugu: Yhuuuuu aii!!! Uyakhuluma umakhelwane wethu! (Our neighbour is very talkative)

–

NOMVELO

I waited for him for almost like 10min, I was

even annoyed at how late he was. He pulled up in a Citi golf that was well pimped out. I stood there refusing to go in, he was 10min late after all. A lot of things can happen in a space of 10min.. He opened the door and got out, he was wearing ordinary. Blue jeans, a White shirt, white all star sneakers and a blue hat. Everytime when I see him my heart melts, my knees grow weak and I feel a hot sensation down in my cookie..

Him: Hey

Me: You late

Him: Ya eish hade Twana (Sorry)

Me: What does that mean?

Him: It means that you look beautiful in your tight skinny jeans

I have a slim body, I am a size 30..

Me: Ohw

He held my hand and I felt an electrical charge traveling to my spinal cord which made me a bit weak..

Me: Ready to go?

All I could do was just nod..

He smiled at me..

Him: No nose ring.. What happened?

Me: Please don't start

He laughed and led me to the car..

—

SNAZO

Me: That was a good meal Gugu.. Thank you

Her: You welcome baby

Me: Good night

Her: Night

I looked at my Grandmother..

Me: Night Ma

Her: Night Nazo

Gugu: I like it when we get along in peace

Ma: Nazo was never the one to get angry forever.. He is very special

Me: I'll see you guys tomorrow morning

Gugu: Bye baby.. Go get some rest

I walked out and went to my room, it was still very early for me to sleep. Wasn't even 19:00 just as yet..

I took my wallet and went out to get myself a beer and some weed..

I thought about what my Grandmother told me and I don't wanna lie, God got the wrong one. I am a Non-believer, whatsoever...

—

NOMVELO

We drove up to this other place, it was very hood and I didn't like it ..

Niso: Welcome to my world

He held my hand as we made our way in, greeting a few People along the way. I have never been in such a low class place in my whole entire life. I feared for my life I don't wanna lie, most of these people seemed ungoverned. It was a place blended in by old and young people, a flat screen on the wall. A pool table in the middle, a few tables and chairs here and then. Girls wearing very Nasty, some were even drinking beer. It was not my kind of place and the music was a bit loud, the music made no sense at all it was ratchet...

"Washu mama wami

Sebeng'dung ingcondo

Badung' inhliziyo yam

Badung' unembeza wam

Vel ak'sekho luthoo...Sale sobuya

Salusubuya (Salusubuyaa)

Sazobuya (Salusubuyaa)

Sazobuyaa (Salusubuyaa)

Sazobuyaa (Salusubuyaa)

Sazobuyaaa (Salusubuya)"

A few people seemed to be enjoying the song, they were even dancing to it. I held on to Niso's hand for dear life. He looked at me and smiled at me. A few eyes were on us as we walked in, I saw some girls whispering to each other. We made my way to the counter..

Niso: Wola

There was a guy working on the other side, my heart had sank lower to my knees..

Niso: What are you going to drink?

Me: Coca cola

He gave me a weird look, I wouldn't wanna get drunk in such a place..

Niso: Ithi ngizobuya kuwe (I will come back to you)

Guy: Sho

We walked outside..

Him: What's wrong now?

Me: This is not the type of places I go too

Him: Okay look Nomvelo..

Me: No you look.. I don't wanna be here!

He kept quiet and looked at me a bit irritated..

Him: Don't you dare speak over me, you agreed to this okay? March your spoiled ass back in I got this!!!

I looked at the place again..

Him: Mas'ngadinani (let's not annoy each other)

He stretched his hand to me and I held it, we

walked back in again..

.

To be continued

14

NOMVELO

I admit that I must've misjudged this place at first, after a few sips of the cider that I was drinking I loosened up a little. It became really fun, People were dancing, drinking and having fun. It was as if like they forgot about the world outside and it's problems, they were all bottled up in this world of fun and dancing. No one was being mischievous other than those who were knocked up and were getting in the nerves of the others, but other than that it was really fun. Niso had called a friend to come over and he brought along his girlfriend her nickname is "groovy". Judging from that name I believe that she needs no introduction, she wasn't different

from your typical hood rat. Her makeup was the fun of the party, she had on a pink lipstick with blue eye shadows it wasn't impressive at all but then again her name is "Groovy". What I liked most about her was her free spirit, sense of humor and the fact that she didn't care about what other people thought of her, she is the type to do things only to impress herself and no one else...

Groovy: Hai maan Dali, soloko ugone le dumpie eyi one (You have been nursing that cider)

Me: Well I am a cocktail and Martini kind of girl so.. This is new to me

I was drinking a cider called "Smoochie" or "Smoothie" wasn't really sure about the name. I was now starting to feel their music genre, wasn't sure if it was the alcohol getting to me or what. Groovy was drinking Heineken together with Niso and her boyfriend Mongz, I can't process that it's too bitter..

Groovy: Yazini athi ngiyolanda iBrutal 8, ingudu Dali (Let me go get brutal 8, the big one)

Me: Okay

Groovy stood up..

Niso: Whoa!! Ayibuyele estulweni (sit down)

Groovy sat down..

Niso: Brutal 8?

Groovy shrugged her shoulders..

Niso: cabanga ukuthi lo muntu uzoyikhona iBrutal 8? (Do you think she will be able to handle brutal 8)

Groovy: sizomshaya ngento eLight (I will get her something that's light)

Mongz: Mina I'll get something to eat

Niso: Ta poi

Me: Wait.. First I need to pee

Groovy: Nazo ke (Here we go)

Niso: I'll accompany you

Groovy: ibambe lapho (hold it there)

She looked at me..

Groovy: Sukuma, let's go.. Plus ngifuna ukuyonkauza (plus I want to smoke)

Niso looked at me and I nodded..

Niso: Don't worry you safe with her

Groovy: ay' mina ngiyalishaya ibhodlela ke bonke bayazi la (I stab, everyone knows here)

Me: What does that mean?

Groovy: It means phola.. uRight (it means relax, you safe)

I stood and almost fell..

Me: Wow!!.. That was closed (laughing)

Groovy: Nci.. Nci.. Nci.. iDumpie eyi one nje sesibamba amatafula? (just one cider and already we holding the table)

Niso: umbambe nagawi (make sure she doesn't fall)

Groovy and I walked out, it was a bit cold outside now..

Groovy: ngapha.. This way

I followed her as she led me at the back, in a dark place..

Groovy: Azishe! (do it)

She lowered her underwear and crouched with her ass against the wall and started urinating. This place was stinking of urine..

Me: Wait this.. This is the toilet?

Groovy: No miss universe this is safe place, toilets are were they krrrr you!!!

She ran her thumb across her neck..

Me: This is soo not right

Her: Dali just handle your business neh?

I looked around and nodded..

I unbuttoned my Jean and ran the zip down,
when two guys showed up..

Groovy: Manje? (now)

I cleared my throat..

Her: Abana ndaba nawe! (they don't care about
you)

They handled their business not far from us. I
pulled my jeans down a bit and crouched, my
bum bumped against the wall I fell and I
urinated on myself..

Me: No!! No!!.. No!!

I couldn't even hold back..

Groovy: And then?

Me: I!!.. I urinated on myself (Whispering)

Her: Uri- what?

Me: I..

Her: You mean ukuthi uzichamele? (you urinated on yourself)

She started laughing.. It was so embarrassing..

Me: I can't go back in there

I started crying..

Groovy: Aww mara ungakhali (don't cry)

Me: I wanna go home (Crying)

The two guys looked at us..

Guy1: Zkhiphani? (what's happening)

Guy2: Uyakhala muntuza? (Are you crying)

Groovy: Si right, Si grand (We are okay)

Guy1: usho kanjani omunye umntwana akhala?
(How can you say that when another child is crying)

Me: I can't go back in like this, I'm gonna itch and smell

Guy1: Yini kanti? (what's wrong)

Groovy: Eish sine accident (we have an accident)

Guy2: Accident?

Guy1: usho ukuthi uNgwanas? (You mean that she..)

The second guy laughed..

Guy2: Aii no kuyanyiwa (it's hard)

Guy1: Ya neh yooh

Me: I wanna go home!!

Groovy: Let's not over the act (overreact)

Me: What do you even mean?

Guy2: awuphumi la ne? (you not from around ne)

Guy1: bheka Groovs thothela uNgwanas into yok'gcoka sizoma naye la (Get her something to wear, we will wait here with her)

Groovy: Niyanya kanti!! (Yall are mad)

Guy2: Hau yini manje izinto ezi snax? (what's wrong now)

Groovy: Ningazonya bonyoko!! (swearing)

Guy1: Ai ubale amagama wakho manje (Count your words)

Guy1: ukuthi siyakwazi akusho ukuthi ngeke sikunyathele (just because we know you doesn't mean we can't beat you up)

I was starting to get a bit scared..

Groovy took out a pocket knife..

Me: You have a.. You have a knife?

One of the guys also took out a knife..

Guy1: ayy' phela sizok'bamba nou! (we can hold you down now)

Me: Groovy I wanna go (Crying)

I didn't care that I was wet, this was getting ugly and I didn't wanna be here anymore..

Groovy: Let's go

We started walking away, leaving them behind.

When we got at the door I stopped..

Me: I can't walk in like this.. Please call Niso for me

Groovy: Okay.. Ngiyazwakala (I'm coming)

She walked in..

I stood there shaking like a leaf. My first mind was that I should call my Uncle, but then I will be in a lot of trouble. Groovy went up to him and whispered in his ear, I saw his facial expression changed and he looked straight in my direction. He stood up and came to me..

Him: Are you okay?

Me: I just wanna go

Him: Who were those guys? What happened?

Me: I don't know (Crying)

Groovy came to us..

Him: Okay just stand here with Groovy I'm

coming..

Me: No!!.. I just wanna go

Mongz showed up..

Mongz: Ehh sekwenzakaleni manje? (what happened now)

I grabbed his tshirt..

Me: I wanna go.. Please

He looked at Mongz..

Niso: bheka I'll call you

Mongz: kanti what happened?

Groovy: Eish yila bafana abahluphayo (it's these problematic boys)

Mongz: eish what's going to happen now?

Sizobhelela uSnazo? (should we call Snazo)

Niso: No!!.. I'll handle this

Me: You handling nothing Niso.. Let's just go

Groovy: Le zinja lezi!! (these dogs)

Mongz: Next time we will go somewhere else
sisiza sorry neh?

I nodded..

Niso said his goodbyes to them and then we
walked to the car, I could see that he was
irritated.. He unlocked the car..

Him: Get in

I got in, he went the other way and got in.

Him: Next time when I say I'm handling it, it
means I'm handling it you understand?

Me: I don't like violence Niso

Him: That's rich considering that's the only
language your Uncle understands

Me: Wow.. Okay maybe you should take me
home

He kept quiet, tears streamed down..

Him: Velo I..

Me: Please take me home

Him: Okay

He was really acting like a jerk right now..

–

SNAZO

It was around 22:00, Niso wasn't back. I was starting to get worried. I was in the lounge watching TV, I took out my phone and called him but he didn't pick up. I called his friend Mongz..

Mongz: Snazo

Me: Eyy Mongz

Mongz: Zkhiphani? (What's happening)

Me: bheka maan intwana yam' ayibambi iPhone
(Niso is not answering his phone)

Mongz: Kanti nex uceda ukphuma manje (He

just left)

Me: No stress then

Mongz: Sharp

Me: Sho

I hung up..

–

NOMVELO

My phone rang, I had left it in the car all along while we were in that place. It was Nomsa..

Me: Hello

Her: Velo ukuphi? (where are you)

Me: I'm on my way home

Her: Ya about that there's a problem with our plan

Me: What do you mean?

Her: You will have to sleep out and come back

home at 7am tomorrow

Me: What???

Her: If you want the plan to work you will have to sleep out

Me: What do you mean I will have to sleep out?
Nomsa I don't have anywhere to sleep?

Her: I don't know what you going to do then because if you come back now, JJ is going to see that I was lying and he is going to kill us both so make a plan

Me: Nomsa I.. Hello? Hello?

I looked at my phone..

Me: Dammit!!!

Niso: What's wrong?

Me: I need a.. I need a place to sleep

.

To be continued

No edits

15

NOMVELO

Niso: Wait.. What do you mean you need a place to sleep?

Me: That was the only way I could make our date possible

He exhaled..

Me: And there's one last thing?

Him: What?

Me: I.. I accidentally urinated on myself when we went to urinate outside

He didn't say anything to that comment, just laughed after a few seconds..

Me: It's not that funny.. I'm gonna need to bath can't sleep like this

Nomsa and I we not best of friends I hope she

is not setting me up or else there's going to be heavy consequences, I will make sure that my Uncle leaves her ass!

I don't know what time it was but it was a bit quiet now and very dark, the moon provided a bit of light but the street still remained empty and most parts of it was dark. Looked like almost every house was tucked in..

He locked the gate and then we made our way to the back, I was nervous and scared. If my Uncle could find out about this, he is going to lose it. He unlocked and opened, we made our way in..

Him: My Mother is a heavy sleeper but we will still have to be quiet, my Grandmother often wakes up in the middle of the night to pray

Me: Okay (Whispering)

I followed him as we carefully made our way to his bedroom, I would expect for him to have a

room outside seeing that their house is small. Unfortunately not everything was clear, The Tv was on but the light was off. His Brother was laid on the couch. We stood at the doorway that separated the kitchen from the lounge, I started getting very scared. His Brother is very intimidating..

Niso whispered in my ear..

Him: He passed out on the couch.. Come on
(Whispering)

As we proceeded with our journey, his voice almost made our hearts to drop on the floor..

Nazo: What's with the sneaking?

We stopped and stood there frozen..

He sat up straight..

Nazo: What's going on?

He got up and switched the light on, I swear I didn't expect to see him like that. He was half

naked, only had his briefs on and nothing else. They were very tight, kind of revealed all of him. My eyes were offended a bit, I tried not to focus much on his body..

Nazo: Is that?

He walked over to the couch and got his vest, he then put it on but that didn't do justice on his crotch. Seeing that the vest was not that long...

Nazo: What the hell is going on?

Niso: I can explain

Nazo: You better have a good one

He walked over to us and fear crept in..

Niso: You can go and wait in my room, it's the one with the door wide open

I nodded and left them there. I switched on the light and took my phone out, I had no missed calls, no messages from both Nomsa and my Uncle. I didn't know if I should be relieved or

scared about the whole thing. I sat on his bed..

–

NISO

We went out to talk in his room..

Nazo: what are you doing with JJ's niece?

I didn't have time for this, all I wanted to do was to just sleep. Plus I had a serious headache..

Him: I thought we talked about this!

Me: You talked!

Him: Niso you know that you can have any girl that you want, why her?

Me: Can we do this some other time?

I went to the door..

Him: Eyy! Askaqedi la! (we not done here)

I turned and looked at him again..

Him: You know that I cannot protect you from

JJ

Me: I didn't ask for your protection! I can handle my biz! Been doing that since you were gone

He chuckled..

Him: Entlek ngiyacava ukuthi lento isukaphi
(Now I know where this comes from)

I folded my arms..

Him: You still mad at me for all those times that I've been away

Me: Yeah don't flatter yourself not everything is about you

Him: Niso!!

Me: kahle kahle lendaba iyaphi? (Where is this going)

Him: You might think that you've grown up but you not that much grown up for me to kick your ass! don't push me!

He said that while pointing at me..

Him: Uzoy'shiya phantsi le ngane ka JJ (you will leave JJ's child alone)

I laughed..

Me: No

Him: Angik'buzi.. Ngiyak'tshela (I'm not asking you.. I'm telling you)

Me: I don't have to do anything that you tell me!
You not my Father!

In a matter of seconds his hand was around my neck, pinning me against the door. Defending myself will only elavate the situation further..

He let go of me..

Him: At least do it for your Mother and your Grandmother!! It would kill them if bak'bona ufa njenge Nja! (it would kill them to see you die like a dog)

He went over to get a cigarette..

Him: JJ has no regard for human life! He has no soul! And I'll be dammed if he kills you like you ain't got no dignity! We the Buthelezi boys! We can literally get any girl from around here, she's not the only beautiful girl la esgodini! And she's not worth your life!.. Myeke! (leave her)

—

NOMSA

I was in the bedroom alone, talking on the phone with my Sister..

Her: Aii Sisi kuzoba nzima (Sister it's going to be difficult)

Me: Yini enzima kanti Ntokozo? (what's difficult)

Her: Phela uJJ is not just anyone, maybe he knows that everyone is out to always get him! He is a taxi owner he has enemies! He is always alert

Me: Yey Ntokozo! I don't have time for pathetic

excuses! Yes lomuntu has enemies mara I'm sure he would never expect a hit from his wife

Her: Sisi ngicabanga ukuthi asisale sesiyeka (I think we should leave it)

Me: Asiyeki nex!! (we not giving up)

The door opened..

Me: You know what Mvelo!! Suit yourself! I don't even know why I bothered to call you!! Nx!!

I hung up and threw my phone on the bed

JJ: and then?

I turned and looked at him, he was holding a bottle of whiskey. He didn't look that much drunk though

I sighed..

Me: It's nothing just that uVelo had a fight with Nkuli this other time so uNkuli came during the day and they went out to talk things out but she didn't tell that she was going to sleep over there

He sat down on the bed and I looked at him..

Me: You can call her and yell at her if you don't believe me matter of fact uqale ngo Nkuli!

Mdala kodwa ingcondo ayikho! (start with Nkuli, she's old but she is immature)

He looked at me for a long time, I was starting to get worried..

Him: I believe you.. You and Velo hate each other's guts! I know you would never cover up for her plus uMa did mention something about them fighting

That was a relief..

JJ: I will deal with the situation tomorrow

He put the bottle away and laid back on the bed..

Me: Well then we can have the night to ourselves

I unbuckled his belt. I unzipped his pants and then he held my hand..

Him: Maybe not tonight.. I'm tired

I looked at him. JJ is a bastard! He thinks that I am this naive housewife, I know that he has a mistress around here and he was probably with her that's why he is this dog tired. The sooner I carry out my plan, the better!!..

—

NOMVELO

Niso came back in, by this time I had taken off my Jean and underwear. I had his towel wrapped around my lower body.

I looked at him as his eyes went down to the towel..

Me: I shouldn't have.. We shouldn't have went out, this makes me feel like a skank I can imagine your Grandmother or Mother seeing me then snitching to my Grandmother

Him: My Grandmother is not like that, well my

Mother can do that but my Grandmother is not that type

I sat down on the bed again..

Him: What's wrong?

Me: I don't know but this doesn't feel right

Him: I had a great time and I wouldn't mind doing this again

Me: You mean me sneaking in?

He chuckled..

Him: I mean spending time with you

Me: I must admit that I also had a good time

Him: The hood is not that bed after all?

I shook my head no..

He yawned..

Me: Maybe we shouldn't call it a night

Him: No longer bathing?

Me: I think your towel will do for now

He took one of the pillows and a mini blanket..

Him: I'll take the couch

He kissed me on my cheek..

Him: Night

Me: Night

He walked out..

—

NAZO

3AM

I saw a little girl sitting on the floor crying, she was constantly shaking a woman who was laying on the floor in her own pool of blood. I couldn't see her face, all I could see was from her legs up until her chest that was ripped open, her dress was bloody and torn..

Girl: Mama vuka!! (Mama wake up)

The little girl's cry was very disturbing, I think she had been crying for a long time now because she had hiccups and her tears were mixed with mucous. It was a disturbing scene to see, and it was my first time having this kind of nightmare.

I opened my eyes and rose my head up from the pillow. I was sweating and breathing heavily, my heart was even beating fast. I got out of bed and went to switch on the light, I unlocked and went out. Usually when something like this happens, I go inside the house and watch Tv until I pass out. Unfortunately that plan won't be possible tonight, Niso was passed out on the couch. I looked at him and fixed the blanket. I sat on the other couch and thought for a while when I had the cry again, I looked around. Weird that this would happen while I'm wide awake..

Voice: Mama..

I got up from the couch and followed the voice,

it came directly from Niso's room. I made my way there..

Voice: Mama vuka (Mama wake up)

I slowly opened the door and switched on the light, Nomvelo was tossing and turning while crying..

Her: Mama..

This was not happening, I was starting to get confused..

Her: Mama.. Mama vuka! (Mama wake up)

She kept on tossing and turning while still crying, I then felt a hand on my shoulder. I turned around and it was Niso..

Him: What are you doing?

I looked at Nomvelo again, she was sound asleep in a very unsettling position. The towel she had over partially revealed her intimate area..

Me: I thought I.. I thought I heard her crying sounded more like a nightmare

Niso: Really? All the way from your room?

I looked at him..

Me: Are you trying to accuse me of something?

Him: I was sleeping on the couch, if she was having a nightmare I would've heard her

I closed the door and looked at him..

Me: You think that I would-

There was no point in explaining myself to him, seemed like he already made up his mind about what he saw..

I laughed while shaking my head, I pushed him out of the way and made my way to my room..

Me: Fucken unbelievable!!

.

To be continued

No edits

Excuse any errors if there's any

16

NOMVELO

By 07:00am I was at my Grandmother's place, my Uncle was not around. The first thing I did was to take a bath I needed to take a bath after my incident last night.

My things were already packed, ready to go back home..

Nomsa: So was us lying to your Uncle worth it?

I nodded..

Me: Thank you for covering for me

She sat next to me..

Her: Who is he?

I looked at her..

Her: I risked a lot for you

Me: It's Niso.. MaButhelezi's Grandson

Her: Hmmmm I've only seen him once or twice..
Muhle yena shame (He is handsome)

Me: He is very handsome

Her: So are you guys dating? Whats going on?

Me: We not dating he just asked me out that's
all

Her: Clearly it seems like something might be
initiated along the way my question is are you
ready?

Me: For?

Her: Both of you are from different worlds Velo,
You not hood

Me: Last night I was hood

She laughed..

Her: What about your other boyfriend?

Me: Jacione and I aren't working

Her: You think whatever you have going on with the Niso guy will work?

I shrugged my shoulders..

Me: I like him a lot and I would like to spend more time with him and see

Her: I wanna see how this is going to work out

My phone vibrated..

Me: It's him.. I have to take it

I answered..

Me: Hello

Niso: I'm glad to hear that you still alive

Me: Why would I be dead?

Him: Thought your Uncle would kill you for not sleeping at home

Me: Don't worry about that

Him: Left already?

Me: Not yet.. Are you at home?

Him: On my way to school

Me: Where do you school?

Him: Some college in pta

Me: What a coincinde I school at pta too

Him: And what do you know? Seems like we must see each other more often

Me: I guess so too

Him: I have to go.. I'll check up on you later

Me: Okay.. Enjoy your day

Him: You too

Me: Bye

Him: Bye

Me: At least he checks up on me

Nomsa: This might be serious

Me: Probably.. I really like him

Her: Then go for it, you might never know

Me: You right about there

She stood up..

Her: Let me help Koko with the dishes before we leave

Me: Okay

She opened the door..

Me: Nomsa

She looked at me..

Me: Thank you

She smiled and walked out..

—

NAZO

What happened last night bothered me, can't believe Niso would think such of me but what

bothered me the most was the dream I had.
There has to be a reason why I had that dream..
I knocked in my Grandmother's room..

Her: Come in

I walked in..

Her: Good morning Nazo

Me: Morning

Her: Was just preparing to go to church

Me: on a Monday morning?

Her: Yes we have a morning service for People
who are unemployed and seeking employment,
we pray with them

Me: That's nice

Her: You should come

Me: I have a job.. I'm gonna start soon

Her: More reason to come so you can pray for
your job that the devil doesn't take it away from

you nor interfere

I kept quiet..

Her: What do you have to lose?

Me: My dignity

Her: Your dignity?

Me: Christians are too judgemental the last thing I want is people gossiping about me saying things like "Isgebengu sifunani la" (what does a thug want here)

She chuckled..

Her: You overthink everything

(Silence)

Me: Okay I'll come along only on one condition

Her: I'm listening

Me: How much do you know about JJ's sister?
The one who tragically passed on

Her: Well uMa wakhe is a good friend of mine, I

know enough

Me: Was she buried with her heart?

Her: Funny you should ask.. She wasn't her heart was missing

Me: How old was Nomvelo?

Her: I think 4 or 5 years old

I slowly nodded..

Her: Ubuzelani? (why are you asking)

Me: I think.. I think JJ is somehow involved in her Sister's death. I think He is a ritualist

Her eyes widened then she walked to close the door..

Her: What?

Me: I saw it Ma

Her: You saw it?

Me: Remember how JJ was struggling financially? Then all of a sudden after her

Sister's death seka rich?

Her: His Mom said he just got lucky

Me: You believe that?

Her: Nazo I don't understand her husband was arrested, He butchered her to death

Me: Maybe they both involved. Ma look.. This other time I saw him, his hands were bloody and he also had traces of blood in his mouth then last night I had a dream I saw Nomvelo as a child sitting next to her Mother's lifeless body crying. It cannot be a coincidence

She sat down..

Me: I think he adopted Nomvelo to brainwash her she was the only witness and she could've easily given him away.. Ma it makes sense

Her: Nazo I don't want you telling anyone about this, we don't have proof and JJ is a dangerous person

Me: Niso is the one we should be worried about

She looked at me..

Me: I think he has fallen for Nomvelo, JJ is ruthless and has no regard for human life. I don't want my Brother getting hurt

She exhaled..

Her: Inzima le ndaba (this is difficult)

Me: I'll talk to him

Her: No!!

Me: Ma..

Her: He won't listen to you, He will just think you trying to stand in his way.. When someone is in love they don't wanna hear anything

Me: So what am I supposed to do now? There has to be a reason why I had these visions

Her: That's true but wait for God, the holy spirit will guide you on this matter ungayenzi

ngokwakho

I sighed..

Her: Get my bible from the dressing table and let's go

I went and got her Bible..

–

NISO

The first thing I did when I got to school was to go to Connie's office. She was in and busy with some work..

Me: Hey

She looked at me and then focused on what she was doing..

I made my way in..

Her: What are you doing here?

Me: I'm here to see you

Her: Why?

Me: What do you mean?

Her: I mean you don't call, you don't check up on me and then out of nowhere you just show up in my office

Me: Don't be like that

She looked at Me..

Her: You have met someone haven't you?

I didn't say anything..

Her: Don't even deny it.. I can see it in your eyes

Me: Connie

Her: It's a good thing.. Now I can take my marriage vows serious, it was good while it lasted.. I had fun

Me: I had fun too

Her: I wish you all the best, I hope that she will make you happy

Me: Yeah I hope so

Her: Good bye Niso

Me: Bye

–

NAZO

I seriously didn't wanna be here right now, I felt some type of way..

Me: Ma maybe I should go

Her: Don't be crazy

She held my hand and we made our way in.

They were up on their feet and singing, it wasn't full I think they were about 8 or 10..

"Mawungange dluli Jesu.. Yizwa amazwi ami, lapho ubabiza abanye. Mawungizwe nam"

We went and sat down, well I sat down and my Grandmother sang along..

I looked around and felt like I didn't belong here, this is not Me. This is definitely not where I

should be. I am sure some of these people know me, they know what I'm about and they definitely going to judge me..

After the song they sat down and started praying, I just looked down. Out of everyone that was praying I heard one voice that was in despair, a voice that was accompanied by great pain. A broken soul that had suffered for a long time..

"Beloved.."

I cleared my throat..

"Beloved.."

I looked around and looked at my Grandmother..

She leaned over and whispered to me..

Her: Show some respect and close your eyes

Nazo

I closed my eyes. The voice persisted..

"Beloved.."

I didn't know what to say..

"Beloved.. I know you can hear me"

I was in a more peaceful and calm state, I couldn't hear the voices that were praying I only heard the one that was gently talking to me..

Me: I can hear you (Whispering)

I didn't know where that came from..

Voice: "There's someone that we have to help"

I swallowed..

Voice: "She has lived a life of disappointment that even when something good is bound to happen, the spirit of disappointment takes over therefore preventing her break through. She has little trust in me and my word"

In that instant I had a clear vision of who was being talked about, a girl sitting in the first row. The voice that stood out from everyone that was accompanied by pain..

Voice: "She comes from a disadvantaged background, she's the only one at home who was able to get a matric certificate. She did short courses and has been seeking employment ever since, every post that comes her way and she applies they reject her only because of her timid faith"

Me: I don't understand

Voice "You have to go up to her and hold her by her hand. Tell her that it shall be done for her according to her faith, tell her to have faith even though she thinks there's no reason to have faith anymore because of the disappointments she has encountered. Then tell her to meditate on Mark 11 verse 22-24, it will be done according to her faith"

I opened my eyes and a few others were still praying.. I looked at the girl and immediately dated back to the Nandos incident where that woman lost her life because I forfeited helping

her in time.

I stood up and weak as my legs were, they took me to her. I sat next to her..

Me: Hi

This was awkward..

She opened her eyes and looked at me very confused..

Me: uhm please give me your hand

She gave me a confused look..

Me: Please

She gave me her hand.. Close your eyes.

She did..

Me: "It shall be done for me according to my faith" affirm those words when the spirit of disappointment tries to take over, every night before you sleep affirm those words and also when you wake up. Also read Mark 11 verse 22-

24. Meditate on that for the whole week, then Sunday you will have a testimony

She was breathtaken, a cry of sorrow came from deep down as she started trembling. I only told her what I was being told by the voice..

Me: "It is done according to your faith"

I then let go of her hand and walked out completely as her cries got louder, I don't know what was happening..

.

To be continued

No edit

17

SNAZO

2 WEEKS LATER

Work has been physically tiring I never thought that working in construction would require soo

much physical strength, but I am trying to adapt and get used to everything. It's not like I have a choice I need this job. Everything has been going well until something happened about 3 days ago, something that questioned my sanity. I was in the boss'office while he was outside with his partner talking, I happened to have saved his life in that past 3 days. Saved his life in a miraculous way. The bush had a few trees that needed to be uprooted and taken down, risks were said to have been calculated and precautions were taken but unfortunately the unthinkable almost happened. The biggest tree that was taken down was meant to fall on Mr Lubisi and bring about his untimely death, but because of his Wife who prays without ceasing that incident was revealed to me in a vision and I was able to save his life. It wasn't his time yet therefore Heaven couldn't have him die prematurely his wife's prayers of protection saved him. It's amazing how his life was spared

because of his wife, whilst he is a non-believer. His death could've been an unexplainable pain to his wife who is currently pregnant with their second baby..

I do get visions every now and then, I help people were I can but I haven't stepped foot at church nor prayed or even read the bible. The last time I was at church was that day when I went with my Grandmother, after that I never went again. I am still struggling to come into terms with everything that's happening to me, this is a life that I cannot accept. I am who I am and I am not willing to change. I cannot go from being a thug to being a saint, I mean who would wanna be spiritually led by an ex con? Who would believe an ex con talking about God? It's not me. It's totally not me..

The door opened and Mr Lubisi walked in with his partner. I was a bit uneasy with the whole situation, the last thing I want is for them to

think that I am insane..

Mr L: Relax you not in trouble

Me: Then why am I here?

Partner: We brought in the best safety management to this site and we were assured that everything was good especially with the vehicles we use around here, people who operate them have been well trained. They have certificates and unbelievable experience

Mr L: What my partner is trying to say is that if it wasn't for you, I wouldn't be here today and this project would be considered a hazard and closed down. Not only did you save my life but you saved us a lot of money that we invested in this project

Me: It's nothing really

Partner: It's something because from the witnesses they said that you were the only one with a 3rd eye, no one saw what was going to

happen

Mr L: The phone call that came through distracted me that I shifted and stood in an area that could've brought about my fatal death, I wasn't even supposed to be in that area to begin with

Partner: This story has a lot of loose ends, it doesn't make sense and I'm finding it hard to believe it

Me: Seems more to me like you not happy that your Partner made it

Partner: What are you insinuating?

Me: Nothing.. If I am done here I would like to go back to work

Mr Lubisi took out an envelope and handed it to me..

Me: What is this?

Mr L: A little thank you it's R5000

Partner: We not bribing you to keep quiet but..

I extended my hand to take it..

"Beloved don't take it"

I retracted my hand back..

Me: Thank you but I was just doing my job..
Anyone could've seen the accident

I stood up..

Me: If there's nothing further to discuss I would like to get back to my work

Mr L: Of course

I left them there.. His partner is right I was a bit far from the accident, Mr Lubisi was just trying to protect me with everything that he was saying in there but in actual fact there's no logical explanation to what happened, I was far from the area and yet I saw what was going to happen very clear that I stopped it in time

Shine: And?

Me: Ak'na nex (There's nothing)

Shine: But tshela mina ke, vele ubone kanjani?
(tell me how did you see what was going to happen)

Me: It was just a hunch

Shine: A what??

Voice: Mfana waka Buthelezi

Shine and I stopped, we both turned around at the same time..

Security: Aww' unesivakashi la (You have a visitor)

It was that girl from church, how the hell did she find me? Shine whistled..

Shine: Ntwana aw'ringi nok'ringa ukuthi unes'ncazana (You don't even tell that you have a girlfriend)

I walked up to them..

Her: Hi

She was holding a Tupperware and juice..

I looked at the security guard..

Me: Ngiyabonga Baba (Thank you)

Security: Niyajabula Nina abanilethela iLunch emsebenzini (you are so lucky to be brought lunch at work)

He walked away, I looked around..

Her: Sorry for just showing up like this

She was wearing a long that didn't have sleeves and sandals, her dress was dope it was maroon in colour and had green flowers all over it

Me: How did you find me?

Her: Well.. Your Grandmother

Me: How did I not think of that

Her: We talked at church last week Sunday

after someone had told me that you are her
Grandson

She was pretty, just your ordinary girl from next
door..

Her: I actually brought you some lunch

I looked at the Tupperware..

Her: I just wanted to thank you.. After what you
told me I.. I received a call from one of the
companies that I applied too and they said that
the girl who intially got the job didn't show up so
I was the best second candidate and they re-
interviewed me, I got the job

Me: That's good to hear but still you shouldn't
have came here

Her: I know and I'm truly sorry.. I'll just go

She turned around and then walked away..

Me: Wait..

She stopped..

Me: It's my lunchtime so maybe we can find somewhere and sit

She smiled..

–

NOMVELO

Niso and I have been seeing each other for a while now, we would meet up after our last classes and hang out or at times we would bunk just to spend time with each other. He calls every night, we text each other a lot and I really enjoy spending time with him. He is a lot of fun, we both do things that we like well more of what I like. I can say that we trying to accept and be part of each other's worlds. Last he took me to that ratchet place and last weekend we had a picnic, did something that I liked. At first he wasn't very happy with the situation but then we ended up having a great time. My current relationship is better than the previous one, Yes

I decided to call it quits with Jacione. Niso told me that today his Mother and Grandmother would be leaving for a week, a relative of theirs passed on and that they will be back after the funeral. We had decided that I would come and visit for at least 3 days, I won't miss classes though I'll drive to school every morning.

Fortunately my Grandmother doesn't know my car that well and people from around there don't really know me that much, especially since I haven't been in the hood, in a very a long time. It's not like I'll be parading the hood, I'll be indoors and at school most of the time. My friend Power had to come in and cover for me, we didn't do well on our last project so I came clean to my Uncle about my marks and I lied that we were given a second chance to re-design everything and I told him that I'll be sleeping over at Power's place for the next three days. My Uncle being over protective at times and slightly annoying he went with me to

check out Power's place, I have never seen Power this much nervous. She's going to give us away..

Me: It's a pretty safe place

He looked around with his hands in his pockets..

Him: I still don't know why she can't sleep over at our house

Me: You promised that you will accept the fact that I'm growing up.. Have I given you any reason not to trust me?

He looked at me and I looked at him, breaking eye contact would alert him that I'm lying. He uses the eye contact strategy a lot thinking that I don't know it..

Him: Okay fine.. I guess three days won't hurt

Me: Just three days that's all

Power: This project means a lot to us, we the

only group that has the lowest mark, it's actually embarrassing

She was going overboard now with the exaggeration..

Uncle: Guess I'll see you after three days

Me: Thank you for allowing me to come here

Him: Hope I won't regret it

Me: You won't

He came and hugged me..

Him: Take care of yourself, I love you

Me: I love you too

Him: You have money right?

Me: I'm okay.. We okay

He looked at Power..

Him: Well I'll leave you ladies to it

I accompanied him to the door..

Him: Bye

Me: Bye

He opened and then walked out, I closed the door. Power exhaled very loud..

Power: Your Uncle is very intimidating

Me: I know

Her: Please don't put me in that position ever again

Me: Thank you for covering for me

She came and hugged me..

Her: Please be safe

Me: I will

–

SNAZO

Me: The sandwichss are very nice

Her: Thank you..

Along the conversation she told me that her name is Mantwa..

Me: You very well spoken, where did you grow up?

Her: Let's just say English was my favourite subject at school.. You well spoken too

Me: I try

She laughed. Her short hair really went well with her pretty face..

Me: So when are you starting?

Her: Tomorrow I'll be working as a PA

Me: So you going to be someone's skivvy how sweet

Her: It's not that bad (laughing)

Me: If you say so

Her: Can I ask you something?

Me: Yeah sure..

Her: Are you a prophet?

I started coughing..

Her: Sorry.. Are you okay?

Me: Ya ng'sharp

(Silence)

Me: I'm not a prophet

Her: Your Grandmother said that you a h..

Me: My Grandmother makes a conversation out of everything

Her: I don't know what you are but.. Whatever gift you have, it's very special. You don't know how much you have helped me and my family

Me: By making you someone's skivvy?

She laughed again..

Her: However you want to call it

I looked at the time..

Me: I have to go back to work.. Thanks for the sandwiches

Her: It was nothing

Me: I'll walk you to the gate

She took the Tupperware from me..

–

JJ

I got home and called Danger to come to my study, I poured myself a glass of whiskey..

Me: Khona into eng'funa ungenzele yona
(There's something I want you to do for me)

Him: Ngilalele (I'm listening)

Me: I want you to tail Nomvelo for me

Him: Sorry?

Me: I think Nomvelo is lying to me about her whereabouts, she is acting very strange lately so I want you to tail her

Him: What makes you think she is lying?

I looked at him..

Me: I've raised Nomvelo since from she was 4 years old she's like a Daughter to me and I know when she's lying

Him: I will try and tail her

Me: Good!! You can go back to work now

.

To be continued

18

NOMVELO

Love becomes a beautiful feeling especially when you in love with the right person, never in my life had I thought that I would fall in love with someone so ordinary and be comfortable with the feeling. Niso is an amazing person, the more I spend time with him the more I wanna be with him in every way..

We were laying on the couch or more like he was laying on the couch and I was laying on top of him, we were talking about random things with baby kisses here and there. His hands were running circles around my butt, it was a beautiful moment..

Me: I love you

He perked my lips..

Him: I love you too

As we were having our moment there we heard a knock at the door, at first we tried to ignore it but the person wasn't giving up..

Niso: let me get that

I got off him and he got up to go and answer the door, I heard him speaking to someone..

Niso: Velo

I got up from the couch and made my way to the kitchen and to my greatest shock it was

Danger, I immediately got scared because if he was here then that means my Uncle might be around too..

Me: Danger??

Him: Velo

Me: Wha..What are you doing here?

He looked at me..

Him: Uyazi velo (He knows Velo)

I shook my head no..

Him: He does know that you here but he knows and has been suspecting that you lied to him

Me: Gosh! I thought I had this one in the bag

Him: I don't know what lie I'm going to tell him but I need to know why you here, even though it's obvious

I looked at Niso..

Me: I came to visit my boyfriend

He looked at Niso..

Danger: Hau sow'jola elokshini (you now dating in the hood)

Me: Something like that

He laughed and shook Niso's hand..

Him: Zithini ndoda (how are you)

Niso: Ang'rasi (I'm not saying anything)

Danger looked at the time..

Danger: Ithi ngihambe (Let me go)

Me: Thank you danger for warning me but what are you going to tell him?

Danger: leave that to me

Me: Thank you

Danger: Take care of yourself

Me: I will

Danger: Champ take care of her

Niso: I will

He walked out and I exhaled..

Niso: Your Uncle seems obsessed with you

Me: You can say that

He made his way to me and kissed me..

Him: Are you sure he's not gonna come in through that door and strangle me?

I laughed..

Me: Danger is going to cover for me don't worry

Him: In that case then.. Let's have fun

He picked me up and we walked out of the kitchen..

—

NAZO

After work Shine and I went to get a few beers then after we called it a night. I was very tired all I needed was my bed and nothing more..

I unlocked my bedroom and put my things on the bed then I made my way to the house, from the kitchen to the lounge I heard some talking and giggling. I stood at the doorway and looked at them all lovey dovey on the couch, I cleared my throat. As soon as they saw me standing there their little love party came to an end. Niso got up first and he helped her to get up by offering her his hand for support, I made my way in..

Me: Kwenzakalani? (What's going on)

Niso: Nothing much

(Silence)

Niso: Nazo I want you to meet Nomvelo not as an ordinary person but she's.. She's now my girlfriend

I looked at her as she was scared..

Niso: I'm sure you know my Brother

She nodded..

I extended my hand to her..

She looked at it and looked at Niso, Niso nodded and she extended hers to me..

We shook hands and immediately I had a disturbing vision..

-VISION-

I was standing in the middle of an unfamiliar room and environment pointing a gun at Nomvelo whom I felt soo much anger and resentment against, not even those tears moved me..

JJ: Let's all..

Me: Another step and I'm going to blow her brains out

The room remained quiet once more..

..

Niso: Nazo!!

I retracted my hand back

Niso: Are you good man?

I looked at Nomvelo..

Me: Yeah uhm lemme talk to you for a sec

Him: Ya sure

He kissed her on her forehead..

Niso: I'll be back

She nodded..

We went to talk outside..

Niso: I know what you going to say

Me: How serious is it?

Him: Very serious.. I have never felt this way about any girl before

I looked at him..

Him: I'm for real Nazo.. I love her

(Silence)

Me: If something could happen to you..

Him: Nothing is going to happen to me.. I got this, I'm not a kid anymore you have to trust me that I can take care of myself

Me: I trust you

Him: For real?

Me: Yeah for real

He seems to dig this girl a lot, but I'm worried about him. I'm worried that their relationship is going to start a war that's going to shed a lot of blood, I don't know if I will be able to go against JJ..

—

DANGER

JJ: Whiskey?

He handed me the glass and I took it..

Him: So what did you find

I looked at the glass..

Me: You were right..

Him: I knew it

Me: But it's not that big

Him: So she's with a guy?

Me: No she's with her friend but I saw that good for nothing soccer player boyfriend of his at the flat

JJ: She's still messing with him?

Me: It seems more.. Think whilst she's staying at her friends house she's occasionally going to see him

He exhaled..

Me: So what's the way forward?

Him: I want you to get all the information that you can get about him, if someone is going to

be dating my baby girl I want to know that he's clean

Me: I'll do that

I gulped down the whiskey..

Me: Good night

Him: Night

—

NAZO

After having a smoke I went back inside the house to make myself something to eat, Velo was at the kitchen..

Her: Sorry I'll give you some space

Me: It's fine.. Where is Niso?

Her: He is bathing

Me: For how long are you going to stay here for?

Her: Just 3 days

Me: Your Uncle?

Her: Already sorted with him

(Silence)

Me: Let's cut to the chase.. I want you to leave my brother alone

She didn't respond to that..

Me: I think we both know how your Uncle is.. So I want you to leave him alone before you get him hurt

Her: I have noticed that you don't really like me and.. I'm sorry that you feel that way about me but, I love your Brother and I really wanna be with him

Me: We both know that's not possible

Her: Good night

I grabbed her arm..

Me: Velo I don't think..

I had another vision..

-VISION-

I tossed and turned then stretched my hand to my side, that side of the bed was empty. I lifted my head up and looked around, it was dark in the bedroom and she wasn't next to me. I panicked. I got out of bed and made my way out of the bedroom. I started from the bathroom searching for her until I found her sitting in the living room, she was rocking herself back and forth on the nursery chair busy humming. She was sitting in total darkness only the moon provided partial light that came through the curtain..

I made my way to her, she was holding on to the teddy bear for dear life..

I crouched in front of her and put my hand on her thigh..

Her: I don't wanna fight

I took her hand kissed it..

Me: I know

Her: I don't wanna talk to you or anyone else...
I'm tired Nazo I don't wanna feel like this
anymore

Me: I know

She wiped her tears with her other hand. I
kissed her small hand..

Me: How about you come back to bed and I
promise you that we won't talk or fight.. I just
wanna hold you that's all

She looked at me...

Her: You won't say anything?

Me: I won't say anything.. I promise

I got up..

Me: Come let's go

I helped her to get up, tried to take the teddy

bear from her but she didn't want..

Her: Don't!!!.. It's the only thing that.. It's the only thing that keeps me close to him

Me: Okay I understand.. I'm sorry

I led her to the bedroom, I opened the duvet and helped her to get in..

I kissed her on the cheek..

Me: I love you Velo

Her: Please don't.. If you did you would've saved him for me

She squeezed the teddy bear..

Me: V..

Her: You said you won't say anything.. Please just leave me alone Nazo

..

Velo: Ouch you hurting me!

I let go of her arm..

Velo: What is wrong with you?

She walked away while rubbing her arm..

Me: It cannot be!

I was confused..

.

To be continued

No edits

Excuse my absentia haven't been feeling well since from yesterday, but I hope I'll be better later today after consulting

19

SNAZO

I looked at the time and I was late, I didn't think that my flight was going to delay that much. I walked in while holding my jacket, hospitals are always complicated. At first you don't know were to go but thanks heavens for the reception.

I made my way there and the lady behind the counter, she seemed heavily occupied by the files scattered around in her work station..

Me: Good evening

Her: Good evening

She didn't even look at me..

Me: I think I'm lost

Her: Go next to the elevator there's a map of the hospital you will find your way

Me: Mam' I don't think you understand, it's an emergency

Her: Aren't they all?

Me: If you would kindly..

Her: Look Sir!!

She looked up in frustration and she didn't expect to see my face..

Her: Ohw my word I am so sorry I didn't know I...

Me: It's okay

Her: I feel soo ashamed and embarrassed

Me: Don't beat yourself about it, I understand that working with a lot of people and being on your feet almost the whole day can be frustrating

Her: But that's no excuse.. I'm truly sorry

Me: We all humans after all.. I am looking for the maternity ward, my wife was brought in earlier today?

Her: I can call and have one of the nurses to come and get you

Me: That won't be necessary I just wanna know the floor.. I'm sure I can find my way around

Her: 5th floor

Me: Thank you

I left her there and went to the elevator. My Mom called me a few hours ago, I'm sure that I

missed the birth of my son...

When I got there I saw Gugu sitting at the corridor, she stood up when she saw me and I made my way to her..

Me: my flight delayed

I didn't like the look on her face..

Me: Is everything okay?

She sighed..

Me: Gugu what's wrong?

Her: They have tried to detect the baby's heartbeat ever since we got here and.. They even put her on some monitor to make sure that..

Me: I spoke to her on the phone in the morning and she said she was feeling some cramps

Her: It's very complicated Nazo

Me: What's complicated?

I made my way to the ward..

Her: Wait..look she's not in a good state of mind

Me: More reason to be in there

Her: She thinks that Niso did this

I stopped.. I turned around and looked at her..

Her: She still blames herself on what you and her did to him, she thinks that it's him and she.. She thinks he is around here.....

I opened my eyes to the sound of rain, it was raining hard. I rose up from the pillow blinked a few times, just to make sure that I was awake from that dream. I don't know what's happening, I don't why I keep on having these dreams and visions about Me and Nomvelo. It can't be that a girl might get in between me and my brother, I don't understand the visions because I am not even in love with this girl at all. She is not my type and seems way too young for me plus I don't like her family. I can't get it on with my

Nkuli's cousin but most of all I would never steal nor betray my Brother like that..

I wish my Grandmother could come back home already so that she can explain to me what's going on. I went and switched on the light, I looked for the pack of my cigarettes and a lighter..

—

NOMVELO

He made the soreness a bit better, his tongue was soothing around that area. I actually enjoy being muffed, the pleasure becomes 10 times more nicer. It was raining outside, it has been raining for a while now and it was still dark. The last time I checked the time it was around 4am. He came back up and kissed me, we kissed for a while until he made his way in again. It was sore, condoms have never been pleasant the soreness is actually from last night...

Me: Awww (Whispering)

Playing it safe is always better than having regrets later on..

He was very gentle which made things easier, I tried not to concentrate much on the pain but the pleasure of it all..

Him: I love you

Me: I love you too

–

NOMSA

Danger is always here very early in the morning, not only is he JJ's puppy but he is also one of our drivers....

Me: Here are the keys

Him: Thank you

JJ has a place were he keeps all his taxis except for the one that Danger drives, that one

is always parked in our yard and Danger has to come collect the keys every morning. I wonder why JJ keeps such a close eye on Danger..

Danger: uJJ ulele? (JJ is still sleeping)

Me: Ya.. He had too much whiskey last night

Him: Okay.. Let me go I will see you later

He walked to the door and his wallet fell, I went and picked it up for him before he could..

Me: Eyy uphatha iWallet kodwa awuna Mali
(You carry a wallet but you don't have money)

Him: It's now a habit.. Thank you

He tried to take it from me but I retracted my hand back..

Me: Kuna malini vele la? (How much do you have in here)

Him: Skwiza akuna nex (There's nothing)

I opened it and I found something that was

more interesting than money, he had a picture of Nomvelo in his wallet when she was very young. The same picture that we have of her in the living room..

He snatched the wallet from me..

Me: Wenzani nge'sthombe sika Velo? (What are you doing with Velo's picture)

He kept quiet..

Me: Danger what is going on? Ungang'tsheli nje ukuthi uyilabo baba abasile abathanda abantwana abancane (Don't tell me that you one of those naughty old men who are in love with Young girls)

Danger: Ngeke ngiyiyenze into enjalo (I would never do that)

Me: Manje? (so)

He kept quiet..

Me: weh Danger awukhulume bo!! (Danger talk)

Him: akukho nex Skwiza uVelo sengamthatha njengo mntwana wam' (There's nothing wrong, I take Velo as my own child now)

I laughed..

Me: Sizahleka kanti vele ungu mntwana wakho (We would laugh only to find out that she is your Daughter)

He looked down..

Me: What?? Danger No!!

Him: Shhhhh..

Me: Nomvelo is..

Danger: Skwiza stay away from matters that don't concern you

He walked away leaving me all shocked and speechless..

—

NOMVELO

Niso was being very clingy..

Me: Unlike you I have classes today

He kissed me on my neck..

Him: Can't you bunk? Just for today plus it's raining

Me: No unfortunately I can't bunk

I walked out of the bedroom and he followed me..

Him: So exactly how is this 3 days of you being here supposed to go?

Me: Niso.. Stop it

He kissed me..

Me: Exactly how is the bathing around here?

Him: A lot different from how you rich people do it?

Me: Us rich people?

Him: You rich people

He arched my back and was busy licking me all over..

Me: Stop it you very disgusting (laughing)

Him: That's how we bath around here

Me: Babe stop it!! (laughing)

He stopped I started wiping my face..

Me: You soo childish do you know that?

Him: A little bit of fun never killed anyone

Me: Now I'm covered in spit!

Him: Trust me you won't die

He kissed me on the cheek..

Him: Plug in the kettle while I go take a piss

Me: Okay

He actually went outside in this weather to take a piss..

I took the kettle and filled it up with water then

went and plugged it, I didn't wanna go to school anymore but then I can't do my team like that..

The door opened...

Me: That was quick

I turned around and it was his Brother, my heart dropped down to my knees. I don't know why I'm scared of him, well anyone would be scared of him. He looks very intimidating. I had on Niso's tshirt, it was short and I felt naked in his presence. He looked at me and I don't know but I saw irritation in his eyes, was almost as if like my presence was boring him to the core. He looked at me from head to toe then shook his head and walked out again banging the door behind him which freaked me out...

.

To be continued

No edits

Diamond fans I will keep you posted about the page when I'm able to access it back again

20

NOMVELO

Niso drove to me to school that morning with my car, he offered to drive and pick me up since he didn't have any classes today. Being in love with someone and then having the person love you back the same way is a beautiful thing, our relationship recently started but the love shared is something I cannot fully put into words. In my whole life I never knew that there could be something that could be beyond money and I had everything but this, what I have with Niso is truly amazing. Though we're still finding our way in life together I foresee a lot of external forces coming between us, the very first one being my Uncle I am not sure if he is going to be keen with everything. His family looks like they won't be very happy with our relationship,

especially since his Brother is starting to give me a bit of an attitude. He is making it clear that he doesn't like me..

Niso: For someone who talks a lot, you awfully quiet

I turned and looked at him..

Him: What's wrong?

Me: Do you think your Brother likes me?

Him: Where does that come from?

Me: I don't know I just feel some vibe with him, not a good one

Him: Snazo has always been there for me and he has always had my back, I think he is worried that our relationship might get me hurt. Your Uncle is not the nicest person in the world and you're his pride

Me: I know that our relationship is a great risk and I wouldn't want to to see you get hurt

especially since the other day what you and your Brother did to me and my cousin

Him: Ya that was messed up but he would be more messed up if he holds that against me, it wasn't that deep

Me: Not to my Uncle

Him: Hey we going to make it.. We going to be fine.. Yes he might act up and everything but when he realizes how much we into each other I am sure that he will accept our relationship

Me: I hope so because I am very happy with you
He smiled..

Him: Everything is going to be okay

–

SNAZO

We were informed beforehand that when the weather is like this we shouldn't come to work but here I was getting a call to come in for

some meeting, and to my surprise I was the only one called in. Mr Lubisi wasn't there meaning his Partner lied to get me here, he said on the phone that they both wanted to see me about some urgent matter. I was welcomed in by some guy holding a gun, and Mr Lubisi's partner Frank was sitting at the table..

Frank: Please sit

He pointed at the chair..

Me: I would rather stand

Him: Have it your way

Me: I thought Mr Lubisi would be here too

Him: Ya I lied about that to get you here

Me: Obviously this is not a formal meeting so..
What do you want?

Him: The question should be what do you want?

Me: I don't understand

Him: I don't believe for a second that you an ordinary employee here, there's something that you here for so what is it?

Me: I don't know what you talking about

Him: This project is going to make me a lot of money and I would be damned if someone sabotaged me

Me: Why would I wanna sabotage you? I am just another dude trying to provide for my family

He gulped down the whiskey from his glass..

Him: The accident

Me: I already told you about that

Him: Yes you did but your story doesn't make sense! Unless of course you psychic and you saw the accident before it happened but I don't think someone like you would possess such powers

His goon laughed..

Frank: Another explanation could be that you planning on sabotaging me.. Who sent you? Who do you work for?

Me: From how I see it I saved you a lot of money and a lawsuit

He looked at me for a while..

Him: I sure hope so because if you lying to me..

His goon cocked the gun..

Frank: I will take eliminate you from the face of the earth.. Know that I will be watching you closely Son

A person can't even have a normal job without someone being in my face and thinking the worst of me..

—

NOMSA

I was pacing up and down at the kitchen while checking the time..

The door opened and he walked in..

Me: It's about time

Danger: Why did you call me here? I don't want your Husband thinking that we having an affair and that I'm skipping work to come and sleep with you

Me: Yeka ukuba nehaba (stop exaggerating)

Danger: Ufunani? (what do you want)

Me: About earlier this morning.. Danger I am confused

Him: There's nothing to be confused about!

Vele nje uyiyeke (Just leave it)

Me: JJ had always said that Nomvelo's father is the one who killed his Sister and was arrested so what I don't understand is how you and him became best of friends when you got out after being arrested for killing his own Sister, the JJ I know would've fed you to the dogs

He kept quiet..

Me: Unless there's more to the story than what you letting on

Him: Nomsa just leave it please

Me: I can't leave it.. Does Velo even know?

Him: No!!.. Nomvelo can never know who I am

Me: Then you better start talking

Him: Noma out of all People you know how dangerous your husband is and I don't want you getting hurt.. Now you playing with fire

Me: Danger this man is raising your own child right in front of your eyes, he has filled Nomvelo with all sorts of lies about you!

Him: It's better this way.. All I want is my Daughter to have a better future and JJ will provide that for her

Me: Danger what happened? You didn't do it right? You didn't kill her?

He kept quiet...

Me: Why did you take the fall for something that you didn't do?

Him: That night.. That night I came back home to find my wife laying on the floor in her own pool of blood, she.. She was brutally murdered stabbed repeatedly and she was missing her heart. Her heart was not there and my Daughter was sitting next to her crying If I called the cops I would've still been arrested because that night she was leaving me, our marriage was hanging in the balance of failure because of my mistakes. The best thing I could do was to run and I did until JJ called me and told me that if I turn myself in he will take care of my daughter

I saw tears in his eyes..

Him: I had to think about Nomvelo's future

Me: I am so sorry Danger

Him: I lost everything.. I lost my wife and my Daughter that night. The best thing I could do now is raise my Daughter this way

I felt tears coming..

Him: JJ did it.. He killed his own Sister and sacrificed her heart for riches, he ate his own sister's heart and you think that he won't kill you? Nomsa that man is dangerous not only will he come after you but he will come after your kids too, just leave this matter alone! JJ is heartless and dangerous

–

JJ

"JJ is heartless and dangerous" I ran the tape again...

"JJ is heartless and dangerous"

Being a person like me it's very difficult to trust people, and my wife has always been someone

that I failed to trust. Nomsa has always been dodgy so I installed a few cameras in my house to keep tabs on her.

I heard a knock at the door..

Me: Come in

The door opened and he walked in, I closed my laptop..

Me: Thank you for coming Stokies

Him: Sho bhoza yam'

Stokies is working for me just another useless guy I got from the hood..

Me: I need you to do two things for me

Him: Ng'lalele (I am listening)

Me: I want you to hijack my wife and shoot her

Him: Yooh bhoza ang'kaze ngashaya ispani esiso (I have never did something like this)

Me: Wasn't you can ask your friends to help, you

going to pocket a lot from this job

Him: Sure bhoza..

Me: I will give you the details

Him: Akuna stress (there's no stress)

Me: So uzoy' phusha nobani le job? (who are you going to do this with)

Him: Khona uKnoxman wam' mara nje wena naye niye naba nesmoko nyana (I have someone but you and him had an altercation)

Him: Usho lomfana waka Buthelezi? (You mean that Buthelezi boy)

He nodded..

Him: Aii yena uyay'shaya iJob ng'funde kuye (he does get the job well done, I learnt from him)

Me: Talk to him and convince him, ask him how much is he going want from this then give me a call

Him: Sure bhoza

He opened the door and walked out..

.

To be continued

No edits

21

SNAZO

Me: "Put on all the Armour that God gives you, so that you will be able to up against the Devil's evil tricks. For we are not fighting against..."

I closed the Bible..

Mantwa: What's wrong?

Me: I know you mean well but akusiyizinto zam' lezi (this is not my thing)

Mantwa stopped by at my house after work to check up on me, my Grandmother's orders. My

Grandmother has really taken an interest in this girl not that I am complaining she seems like a nice girl, but Nkuli was also like this when I met her too. I looked at the pot in the stove..

Mantwa: I'll check it

She found me preparing to cook then she took over, what I like most about her is her humble spirit, she's very polite, has the most beautiful smile that I have ever seen and she seems well grounded too..

Me: Sorry about my Grandmother she can be a bit too much sometimes

Her: It's okay I don't mind

Me: I do mind a bit.. The last thing I want is your boyfriend busting in through that door

She laughed...

Her: You lucky that won't happen because I don't have a boyfriend

Me: How come?

Her: Long story

Me: I'm not going anywhere

She turned and looked at her..

Her: Let's say there was too much pain in my last relationship and too much lies, I haven't been able to find the strength nor the heart to go through that again in another relationship hence I remained single

Me: I'm sorry about that

Her: It's okay.. And you? Any girl that's going to walk through that door and wipe the kitchen floor with my butt?

I chuckled..

Me: No.. You have nothing to worry about

We had a knock at the door..

Me: I'll get it

I went to open and it was Stokies..

Him: Wola mpintshi yam' (Greetings my friends)

He pushed through and made his way in, he whistled when he saw Mantwa..

Him: Entlek bathini? Am I disturbing something?

Me: No you not

I put my hands in my pockets..

Me: Ubekwa yini la? (What brings you here)

Him: Athi siringe (let's go and talk)

I looked at Mantwa...

Me: gimme 5

I walked out and he followed me..

Him: Sebak'shayisa isingamla vele? (Now you forced to speak English)

It had stopped raining but it was still cloudy..

Him: Asizidle ngendaba eStraight, eSerious!

(Let's talk about something serious)

I leaned against the wall and he did too..

Me: Ringa (Talk)

Him: Cava ke kune bhoza efuna ng'mshayele
iJob eSerious (There's someone who wants me
to do something for him)

Me: Ja?

Him: Ahh akusiyinto eneStress, ukudlala
ngamatayera kphela (It's not something that's
stressful, it's hijacking)

Me: so ukureva iKar ak'na stress? (that's not
stressful)

Him: sothola imali egrand (we will get good
money)

I sighed..

Me: Ntwana baceda ukung'dedela nou ufuna
ngiye phakathi futhi? (they just released me, you
want me to go back in again)

Him: No Ntwana moss that time bak'thatha bekuyistory esihlukile (That time when you got arrested it was a different story)

Me: Stokies I'm not preparing myself to go back

Him: fede grand wena no shine ning'valele ngaphandle, manje uwufuni nokung'ceda ngalespani? (You and Shine excluded me now you don't even wanna help me with this job"

Me: Stokies ngizocava ngo past (I'll see you)

I made my way back to the house..

Him: Tsek uyabheda!

Me: K'bheda wena!

—

NOMSA

I was still shocked at what Danger told me, I don't even know why I was shocked because that's expected from JJ. He is a heartless bastard!!! My sister was around, Ntokozo and I

have to go forward with the plan JJ has to go!
He has hurt a lot of people so he has to go..

Ntokozo: Yazi kodwa uzombulala then what?
Yonke into iwela kunoMvelo (You going to kill
him then what, everything goes to Nomvelo)

Me: Sishadile phela (we married) sashada in
community of property

He drank her rooibos..

Her: Mntaka Ma mina angazi (I don't know
Sister)

Me: Uzothola phela nawe iShare (You will get a
share)

Her: Phela uJJ wu Sathane uqobo, ukuba
kwakhe nje in a room for 10min umzimba
uyashukuma (JJ is Satan himself, with him in
the room for 10min you even get goose bumps)

Me: awuyeke ukunga iscefe! (stop being a
nuisance)

Her: Manje sizohamba nini? (when will we go)

Me: Tomorrow morning

Her: I hope it works out Mntaka Ma..

Me: It has too

–

SNAZO

Mantwa: Your friend looks scary

Me: He does but he is a good dude

She went back to eating her food..

Me: Your company is not bad at all

She smiled..

Maybe Mantwa might be the distraction that I need, maybe we can start something and see what happens along the way..

Me: Shouldn't you be getting home?

Her: I called my Mother before I came here, told

her that I might be late

Me: So you handing yourself to me in a silver platter?

She laughed while covering her mouth..

Her: Your Grandmother said I should check on you and also make sure that her house is in order

Me: Is that all?

Her: That's all

Me: I don't believe

Her: What else could it be?

I dragged her chair closer..

Me: Maybe this???

I leaned over and kissed her until the door opened and she pushed me back, Niso walked in..

Mantwa: Are you done? I wanna wash the

dishes before I go

Me: It's okay you have done enough already.. I'll wash the dishes

Her: I should go then

Me: I'll drive you home

Niso looked at us..

Niso: Well isn't this lovely?

I looked at Mantwa..

Me: This is my annoying Little Brother Niso..

Niso this is Mantwa

Mantwa: Hi..

Niso: Hi

Mantwa: I'll get my bag in the lounge

She walked out..

Niso: I need to talk to you

Me: It can't wait?

Him: No

Me: Matter of life and death?

Him: It can't wait

I sat down again..

Me: What is it?

Him: So Nomvelo has this theory that you don't really like her

I coughed..

Me: What?

Him: You have been giving her cold vibes

Me: Exactly what do you expect me to do huh?
Be all smiles with her after you thought that I was going to rape her?

He looked at the doorway..

I turned and Mantwa was standing there..

I looked at Niso again..

Me: I don't have time for your girlfriend's petty issues

I looked at Mantwa..

Me: Let's go

–

JJ

I drank the glass whiskey again busy thinking about the fact that my wife wants me dead! The hidden cameras in the house are really working their way magic. They not everywhere just in the kitchen, lounge, and our bedroom..

Stokies walked in..

Him: Bhoza..

Me: I want you to do the job tomorrow morning, can you do that?

Him: Ya sure Bhoza.. Tomorrow morning it's fine

Me: Let me show you her usual route and one of my guys is going to give you a gun later tonight.. Do not fuck this up!

Him: I won't Bhoza.. I won't fuck this up!

.

To be continued

No edits

22

MANTWA

Me: So if it doesn't rain tomorrow morning you won't drive me to work?

Him: No because then I'll have to be at work too

Me: That's sad

My Mom stood at the door..

Him: We can meet up later and have drinks

Me: I'd like that

Him: I have to go.. I'll see you tomorrow either in the morning or later

Me: Okay bye

Him: Bye

I lowered my phone as my Mother made her way in. I'd like to think that I was a fortunate child, I grew up in a loving home with both parents. We were an average family my Dad provided for me and my Mom the best he could, My Mother was a housewife she couldn't work due to health reasons. That life of a princess came crashing down when my Father started having an affair, then before we knew it he divorced my Mother and kicked us out for his mistress to move in. I was doing grade 11 by then and my little brother was pretty young to understand what was going on, we had to take only our clothes and leave everything else. We moved down here at my Grandmother's house, the house was previously rented since my

Mother couldn't live in it seeing he was married and my Grandmother passed on before I was even born, so when we got back the tenants had to move out. We only renting the outside rooms now. Our new life was very difficult we depended on my the rent from the tenants and my Brother's Sassa grant money, that forced me to kill my varsity dream. After matric I did some short course and I struggled to find a job to help out with my Mother and little Brother until that day when Snazo came to me, that day changed our lives for the better. I am earning a reasonable salary to help out at home and also I am planning to apply at Unisa next year. The divorce really broke my Mother I thought I was going to lose her, she already had poor health and what my Father did sent her to the point of no return. I am just thankful that she picked herself up for me and my little Brother, she is on antidepressants and attends counseling at our local clinic twice a week. She wants to look for

a job too, maybe being a maid or something just so she can get a bit of money too and help out. She feels helpless just sitting around and doing nothing..

Mom: was that Snazo?

I nodded..

She knows about Snazo I told her about him, quite frankly from that day at church I fell hard for him and his Grandmother speaks very highly of him. I have been keeping contact with her, she told me that he has a calling to be a preacher. Apparently Snazo has a gift of healing. He can heal through prayer, through words, and also with his hands. She told me that he needs a strong religious woman who will be with and help him as this won't be an easy road for him, especially because he is not a believer. She told me that he is going to be the most powerful preacher there ever was, he is going to help a lot of people and I really wanna be a part of his

destiny. Him being handsome is just icing on the cake..

Mom: I really cannot wait to meet him

Me: Me too.. He is a great guy and his Grandmother is a very lovely person

She smiled and held my hand..

Her: After everything we have been through you deserve this

Me: That's true

Her: Seems like God is coming through for us

Me: He is

My previous relationship wasn't healthy my ex was a very abusive and controlling lying cheat, I endured a lot from him and I hope my next relationship will be better. Snazo seems better, I hope things workout between us..

—

SNAZO

Shine and I were at Gazibo just catching up and drinking beer, it was late and a bit cold..

Shine: uStokies uyahlanya Ntwana!

Me: Too much..

Shine: indaba zokubulala mina vele ngikhipheni kuzo (When it comes to murder leave me out of it)

Me: Nami Ntwana, I don't wanna fuck up anymore

Since I came here I been having this weird feeling, can't really wrap my mind into it..

Shine's phone rang..

Shine: Ithi ngiyabuya (I'll be right back)

He stood up and walked away to answer his phone. The weird feeling that I was experiencing became more intense. I picked up my dumpie from the table but put it back when I

started feeling very heartbroken. This is some type of emotional and mental pain that I have never felt before. In my mist of feeling like that I ran my eyes around and everything was moving in slow motion, my eyes landed on this other girl who was sitting not far from my table. She was tearing up, each tear that streaming down I felt more and more pain. More like I was feeling her pain, how can a human being have so much cloud of unsettling emotions..

"Beloved.."

I looked around..

"I want you to see her pain"

Upon starring at her something unexplainable happened, I saw her heart that was pierced by a lot of needles the needles were soo many that the heart could barely beat properly..

"That's who she is.. That's how much pain she has endured, each needle represents an

emotional pain inflected on her"

I swallowed...

"When all gurdain angels present themselves, hers is always crying it reports nothing but pain. She has been hurt to a point of confusion, she has purposed to take her own life tomorrow morning when everyone have left the house, she is going to take her own life and the life of her daughter.."

Me: I don't know how I can help such a broken person

"Beloved you heal with words.. It is your destiny. The cycle of life is going to be incomplete without her, it's not her time"

Me: If it's not her time then she shouldn't die can't you save her?

"The enemy is going to steal her soul tomorrow if she goes through with it, unless you intervene"

Me: But this is beyond me

"The spirit of depression is one powerful spirit that has taken soo many lives prematurely, coming face to face with it is not easy but courage is the only way to conquer it"

Me: What if she doesn't listen to me?

"Joshua 1 verse 6.. Be determined and Confident!"

Shine came back..

Shine: Eish bra yam' hade that I took long Me:
Ku grand

"Beloved.."

I picked up my beer and drank..

"Beloved.."

I closed my eyes and opened them again.

Me: Let's talk Ntwana

Him: About?

Me: Anything.. Anything that will distract Me

The voice got firm..

"Beloved!!.."

I started hearing this voice in my head that portrayed a lot of pain, I'm guessing it was hers..

Voice: Why me?? At least tomorrow I will be free from this pain.. I am not a bad person.. I don't deserve this!!

The voice was overwhelming I couldn't even hear myself think nor hear what Shine was saying..

Voice: Tomorrow it comes to an end..

Tomorrow I will be free

The voice kept on and on that I started feeling dizzy, everything seemed to be spinning. I got up and looked around, it felt like I was going crazy before I knew it, I collapsed..

—

NOMVELO

His strong hands were on my waist our lips were tightly locked together, I was going up and down on him a bit slower than he anticipated. He helped me to change the rhythm, the more his hands forced me to go up and down faster the deeper I felt all of him inside of me, I broke the kiss and gasped for air before my voice escaped my vocal chords channeled into a moan. There wasn't enough space in his car therefore why we were forced into this uncomfortable position. He held me tight with his head buried on my breasts, I still had my bra on I could feel a warm sensation of his breath hitting against my chest. He rose his head from my breasts and we kissed again, while I was moaning under my breath. Tomorrow I have to go back home before my Uncle realizes that there's something wrong, according to me I wouldn't even go back home at all.. I enjoy

spending time with Niso and I wanna spend more and more time with him everyday, he completes me..

Before I knew it he held me tight again and cursed under his breath while I prayed the condom stays intact, after that intense feeling of coming he slowly let go of me while we both tried to catch our breaths..

I kissed him again...

Him: I love you so much

Me: I love you too

When he picked me up from school we didn't drive home, we went to visit his friend Mongz and Groovy. This time around we didn't go to that place we just chilled decided to get everything that we wanted and chilled in Mongz room, he has an outside room. After Niso had a few puffs of weed and beer he texted me that we should sneak out, and here we are now well I

was messed up myself so I didn't mind, I'm just glad that we used a condom

Him: You feeling okay?

Me: I'm okay

I wasn't drunk just tipsy. We kissed one last time with his hands caressing me..

–

SNAZO

Me: Ahhhhhhhhhh!!!

I felt like my heart was pierced by a lot of needles, paramedics were already here and I was in a lot of pain. A crowd was surrounding the ambulance and I knew that she was around, she was amongst that crowd. I could sense her, I could feel her pain..

Paramedic 1: I think we will have to sedate him

Me: Ahhh my heart!!!!!!

Shine: Ntwana kuzoba grand siya ewosi (You going to be okay, we going to the hospital)

I couldn't talk, I was in pain and it felt as if like I was going to die. Each breath that I took the needles pieced through deeper and deeper..

—

NOMVELO

My heart was truly broken knowing that I had to leave tomorrow, we probably going to see each other occasionally now and sleepovers are not going to happen anymore..

Him: Let's go in.. I'm sure Groovy and Mongz are wondering were we are

I wiped my tears.. He looked at me

Him: Hey what's wrong?

I shook my head no..

Him: Yini? (what's wrong)

I walked closer and laid my head on his chest and cried...

Him: What's wrong Twana?

Me: I don't wanna go tomorrow.. I'm going to miss you (Crying)

He hugged me..

Him: I'm going to miss you too

.

To be continued

23

NOMVELO

Later on we drove back home after spending time with Groovy and Mongz, Nazo's room the light was off and he wasn't in the house either. He probably had an early night or something like that.

After I had bathe I joined Niso on the couch and

we watched Tv..

Me: I never thought that I could master bathing in a basin

Him: I never imagined you bathing in a basin, all coconut tendencies went out of the window

I laughed..

Me: Yeah whatever.. I guess when you truly love someone you take them with everything that they have

Him: I guess so too

He kissed me on my forehead..

Me: I wish I wasn't leaving tomorrow

Him: We still going to see each other and have random visits

My phone vibrated on the table, I stretched my hand and got it. It was my Uncle, I collected myself first before answering..

Me: Hello

Him: Dodo

Me: Hi..

Him: Unjani? (How are you)

Me: I am well and you?

Him: I am good

(Silence)

Him: How is the visit so far to your friend's place?

Me: It's pretty good.. We making progress with our work

Him: Glad to hear that

Me: What are you doing? How is Nomsa?

Him: Ntokozo is around so you know how they're.. I am actually with a friend

Me: Ohw

Him: Wanna say hi?

Me: Okay

I waited to hear the friend greet me..

Voice: Velo

It was Power! I panicked immediately..

Me: Po.. Power?

Power: He knows everything

Everything just came to a stand still, all I heard was my heart beat racing with every swallow.

My cheeks felt hot, I felt light headed it was just a mix of emotions resulting from fear..

Uncle: Why would you do that Velo?

I didn't say anything..

Uncle: Meaning Nomsa has been covering up for you? Even when we were at Grandma's place you didn't go to see Nkuli did you?

I wanted to say something but I didn't know

what to say..

Him: I want you home first thing in the morning
uyangizwa? (do you hear me)

Me: Yes

He clicked his tongue and I let my phone go, it
fell on the floor. I was literally shaking..

Me: He knows

Niso: How?

Me: I don't know but.. He knows

He got off from the couch then pulled the table
closer and sat on it while looking at me..

Him: Hey..

I was in my own state of mind..

Him: Hey look at me

I looked at him..

Him: It's going to be okay

Me: It's not going to be okay!.. He is going to explode if he hasn't exploded already

Him: I have dealt with a lot of shit okay? I am not scared of him

Me: I don't think I wanna go home tomorrow

Him: Don't be crazy.. Eventually he was bound to find out, go home and talk to him okay?

I nodded.. He sat on the couch again

Him: Come here

I stood up and sat on him, he gave me a very tight hug..

Him: It's going to be okay

–

SNAZO

The Dr walked in holding a file..

I was feeling a whole lot better now, I was sitting on the bed with Shine sitting on the small

chair next to me while busy pressing his phone..

Dr: Uzizwa unjani manje? (How are you feeling now)

Me: My chest is hot but I'm fine

Dr: Your breathing?

Me: It's fine

Shine: Dr k'hambani? (what's wrong)

Dr: You had what we call a Panic attack

Shine: Err.. Awusiphe I version eSimple (Give us a simple version)

Dr: A panic attack is normal, it's your body reacting to a flight or fight response when danger is sensed, sometimes stressful situations can bring about a panic attack

Shine: Ehhh

Dr: It means you can relax.. Your friend didn't have a heart attack

Shine: Aii no k'gcono ke makunjalo (it's better that way)

Dr: A panic attack is normal it won't kill you don't fight it just let it take it's course but if you start to have persistent ones then further steps will be taken

Me: Like?

Dr: Therapy.. Over the counter medications, dealing with the root of the problem and hand I nodded..

Dr: I can keep you here overnight but

Me: It's fine if there's nothing wrong with me I wanna go home

Dr: If they become a problem please consult because sometimes they can make one suicidal especially when you don't know what's wrong

Me: I understand and thank you

Dr: I'll tell the Nurse to have you checked out

Shine: Ta bhoza siyabonga (Thank you Dr)

He walked away..

Shine: Ndoda sowuphathwa yizinto zabelungu manje? Kahle kahle vele zishaphi? (Now you getting a fancy condition what's the problem)

Me: Awungaye iSpace for 2min.. I wanna make a serious phone call

He stood up and left me, I got my phone and called Mantwa..

Mantwa: Hey??

Me: Hey.. Sowugidlile? (are you sleeping)

Her: uhm it's only 20:00 Nazo

Me: Okay bheka.. I need a favour

Her: Are you okay? You sound a bit tense

Me: I'm good

Her: What favour?

Me: My..

I cleared my throat..

Me: My Grandmother used to preach about the 10 commandments back when I was young just forgot them

Her: Ohw uhm ya Exodus 20

Me: Can you read them for me

Her: Now?

Me: If it's not too much trouble

Her: Okay hold on let me get my Bible

I waited for her to get the Bible..

Her: Okay I got it

Me: Please read them for me

Her: Okay the whole thing?

Me: No aren't they listed?

Her: Well from verse 1-12 it goes with a bit of an explanation

Me: I thought I was once saw something like
"Do not steal.."

Her: Yes Do not commit murder, Do not commit
adultery, Do not accuse anyone falsely.. Do-

Me: It's okay I got them thank you

Her: But I..

Me: I'll call you tomorrow and unfortunately
tomorrow morning you will have to take a taxi
to work

Her: Is everything okay Nazo? You scaring me

Me: Everything is fine.. Good night

I hung up..

I sent Stokies a text:

"Tomorrow when you leave for the job, collect
me"

He hit me back after a while..

"ube ready at 5am"

I hope that what I am going to do tomorrow morning will make this whole religious thing go away, I am going to break one of the commandments and hope that I break free from what my destiny is supposed to be..

Shine came back after a few minutes of making that call and the Nurse was taking forever so we just made our way out of the hospital..

—

MANTWA

I looked at my phone Nazo's call was very strange, my intuition told me that he was going to do something bad there way he asked about the 10 commandments was weird, we talking about a person here who didn't wanna hear anything with regards to the Bible when I was with him. I tried calling him a few times but he didn't pick up, I thought of calling his Grandmother but that would be me being

forward. I got out of bed and went to switch off the light, I leaned against the door closed my eyes..

Me: Nazo please.. Don't do anything stupid

–

NOMVELO

I was tossing and turning while Niso slept soundless next to me, I had insomnia due to that phone call. I turned and looked at Niso, I love him and tomorrow I am willing to fight for what we have. I want my Uncle to see that I am actually happy with him, If he truly loves me then he will accept Niso and our relationship despite what he has. There's no greater feeling that compares to love and I am in love..

–

SNAZO

Ever since I got back from the hospital I have

been struggling to sleep a little, the more I thought about that girl there more and more I was convinced that I should be rid of all this religious madness. What I'm seeing and what I hear is not normal, this is not my life it's not who I am and I refuse to accept something that I don't understand. I can imagine everyone around here making fun of me, from a hardcore ex con to a preacher. That doesn't have a nice ring to it. I took my phone and looked at the time, only an hour left until 5am I can use this time to smoke and then prepare myself, Stokies usually shows up 10min earlier than the recommended time..

I got out of bed and took my cigarettes together with a lighter, I made my way to the door. I turned the key but it didn't want, it was jammed..

Me: Damn!!!

I tried a few times but the key didn't want..

Me: Agh come in!!

I tried it again until it allowed, I unlocked at opened the door what stood at my door stop on my "Welcome" mat is something that made me question my sanity. It was what looked like an angel though it looked different from the ordinary angels that they show us on Tv. This one was a bit of a giant, it had big wings and it carried a sword. It stepped back a bit and started flapping it's wings, I looked at it and it's eyes were on fire.. I was too shocked to even say anything..

It spoke in a deep voice that I felt a tremour and a lighting started flashing across the sky to the sound of it's voice..

"Siz kim olduğunuzdan qaça bilməzsiniz"

As I concentrated on it's eyes that reflected fire, my vision became blurry until I couldn't see anything anymore. All I saw was total darkness..

.

To be continued

No edits

24

SNAZO

I heard a knock at the door it frightened I that I jumped, I have been sitting on the floor ever since the incident happened. People have been knocking but I kept quiet. The door opened and my heart fell on the floor..

Niso: Nazo

I let out a sigh of relief..

Niso: What are you doing on the floor?

I looked around and all I could see was total darkness and the picture of that thing in my head was still haunting me..

Me: Is it still here?

Niso: What are you talking about? Nazo what's going on?

Me: I can't see a thing

Niso: What do you mean you can't see a thing?

Me: I'm blind

He chuckled..

Him: Quit playing it's too early in the morning

Me: I am not playing!!!

I heard his footsteps then I heard him talking closer to me, it scared me..

Him: What the?? What happened?

Me: I don't know

Him: I waved my hand on your face and you didn't react, you really blind

He helped me up and sat me on my bed..

Me: Niso I'm afraid that I might be losing it, I'm going crazy

Him: You shaking

Me: I don't know what's happening to me all these things I don't know why they happening to me

Him: We going to figure this out one way or another

We heard a knock at the kitchen door and a voice calling out, I think it was Mantwa.

Her: Snazo!!!

Niso: Should I let her in?

Me: Ya

Niso went to the door..

Him: Hey

Mantwa: Hi.. I am looking for Snazo

Him: He is here

Her: Okay

All I could hear was footsteps..

Mantwa: Hi

I moved my eyes to the sound of her voice..

Me: Hi

Her: Are you okay? Was checking up on you after that phone call last night

Me: I am..

Niso: I'll be right back let me call Ma

Mantwa: I was on my way to work and..

Me: Mantwa I'm blind

Her: What?

Me: I can't see a thing

I could hear her moving closer..

Her: What do you mean that you can't see a thing?

Me: I.. I

Her: Talk to me

Me: I saw something like an Angel but it didn't look like your normal angel.. I know I sound crazy b-

Her: Snazo..

Me: I know it sounds crazy.. I think I'm going crazy, I don't know why all these things are happening to me. For the first time in my life I'm scared and I don't get scared!!! I been to jail previously and it's hell there but none of that ever scared me, but this!! I am scared Mantwa, nothing has ever scared me like this

Mantwa: You are not crazy

She wrapped my arms around her waist and laid my head on her, I could smell her perfume...

Mantwa: We going to figure this out.. It's okay

Me: I want all of this to go away

She ran her hand on the back of my head..

Her: Its okay..

Niso: I called Ma she said she's going to come back later today Gugu will stay for the funeral

Me: You shouldn't have

Niso: Ma can help.. I'll forfeit going to school

Mantwa: No you go.. I'll stay

Me: You can't stay.. You just got your job

Mantwa: It's just for one day.. It'll be fine

Niso: In that case I'll see you guys later and

Mantwa thank you

Mantwa: You welcome

—

NOMVELO

I left early to go home so that I can talk to my uncle, I was scared I have never came face to face with him on anything that we didn't agree on especially something as big as this. Nomsa wasn't around, she's usually up early in the

morning. I waited for him to finish talking on his phone, he didn't look happy even his tone I sensed a lot tension from it. When he was done he put his phone on the table, he looked at me..

Him: What exactly is going on?

I kept quiet..

Him: since when do you do this things Velo?
And why are you doing this?

I still remained quiet..

Him: Your friend said the boy is from a hood, a hood were I'm from she told me everything..

Niso? I thought you were still dating that soccer player

Me: We broke up

Him: So when you break up you go to another one just like that? Worse a guy from the hood? Then you lie to go and sleep with him? When did it start? Did Nomsa lie about you visiting

Nkuli that night because I called Nkuli and she doesn't know anything about that

I nodded..

He hit the table...

Him: Dammit Nomvelo!!!!!! I tried my best to make you different and now you wanna be a baby Mama to a guy from the hood? There's no future there!!!!

Tears were nearing but I tried my best to hold them back..

Him: You will end this shame of a relationship

Me: No..

Him: Askies?

Me: I love him

He made his way to me..

Him: I don't care!!! I want you to end it

Me: No..

Him: Nomvelo!

Me: I won't end it! I love h..

He slapped me across the face..

Him: I go against a lot of people everyday! And I'm not going to go against my Daughter! Don't try me Nomvelo, if you want a boyfriend I have business associates who have Sons! Rich associates where I know that you will be well taken care of, there's no future that a hood boy can give you especially a damn Buthelezi! They nothing but criminals don't push me!

For the first time I felt nothing but anger for my Uncle, I walked out of his study room..

Him: Nomvelo!!

—

NOMSA

Me: Awusho.. What is this woman going to give us?

Ntokozo: Mina ngizwe nje bathi uStrong (I heard that she is strong)

We were driving to the woman's place..

Me: Ntokozo I hope this plan of yours works, phela I only have one shot at this

I came to a red robot..

Ntokozo: Kuzoba right

As we were waiting for the robot to open for us, I heard my side of the window breaking.

Ntokozo and I screamed..

Voice: Tsek!! Tsek!! Phuma! (get out)

I couldn't see his face clearly he was wearing a cap and a bandana covered the lower part of his face being the mouth and nose, he held the gun against me and his accomplice was on Ntokozo's side..

I opened the door and came out, so did Ntokozo. This road is very quiet in the mornings we were

the only car around until I saw another car approaching..

He held my side of the door and then looked at me, I was shaken. He opened fire, shot me 3 times.. The last thing I heard was Ntokozo screaming..

–

NISO

Me: Ta boy

Him: leme hala at you

He stood next to me..

Him: Have you considered selling something more?

Me: Something more like what?

Him: Coke? You can make a lot of money

I looked at him..

Me: Coke is expensive and not everyone is

going to buy

Him: Me and my dogs will buy

He is a rapper wannabe..

Me: I'll think about it

Him: sure dog

He walked away. I was worried about Nomvelo and I was also worried about Snazo, I don't like what's happening to my Brother..

My phone rang, I took it out and it was Nomvelo. I answered..

Me: Twana

I heard her sniffing..

Me: I'm guessing it didn't go that well

Her: It's not right.. He hasn't even given you a chance

Me: What happened?

Her: I have never seen him this angry.. He hit

me

Me: He what??

Her: He told me to break up with you.. I'm thinking of leaving home to go and stay with my friend Power

I was helpless..

Me: Don't do that... Let's give him time to process this he will come around

Her: He won't.. I wish that things weren't going like this, I wish that my Mother was still around and my useless Father didn't kill him

Me: Twana don't think like that.. Your uncle loves you he is just mad he will come around

Her: For his sake I hope so

Me: Be good for me.. I'll see you tomorrow

Her: Okay

Me: I love you

Her: I love you too

It's not even 12 in the afternoon and this day has proven that it will not go well..

.

To be continued

25

SNAZO

Mantwa: Here

She held my hand and slowly moved it for me to hold the mug, I picked it up from the table but my hand was trembling so bad that I put it down again. Mantwa put her hand ontop of mine..

Her: Slowly

I tried again but it was still the same result..

Me: Fuck!!

Her: It's okay

(Silence)

Her: Do you wanna talk about it?

Me: No..

Her: Okay

I sighed..

Me: When I think of Angels I always thought that they were exactly how as they showed us on Tv, pure white, glowing, and always smiling. What I saw was the opposite of that

Her: How was the angel that you saw?

Me: Scary, it was very big and had big white wings. It's eyes, it's eyes reflected fire when I looked into it's eyes that's when I went blind

Her: I think you saw a warrior Angel, I often heard that they look different.. Nazo you're blessed to have seen such

Me: I don't feel blessed.. If you haven't noticed I'm blind!!!

She didn't respond..

Me: I'm sorry..I didn't mean to-

Her: I understand

Me: I don't know why this is happening to me

My phone rang..

Her: the caller ID says "Ma"

Me: It's my Grandmother

Her: You wanna answer?

Me: Ya

Her: Here.. Just put it next to your ear and talk

I put it next to my ear..

Ma: Snazo

Me: Ma..

Ma: uNiso called me, he said that you're blind

Me: Ma I'm scared.. What's happening to me?

Ma: Nazo..

Me: Ma I don't want this.. It's not me

Ma: It's not anyone baby.. No one wakes up and chooses to have their life change just like that into something that they don't understand, you fighting Nazo and you not winning. You not going to win, it's who you are all you have to do is accept that's the only way my boy

I put the phone down on the table..

Ma: Nazo??

Mantwa picked it up..

Mantwa: MaButhelezi it's Mantwa.. I will be with him until you get here.. Yes..

She went a bit far away from me..

–

JJ

Disappointed is an understatement, I was furious that Velo was dating a nobody.

Someone who is not going to give her the future

that she deserves, I just want everything to be perfect for her. When I die everything is going to her, I don't want her to date someone who will be a financial burden to her and end up sharing in her inheritance..

I was on my second glass of whiskey when my phone rang, it was a number I didn't recognize..

Me: Hello

Voice: JJ it's Ntokozo

She sounded distressed..

Her: It's Nomsa.. She.. We..

Me: Calm down and tell me what happened?

Her: Nomsa was shot

Me: What??? Where?? How??

Her: I.. I.. I don't know what happened

Me: Talk to me how is she?

Her: Doctors are still with her.. I think she's

going to make it

Me: Okay I'm on my way..

Her: Highland hospital

Me: Okay I'm coming

I threw the glass against the wall..

—

NOMVELO

I saw her laying on the floor in her own pool of blood, there was blood everywhere and she wasn't moving..

Me: Mama wake up

I was shaking her but she didn't wake up, she wasn't waking up..

Me: Mama vuka

He had her heart in his hand but I couldn't see his face clear, I couldn't see who it was..

Me: Mama!! Mvuse (wake her up)

I felt someone gently shaking me..

Voice: Velo.. Velo..

I slowly opened my eyes and it was Danger, I had fallen asleep on the couch..

I looked around and sat up straight..

Danger: Bekuyiphupho nje (it was just a dream)

I started crying...

Me: I saw my Mom.. She was laying there helpless

Him: How often do you have this dream?

Me: This is the 3rd time

Him: Do you only see your Mom?

Me: And someone holding her heart just can't see his face... Probably it's my useless Father!

Danger: I'll get you a glass of water

Me: Thank you

I took my phone and called Niso but he didn't pick up..

–

JJ

The door opened he walked in..

Stokies: Bhoza

He closed the door behind him..

I looked at him..

Him: It is all done Bhoza

Me: It's not all done

Him: Hau usho kanjani? (what do you mean)

Me: She is still alive.. Her sister called..

Uses'bhedlela nje sikhuluma (she is in hospital as we talking)

Him: Bhoza ngimshaye nga 3 yama bullet (I shot her 3 times)

Me: Oksalayo she's still alive!!!

Him: Manje what do you want me to do?
Ngimcedelele esbhedlela? (should I finish her
off at the hospital)

Me: No you failed!! I have another assignment
for you

Him: ringa nami bhoza (talk to me)

I went through my phone and handed it to him..

Me: He is your next assignment

He looked at it..

Him: Bhoza Aii..

Me: You will do it

Him: Aii Bhoza angeke kukhonakale (it can't be
done)

Me: I am paying you to get the job done!! Get
the job done!!

He put the phone down..

Him: cha bhoza angeke (I can't)

I looked at him and took my phone..

–

SNAZO

Me: You don't have to be here you know

Mantwa: I am here because I wanna be here.. I made you some oats

Me: Thank you

She brought the bowl to me..

Me: I can't get used to this

Her: You will

Immediately when I touched the bowl I had something like a vision, I saw Niso getting shot by JJ. I knocked the bowl off the table because the vision was intense, it was like I was the one getting shot. I even fell off from the chair..

Mantwa: Snazo are you okay??

Me: I need to get my eyesight back

Her: What?

Me: I need to get my eyesight back!

The door opened..

Mantwa: Niso come and help me out

Niso: What happened?

Me: Niso?

Him: I'm here

They helped me to get up..

Mantwa: Are you okay? Did you hurt yourself?

Niso: Kanti what the hell is going on?

Me: Niso I want you to listen to me.. You need to leave Nomvelo alone

Him: What?

Me: if you don't her Uncle is going to shoot you dead, I can't protect you when I'm like this.. You need to end it or else it's going to world war 3!

.

To be continued

No edits

26

SNAZO

The vision I had about Niso was something that I didn't look forward too, I can't lose my brother. Niso and I we have always been close, I always had his back and I know very well that he won't leave her he is really convinced that he is inlove. Unfortunately I cannot be able to protect him, especially when I'm like this but then again going into war might hurt a lot of people innocent people. I was trying to think of a solution, one that won't involve blood spilling and I see no way out but to bargain with the one above. My Brother's life in exchange of me accepting my gift, if God can protect Niso from

this one I will sure answer to my calling and that is a promise. If JJ kills my Brother I am going to rain blood on anything and everything being labeled a Christian, It's going to be a massacre on Christians. I will enter in a church and shoot everyone, it's going to be a crime worth remembering. That was my prayer until a knock disturbed me..

Me: Come in

Niso: Mantwa is cooking

Me: She shouldn't

Niso: I don't know but she seems like a nice person, I like her for you. Gugu and Ma will obviously like her, uzoyenza uMakoti okahle
(She will be a good bride)

Me: Ya.. I guess so

(Silence)

Niso: Snazo I love Velo and trust me when I say

we got this..

Me: Niso you don't have this.. JJ is not a person to mess with

Niso: I am not going to leave her

Me: So you would rather have us lose you?

Niso: What is happening with you?

Me: Just forget it, obviously nothing I say is going to be heard

Niso: Since when do we back out?

Me: Since JJ is not just an ordinary person

Niso: no relationship is perfect.. All relationships have challenges, Nomvelo and I we going to get through this.. Even if it means leaving and staying far from harm's way

Me: I hope it's worth it, I hope she is worth it

–

NOMVELO

I was in my bedroom when someone knocked..

Me: Come in

The door opened and my Uncle walked in.

My mood changed...

He sat on the small chair..

Him: I might not be your biological father but I love you more than you think, you're the only child that I have and everything of mine belongs to you. All of these, my businesses, my cars, the house, and my money. They all belong to you because you the only child that I have. The last thing I want is for you to bring a nobody who will use you just because you were born rich

Me: Niso is not like that.. You just judged him without even giving him a chance

Him: Obviously this boy means a lot to you and we will always be on each other's throats because of him, so the sacrifice will come from

my side. I will accept your relationship with him

I looked at him..

Me: Don't do me any favours

Him: I am not doing you any favours! Your happiness means a lot to me, if you say that he is different then I will give him a chance

I didn't expect that from him..

Me: Thank you

Him: I just hope there won't be any babies any time soon

Me: School is my first priority

Him: Glad to hear that

Me: Where is Nomsa?

Him: Nomsa got shot this morning

Me: What?

Him: I was actually on my way to the hospital..
Wanna come?

I nodded...

Him: Do you guys get along well now because she lied for you?

Me: Are you complaining?

Him: As long as you guys get along I'm happy
I yawned..

Him: Haven't been sleeping?

Me: Not peacefully

Him: What's wrong?

Me: I have been having that nightmare again
about Mom

Him: You still have it?

Me: Just started recently but this time around
another piece has been added to the puzzle

Him: What do you mean?

Me: I saw a man holding her heart

He stood up...

Him: Who is he?

Me: Can't really see his face but I it's that evil
Father of mine

Him: I should get you the herbs again remember
they helped you when you were having the
nightmare?

Me: I remember.. Though they taste bad

Him: As long as you don't have to relive that
nightmare again.. Put on your shoes and let's
go

–

SNAZO

My Grandmother finally arrived I was relieved to
hear her voice now she can provide us with
answers that we need. Mantwa left immediately
when my Grandmother came back, after all she
has been here all day. My Grandmother had her

hands on my cheeks, I think she was checking my eyes. I told her everything that happened and led to my blindness..

Her: The only way out of this is to accept your gift

Me: I'll accept it

Her: Huh?

Me: I will accept my gift

Her: What changed?

Me: I'm tired of fighting it.. I will accept it as long as I won't be required to be a church goer and all that, I just wanna help people that's all

Her: What happens after you have accepted your Gift is up to God who called you

Me: So what now?

Her: I will take you to church the Pastor will know what to do

Her: Nazo I know that you scared but trust me your gift is not as bad as you think, helping others out that's the best thing ever. You have always had the heart to help others, remember God doesn't look at the outward appearance, he looks at the heart

Me: You told me that many times before

Her: Get it through your stubborn head then.. I'll dish up for you

–

JJ

I just drove Nomvelo to the hospital and then I drove straight Bab'Ngwenya's place the person who made me this rich. What I did to my sister was the only way I could attain riches, I have always wanted to be rich. Always wanted to be in power. I dropped out in grade 9 after repeating it thrice, My Parents thought I would never amount to anything and that both my

Sisters were more useful than I was. I was always undermined and looked down on, especially by Nomvelo's Mother. She was the princess of the house...

Bab'Ngwenya is very powerful he has helped a lot of people like me..

Him: Awww' Ngcobo

Me: Bab'ngwena

I turned that big tin upside down and sat ontop of it, he was sitting outside and boiling some herbs...

Him: Usubekwa yini la? (what brings you here)

Me: u Nomvelo Ba, sekaqalile futhi ngalamaphupho akhe (it's Nomvelo, she has started having those dreams of hers)

Him: Umoya kaMama walengane uyashisa, futhi uyingozi(Her mother's spirit is powerful and dangerous)

Me: Ngiyazi (I know)

Him: Kwenzekeni? (what happened)

Me: Sibe nokuxabana nje (we had an altercation)

Him: Uma uyihlukumeza le ngane ulaka lakwa Mamakhe luzokuzela, uyo siphula yonke into onayo bese uceda ngomoya wakho (once you mistreat this child her Mother's Anger is going to fall upon you destroying everything that you have and ending with your soul)

Me: Ngiyakwazi lokho futhi uNomvelo ngafunda ukumthanda (I know that and I learned to love Nomvelo)

Him: Ithi ngizokulandela ibhodlela (wait I'll get the bottle for you)

Me: Ngiyabonga

He stood up and went..

If Nomvelo can know the truth I will be in trouble..

.

To be continued

No edits

27

NOMVELO

A FEW WEEKS LATER

There was so much tension in the atmosphere that you could literally cut through it with a knife, We were involuntary clashing heads with our unsettling thoughts about each other. A mere look can express thousands of words on how a person truly feels about you, and that was the attitude that we had in the room. I must've left my manners at home when my facial muscles decided to betray me and I yawned...

Gugu: I don't know if we boring you or my food is the one that's boring you

Niso: Gugu

Gugu: She is yawning and she only had about two or three spoons?

Niso: Maybe you making her uncomfortable

Gugu: Kanjani? (How)

Niso: Inkinga yakho ukuthi awujwayeleki (The problem is that no one can get use to you)

They kept on going on and on arguing with each other that I started to feel a bit light headed, I closed my eyes..

Grandma: Anikahle bo (both of you stop it)

She has been the sweetest to me since I got here. Things between Niso and I have been good, my Uncle was laid back and didn't bother us at all infact tomorrow Niso is coming over at my house for dinner. Today he invited me to meet his family again but this time around officially as his girlfriend..

Grandma: Velo ukahle Sisi? (Nomvelo are you

okay)

I looked at her..

Me: I think I'm having a migraine

I haven't been getting some peaceful sleep, that dream of my Mother being butchered to death was haunting me. I have it every night, it has been keeping me awake and my lack of sleep was affecting my health now. There's nothing that my Uncle hasn't tried even sleeping pills don't work..

Grandma: You look a bit pale, have you been getting some sleep?

Me: Actually no

Grandma: What's been bothering you?

When she asked that something deep inside of me moved, I was tired. I was tired physically, mentally, and emotionally. Reliving that day each night through my dreams is not easy, it

opens up old wounds. Niso extended his hand to mine, I didn't even realize that I was tearing up now. Niso's Grandmother is so sweet, very calm and she seems easy to talk too..

Me: Every night I am haunted by the same dream.. I'm even scared to sleep

I wiped my tears..

Grandma: I can even sense the exhaustion from your voice

She looked at Niso..

Grandma: Put her plate in the fridge

She then looked at Me..

Grandma: Come.. Come take a nap in my room

Gugu: Aii Ma.. (Ma no)

She stood up..

Grandma: Come..

Me: That's very nice of you but.. I'm scared to

sleep

Grandma: Come with me

I looked at Niso and he nodded..

I stood up and we went to her bedroom..

I was taken by how nice it looked, I mean she's old I expected it to look somehow but it looked really good. I was impressed. It was a very sunny day but her room was very cool, the window was open and it was very neat..

Her: You can have a nap

Me: Thank you

Her: Just sleep.. Nothing wil harm you here, you're safe

Me: Thank you very much

I took off my sandals and made my self comfortable, she took a mini blanket and covered my legs because I was a bit of a short dress. I laid my head on the pillow as she

walked out and slightly closed the door. I then closed my eyes..

–

MANTWA

I looked at my phone again and then went to my contacts, I stopped at his name and my heart immediately shattered I felt like crying right there. He hasn't called me for weeks, He has been avoiding me I don't even know what I did. I don't know what could've possibly pushed him away..

Voice: Mantwa..

That was my boss, I put my phone away and went to her office..

Her: What's wrong with you?

I gave her a confused look..

Her: I am not a teacher.. Too many spelling errors

She threw the paper across the table..

Her: This week you have been very sloppy..
What's wrong?

Me: I am very sorry it won't happen again

Her: This is not like you, you a very dedicated
person

I took the paper..

Me: I will type it again.. I am very sorry

I walked out..

Me: Pull it together Mantwa or else you going to
lose your job

—

SNAZO

Losing my eyesight was very scary, it's
something that I occasionally think about
especially the angel that I saw. My
Grandmother's Pastor was the one that helped

me to regain my sight again, I felt the most connection with him on a spiritual level only to find that he is the one who is supposed to mentor me. Pastor Mdluli is 75 years old he has been in the ministry for a very long time, and his church has members who were with him from the beginning till now my Grandmother included. His church is not that big it has less than 40 members, I am still wondering how his teachings of the old religion will help me in this modern age. Make that I don't even know why he is supposed to mentor me because though I had accepted my gift but I am not planning on standing in front of a congregation and preach, that is not me and I wouldn't put myself in the firing line like that...

Unfortunately I had to leave my construction job since it was corrupt, had to start on a clean slate. My current hustle is not impressive at all, it's not something that I would do but then at

the end of the day I have to make ends meet. Mon-Thur I wash cars at some mall that's very busy, I have a corner that's not very far from the mall's parking were I wash cars and then on Friday and Saturday I help at some garage with fixing cars. The man who hired me goes to my Grandmother's church, Pastor Mdluli is the one who suggested me when the owner wanted someone to help him during busy days. My working hours at the garage are 09:00 - 19:00, with minor breaks in between and I get paid R1000 for both those days whilst my car wash doesn't give me less than R150 a day. I make reasonable money but still it doesn't amount to what my old hustle use to make me back when I was still Nazo.

Things between Mantwa and I aren't very good, with my new life I doubt she would wanna be with me. The last thing I want is to give my heart away only to have her leave me for

another dude with better wheels, a dude with more stacks than me. I done had my heart broken by Nkuli, I am not up for that anymore...

Today I knocked off early than usual, my boss had plans, he was taking his family out. Since I worked a half day today I only got paid R700..

I parked my car next to the gate and made my way out, I was still wearing my overall that had oil all over not forgetting my black vest. Tired as I am I dragged my legs so that they could carry me through to the kitchen door..

I wiped the oil from my hand before I opened the door, or else my Mother is going to throw a fit with the door handle being oily. I opened and then made my way in, I heard my Mother and my Grandmother talking in the lounge I made my way there..

Me: Sanibonani (Greetings)

Gugu: Hau! uEarly namhlanje (you early today)

Me: Ya we closed early because uBab Mathebula was taking his family out

Gugu: Alright.. Can I dish up for you?

Me: You cooked already?

Gugu: Yey! Phela we have a visitor.. Not just any visitor nje

Ma: Gugu Awume (Gugu don't start)

My Grandmother stood up..

Ma: Nazo come here

Me: Come where?

Ma: Woza! (Come)

She held me by my hand and then we went to her bedroom, I looked at Gugu and she raised her shoulders..

My Grandmother looked at Me..

Her: I think this is something that's spiritual

Me: Spiritual?

She opened the door and I made my way in but immediately walked out when I saw her laying on my Grandmother's bed..

Me: Ma..

Her: I think she needs your help, whatever is happening with her it's spiritual.. She needs help
Nazo

.

To be continued

No edits

28

SNAZO

My Grandmother followed me to my room,so we could talk..

Me: I don't choose who to help, the voice deep within is the one that guides me and I haven't felt any spiritual connection with Nomvelo

Ma: That voice is the holy spirit. Nazo you really need to take what Pastor Mdluli teaches you seriously

Me: I don't know what she's going through but I'm sure that her family will help her, I don't know how to help her because I don't know what's going on with her. The holy spirit hasn't said anything about her

Ma: There are others that you will have to help on your own without the holy spirit always having to tell you which person to help, through spoken words you can help a lot of people. When I had the gift it wasn't as powerful as yours, you gifted to heal with words, through prayer, and with your hands. Healing with words that's something you have to do on your own, preaching in church

Me: Let's not push it Ma I'm not going to preach anywhere.. I am hardly copying as it is

(Silence)

Her: Have you spoken to Mantwa?

Me: No

Her: Why not?

Me: Why should I?

Her: She loves you

Me: I don't wanna get myself into another Nkuli situation

Her: What makes you say that?

Me: I am no longer that Nazo Ma.. I doubt any girl would wanna stick around with my current state of employment and finance

Her: If Mantwa didn't wanna be with you she wouldn't be this hurt by you avoiding her, she has been coming here Nazo I think you need to talk to her. You cannot punish every girl just because of what Nkuli did

Me: I'll call her then

Her: At least be honest with her so she can move on.. Another guy would appreciate her and what I'm going to say to you is that, you lost the real one. Not every girl would be this understanding and most importantly she understood and respected your gift, I think she would've made a good companion but then what do I know

I looked at her..

Her: You can bath and then come and eat

Me: Where is Niso?

Her: I don't know.. He just went out

Me: Okay

Her: Don't forget to call Mantwa

Me: I won't

She walked out and closed the door..

–
NISO

My business has grown, I don't sell weed only but now I sell some pill that you can mix with weed, cigarettes, or crush it and sniff it. It's very addictive and in turn it has gained me a lot of customers. It's not easy coming from a financial disadvantaged background, Nazo has always been able to provide for us but he used to pull a lot of disappearing acts that I was forced to start my own hustle. The new pill that I sell is really making me a lot of money that I am even thinking of moving out of home and getting my own place, it would be easy for Nomvelo to come and visit more often..

I gave him the pill, one pill is R250..

He was shaking, when you start with it you can't really stop..

Him: Gimme another one

I gave him another one and he gave me the R500..

Him: I will call you again

I nodded..

I have a burner phone were my clients call me whenever they need the pill. I looked around and then walked to get a taxi home. I now even have white customers, I think some of the students from school let their friends in on the drug. I always have to be careful though because one mistake I might get locked up..

—

JJ

These dreams that Nomvelo keep on getting were now worrying me a lot, obviously the herbs from Bab'Ngwenya aren't really helping anymore..

He threw the bones and looked at them for a

while...

(Silence)

Bab'Ngwenya: Aii kubi Ngcobo (It's bad)

I looked at the bones..

Me: Yini? (What is it)

Him: igazi likadade wenu lifuna ukuziphindezela
(Your Sister's blood is seeking revenge)

Me: Bengithi nje uNomvelo was the one to
prevent that?

Him: Nami bengicabanga njalo.. Bengithi Uma
uthatha lokhu okuncane wakuthanda, Udade
wenu ubezo lala ngoxolo. (I thought you
adopting nomvelo was going to make her rest
in peace)

Me: Manje ngizoyenzani? (What should I do)

Him: Wena phikelela ukumthanda futhi
umenzele yonke into ayifunayo ngemali yegazi
lika mamakhe, lokho kuzokuvikela elwakeni

Iwakhe (Just continue loving her and spoiling her with the money that was attained by shedding her Mother's blood, in that way you will be safe)

Me: Manje amaphupho akhe? (what about the dreams)

Him: Ima kancane (wait a minute)

Me: Yini indaba? (What)

Him: Ngibona ifu elimunyama nempi enkulu ezayo emzini wakho (I see a dark cloud and a big war that's coming to your house soon)

Me: Angizwa kahle? (I don't understand)

Him: akucaci (it's not clear)

He stood up and went get some bottle that had medicine in it..

Him: This is for protection, your own protection... Thatha (here)

I took it..

Him: ugeze ngawo every morning so harm doesn't come your way

I know that only my wife means me harm..

–

MANTWA

10min before I knocked off I had received a message from Nazo saying that we need to "Talk". I don't know whether to be relieved that he finally reached out, or to be mad at him but either way I wanted to talk to him so he makes it very clear to me where we stand. I knocked off at 13:00 and then I made my way to his place, I took a few deep breaths before knocking at his door. I knocked twice..

Him: Come in

I took one last deep breath and then opened, I made my way in he was laying on his bed while listening to music. He rose his head up from the pillow when he saw me..

Him: Hey

I closed the door and stood there..

Me: Hi

He took his phone and then stopped the music, he was in his briefs and vest only.

Him: wasn't expecting you

Me: You sent me a text

Him: Yeah I didn't think that you was going to come today

Me: I don't have much time.. Thought I should come and hear what you wanted to say before going home

Him: You look nice

I wasn't moved by that comment, I didn't even smile..

Him: I'm sorry

Me: Sorry for what?

Him: For everything.. I was a jerk

Me: Okay

He stood up..

Him: Just okay?

Me: What you expect me to say?

He made his way to me..

Him: I don't know get mad.. You have the right to get mad do you know that?

Me: Me getting mad what difference is going to make? I just wish that you were at least honest with me. If you didn't like me you should've just said so instead of leading me on

He held my hand...

Him: I do like you a lot.. I'm sorry

I looked down

Him: I'm truly sorry

He got very close and lifted my chin up so I

could look at him, he leaned over for a kiss. I don't know why I was being a fool but I kissed him too.. He put his hand around my waist and pulled me closer to him, my bag dropped down to the floor and I wrapped my hands around his neck. Both his hands were now around my waist he was squeezing me to him a bit tight, then he picked me up and went to lay me down on his bed..

—

JJ

On my way back home I received a call from this other PI that was recommended to me by someone..

Me: Talk to me

Him: I found something interesting

Me: What is it?

Him: The boy is selling drugs

Me: Serious?

Him: Been following him and he is selling drugs

Me: That doesn't surprise me.. Proof?

Him: Took a few pictures.. I can Email them to you

Me: That would be great

Him: They don't show much but they do show him standing in some spot with different people coming to him, I think the drugs are exchanged through a handshake greeting and shoulder bumping wouldn't be much evidence for the cops though

Me: I don't want that for the cops

Him: Okay I'll Email you the pictures

Me: Thank you

I wanted him to tail this Niso guy to see if he is not dodgy, and it comes off as no surprise that he is dodgy. I hope Nomvelo doesn't know

about this, and I hope this becomes a ticket for her to leave him..

.

To be continued

29

DANGER

Almost everyday in between my breaks I drive to the cemetery to visit my wife's grave, I sometimes leave a flower behind or it provided I have enough time. Victoria has been gone for a very long time but her death is something that I struggle with every day, when I got locked up and spent years in jail doesn't compare to the pain of losing her. I could've been a better husband but I was battling demons of my own, I wish that I was the one who took her place. I lost everything, lost my wife, my Daughter and everything that I know. When I was released I couldn't even go back to live in our old house

anymore, There's too many memories that live there and also in the eyes of my neighbours I would always be a heartless murderer. Being JJ's pet was never my dream but I had to be close to my Daughter to make sure that JJ doesn't hurt her, I don't trust him we talking about a person who sacrificed his Sister for money. There's no telling what he can do to my Daughter. When I was released from jail and started working for JJ, he decided that Victoria's old tombstone was not impressive so he had it changed. When they removed the old tombstone I took some of the soil that was on her grave and took it to this other woman, she is a seer and she helps people. Especially if your loved one passed on in a tragic way. She mixed the soil with water and then she gave me the bottle, it's a very small bottle and she told me that I should pour the mixture in a drink and that if JJ consumes it, Victoria is going to haunt him, she is going to haunt him until he losses

his mind. I have had the bottle for a very long time now, I didn't wanna go through with it because Nomvelo was young at that time she needed Parental guidance but now she's old enough and I can go ahead with the plan. JJ lives like what he did was right, he hasn't shown any remorse for what he has done and I will make him remember. I want him to remember Victoria, relive that tragic day until he snaps. I want to see him lose his mind, I want him to remember her..

I always have her picture with me, sometimes looking at it I will find myself tearing up. If it wasn't for my Daughter I would've long killed myself..

–

MANTWA

Mom: I was very worried about you

Me: I know I'm sorry

Her: I thought you said that things are not well between you two?

Me: We talked

Her: Hmmmmm..

Me: Mom I'll see you later

Her: Okay.. Tell him that just because you visit him at his place, doesn't mean that he should delay paying Lobola

I laughed...

Me: See you later

Her: See you later baby

I came here so that we could talk, so that I could have him be honest with me. Sleeping with him was not part of the plan. I put on my pants and my blouse, he had gone outside to pee and have a smoke. I was tired and I was very sore, last his Grandmother told me that he was arrested for 5 years and ya today it showed

that he hasn't been with a woman in a very long time. Not excluding myself from the whole situation, I also haven't been sexual ever since my last break up. I slowly sat down on the bed, I never really imagined a light skinned guy being gifted, well I never expected his kind to be that much gifted but in his case it was different. Right now I just feel like I could have a whole fan blowing on my cookie..

The door opened and he walked in..

He closed it and then stood there looking at Me..

Him: Are you okay?

Me: I'm okay just that.. Today confirmed that I haven't had sex in a long time

He chuckled..

He made his way to me and stretched out his hand, I stretched out mine and he helped me to stand up. He buttoned my shirt..

Him: I wasn't that gentle so..

Me: It's okay.. I really enjoyed

Him: Enjoyed much to go again?

Me: Maybe not today.. We already had two rounds that's went very gentle

I ran my hands on his body, he wasn't wearing a tshirt..

Him: Maybe we can go and get something to eat before I drive you home

Me: I'd like that very much

Him: First you need to go inside and greet my Grandmother.. She's going to kill me if she knew that you were around and you didn't greet

Me: Okay

He kissed me..

Him: I'll put on a tshirt in the meantime

I walked out and went to the house to greet...

—
DANGER

After parking I made my way to his office, he rented out this other place for his office and to park his taxis..

I knocked and made my way in, he was sitting at the table going over some book.

Him: What are you doing here?

Me: Just wanted to check if you needed something before I head home

He checked his wrist watch..

Him: You can leave the keys on the table, I'll take them home with me

I looked at his whiskey across the room..

Me: Kahle kahle I wanted to talk to you about something

He looked at me..

Him: Khuluma iskhathi asikho (Talk there's no time)

Me: Ngingathela iWhiskey? (can I pour us some whiskey)

Him: Danger iskhathi sok'dlala anginaso (Danger I don't have time for games)

Me: It's just that-

Him: Phuma (get out)

That didn't go well..

Him: Leave the taxi keys on the table bese uyaphuma(then get out)

I did as I was told..

Him: Ohw tomorrow we having dinner with Nomvelo's useless boyfriend I want you to be there

Me: I'll be there

Him: Good

I need JJ to drink this water..

–

NOMVELO

I felt air being blown on my face, I was sleeping so peacefully that I really didn't wanna wake up. I still had more sleep in me..

Niso: Wake up

I slowly opened my eyes and the light was on..

Me: What time is it

Him: Time for you to go home before your Uncle comes here

Me: I feel like sleeping some more

Him: Come on.. I'll drive you home

I got out of the bed almost falling, he held me..

Him: I got you

Me: Think I got up too fast

Him: Will you be able to walk?

I nodded..

Me: Let me put on my shoes

Him: I'll help you

I sat on the bed and he put helped me put on my shoes, such a gentleman..

Him: Not sure how to do this

Me: I'll do it (Laughing)

I put on my sandals..

Me: There

I stood up again..

Him: Got everything?

Me: My bag is in your room

Him: I'll get it

Me: Okay

I don't know when was the last time I got such a

peaceful sleep..

–

MANTWA

We drove to some pub&grill not far from his place to get something to eat..

"Ska rebona re phela

Kgale re sokola rona re phelela Mmino

Oskang potja ka dilo kgale re sokola rona re phelela Mmino"

This place is always noisy and unsavory characters usually hang out here a lot, when I say unsavory I mean your Gangsters you know just those notorious well financial stable thugs. Nazo greeted a few of them, this was not my kind of place. I am an introvert, I enjoy being indoors watching movies or reading books. I don't go out that much, I don't even have friends I am that boring type of person..

Snazo put his hand around my shoulders and kissed me on my cheek..

Him: Are you okay?

I faked a smile..

Me: I'm okay

Him: Welcome to my world

I looked around and I really wasn't comfortable with the scene..

.

To be continued

No edits

30

MANTWA

It was a long day and when I got home I bathe first before going to bed. I looked at myself in the small mirror that hung on my bedroom wall, I had a towel wrapped around my naked body

and I was playing my favourite song on my phone..

"I feel a little rush, I think I've got a little crush on you I hope it's not too much But babe when I'm with you, I hear it My heart singing La, la, la, la, la, la, la, la-la La, la, la, la, la, la, la-la"

My eyes were a bit red, I was very tired and I couldn't wait to sleep. I heard a knock at the door..

Me: Come in

It was my Mom..

Mom: Wanted to say Goodnight

Me: It's late I thought you were sleeping already

Her: I was on the phone with your Aunt

Me: Okay

Her: Ukahle? (Are you okay)

I nodded..

She walked in and closed the door..

Her: You don't look like a girl inlove, you should be singing your heart out

I went and stopped the song, she walked over and sat on the bed..

Her: Khuluma nami (talk to me)

I sat next to her..

Her: What's wrong?

I exhaled..

Me: Nazo took me out, we went to this other pub&grill

Her: Isn't that supposed to be something good?

Me: I don't know much about Snazo's past life.. I only know a bit, what his Grandmother told me but tonight..

Her: What about tonight?

Me: Ma.. Snazo is too much into his past life, he

was rubbing shoulders with the most notorious Gangsters. I felt like I wasn't good enough for him when I looked at the girls that they were with, I don't know I feel like he is going to go back to that life

Her: I thought he changed

I shook my head no..

Me: He is torn between two worlds, he won't fully accept who he is if he doesn't leave his past completely. Mama kube umbonile (You should've seen him)

Her: Awu kodwa Mantwa

Me: I can't.. You know me, I am an introvert. I don't like drama, and this fast life is not my thing

Her: He was that bad?

Me: It seems so

Her: Kodwa last week uzile enkonzweni njena

(but last week he came to church)

Me: I don't know Ma.. I don't wanna be scared of him, I am scared of such guys

Her: Don't conclude anything just as yet, he makes you happy doesn't he?

Me: He does.. And I think I am falling hard for him

Her: Then just concentrate on that love you have for him and leave everything else... Come on get some rest you look tired

Me: Good night

Her: Love you

Me: I love you too

—

NOMVELO

The following morning I was up very early, the plans had been changed from dinner to having

lunch. I was nervous, I was very nervous on how my Uncle was going to handle himself. I hope this won't turn into a nightmare..

Nomsa: What menu do you want?

Me: Niso is from the hood, he won't do serious dishes. He enjoys traditional dishes, something simple. I think oxtail with dumplings will do

She smiled a little..

Me: What?

Her: Never thought this day would come

Me: What day? Don't start

We both laughed...

Her: Mina I like the guy because he changed you, you now a better person

Me: Uphi uMalume vele? (Where is Uncle)

Her: He left early said he had some errands to run

The door bell rang..

Me: I don't know how you going to help because of your Arm

Nomsa: I'm just going to give you instructions
I opened the door and it was Danger..

Me: Danger

He made his way in..

Nomsa: Aww Danger what brings you here? It's your day off today

Danger: Ya I need extra money so I decided to work today, even if it's half day

Nomsa: Ohw.. Shouldn't you be at the taxi rank already?

Danger: Ya I am here for my keys, I left them in JJ's office yesterday... I was here for his office keys

Nomsa: You know he doesn't want anyone in

his office

Me: Since when is Danger anyone?

Nomsa: Fine I'll get the keys

She walked away..

Me: Danger are you going to come? We having my boyfriend over for lunch

Danger: Eish since I'm working today I don't know

Me: Please.. It will be less awkward for him when you around, you know how to handle my Uncle

Danger: I'll try

Me: Thank you very much Danger.. Maybe you can bring along your woman

Danger: My woman?

Me: Yes.. You do have someone special in your life right?

He cleared his throat..

Danger: Uhm.. Maybe..

Nomsa walked in..

Nomsa: Here you go.. Please bring them back

Danger: I will

Me: 14:00 Danger don't forget

Danger: I will be here.. Thank you again Nomsa
for the key

Nomsa: You welcome

He walked out..

Nomsa: Such a nice man

Me: Very nice

Nomsa: Let's get back to the menu

–

SNAZO

I woke up feeling like shit, I had a lot of beers

last night. After dropping off Mantwa at her place I went back to the pub&grill to drink some more and hangout with the boys, it was a good night. I got my phone and it was 9:00am, I had no missed calls and no messages from Mantwa. That's strange last week she called me and reminded me that I shouldn't forget about church, she usually calls in the morning or greet me on WhatsApp. Church starts exactly at 9:00,since she didn't call I also felt lazy to bath and go. I could notice last night that she was uncomfortable at the pub&grill, I thought that she was going to have fun but she didn't. She wasn't herself..

I sent her a text:

"Tell me when church is out"

I put my phone away and slept again...

—

NISO

The first thing I did when I woke up was to do my laundry before going to Nomvelo's place, last night I drove her home and then came back home in her car so I'll be going with it later. I hope JJ won't get in my nerves, the last thing I want is an altercation with him. As I waited for the water to fill up, I checked Facebook only to be welcomed by a lot of "RIP". One of my clients who was also my Facebook friends had a lot of tags, friends tagged her on some "RIP" posts. She was at the same college as me. She got addicted to the pill when she bought it to help her with depression, I think somehow she got addicted. She's the first that I know off who passed on from an overdose. She was found in her bedroom dead with the pill crushed on her dressing table so one of the posts stated, I hope this won't come back to me.

—

DANGER

I poured the water in his whiskey and then closes it again. I have long been waiting for this day, I have long been waiting for revenge. Seems like I'm going to get it after all, JJ won't know what hit him. I took the keys to the taxi and locked his office then went..

.

To be continued

31

NOMVELO

I checked the time again it was now 15:00 he was supposed to be here at 14:00..

Nomsa: He is probably on his way

I had called him and his phone took me straight to voicemail. Everyone was prepared nicely, the table was filled with all variety of food that he would like. We heard the kitchen door

openening and closing, then I heard two voices.
It was my Uncle and Danger..

They walked in...

Uncle: Look at this..I wish people would go this
far for me too

They sat down..

I looked at the time again, If Niso doesn't show
up I will be very angry that would mean he
doesn't wanna try to show my Uncle that he is
serious about me..

Uncle: So where is the guest of honour?

Nomsa: He is not here yet

He looked at his wrist watch..

Uncle: Really? Wasn't this whole thing supposed
to be at 14:00?

Me: He is running a bit late

Uncle: A bit?

Nomsa: JJ

Uncle: This boy is disrespectful he is making me wait?

Nomsa: He is going to come

Danger: I can go and check if there's any car coming downstairs the road

Uncle: Don't waste your time he is not worth it, plus he might not even have a car

Me: I borrowed him mine

Uncle: You what?

Me: It's a Sunday taxis are scarce!

Uncle: See what I was afraid of? You going to provide for a man?

Me: I just borrowed him my car he is going to bring it back today

Uncle: This is a waste of my time, I have better things to do

My phone rang..

Me: It's him

I answered..

Me: Hey

Him: I got lost..

Me: Where are you now?

Him: At the gate

Me: I'm coming

I put my phone down and went to fetch him..

Uncle: It's about time!!

Nomsa: Please behave when he comes in

JJ: This is my house, He is the one who has to behave

I was a bit upset that he was late but also relieved that he was here..

Me: I am so mad

Him: I know and I'm sorry

Me: Why didn't you at least call and say that you going to be late or that you lost?

He put his hands on my cheeks...

Him: I'm sorry I should've called

I put my hands on his..

Me: At least you came

He smiled and then kissed me..

Him: Let's go in then

He held my hand and then we walked to the house..

—

SNAZO

I looked at her while holding her hand, she was fine last night and today she can't get out of bed. She opened her eyes..

Her: Snazo

Me: What's wrong?

Her: I don't really know

Me: I can't see it.. I can't sense what's happening to you

Her: That's because it's not something demonic

Me: You can't get out of bed Ma, obviously you not well and it might be something serious

She smiled..

Her: I am at peace with everything

Me: Don't say that

Her: It was bound to happen.. You cannot fully become what you destined to be while I'm still alive

Me: You not going to die..

She put her hand on my cheek..

Her: I am so proud of you

Me: Don't talk like that.. It's not going to end like

this

Her: How did you accept your gift? What happened? You were stubborn about it

Me: I had a vision that Niso was going to die, so I bargained his life in exchange for me to accept my gift

Her: Whatever happens don't turn back this is who you are, you cannot run away from who you're

Gugu walked in while holding a basin..

Gugu: I have to bath her so that we possibly take her to the hospital

Ma: No.. I don't wanna go to the hospital

Me: Ma please.. We still need you

Gugu: Let me bath her, I'll tell you when I'm done so that we can go to the hospital

I kissed her hand..

Me: I'll be in my room

I walked out to give them some privacy. My Grandmother is old, and it was not secret that one day she was going to die but I am not ready to lose her. At least not like this..

–

NOMVELO

I thought that having Dinner with Niso's family was awkward but this was more awkward..

Nomsa: I didn't think that you were this handsome

Niso: Thank you

Nomsa: Are you black? Like 100% black?

Niso: I'm not sure but I don't think so, my Mother doesn't really talk about my Father
My Uncle chuckled..

Uncle: She probably doesn't know because you

were unplanned

Nomsa: JJ!!

Me: I'm very sorry

Niso smiled..

Niso: It's alright.. No feelings caught

JJ: What is it that you do again?

Niso: I am doing my last year in teaching

JJ: Useless!

Me: Uncle!!

JJ: It's not a very impressive choice of career I meant to say

Nomsa: At least he's doing something

JJ: At least is not good enough

This was embarrassing..

JJ: He won't even afford to pay Lobola let alone a wedding

Me: We will cross that bridge when we get there

He threw the napkin on the table..

JJ: Let me leave

Nomsa: Where are you going?

JJ: To my office.. Rather spend my time doing something concrete than to entertain foolishness

He walked away..

JJ: I'll be back later

That was very uncalled for..

Me: I'm truly sorry

Niso: It's okay.. I'm good

Nomsa: Well let's eat and enjoy what's left of our lunch

Danger: Your Mother never told you about your Father?

Niso: No.. It's a topic that she doesn't wanna

discuss

Danger: I understand but it doesn't look like you need him anymore

Niso: Sorry?

Danger: Looks like you grew up well without him

Niso: I guess so

Me: Just didn't expect Uncle to be that rude

Nomsa: I expected it

Danger: Well at least we have peace now, I was already choking with all the tension in the air

We all laughed..

Danger: Let's enjoy

(Silence)

Niso: You know.. You and Nomvelo look a bit alike, are you related?

Danger looked at him..

Danger: No we not related

Niso: Really? You guys look alike

Me: Most people say that but if I was related to Danger I would know

Nomsa: There's definitely no relation there

Niso: My bad then

Nomsa: Come on let's talk about good things, let's bring positive energy

Me: I agree.. Let's try to talk about good things

Nomsa: Danger is your plate good? Or you want some more?

Danger: My plate is good thank you

Nomsa: Okay then let's just try to enjoy this lunch and forget about JJ for a few minutes

I was a bit disappointed though by how my Uncle behaved, I thought he had accepted my relationship with Niso, guess I was wrong..

–

SNAZO

We couldn't move my Grandmother when we tried to get her out of bed she felt a lot of pain, more like all her bones were broken. When you try to touch her she would flinch in pain, I don't even know how Gugu managed to bath her. I seriously didn't know what was wrong with her, and it was frustrating that I couldn't pick up what was wrong..

I held hand again and closed my eyes hoping that somehow I could heal her.

Her: It's not going to work

I looked at her..

Me: I thought you were sleeping

Her: You cannot heal me Nazo, what's happening to me is not demonic related

Me: You can't get out of bed.. That's not normal

Her: It was bound to happen Nazo.. I'm old

Me: But not like this

Her: I am old.. I wasn't going to live forever

Me: I didn't expect you to live forever but it's too soon

Her: Death is unpredictable, it doesn't really announce before it comes

Me: I want to get better.. I want you to live at least another 10 years

She smiled..

Her: Well then allow me to rest a little

She closed her eyes.. She also seemed very tired..

—

JJ

The first thing I did when I got to the office was to drink my whiskey, I drank at least two

glasses before sitting down. This is where I unwind and relax when I have had a long day, or when something is bothering me. Just me, my music, my whiskey, and a lot of peace..

.

To be continued

No edits

32

SNAZO

A WEEKS LATER

'xa ndiyekelwa nguwe, ngophalala njengamanzi'

They sang that part of the song at least twice before pastor Mdluli stood up and went to preach. I looked at the coffin that was at the front with flowers under it, and a her favourite blanket nicely covering her coffin. It was very difficult to accept that she was gone, i don't think there's ever gonna be something so

painful as this in my life. My grandmother raised me and Niso, she was always there she's the only mother that we know. Mantwa held my hand she was sitting next to me, she has been very supportive throughout this whole ordeal. Niso and Nomvelo came through, they sat next to us. Something wasn't right with Niso, he contributed 10 000 for the funeral that's a lot of money for someone who is not working and still a student. I contributed R5 000, and then the burial society that she joined covered the rest. There's a lot that me and him need to talk about i am very sure that he is doing something that's illegal, there's no way that he could have so much money while he doesn't even have a job, i know this life and i have been through it..

P. Mdluli: sibonga ukuthi uMa'buthelezi uhambele enkosini (we're thankful that Ma'buthelezi passed on while knowing God)

Everyone reacted to that statement. I feel like

my grandmother and I we still had a lot to discuss, i wanted here to be here as I fully accepted and embraced my gift and calling, the most respect and gratitude that I could give her right now is to become what I am destined to be. She would've been very proud to see me venturing in this spiritual journey.

Mantwa leaned over and whispered in my ear.

Mantwa: I didn't know that your grandmother knew some white people

I turned back and saw some white guy sitting at the back, Niso and i looked at each other.

Niso: could he be from our father's side?

I looked at the guy again and i didn't recognize him at all..

–

JJ

I laid my feet on the tiles and they were cold,

they usually this much cold in winter. I glanced down and i saw blood, actually my feet were being laid on cold blood. The way that the blood was cold it didn't seem normal, it was very cold. Not far from my feet my sister's body was laying there, with her chest wide open. The blood that was on the floor came from that open wound in her chest. I looked at her body laying there, she was not moving at all. I don't know what's happening to me, lately I have been seeing and hearing things. My sister has been haunting me i haven't been able to sleep peacefully for about a week now, I felt like I was losing my mind. I was out of it..

She turned her head and looked at me while still on the floor like that..

Her: Why JJ?

She got up from the floor still bleeding profusely from her chest, she walked up to me.

Her: Why?

I was frozen, I couldn't move.

She was my sister but she looked a bit different. She was very pale and looked very angry, i have never seen her this much angry until now.

Victoria was very humble and calm, fighting was not something that she enjoyed. I climbed the bed again as she made her way to me..

Her: Why would you put my daughter through that?

Me: I'm sorry

She lifted her hand and I found myself flying across the room and hitting the wall before falling..

Her: Why? Because of money?

I cuddled up in a corner like a baby..

Her: You will pay for what you did to me

I cuddled up while crying..

Me: I'm sorry

I then heard someone calling out to me.

Person: JJ?

Me: I'm sorry

Person: JJ it's me

It was Nomsa

Me: She was here.. She was here again I saw her

Nomsa: who? Your sister?

Me: she was here

Nomsa: there's no one here other than you and me

Me: she was here

Nomsa: come on get dressed Danger is here to take you to that traditional healer

She helped me to get up..

–

SNAZO

After pastor Mdluli was done preaching we went to the cemetery to lay her to rest. Niso and I rode with my mother and a few other family members in the family car. Mantwa had made her way back to the house to help with the catering, Nomvelo I think she followed us in her car..

At the graveyard I couldn't take my eyes off that white guy, he was standing not far from where we were sitting. He wasn't alone, he was with some other guy, the guy was holding an umbrella which shielded them from the blazing sun. We made our way to throw soil on her coffin, Gugu couldn't even walk on her own she was broken. It was packed I didn't know that my grandmother knew so much People. I helped Gugu to sit down on her chair, Niso made his way to us..

Niso: Gugu who is that guy?

Gug looked at him..

Guguu: i don't know

Niso: you must know he is the only white guy around here how does he know our family? Who told him about Ma?

Gugu: Niso I don't know how that guy is

Niso: bullshit!!!!!!.. Is he from our father's side of the family?

Gugu: Niso I don't know him

Niso: Gugu!!!

Gugu: Niso do you mind? I am grieving okay?

Me: Niso just leave it.. This is not the place

He clicked his tongue and then went to sit down..

—

NOMSA

Me: here we go.. Are you comfortable?

He didn't say anything, he looked like his sanity had vanished from him. Something weird has been happening to my husband. He is not that powerful and feared JJ that we all know, he is own losing his mind and doesn't even know what's happening. JJ can't die now especially when Nomvelo is the one to inherit everything, if something happens to him I get nothing. That spoiled brat won't hesitate to put me out, JJ married me out of community of property but I refuse to walk out with nothing. I want him to change his will but by the look of things, i don't even see that happening. He is not in his normal state of mind..

Me: Danger I don't know whtsa happening to my husband.. Lookat him?

Danger: i just wonder what went wrong

Me: make sure that Bab'Ngwenya whoever he is

helps him.. I cannot lose my husband

Danger: i give you my word

Me: in the meantime I'll call his mother

Danger: I will make sure that Bab'Ngwenya gives him something that will help him

Nomsa: Please do

Danger: We should be leaving

Me: drive safe

Danger: i will

–

NISO

We came back from the funeral and everyone went to queue for food, it was a lot of people I don't even think that all of them are going to eat..

Me: do you want to go and eat somewhere?

Her: Yes we can

(silence)

Her: Im very sorry about your grandmother

Me: Its okay.. It's just gonna take a while to accept that she's no longer around

Her: death is not easy to accept especially if it's a loved one

Me: How is your uncle holding up?

Her: His condition is worsening

Me: What really is the problem?

Her: i don't know but it seems like he is losing his mind.. He claims that my Mother is haunting him

Me: That's unusual

Her: In what sense

Me: if someone haunts you that means there's something you did to that person

Her: What exactly are you implying?

Me: Nothing.. I'm sorry if I upset you

Her: i think that I'll go and eat at my Grandmother's house

Me: i said i was sorry

She stood up and left..

–

SNAZO

i was sitting at the back with one of my Uncles, Mantwa brought us something to eat..

Uncle: uyabona ke le Ntombazana mele uyishade (you have to marry this girl)

Mamtwa: kukhonaokunye engingani lethela kona? (is there something else that I can bring for you)

Uncle: cha siyabonga koti(no thank you)

She walked away..

Uncle: uyabona i Ntombazana enenhlonipho

engavilaphi (such a respectful girl that isn't even lazy)

Me: she is one of a kind

Uncle: ewwww kuyoba nzima umamncane engasekho (it's going to be difficult with my aunt no longer around)

I exhaled..

Me: i still can't believe it

I saw the white guy and his companion making their way to us..

Him: Good afternoon

We greeted back..

He had long hair that he tied up neatly..

He looked at me..

Him: Are you snazo?

Me: Yes

Him: Man I'm glad that I finally found you, you

have been on my mind for weeks now.. No
homo

Me: and who are you?

Him: Sorry where are my manners.. My name is
Dawn Baker and I am an exorcist

He extended his hand to me...

A what???

.

To be continued

No edits

33

SNAZO

we found somewhere a bit quiet and not busy,
so that we could talk. I was a bit confused how
does this guy know me? let alone how did he
find me?

Me: You said that you an exorcist?

Him: Yes i am an exorcist, not a preety good gift to have trust me

Me: exactly what is an exorcist?

Him: An exorcist is someone who is ordained to cast out demons, including Lucero himself.

Most Pastors are exorcist, Nuns, prophets and preists

Me: So what did you come here for?

Him: I was sent here to help you.. As I have said before I had a vision about you

Me: sent by who?

Him: This is going to be harder than I thought

He looked at me..

Hm: there's a guardian Angel by the name of Helena, she is a guardian angel for people who have supernatural gifts, or a religious calling. On your side since you going to be a priest or a healer rather you need to be able to cast out

demons

A few months ago this would've sounded insane but I have seen a lot already to make me believe that what he was saying was true

Him: Look I know it's not easy one once upon a time your life made sense then you wake up one day and everything has completely changed. You're last in on things that you never thought existed, things that can make people question your sanity. It's not easy but it is what it is

(Silence)

Me: It's funny that something I never believed in all my life becomes my destiny, I don't even know were to start. I have always thought that God and religion was a bunch of fiction and mind control, something that was created to enslave people but now..

Him: No one chooses this life but believe there's a lot of evil in this world and i have seen

in first hand, things that see, the demons that i
cast out... It's all real, just as good exists so
does evil

Me: I never thought that I was going to accept
my gift but after my Grandmother's passing..
This is who we are and this is what my family
was called for I wanna embrace the gift for
future generations to come

Him: That's the spirit you seem to be taking it
better than me

Mantwa made her way to us..

Mantwa: Hey

Me: Hey

Her: your friend Shine is looking for you

Me: I'll be there

She looked at Dwan..

Me: uhm this Mantwa.. She's my girlfriend, and
this is..

Him: Dawn.. Dawn Baker

Mantwa: A friend of yours?

Me: something like that

Dawn stood up..

Him: Here is my business card, we still have a lot to talk about

I took it..

Him: give a call later

Me: I'll do so

Him: and sorry about your Grandmother

Me: Thank you

He left..

Mantwa: I never knew that you had white friends

Me: sort of a long story

I got up too..

Me: Where is Shine?

Her: He is waiting by the tent

Me: Let's go and see himmm

We walked to the tent with my arm around her shoulders..

—

NOMVELO

I am trying to understand what's happening to my Uncle but I'm failing too, one moment he is fine and then the next he has lost his mind, I have never seen anyone who lost touch with reality like my uncle did

I opened the door and Walked in Nomsa was busy with some dishes..

Her: Hi

Me: Hey

Her: How was the funeral?

I shrugged my shoulders..

Me: Where is Uncle JJ?

her: He is not around

Me: Where did he go?

Her: Danger took him to this other traditional healer

Me: A traditional healer?

Her: We have to try all options Velo, obviously this is not something that western medicine can fix.. It's more spiritual

Me: I don't understand one moment he was fine and then the next.. He is losing his mind

Her: It's amazing how things work out

(Silence)

Me: do you think that..?

Her: think what?

Me: that he might have something to do with

my Mother's passing?

Her: wait what?

Me: I read somewhere that when an angry spirit is after you, then there's something that you did. A dead person always comes back for unfinished business

She laughed..

Her: I cannot believe you said that.. Your uncle can be a lot of things but what what you just said.. Wow

Me: I don't know what to think anymore

Her: JJ never dealt with your Mother's passing, you know how he is.. I think the pain and sorrow is catching up with him.. It's too overwhelming for him

Thanks to Niso now I'm thinking the worst about my Uncle..

Her: Look JJ is going to be fine.. Don't stress

too much and start overthing

Me: I hope he gets well.. I can't lose him too..

He is the only parent that I have left

She came to me and hugged me..

Her: He is strong, I mean if I can survive the shooting he will also survive this

She hugged me..

Her: Sizoba right (we going to be okay)

–

SNAZO

I don't if Shine is going to understand mystery choice of lifestyle and the route that I'm prepared to take. Shine has been my friend for a very long time now and I would really appreciate it if he could understand...

We sat down..

Him: What's up Poi?? Eyy uScarce kulama langa

(You very scarce these days)

Me: Ya eish it's just life

Him: Ngiyabona ubambe nescaza esihle (I even see that you have a girlfriend.. She's beautiful)

Me: Thank you

Him: Hade Ntwana nge sgriza, ngiyazi ukuthi vele beni close (Sorry about your Grandmother, I know you two were very close)

Me: Ta Ntwana

(Silence)

Me: Kuya kanjani le espanini? (How is it going at work)

Him: Ahh ng'jindile (I quit)

Me: Fede? (Why)

Him: Ahh uyazi mina ngima nayo one way, bekungekho right ukuspana wena ungekho (You know I'm loyal to you, I couldn't work there while

you were not around)

Shine's loyalty to me is sometimes unbelievable..

Him: Manje sizidlaphi? (what are we going to do now)

I cleared throat..

Me: I have to tell you something

Him: Ng'sikele ke (talk to me)

Me: I found out lately that my family has a gift, and that gift is passes on from generation to generation. So since isgriza singekho the gift was passed on to me

Him: A gift?

Me: I have a gift of healing and I have to be a priest

Him: Yooh

Me: Ya ngiyakena (I know)

A few seconds passed without us saying anything to each other..

Him: No nginawe Poi (I am with you)

I looked at him..

Him: Manje masingena emchurchana iZaka yona? (Now that we going to church, what about money)

Me: I have a car wash.. Makes reasonable money

Him: Yizo Ntwana.. Ngena la (That's what I'm talking about)

We fist bumped..

–

DANGER

Bab'Ngwenya led us to his consulting room..

Him: Eyy kunini anje (for how long has been like this)

Me: Sekuyisikhathi eside (A long time)

We sat down, we had left our shoes at the door..

Bab'Ngwenya: Ithi sibone ukuthi abaphantsi bathini? (let's see what the ancestors are saying)

He blew in the small bag and threw the bones while calling upon the Ngcobo ancestors..

Bab'Ngwenya: Khanyisani phela sibone ukuthi umntwana wenu uhlushwa yini (shed some light on what's happening to your child)

We all sat in silence and looked at the bones, then all of sudden I saw a shadow in the room it had a very quick movement. JJ clung on to my arm..

JJ: Victoria!!

He looked around..

I looked at Bab'Ngwenya..

Him: We dealing with a very angry spirit

Me: What? What do you see?

His bones caught fire and started burning, he stood up and stood against the wall..

Him: Kuzofaneka nihambe (You have to leave)

Me: What?

Him: Manje!!! (Now)

JJ: Victoria.. Please..

He looked at the corner and when I glanced there too. I saw her, I saw my wife. She looked like my wife but at the same time she looked different, she looked like she had a lot of anger, she was on fire. Her eyes also reflected fire.

Me: Vic.. Victoria?

She looked at me and the fire disappeared

Me: Vic?

As I stood up she disappeared.. There was silence in the room..

Bab'Ngwenya: Hambani.. Ningaphinde nibuye
(leave and never come back)

.

To be continued

No edits

"Rose Petals & Betrayal" the page is back

34

NOMVELO

The following morning I woke up and prepared myself for school, I was still very worried about my Uncle. He is the only family that I have, if something could happen to him I will be all alone. My Grandmother is old too, she can die anytime. I don't wanna mention Nomsa because she has her own family, we not blood related and she might leave when something happens to my Uncle..

I knocked at his door, I didn't get an answer. I

opened and walked in, he was sitting some small sofa that they have in their bedroom. He was starring at the curtains, I didn't see any movement from him...

Me: Uncle

He didn't respond to me. I walked up to him..

Me: Uncle

I looked at him, he looked tired. All his physical strength was gone, what ever that is happening to him is draining him of all his strength. I crouched and held his hand..

Me: It's me it's Nomvelo

My heart broke..

Me: You have to get better.. You have to get well

My phone rang, I let it ring for a while before answering it. It was Niso..

Me: Hello (sniffing)

Him: I didn't think that you were going to answer, especially after what happened yesterday

I got up..

Him: How are you holding up?

Me: He is not getting better, he is not even trying

I wiped my tears..

Him: I'll come over later to see you

Me: Okay

Him: I love you

Me: I love you too

I hung up and looked at him one last time before walking out. On my way to the kitchen I passed Danger, Nomsa, and some guy they were sitting at the table.

Nomsa: Velo baby come here

I went to them..

Me: What's going on?

Nomsa: This is Phila.. He is a queue marshal

Phila: Kunjani sisi? (how are you)

Me: I'm well

Nomsa: I was explaining to Phila that Danger will take the ropes for a while in the taxi business since your Uncle is not around

Me: Ohw.. Okay

Phila: I don't understand why JJ wouldn't call Me and let me know about this

Nomsa: He is not around and won't be around for a while now

Me: I'll see you guys later

Nomsa: Okay.. Enjoy School

I walked out to my car when Danger called out to me, I unzipped my bag to get my car keys but

it fell. I glanced at it..

Danger: Let me get that for you

He picked up my bag..

Him: I don't think you should be driving.. I'll drive you

Me: It's okay

Him: Velo I won't forgive myself if something happened to you

I leaned against the car crying..

Me: I don't know what I'm going to do if my Uncle doesn't get better

He put his hand on my shoulder..

Him: I'm sorry Velo but everything is going to be okay

–

SNAZO

Dawn came to pick me up I had called him last

night and he wanted me to tag along, he was going to perform an exorcism. I called Shine to tag along too.

Dawn passed me a file..

Him: The file of the charge

I took it and opened it, I read her information a bit and then proceeded to the pictures. They were a bit disturbing, she had scratches on her face, her hands the nails were broken and there was blood cloth. Her teeth some of them were out, her lips were dry and cracking. She was very skinny than she had been on her other picture before the possession. I passed Shine the pictures, he looked at them and whistled..

Me: What happened?

Dawn: Do you know a spirit board?

Me: I don't think so

Dawn: She messed around with a spirit board,

she wanted to communicate with her dead twin sister, but in so doing she forgot to close the curtain that separates our world from the supernatural world and then an evil spirit crossed over.. It possessed her

Me: An evil spirit?

Him: Yes.. She is possessed by Satan himself

Me: How do you know?

Him: She's violent.. Satan is an evil spirit that causes wrath or is responsible for wrath before you exorcize a demon you have to know which one it is and you have to exorcize it well. If you stand face to face with it and you don't know what it is, it can easily defeat you. You have to have courage

Shine: Yho! This is scary

Me: So what do we do when we get there?

Dawn: We exorcize. I have holy water, a cross

and this book

He handed it to me I didn't understand the language..

Him: it's in a language that will make it easier for you to communicate with the demon, sometimes English doesn't work but Satan understands all the languages so..

Shine: What you do is very powerful

Dawn: At first it used to scare but now I have grown to it

I don't know if this was my cup of tea..

–

NOMSA

When I was done with Phila I went to JJ's lawyer, we needed to take about a few things..

Me: Sorry if I am disturbing you

Him: Actually you have 30min before I go to

court

Me: Thank you

Him: Would you like something to drink?

Me: No I'm fine.. Thank you

Him: So what brings you here?

Jonathan has been JJ's lawyer for a very long time now..

Me: My husband he.. He wants to change his will

Jonathan looked around..

Him: So where he is he?

Me: Ya he is not here at the moment because he is sick

Him: Sick?

Me: Jonathan JJ wants to give everything to me

He laughed..

Him: That's very funny because JJ gave everything to Nomvelo

Me: That's true but now because of his sickness he wants me to have ownership of everything until Nomvelo has matured

Him: Nomvelo is an adult now

Me: I understand but Nomvelo is dating someone that JJ doesn't like and he is worried You know how JJ is

Him: Either way JJ must come and change his will, he has to sign under oath that he gives you ownership

Me: Okay he will do that

Him: You will call and make an appointment

Me: I will do so

I stood up..

Me: Have a lovely day Jonathan

Him: You too Mrs Ngcobo

–

SNAZO

We parked the car close to the fence, it was a gated community. We got out and I looked the house, these people don't look like they struggling..

Shine: Mina ngizobloma la.. Lezinto zenu ngigrand ngazo (I will stay here, these things of yours I'm good with them)

Dawn looked at me..

Me: He's staying behind

Dawn nodded as we made our way to the intercom..

Me: So for how long have you been doing this?

Him: For a long time

He pressed the button and a female voice

responded..

Her: Marshal residence good morning

Dawn: It's Dawn Baker.. The marshal family is expecting me

Her: Yes sir..

Dawn: Probably the helper

The gate opened and we made our way in.

Me: Beautiful place

Dawn: Ya they financial stable

We went to the door and rang the bell, their helper welcomed us in..

Her: This way

Dawn: Thank you

She led us to the living room..

Her: Mr and Mrs Marshal you have a visitor

We made our way in. They looked so distressed

and broken, I looked around at the room and the big portrait that hung against the wall caught my eye..

We sat down. The wife started talking..

Her: Thank you for coming

Dawn: I didn't bring the camera crew, I respect your privacy and not wanting the whole world to know about your Daughter

Her: Thank you

The portrait was of them and their two Daughters, they were identical twins..

Dawn: This is my partner.. Snazo

I greeted them..

Dawn: Please let me in on what happened

Wife: My..

She closed her eyes and tears fell..

Her husband hugged her..

Him: It's okay

The portrait really caught my attention, there was something that was off with it.

Husband: My uhm.. A few months ago we had a terrible accident my other Daughter passed on. Nelly struggled to come into terms with her sister's death

Dawn: What happened after?

Husband: I don't know how and who told her that you can communicate with your loved one who has passed on through a spirit board. She bought one and went to her sister's grave to speak to her

Dawn: Did she speak to her?

Him: No.. She didn't

Dawn: When did her behaviour started changing?

Him: a few days after the incident with the spirit board.. At first I thought that she was just angry

and hurt by her sister's passing but unusual things started happening

Dawn: Unusual things like what?

Him: At night she would scratch the wall, she would bang her head against the wall, she started speaking in a language that I didn't understand and she started being very violent

Wife: We took her to the hospital they had a psychiatrist do tests, nothing helped until Nelly told us what she did and I knew that it was something spiritual.. Please help us, I can't lose my Daughter again

Dawn: I'll try my best.. Can we see her?

Wife: Of course

They led the way and we followed, they led us to the basement. It was dark..

Wife: We have been keeping her here

Dawn: I understand

Wife: I don't wanna go down there, I can't see her like that

Dawn: It's okay

Dawn looked at me..

Dawn are you ready?

I nodded. We had the cross with us, the holy water, and the book.

Dawn: Can you please get us some salt?

Wife: Uhm.. Yes

We walked into the basement it was very dark and it had an awful smell. The window was blinded so that no sun came in... I had unusual sounds before I saw her, she was strapped to a bed. She didn't look appeasing, all those scratches and bruises..

She quickly turned her head, I'm surprised she didn't snap her neck..

Her: Who's there? (she spoke in a deep voice)

Dawn showed his face, and then she laughed..

Her: Ohhh Dawn!.. Dawn Baker the Exorcist!!

Dawn: In a flesh

She started sniffing..

Her: Nice you brought fresh meat!

Dawn looked at me and I got a bit closer, she looked at me..

Dawn: This is a friend of mine..

Her: Snazo..

I was taken..

Her: I know everything, I am everything

She really looked scary..

Her: Have you checked up on your Brother lately?

Me: Excuse me?

Her: Your Brother has sold his soul to me!

I was confused..

Her: Ahhh you didn't know?

Dawn: don't let him get to you

Her: All those souls his killing..

She started laughing..

Her: I could make him a reeper

Dawn: Listen!!!

She looked at Dawn and blinked a few times..

Dawn: I am here to chase you out, you don't belong here

Her: Really now? (smiling)

Dawn: You know I don't play games

She started laughing..

Her: You can't exorcize me Dawn

Dawn: Yes I can

Her: You can't! Every bone in her body is broken I'm the only thing keeping her alive, if I go she

dies! Do you really want her death in your hands?

Dawn: I would rather have her dead than have you do this to her

Her: Let the games begin then, but first you have to untie me

Dawn: with pleasure

Me: Don't.. Don't untie him

Her: Ohhh the amateur is saying something

Dawn: it's okay.. He can't hurt us

Helper: I have the salt

Me: I'll go and get it

I went to take the salt from her..

Me: Thank you

I went back to them. She started laughing..

Her: Salt? Come on Dawn you can do better than that!!

She raised her hand up and sent Dawn flying across the room. She untied her other hand and legs, I stood there not knowing what I should do. She made her way to me..

Me: Dawn!!!!!!

She raised her hand again and pinned me against the wall, without even touching me.

Her: Do you remember me? You and I have had a lot of encounters without even you noticing, I'm glad that we can finally talk. Face to face!

.

To be continued

No edits

35

SNAZO

I couldn't move, I was pinned against the wall. My feet were dangling, she didn't even have any physical contact with me but somehow I felt a

strong force pinning me against the wall. She just had her hand raised up at me. I was trying so hard to stretch my hand and throw the salt at her but I couldn't, the salt ended up falling on its own..

Her: You seriously think salt will have an effect on me, you don't even know why it's used you stupid boy!!

Me: You.. You can't.. You can't kill me..

She laughed and it felt like there was an earthquake in the room, it rumbled..

Her: I can kill you or better yet I can even possess you

She moved a bit closer..

Her: You don't even have a clue on what's going on.. No make that you don't even believe

Me: i do believe

Him: You can fool them but you can't fool me!!..

She starred at me right on my chest and my heartbeat raced..

Her: You doing this for Grandma.. This is your way of honouring her

I was getting tired of being pinned against the wall..

Her: You wanna believe be a preacher? Don't make me laugh.. Who is going to believe an ex con? no one is going to believe anything that comes out of your mouth. You going to be the biggest joke from being a feared and respected notorious Gangster to being a preacher what a joke!!!!

Dawn was still out. When you were in jail I was the one watching over you, i protected you I stood by you and made sure that other prisoners fear you and this is how you show your gratitude towards me?.. Christianity is going to make you poor? I could've made you

rich, given you more power if only you stayed faithful to me!! Now look at you what are you even doing for a living? You the biggest joke.. Where is your God now? you think God will take interest in a scumbag thug like you? You think you going to make it with third religious nonsense? The joke is on you!!.. We can still fix this, you can still come back to me

Dawn: Onu buraxmasına ica zə verməyinizi əmr edirəm!!

She turned to him and Dawn had the cross faced at her, he also sprinkled some holy water and she hissed like a snake then ran off. Dawn came to me

Him: Are you alright?

I was coughing nothing stop, when she ran off I fell on the floor, we heard Mrs marshal screaming, Dawn helped me up so that we can go and see what was happening. I struggled at

a bit to walk, my body felt a bit heavier than usual...

When we got up Mrs Marshal was throwing a fit..

Her: How could you? How could you let her get away?

Husband: Honey it's okay

Her: It's not okay!

The husband looked at Dawn..

Him: You supposed to be the best, we watch you on your show and you couldn't help my Daughter!

Dawn: With all due respect Mr and Mrs Marshal, such things happen but at the end I get everything done.. I know what I'm doing

I sat down on the couch and looked at the portrait again, it really caught my attention..

—

NOMSA

Me: JJ we need to talk

He was sitting outside getting some sun and fresh air

I got a chair and sat next to him..

Me: I went to see Jonathan today and I told him that you want to change your will

He kept quiet..

Me: JJ you have to change your will and give me ownership of all your asserts! Nomvelo is young, she doesn't understand any of the businesses. You can't give everything to her she's going to run everything down

She still didn't respond..

Me: Look I don't wanna tell her about how you killed her Mother

That got his attention, he looked at me..

Me: I know all about it, if you don't want any drama and if you don't want Nomvelo getting hurt and hating you. You will sign the papers plus she is already suspecting that something is off with you

I got up and put my hand on his shoulder.

Me: There's no way I'm getting out of this marriage with nothing.. I'll bring you a glass of juice

–

SNAZO

The helper brought me a glass of water..

Me: Thank you

Mrs M: She is not going to come back

Dawn: We will find her

I could see that the wife was the one wearing the pants around here, the husband was just going with everything that she says. He had his

arms around her shoulders..

I cleared my throat and they looked at me..

Me: If I may ask about the portrait

They all looked at it..

Me: The possessed twin is..?

Husband: Nelly.. She's the one who is standing in the middle and then Ashley is the one sitting down. The one that passed on from the tragic accident

Me: All of them were standing up in that portrait except for Ashley the deceased twin, she was sitting down on a chair and they were standing behind her. The Mother had put her hands on her shoulders, something was off, she was out of focus. They were all starring at the camera but she wasn't directly starring at the camera

Me: Something about this painting.. Why is Ashley the only one sitting down and she's out

of focus, no movement whatsoever from the facial muscles. All of you have curved smiles but her she is..

Mrs M: My only surviving daughter.. No my only surviving child has ran off, she is out there because you two couldn't do your job and you wanna ask me about the stupid painting?

Husband: Honey

Dawn: I'll be damned!

Her: You know what if you don't find my daughter I will make you pay, I'm going to tarnish your reputation!!

Husband: Honey calm down

She took the glass of wine and drank from it again..

Dawn: Ashley was already dead in that portrait wasn't she? That's why she's out of focus, that's why she can't stare directly into the camera.

That's why you have your hands on her shoulders, you balancing her so that she doesn't fall

Me: What?

Dawn: Ashley didn't die from a car accident, she hung herself you can see the ligature marks around her neck. She committed suicide because the demon or the devil rather that both of you signed a deal with started tormenting her first, she couldn't take it and she killed herself then it moved to Nelly. It was easy to get to Nelly because she was vulnerable, she was very broken by her sister's sudden passing

The wife stood up..

Her: Get out of my house!!

I was shocked.. I was very shocked. I was the one to stand up first and walk out, while Dawn kept on arguing with them..

Dawn: What deal did you make with the devil?

Her: I said get out!!

I made my way to Shine..

Shine: k'hambani? (What's going on)

Me: I wanna get out of here.. I've seen a lot already

He was leaning against the car, then his focus shifted..

Shine: Who is that?

I turned back and it was Nelly, she was wandering around at the back by the trees..

Me: That's the missing Daughter

Shine and I made our way in, and she just vanished. We looked for her all around ending by the trees but we couldn't find her..

Shine: Ende ngimbonile la (I saw her here)

I looked around and then I heard her hissing, she had climbed ontop of the tree. She fell on

Shine, she perfectly balanced herself on his back with her hands around his neck..

Her: I will snap his neck

Shine looked scared and I started getting a bit scared too..

Her: I'll come for the ones you care about, I'll kill them one by one

Shine couldn't move..

Shine: Ntwana kwenzakalani? (What's happening)

His voice was breaking, he was pretty scared...

Shine: Nazo do something Ntwana or les'Iwane sizong'bhodisa (do something or this animal is going to kill me)

I didn't know what to do, I don't know the Bible. I don't know how to pray, I don't know anything about demons and the supernatural..

I tried to get closer but she slightly turned

Shine's head..

Shine: Ntwana..

Tears were at the verge of falling from him..

I closed my eyes and tried to connect with the inner voice that always talks to me..

"Beloved.."

Me: I don't know what to do

Shine: Nazo.. Do something Ntwana

"Behold Beloved! I give you the authority to tread on serpents and scorpions, and over all the power of the enemy. Nothing shall by any means hurt you! Luke 10 vs 19 (king James version)"

It was in riddles, I couldn't really understand much..

Me: I don't understand..

"Courage Beloved... Joshua 1"

I opened my eyes and looked at them, Shine couldn't keep up any longer..

The following words that I spoke, I felt them coming from deep within..

Me: "And war broke out in heaven, Michael and his Angels fought with the dragon, the dragon and his Angels fought back but they did not prevail. Nor was a place found for them in heaven any longer"

She got down from Shine and hissed while moving backwards..

Me: "So the great dragon was cast out, that serpent of old called the devil and Satan, who deceives the whole world"

I moved towards the serpent as she moved backwards, I had attracted a bit of attention because Dawn and the parents were now out..

Mrs M: Nelly!!

She attempted to go to her but Dawn held her back..

Me: "Now salvation and strength and the kingdom of our God, and then power of his Christ have come, for the accuser of our brethren, who accused them before God day and night has been cast down (New King James version) "

Serpent: No!!!!!!!!!!!!!!

Me: And they overcame him by the blood of the lamb, and by the word of their testimony Revelations 12 vs 7-11"

She tore her already torn dress..

Serpent: No!!!!!!!!!!!!!!

Mrs M: Nelly!!

Me: You have no power.. You were already defeated, you just a shadow of what you used to be! I have been given authority over you!

Depart and go back to where you belong!!

She screamed one last time and fell down on the ground without saying anything.. Everyone was just taken, she opened her eyes and looked at her parents..

Her: I feel free now

She closed her eyes and then I saw her spirit departing from her lifeless body. Her spirit looked at me, she was glowing..

Her: I don't feel captured anymore, I feel free. I don't feel troubled anymore by that evil spirit

She smiled at me..

Her: Thank you

She then shimmered..

Her Mother went and knelt next to her body crying very loud..

Mrs M: Nelly not you too!!!.. What have I done??
(Crying)

I then saw the black entity that wore a robe, standing behind the Mother. He looked at me though I couldn't see his face clearly but his eyes were red..

Him: Yenə görüşəcəyik! (we shall meet again)

Then he disappeared..

.

To be continued

No edits

Sorry for the delay I just don't know how to type fast..

36

SNAZO

Later on at night Shine and I went to Gazibo to have a few beers, the plan was to have a few beers but what happened today shook both of

us. We ended up sitting quietly and glancing down at the Dumpies. Approximately a minute passed without both of us saying anything..

Shine: Yazi lezinto zamadimoni bengithi izinto abathusa ngazo abantu emChurch (I thought demons were something that they scared people with at church)

Me: Izinto ezikhona (it's things that exist)

Him: Ya ukubona loyamntwana anjalo tjerrr (seeing that girl in that manner)

Me: Ya this is my calling

Him: Angali I support you Ntwana but lezinto zama dimoni naaa ngikhiphe kuzo (I support you and everything but anything involving demons exclude me from that)

I chuckled..

Him: Mara uyi starring Ntwana.. Mina never

Me: Ya it's amazing how life is

He took a sip on his bottle and then he stood up..

Him: let me go for a smoke nyana..

Ngiyazwakala

Me: Sure

He left. I took out my phone and I had missed calls from Mantwa, I called her..

Her: Hey

Me: Hey

Her: How are you?

Me: I'm good and you?

Her: I'm good

Me: I got your missed calls

Her: I was checking up on you, and how you doing

Me: I'm doing well

Her: I actually passed by at your place today

Me: Ya I wasn't around

Her: At least you called

Me: How was work?

Her: Work was fine.. What were you up too

Me: Nothing much just running a few errands

Her: Oh okay

Me: Maybe tomorrow after work we can go out for dinner

Her: I'd like that

Me: I'll call you again tomorrow morning

Her: I love you

Me: Me too

Her: Night

Me: Night

I hung up. I don't know why but I am not feeling Mantwa at all, I don't feel anything for her. I tried

searching my heart but nothing, I don't think that I love her as much as she loves me which makes it a bit difficult to be with her. I took my bottle from the table, just when I was about to drink my eyes landed on someone that I didn't expect to see. It was that girl, then one that I saw the other day. The one that wanted to commit suicide, I guess she never did. I put the bottle down and made my way to her..

—

NOMVELO

Having sex right now just took my mind off things, it took my mind from what was happening with my Uncle. I felt his warm breath against my neck, my hands were running all over his body. I was enjoying every moment of having him deep inside of me. Niso did keep his promise, he came to see me and we chilled in my room while Nomsa cooked dinner then one thing led to another and we ended up making

love. He kissed me on my cheek, then my chin and ending up on my lips.

He increased his pace while moaning, until he came. We had used a condom.

He collapsed ontop of me while catching his breath, so did I..

After a while he got off me and then laid on his back while removing the condom and carefully tying it up. I laid my head on his chest and he wrapped his hands on me..

Him: Are you okay?

Me: I'm okay

He kissed me on my forehead..

Me: I love you

Him: I love you too

At least with everything that's happening I still have him, and he is always here for me..

–

SNAZO

I cleared my throat and she looked at me.

Me: Hello

Her: Hello

Me: Can I sit here?

Her: Only if you going to buy me a drink

I sat down..

Me: I was actually sitting over there with my friend

Her: uShine?

Me: Ya..

Her: Okay I saw you guys

Me: Snazo

Her: Busi.. How come I don't know you?

Me: I also don't know you

(Silence)

Me: So what are you doing here alone?

I looked around..

Me: Akusiyi ndawo intombazana engeza iyi one especially ebusuku (It's not a place were a girl should come alone, especially at night)

She laughed..

Her: It's the only place were I can unwind, plus ekhaya kulapha ekhoneni (my house is the one at the corner)

She was drinking Redds dry..

She wasn't even wearing a jersey in this cold weather, just a sleeveless short dress.

She exhaled and glanced down at her bottle..

Me: Going home anytime soon?

She looked at me..

Her: kahle kahle ufunani? (what do you want)

I was concerned. Seeing you here sitting all alone, any guy can come and take you ka force..

She kept quiet..

Me: Let me walk you home.. This is no place for a girl like you

She shook her head no and her eyes filled with tears..

Her: I'd rather be here than ekhaya

Me: Why

She kept quiet..

Me: Sometimes I find talking to a stranger better than someone you know, a stranger doesn't judge that much than People who know you and your situation

She chuckled and wiped her tears..

Me: People who know you judge your character they become bias but strangers judge the situation because they don't know you

(Silence)

Her: ekhaya we.. I have two sisters, I am the second born and my Mother doesn't treat me right

Me: in what way?

Her: She hates me... Ever since I fell pregnant while at school she started hating me

Me: That's sad

She showed me a scar on her arm..

Her: Last year she stabbed me, I have a few other scars too from her.. My own Mother stabbing me

Me: I'm sorry

Her: I tried to be a good child.. I went to church, I don't party, never used to drink. I was mostly indoors and I.. I just screwed up and fell pregnant while my big Sister has three kids and my Mother never treated her like this

Me: What happened to your Father?

Her: K'dala washona (he long passed on)

Me: Ubaba womntwana? (your baby daddy)

Her: That one.. He bailed out the day I told him that I was pregnant

Me: So where do you get money to buy alcohol?

Her: My baby's Sassa money sometimes I just steal money from my mom's purse or my sisters

She chuckled again..

Her: You just don't know how evil that woman is, I do everything. I clean, I cook, I even do their laundry but..

She shook her head no..

Her: You know I have been suicidal for a while now, I don't know when I'm going to do it

Me: If I heard correctly.. You go to church?

Her: Used too.. I'm not a believer anymore. If my Mom a hardcore Christian can be that evil, I don't know. I don't believe in church anymore

Me: You know the devil mostly uses people close to us to break us down, I believe that your Mother loves you if she didn't I wouldn't be talking to you right now. She gave birth to you and raised you, if she didn't want you, she would've aborted you or gave you up for adoption

She drank her Redds..

Me: The devil just got in your relationship with her because he knew that if your Mother could turn against you then he would have gotten you where he wanted you. After all, we not fighting against Human beings but against the wicked spiritual forces in the heavenly world, rulers, authorities, and..

Her: Cosmic powers of this dark age

I nodded..

Me: You doing it all wrong though.. Instead of fighting the devil that got in between you guys, you fighting with her. That's what he wants..

Where you are now is where he wants you, the devil would not hesitate to go far in making sure that he breaks you down so that you would not reach your destiny. Killing yourself, you would be giving him the upper hand. That's what he wants, to destroy you before you reach your destiny

Her: I don't know why.. I've been praying, it's like God doesn't hear me, I've been waiting on him

Me: Maybe while you waiting for him he is also waiting for you.. Waiting for you to trust him in your darkest days

I extend my hand to hers..

Me: Look..

Immediately when I touched her, she lit up..

Me: As long as we still living in this world the devil will never stop tormenting us, all we have to do is fight back the best way we know how and you can't lead this fight alone you have to trust in God, pray like you have never prayed before but most of all.. Do the opposite of what the devil expects you to do, stand firm when he expects you to fall. Alcohol is never a solution to what you going through, getting down on your knees should be your greatest weapon, trusting him on his word is how you will get through this

I let go of her hand and she was wet with tears..

Me: When you go home I want you to apologize to your Mother for everything, apologize for what she thinks was a disappointment and that is having a baby when you were young and still in school, even if she doesn't take your apology it's fine. Then every night when you go to bed after praying affirm these words deep within

you "My Mother loves me, by devine power our relationship has now been made peaceful" when you wake up again affirm those words, affirm those words each time when the devil wants to lie to you by showing you your Mother's mistakes and how she has treated you. Keep on affirming those words and I am certain that when we meet again, you will be a different person and in a different place. I stood up and took off my sweater.

Me: Here

I went and put his over her..

Me: This jacket at this present moment, it represents the warmth of God's hands upon you, it represents his hands protecting you and sheltering you against the enemy. You will give it back to me when we meet again, don't forget Ephesians 6 (The whole armor of God)

Shine: Nazo.. As'vaye (Let's go)

Me: Until we meet again Busisiwe.. You're truly blessed you just don't know it yet

–

NISO

We went down to have dinner with Nomvelo's Aunt..

Velo: Where is Uncle?

Nomsa: JJ took him to the pharmacy mara they should be back now

She looked at me..

Her: You very handsome

Me: Thank you

Her: How do you do it? Don't girls throw themselves at you?

Nomvelo looked at me..

Me: Err.. Mostly at school it does happen

Velo: And what do you say?

Me: Jealous much?

I squeezed her cheek..

Me: Trust me.. You have nothing to worry about

My phone rang, it was my supplier..

Me: I have to take this.. Excuse me

I walked to the kitchen to answer..

Me: Gerald

Him: Did I catch you at a bad time?

Me: Sort of

Him: I wanted to check if you need merchandise,
I'm getting merchandise tomorrow

Me: I'm good.. I'll call you

Him: Alright sharp

I hung up. The door opened and then JJ walked
in with Nomvelo's Uncle..

Danger: Niso

Me: Bra Danger

Him: Kunjani? (how are you)

Me: I'm good can't complain

I looked at JJ..

Danger: Where is everyone?

Me: Dining room

Danger: Alright.. Good to see you man

Me: Good to see you too

He passed first and when I was about to follow, JJ grabbed my arm and I looked at him..

Him: Whatever happens to me please take care of my Niece

I looked at his hand that had a tight grip on me..

.

To be continued

No edits

37

SNAZO

A MONTH LATER

I turned and looked at her, she was peacefully sleeping next to me. Mantwa has invested too much of her feelings and heart in this relationship, I tried to meet her halfway but deep down I feel nothing for her. I have opted in breaking things off with her for a while now, but I don't want to hurt her. I don't want to be another guy that she's going to cry over every night that I broke her heart, I am in a tight spot. I don't know what to do. I don't think I have ever had a girl who loves me this much, Mantwa just took me as I am and with all that I have. It's even more difficult now because the car wash business isn't going well, Shine and I had to find other ways to make ends meet we still clean. When I accepted Jesus Christ as my personal Lord and saviour a few weeks back Pastor

Mdluli gave me his old small bakkie as a gift and it helps us a lot, especially with our new business. We put ceramic tiles, ceiling, we do plumbing, clean yards in town etc. We have this guy Themba from church he is our partner and actually he is the one who taught us how to put tiles, do plumbing and all that. It's his specialty. Then sometimes when business is quiet I help Dawn here and there with exorcisms and since his show is on Tv when he gets his pay check he gives me something too. Yes you read that right, I had accepted the Lord Jesus and I also got baptized. My lifestyle is slowly but surely changing, I don't mean that as if like now I'm a Saint. No.. I'm human, I sin but I try my best to live right. I am very much intact with the holy spirit who guides me most of the time. I haven't been ordained a preacher just as yet, I don't think I'm spiritually mature to herd lost sheeps (Church) but I believe that soon I will be one when I'm ready and when God says it's time..

I kissed her on her forehead and then I got out of bed, Mantwa would make a good wife and a good pillar of strength. I mean she is a born again Christian and she lives for the Lord, she understands this life I have no doubt that she would be perfect but then again I don't think I love her. We have been going out for a while now, I thought that maybe along the way I will start having feelings for her but still nothing...

I put on my sweat pants and sleepers then I made my way to the main house, from the kitchen I could hear Gugu and Niso fighting. I don't know know what's gotten into Niso, he has changed and not in a good manner. He is always fighting with Gugu, he is disrespectful, full of horse shit and doesn't treat us right anymore. I made my way to the living room..

Me: What's going on?

They both looked at me..

Gugu: He wants to move out

Me: What?

Gugu: Tell him that he can't move out!

Niso: Why the fuck not?

Gugu: You are the last born! This house is yours, Snazo might leave soon to get his own place what if something happens to me? Who is going to look after this house?

Niso: We going to sell it!

Gugu: Are you mad? You can't sell a family house!

Niso: What must I do because I don't want it!! Snazo can live here, I doubt his going anywhere

Me: What does that mean?

Him: Well let's see.. With your new Pastor life whatever shit hell it is, you been on a real struggle and..

I made my way to him..

Me: What did you just say?

Gugu: We not going to fight Boys.. At least not today!

Niso: I need Nomvelo to come and visit me whenever she wants too

Gugu: Nomvelo is always welcome here

Niso chuckled..

Niso: Yeah whatever ukuhlala nawe akusimnandi nex! (living with you is not nice at all)

Gugu: Yazi I'm tired of fighting with you Niso.. Kwenzakalani ngawe? (What's with you)

Niso: Ngifuna ukuhamba nje kphela (I just want to leave)

Me: Where will you get money from? Being independent is not easy

Niso: I have money

Me: Where did you get it?

Niso: It's my business

Me: Are you into something illegal?

Niso: Why do you care?

Me: I care because..

Niso: Eyy Nazo ng'hlike, you not my father! Your constant blubbering is starting to irritate me, you sound like an old married hag!

I lost it, I went up to him and started punching him..

Gugu: Nazo stop!!!

We went down on the floor still fighting, I got on him and starting punching him repeatedly until Gugu pulled me up..

Gugu: I said stop it!!!

I looked at him and he was bleeding through his

nose and mouth, he wiped off the blood from his nose and started laughing..

Him: Soo much for living the Christian life!

He got up..

Him: Deep down you will always be a ruthless thug

I tried charging at him again but Gugu stopped me..

Gugu: Leave him!!

He looked at us and then he walked away, I felt like killing him!

–

NOMSA

I stood next to his bed while holding the big envelope, he just looked at me and said nothing. Poor thing he is just a vegetable now. He had a stroke a week back, whatever that is happening with JJ is something big. Whoever bewitched

him knew exactly what they were doing. He had claimed to be seeing his sister Victoria and last week he panicked when he "Saw" her again and then he fell, was hit by a stroke that left his left side completely paralyzed. Poor soul, I think he realizes now that his number is up..

Jonathan made his way in..

Jonathan: Sorry that I am late

Me: You don't have to apologize

He looked at JJ..

Him: How is he?

Me: He is.. Well he will pull through sometime

He nodded..

Me: Let me not keep you waiting

I handed him the envelope, he opened it and took out the will. He read it..

(After 1min)

Jonathan: Everything goes to you?

Me: Oh yes Nomvelo will only get 10k, trust me it's enough for her

Jonathan: I don't feel comfortable with this

Me: My Husband and I discussed this before he had the stroke, JJ doesn't trust Nomvelo's boyfriend and Nomvelo doesn't know anything about the family businesses she is still young and she will sink the boat

Jonathan looked at JJ..

Jonathan: I..

He cleared his throat and looked at JJ..

Jonathan: Are you sure about this?

Me: I am the best option for this, plus I am his wife and I'll make sure that Nomvelo is well taken care of I love her. She's like a daughter to me..

I looked at JJ and he slowly raised his right arm,

I passed him the pen.

Jonathan: I'm not going to do this, I don't believe JJ is up for this you forcing him and taking advantage of his sickness

Me: Very well then Jonathan.. I am sure that your wife will be very thrilled to know about your other lifestyle you know private hotel rooms, uhm a bit of action in your car

Him: Are you threatening me?

Me: I wouldn't dream of it

He looked at me..

Me: Let him sign sweetie

He looked at JJ and then handed him the will, he told him where to sign and made sure that he signs it correctly and precisely..

Jonathan: Well you have given everything to your wife.. This is your new will

Me: Thank you Jonathan.. I'll keep your

business card incase I need something else

He walked away..

Me: Not so fast Sir.. The old will please

He opened his briefcase and gave it to me..

Him: You a twisted evil bitch!!

Me: Eeeuuuu!! That just turned me on

He clicked his tongue and walked away. I
looked at JJ..

Me: Nomvelo will never find out the truth, you
made the right choice

–

SNAZO

Gugu gave me a cloth that had ice cubes in it..

Her: Here.. For your hand

Me: Thank you

She sat down across me, we were sitting at the

kitchen table..

Her: Since Ma died..I don't know what's happening with this family, we always fighting and I am tired

I looked at my knuckles they were red..

Her: You shouldn't let him get to you this much at the end of the day, he is still your Brother

I exhaled..

Gugu: Remember when we were watching Pastor Joel Osteen yesterday.. Remember when he said "Sleep on, God got this"

Me: I heard him but in this situation we don't have to sleep on, we have to be wide awake because something is very wrong with your Son!

Gugu: Niso has always been stubborn and he has always had a temper ever since you started being scarce around here

Niso showed up, he was all dressed up. He

didn't say anything he just walked out and left us there.. I threw the cloth on the table..

Me: I don't know anymore.. Is this how it is? I turn my life around only to have my Brother be my enemy in return?

Gugu: Snazo..

I stood up..

Me: I have to go.. I'll see you later

I really didn't get what was happening..

—

NOMVELO

Most of my mates seem happy, I looked at the notice board and I got 28%. This is the second module that I flunked on..

Power: Ohh my word I got 80%

Tori: I got 75%

They did a high 5...

Power: We really worked hard

Next to my student number it was written "report to Ms Brown's office", Ms Brown is the HOD too..

Power looked turned and looked at me..

Power: So how much did you get?

I faked a smile..

Me: 70%

Tori: Girls we made! Looks like we going to pass our course

Power: Since we free we should go out and celebrate

Tori: I'm with you

Me: Uhm.. You guys can go ahead without me

Power: Velo I know that your Uncle is.. We just wanna be there for you

Tori: Don't shut us out

Me: I know guys and I'll be fine.. I promise

Power hugged me..

Power: I'll call you later okay?

Me: Tori

Tori hugged me too..

Tori: I love you

Me: I love you too

Power: See you tomorrow then

Me: Tomorrow it is

They walked away. I looked at my marks again and tears burned my eyes, I am going to fail..

I took out my phone and called Niso..

Him: Twana

Me: I failed again

He exhaled..

Him: So what happens now?

Me: I don't know.. I have to see the HOD

Him: You will pick up.. If only they can allow you to write your June exams

I broke down..

Me: I can't do this Niso

Him: Hey don't say that..

Me: my life is just a mess

Him: We going to get through this.. You will see, we going to pull through

I wiped my tears..

Him: I love you

Me: I love you too

Him: I'll see you later

Me: Okay

Him: Bye and be good for me

Me: I promise

He kissed me through the phone and then I hung up.. I leaned against the wall defeated.

.

To be continued

38

NOMVELO

I went to see my uncle at the hospital, hoping to find him better. His sickness has gotten into me so bad that I fear losing him. I haven't been concentrating on my studies, now that he has stroke I fear that he won't pull through. What's going to become of me when he is no longer around? Money and all his asserts won't take away the pain of losing the only person that I regarded as a parent. I love him and I want him to get better. He was non-responsive, just starring starring at the window and saying nothing..

Me: You have to get better

I heard a knock at the door..

Me: Come in

The Dr walked in..

Him: Good afternoon

Me: afternoon

He came closer to us and looked at my uncle..

Me: Is he going to be okay?

Dr: It's hard to tell

Me: What's the worse thing that could happen?

Dr: him having another stroke, by the look of things I can say that he seems like he doesn't want to get better

Me: Why do you say that?

Dr: We tried physio but he is not responding to that almost like he has given up

I looked at my uncle...

Dr: If he can at least respond well to physio then we can start a psychiatric evaluation on him for his mental illness

Me: mental illness?

Dr: his stroke resulted from hallucinations isn't it? He claimed to be seeing his sister who has passed on

Me: well yes

Dr: We need to look more into that and see if there's no underlying mental illness

This was getting more and more difficult to process..

—

NOMSA

I drove home to visit my family, my mother, my son, and my sister.

They were very happy to see me, I mean that's how black families are when you have brought

along something with you..

Mama: kwakuhle ukuku bona (it's good to see you)

She broke the hug with tears in her eyes..

Mama: when I heard about your shooting, I couldn't even come and see how you were holding up because you know your husband he doesn't really like us

Me: I know Ma and I'm very sorry

I sat down..

Mama: I understand most marriages are like that, I'm just glad that you able to come and visit home

Me: me too

Mama: Ntokozo get us something to drink

Ntokozo responded from the kitchen..

Ntokozo: ngiyeza (I'm coming)

Me: Where is Bafana?

Mama: He went to his friiends

Me: well he might have to move in with me soon

Mama: ungazodlala (don't play like that)

Me: I'm serious

Mama: don't confuse these kids they have accepted that their step father hates them so don't play with them

Me: Mama his sins caught up with him.. JJ won't come back Ma, he is done and he signed everything off to me

Ntokozo brought in tea..

Mama: ini? (what)

Ntokozo: here's some tea

Me: Thank you

Mama: that doesn't make sense.. JJ loves

Nomvelo very much he signed off everything to her

Me: He changed his will today.. Everything is mine

The room went quiet..

Me: I thought that everyone would be happy, you guys can finally visit and my children can move in with me

(silence)

Mama: Nomsa what did you do?

Me: What makes you think that I did something?

Mama: if you behind JJ being sic-

Me: Thank you for thinking so little of me

I looked at Ntokozo and she looked away..

—

SNAZO

I met up with Dawn at some restaurant so that

we could talk. It was one of those slow days we had no clients, this new business of mine and Shine is taking off very slow, slower than I thought..

Dawn: how is everything?

Me: I have had problems before but now that I have answered to my calling my problems seem to be getting worse. I'm broke, I am a joke, my relationship with my brother is not working out I am seeing a girl that I am not even inlove with... I don't think I made the right choice

Him: Its not easy I know but everything will fall into place.. The devil will use every tactic to bring you back closer to him

Me: You seemed like you had an easy journey

He chuckled..

Him: trust me it wasn't easy i lost my fiance in this

Me: How?

Him: a demon possessed her when I drove it out it killed her

Me: That's deep

Hi: Ya I was a mess.. I became an alcoholic but.. Here I am today I have a beautiful wife and I'm very happy in my marriage

Me: if I could fix my relationship with my Brother first it would be a start.. I'm even thinking that he is possessed

Him: Why do you think that?

Me: He is no longer the same person anymore and that time when we performed the exorcism the demon made it clear that he has him

Dawn: well the only way to find out for real that he is possessed is to give him holy water if he doesn't react to it then he is not possessed.. I'll give you when we done here

Me: Thank you

Him: And that girl you talking about i think you should let her go.. Don't waste her time someone else might make her happy

Me: Ya I wonder where my wife is.. Pastor mdluli said that I will need a companion wen I finally become a preacher

Dawn: Don't rush.. Stand still and wait upon the Lord when the time is right you will find her

Me: i hope so

–

JJ

I was sleeping when I felt like someone was watching me, you know the feeling that you get when you feel like someone is watching you that's how i felt..

I opened my eyes and i saw a human figure in the room wearing a long black robe. I couldn't

see his face clearly the robe was hiding his face.
I only heard his voice..

Him: It's time

When he said that I struggled to breath, felt like my soul wanted to depart from my body. It wasn't a good feeling at all and when my soul did depart from my body my left side was functional. I looked at my body on the bed, this didn't feel right. I needed time..

I looked at him..

Me: I can't leave like this.. Nomvelo won't survive without me

Him: You made a deal with the devil, the devil can come for you anytime and he has

Me: It doesn't feel right

Him: It doesn't have too

Leaving like this, it didn't feel right..

.

To be continued

No edits

39

NOMSA

I received a call from the hospital informing me that my husband was no more. It came as a big shock seeing that I was with him in the morning. Doctors cannot determine the possible and precise cause of death but the Dr in charge says that he might have had another stroke, I want to know exactly what killed him so I requested for an autopsy. I knew that it was going to come to this, but I didn't think it was going to be this soon. I am so glad that I had him sign a new will or else I would be fucked now. My mother is old and she is a person that has poor health, she couldn't come with me but Ntokozo did. I contacted his side of the family and his Mother made it clear to me that she

wants the whole thing to take place at his home, where he was born and bred. I didn't dispute that I want her to mourn and Bury her son the way that she sees fit. I do understand her concerns, we don't know much people around here. It would be best to have him be mourned at home by people who love and care about him..

Ntokozo helped me to pack a few things and Danger was going to drive us there..

–

MANTWA

I was off today so before going home I decided to help Gugu around, she was doing windows and washing curtains..

Gugu: please put that there

I carried the grass mat and put it away..

Her: Thank you

She sat down..

Her: Shuuuuu!! I am tired

Me: Should I get you a glass of water?

Her: No thank you.. I'm fine

Me: At least we almost done

She looked around..

Her: Ya we almost done

(Silence)

Her: At least one of my sons has sense. He chose right.. Not that I hate Nomvelo but I don't feel connected to her she's way too different. I don't see her mopping the floor or even washing the dishes around here, you know what I mean (laughing)

I didn't laugh..

Her: Mantwa

I looked at her..

Her: are you okay? You have been awfully quiet today you not yourself what's wrong?

I faked a smile..

Me: It's nothing

Her: come on.. I know that Snazo hasn't officially taken you as his wife but I care a lot about you, you already like family to us

I sat down too..

Me: I don't mean to nag or..

Her: yini? (what)

I sighed..

Me: I don't think Snazo loves me.. Well at least not as much as I love him

Her: Hau what makes you say that?

me: You can just tell when someone is not into you

Her: Snazo is not like Niso, he doesn't show

emotions that much. The words "i love you" you won't hear them much from him. He is not big on hugs I'm not surprised that he's not even romantic

I laughed..

Her: Do you want me to talk to him?

Me: I don't wanna sound as if like I am a nagging girlfriend I don't want him to angry at me

Her: I'll talk to him and don't worry he won't be mad

I nodded..

Her: Come let's go make something to eat

Me: okay

I do hope that I'm just seeing things, I don't want to lose Nazo.. I love him...

—

SNAZO

Shine had called me and told me that we had a client So I rsuh back to fetch the bakkie, then we made our way there.. The client wanted us to put ceramic tiles in the living room and kitchen, I was actually relieved because we were going to make reasonable money.

Unfortunately Themba couldn't join us, he had went home to visit his family. He is originally from Kzn..

The family wasn't rich, but they were getting through they were your average middle class family..

The father wasn't very keen on having us around since he knows me and knows that I am an ex con, clearly when he was referred to shine he didn't think that shine was working with me..

We were sitting in the living room, his daughter offered us something to drink it was juice. His

eyes were glued on Me, I could sense the dislike towards me..

Shine: ngiyasizwa iskhalo sakho tyma (I hear your concerns)

He was sitting there on the couch across me, he was ready to devour me like a lion..

Mr Shabalala: Bengingazi ukuthi usebenza nalesi sigebengu!! angimfuni neze lo mfana la!! (I didn't know that you working with a criminal i don't want this boy here)

Shine: Baba ngiyak'thembisa ukuthi uSnazo akusese wuye lomuntu omaziyo (I promise you that Nazo is not the person that you once knew)

Him: A leopard never changes it's spots.. This boy has caused a lot of trouble around here, he has a bad reputation! I have heard horror stories about him

Shine looked at me.. I would like to say something but it won't help, saying something

will make him blow up..

Him: I only respected his Grandmother uMaButhelezi, she was a very respectable woman, she didn't deserve this rubbish of a Grandchild I am sure she passed on from stress caused by him!!

Now I wasn't going to sit and be insulted by this man, I wasn't going to sit here and have him speak of my relationship with my Grandmother. She doesn't know how close we were and he doesn't know how much her death still affects me..

I stood up..

Me: ngisayoshawa umoya (I am going to get fresh air)

Him: angisho uyabona akana nhlonipho nex!!
Bekumele ngabe uyangithandaza ukuthi ngini nike lomsebenzi! (you see that he doesn't have respect he should be begging e for this job)

I walked out and left them arguing..

I took a few deep breaths, we need this job I am very broke but this man's attitude towards me is not right at all.. He clearly hates me..

I started kicking small stones around the yard this is what I feared, I feared having people disrespect me like that. If it was the old Nazo I would have long dealt with him. I took out my phone and I had a few missed calls from Mantwa, I put my phone back in my pocket..

As I was busy walking around I saw the ground opening up, just a small part of the ground opening up and snakes came out of there. The snakes were just an average size, not thick and not too long. I looked at them as they came out, they were black in colour and they all raced each other. They were crawling to the same place and that same place was inside the house. I followed the trail, they got in through the kitchen door since it was wide open and made

their way to the bedroom. I passed the living room and went to the bedroom, the door was open and Bab'Shabalala exclaimed..

Him: Yey wena mfana uyaphi? (shouting)

I checked in the bedroom and I saw a woman sitting on a wheel chair, the girl that made us something to drink earlier was sitting down on the floor washing the woman's legs. I think the woman on the chair was Bab'Shabalala's wife.. The snakes went to her and rolled themselves very firm around her legs and she screamed in pain..

Girl: Mama kuqalile futhi? (Mom it has started again)

The Mother continued screaming in pain until the snakes were done, when they were done they unrolled themselves and since i was standing at the door they couldn't exit so instead, they existed via the open window. The

Mother was crying while touching her legs which were very swollen. So they didn't see the snakes? Was I the only one who saw them?

"Beloved.."

Me: You have to be kidding me!

They both looked at me, i think they didn't realize that I was standing at the door all along. When I turned to leave I came in contact with Bab'Shabalala's punches.. It was a mess...

—

NOMVELO

Niso took me to the one place were we both enjoy the company, we went to see Groovy and Mongz. We all went to chill at some place, it wasn't full as the last one or maybe because it was during the week. We were having a few drinks, I was actually drinking ginger ale everyone was on a lighter drink except for Grovvy who was drinking beer. I was sitting

ontop of Niso, shame he was really trying to lighten up my mood..

Groovy was just being groovy, crazy as usual. She was cracking jokes and dancing. I don't wanna lie, I was really enjoying myself until my phone vibrated. I got it out and it was my Grandmother..

Niso: Who is that?

Me: That's my Grandmother

I got off him and went a bit far to answer since the place was noisy..

Me: Hello Duchess

I turned and Niso was making his way to me..

Her: Velo where are you?

Me: I am.. Err..

She sounded very down and she was sniffing..

Me: What's wrong?

Her: Who are you with?

Me: My boyfriend

Her: Can you give him the phone

Me: Why?

Her: Velo just give him the phone

I stretched my hand to give him the phone..

Niso: What's going on?

Me: I am not sure

He got my phone and answered..

Him: hello??.. Yes??..

He looked at me..

Him: Okay..

He walked away from Me and I looked at him, looked at his body language. After speaking on the phone for a while he lowered it and then rubbed his eyes before making his way to me..

Him: Velo

Me: He is dead isn't he?

He cleared his throat..

Me: He is no more right?

him: I'm sorry

.

To be continued..

40

NOMVELO

I didn't know how to feel, I was very broken. It was like a part of me was taken away, that part of my heart where he resided had been ripped off from my chest. I searched for reason to make all of this seem unreal but how they were busy at my Grandmother's house, shifting furniture, the mattress on the floor and everyone going up and down made it seem real. He was gone and I never even had a chance to say goodbye, he

never thought about me. He should've held on just for a little longer..

Niso came and crouched in front of me, he held my hand and looked at me. I was sitting on the chair outside I needed fresh air, I didn't want anyone crowding me..

Him: Nomsa said I should drive you home so that you can fetch clothes to change seeing that you will be here for a few days

I couldn't hold back nor myself.. I cried..

He gently squeezed my thigh with the other hand while still holding my hand with the other..

Him: I'm sorry

Me: I have never been this hurt before in my life.. It hurts, it's like my heart.. My heart had been ripped out of my chest

Him: I know

He kissed my hand..

Him: I know

My Grandmother walked out, Niso stood up..

Niso: I'll give you some space

Grams: Thank you.. Thank you for being there
for Nomvelo

Niso: It's okay

He walked away..

Grams: Velo Sisi

I wiped my tears..

Her: You have been crying for a while now

Me: I don't understand Grandmother (Crying)

Her: I know Sisi

She wiped my tears..

Her: Fanele uqine manje (You have to be strong
now) you no longer young you will have to keep
on that's what JJ would've wanted

Me: It hurts

Her: I know.. We will mourn for him but after the funeral you will have to keep on

She got a chair and sat next to me..

Her: Ngikhona mina (I am still here) as long as I am still here you will finish school, you will graduate, get married and have kids. Niso is a good boy I'm not saying that because her Grandmother was my friend but.. It seems like he really loves you and he is always there. You can still have a life after your Uncle, a good one futhi

She held my hand..

Her: We going to be alright Velo.. Everything is going to be alright at least your Uncle left everything to you, you won't struggle he made sure that when you well taken off even when he is gone.. Nxese Sisi

—

SNAZO

Gugu put a cloth on my face while Shine got me a glass of water..

Gugu: I don't understand ukuthi uBab'Shabalala ukwenza kanjani lokhu (I don't understand how Bab'Shabalala could do this to you)

Shine: Tsek! Akayofa (He can go to hell)

Gugu: He is lucky that Nazo doesn't want to press charges

Gugu likes to overreact most of the time..

Gugu: Umuntu uyazala.. Uzalela abo Bab'Shabangu!

She was giving me a headache..

Shine: Asimncengi! Ngeke sizwe ngaye (We won't beg him)

Me: Either way I still have to help them

Gugu: Help them? What do you mean help them?

Me: Bab'Shabalala his wife.. There's something wrong there

Shine: efana Nani? (something like what)

Me: something evil.. Something big

Shine: eish ile zinto zenu futhi? (is it those things of yours again)

Me: yaa

Gugu sat down..

Gugu: what exactly are you talking about?

Me: Shabalala's wife she's on a wheelchair

Gugu: Yes i know.. It's been a while futhi

Me: What do you know about her condition?

Gugu: not much mara nje.. She's been on a wheelchair for a very long time now, what i heard is that she started complaining about cramps in her legs then after they became swollen bese ne boom wheelchair. Bathi that's

why Shabalala is soo bitter

Me: What did the doctors say?

Shine: wena ufun uku sitshelani kahle kahle
(what are you trying to tell us)

Gugu: Abanye abantu bathi amaloyo (some say
it's witchcraft)

Me: I'm starting to believe so too

Shine: Amaloyo? (witchcraft)

I nodded..

Me: And I have to help her

Shine: Tjerrr kunzima la ngaphandle (it's ugly in
outside there)

–

DANGER

After visiting Victoria's grave I went back to JJ's
home to help around, there was a lot to do. I
was taken by his death I guess his sins finally

caught up with him. I don't believe for a second that my wife is responsible for JJ's death I think that it was bound to happen, Victoria sped up the process and his sanity betrayed him. I am at peace that Nomvelo doesn't know the truth, the truth will be too severe for her to handle. How I tell my daughter that the person she trusted with her whole life is the reason why she lost her mother at a tender age, how do I tell her that her own uncle killed her mother and ate out her heart just so he can get rich and that she has been a part of those riches? It will be too much for her to handle. I closed the door of the taxi and made my way into the yard, i bumped into his Mother as i made my way to the front. MaNgcobo has never liked me at all after the whole Victoria saga. She believes that I am behind Victoria's death..

Me: Mangcobo

She gave me a bitter look, more like she wanted

to strangle me right there..

Me: uVelo ukhona? (is Velo around)

Her: No

Me: kusho ukuthi uNomisa bekangicelile ukuthi ngimkhaphe ayolanda izimpahla (Nomisa asked me to accompany her to fetch her clothes)

Her: Awusho (tell me something)

She folded her arms..

Her: My Son is no more.. Why are you still here?

Me: I don't understand

Her: I don't understand why JJ kept you around, why he forgave you and gave you a second chance. Made you who you are while you are nothing but a murderer!

She hit me a little on my chest..

Her: Hamba!! (leave)

She pushed me..

Her: Angifuni ukuphinda ngikubone! (I never wanna see you again).. Kiss your job goodbye too!! After the reading of the will, I'll make sure that you no longer have a place here!

—

NOMVELO

I told Niso to wait for me outside in the car, I went in alone. It was different not having him around, many days are going to be spent here without him. It will never be the same ever again. What cuts more deeper is the fact that he just started getting sick out of the blue, it was something so quick and then after he is no more..

.

To be continued

41

NOMVELO

I Thought that I was never going to make it until the funeral, but I did. My Uncle had a dignified funeral, the community came to pay their last respects. I think that I had cried a lot during the course of the week that on the day of the funeral I had no more tears, I was very numb. I wasn't attending classes anymore I had accepted that I was going to repeat the year but I.. I would like to take a year and just work on myself, work on healing and learn more about my Uncle's businesses. I don't know anyone who can help mee with the businesses other than Danger himself, he has been with the family for a very long time now. My uncle trusted him and i trust him too. My grandmother has different feelings about me bringing Danger along into the family businesses but, the whole deal with taxis is very

dangerous. Danger has been a taxi driver for a while now, he knows more about the business than anyone else. I trust him more than anyone, bringing along a stranger would be risky. It was exactly 3 days since we buried my Uncle, today his lawyer was coming over to read the will for us. I was sitting outside with my Grandmother, she was busy washing one of those big pots and I was just sitting on the chair waiting for her to tell me if she needed help..

Her: How are you feeling now?

I exhaled..

Me: It will take time but I'll get there

Her: That is the spirit

I looked at the time..

Me: Jonathan is late

Her: Maybe he is still trying to find the place.. I don't even know why he is coming here

because we all know that everything is yours.
Your Uncle loved you that much

Me: Poor Nomsa.. I hope she gets something
too

Her: That one is getting nothing, she should just
pack and go back home

My Grandmother is another one who doesn't
like people very much..

Her: Come and help move this pot

Me: Okay

I got down from the chair and went to help her..

Her: will you manage living alone in that house?
and don't tell me that your boyfriend is moving
in.. That would be very disrespectful to your
Uncle

Me: I am thinking of selling it.. That house has
memories that I don't want to remember

Her: You can't sell the house

Me: I want a clean and fresh start Duchess.. Or I will just give it to Nomsa then

Her: No!.. If your Uncle wanted her to have it, he would've given it to her.. Just think about it first before selling

Me: i will think about it

–

SNAZO

The environment was one that I wasn't used too, there was a lot of people than what I had anticipated. Since I was going to be ordained a Preacher soon, Dawn suggested that I attend a Bible school. I had spoken to Pastor Mdluli about it and he also agreed. I wasn't expecting this at all, so much People. The bible school was ran by Bishop McCartney at his church, they have it twice a week. I didn't bring along anything than my Grandmother's old Bible, some pages were wrinkled and the hardcover

was peeling off it showed that she has had it for a long time. Shine was the one who dropped me off, he couldn't stay had to drive back to the hood. Him and Themba are working on our previous job, they putting tiles at Shabalala's place and since he hates me I excluded myself from the job. I keep busy by working with Dawn just until they finish and we get another job that I can also work on.

I have been having visions about his wife's sickness. Someone was bewitching them for real and I saw her, i ahd a vision or dream of her planting something in the ground at night in Shabalala's backyard. She looked young i could say she was in her early 30s, I don't get why such a young lady would turn into witchcraft. What deal does she have with the Shabalala's. With Bab'shabalala hating me I still have no clue on how I can help his wife..

Voice: Good morning

We all turned our attention to where the voice was coming from..

Voice: Can everyone please have a seat

We did as we were told. It was mixed races black and white, only 3 Indians that I noted. I felt like everyone came more prepared than me, I felt out of place..

The man who addressed was wearing like a bishop if I may say so, I had no doubt that it was him. Bishop McCarthy. Just your typical white old man..

It was quiet..

Him: Let me start by introducing myself, I am Bishop McCarthy and I welcome you all at the McCarthy Bible school

A few sounds were made..

Him: I am aware that some of you it's your first time being here, and some of you are returning

for the second time. Nevertheless I welcome you all, I just don't wanna sound like a broken record to those who are returning for the second time.

A few People laughed..

Him: Others are here because of their calling, and others are here because they just interested in theology. Though we might be here for different reasons i do pray that at the end we all gain some knowledge

This is going to be a long day..

Him: Don't take this for granted the very best attended this Bible school. The likes of Prophet Zaine Radebe

They made a cheerful noise..

Him: Prophet Ayo-Faziel Badru

They made another joyful noise. From hoe most people reacted I can tell that the People he was

talking about are izinja ze game, im talking about top dogs..

–

NISO

Bar-lady: Can I get you some more?

She was leaning over the counter with her cleavage fully exposed. The dress code around here is very revealing..

Me: uhm yeah.. Why not?

She smiled..

Her: He will be here don't worry

Me: Is he always this late for meetings?

Her: sometimes

He put the glass of whiskey in front of me..

Me: Thank you

My drug business was taking off, I was now on cocaine too. I make reasonable money that I

bought myself a car. A BMW 320i but second hand. I have been getting calls from other drug Lords wanting to meet up, I was making a name for myself. Today I was meeting up with some dug Lord named Skylar, not only is he into the drug business but he has owns clubs too. He is a tycoon..

I looked at the time again and he was really running late..

Me: I think that I should leave I have been waiting here for quite a while now

Bar-lady: It is so unlike him to be this much late

Me: Yeah probably

I took out a few notes and left them on the counter..

Me: Have a nice day

Her: Hoping to see you soon

Me: Me too

I walked out..

–

NOMVELO

After waiting for him for a very long time, Jonathan finally arrived. Those who were needed we all gathered in the sitting room for the reading of the will. It was Me, Nomsa, my Grandmother and a few elders.

J: sorry that I'm late wasn't easy finding this place

Grams: I even thought that maybe you got kidnapped or something

We all laughed..

Him: I actually came with colleague of mine.. He is in the car he navigated this place better than I did

He opened his case..

Him: My deepest condolences.. Mr Ngcobo was

a very good client of mine for a very long time
now

We nodded..

Him: Without wasting any time i will start
reading the Will

He took out the documents..

Him: the last encounter with my client
concerning the will was last year, so this will is
valid and it was signed by him

We all waited for him to read..

Him: "To my Niece Nomvelo who is already like
a daughter to me, know that I will always love
you and I know that you make me proud.

Always"

My Grandmother put her hand on my shoulder..

Jonathan cleared his throat..

Him: "You're still very young to understand the
family businesses it will take you a while to

know how to run a taxi business, therefore I have took the decision of leaving everything to my lovely wife Nomsa Ngcobo. Nom.."

Grams: wait what?

Everyone was shocked..

J: Mr Ngcobo chabged his will last year and gave all his asserts to his wife, he trusted her to care of Nomvelo and his bus-

This wasn't making sense.. It wasn't making sense at all..

Me: My Uncle will never do that

J: I am very sorry

Grams: If he left everything to her then what is Nomvelo going to get? What did he leave for nomvelo?

Jonathan cleared his throat..

J: R10 000

Grams: 10 000 only?

J: I'm afraid so

Grams: 10..thats not right let me see the will

Jonathan gave it to her as my grandmother
silently read..

(silence)

Grams: this is ridiculous! my son would never
do this

J: It is signed by him there's a stamp dated to
last year

Grams: I can see that but..

Nomsa: Wow I.. I did-

Out of the blue my Grandmother went and
attacked Nomsa..

Grmas: what did you do? What did you do you
witch!!!!!!

.

To be continued

No edits

42

NOMVELO

I didn't know how to feel and my heart wasn't accepting what Jonathan read, my Uncle made it clear over and over again that he doesn't trust her and that everything of his will be mine when he is no longer around. For Nomsa to just get everything, something was off. My Grandmother's high blood pressure spiked up, we had to call an ambulance because she was just taken by this whole thing then she was rushed to the hospital, one of my Aunties went with her. As if like matters couldn't get any worse..

Nomsa had asked to talk to Me..

Her: I know that this doesn't make any sense, I know that you have mixed emotions but.. You

might not believe this but I also want what's best for you, you and I we managed to put our differences aside so I want you to come home with me. I want you to finish school that was your Uncle's dream

I kept quiet..

Her: Velo you don't belong here.. This is not you, you won't be able to handle this life

I would rather be here than anywhere else, I would rather be with my Grandmother she is the only surviving Parent that I'm left with now..

Me: I'll come for the rest of my things

Her: Velo...

Me: I wanna be here with my Grandmother

Her: What about school?

Me: I'll start off next year again

She shook her head no..

Her: Alright then.. But know that you can always come home whenever you feel like it

Me: Thanks

She stood up..

Her: My Sister and I we leaving

Me: Have a safe trip back home

Her: Thank you

Most of our relatives had left already and the remaining ones were leaving today since everything was done, they had helped with cleaning, washing blankets and everything else. Later on I wanna go and see my Grandmother..

–

NISO

Just when I was about to drive off a black Royce rolls pulled up, it parked on a reserved spot in the parking lot. I waited for him to come out and he did, he was wearing a suit, gold rings

filled his fingers and he was holding a cane..
His chauffeur closed the door, and then he stood there with his eyes wandering around until they landed on me..

Him: Niso?

Me: Skylar?

Him: Looks like you were leaving

Me: I was leaving

Him: What a little patience you have Son, if you still have time let's go in

Me: After you

I followed him as he walked inside..

Him: Let's go up into my office

Me: Let's do that

We walked up the stairs into his office..

Him: Whiskey?

Me: No thanks I'm good

He got a cigar and then sat down..

My phone rang, it was Nomvelo. I switched it off..

Me: Sorry about that

Him: Don't worry about it

He lit up his cigar..

Him: Not to waste more of your time I will get straight to the point

Me: I'm listening

Him: I want us to make Partners.. I could really use someone like you in my team

I thought for a while..

Me: Uhm as much as that sounds tempting but no..

Him: No?

Me: I work better alone

Him: I don't think you realize that you in a

dangerous business you need protection, they can take you out just like that!

Me: I'll take my chances

I stood up..

Me: Have a nice day

Him: You too

—

SNAZO

The Bible school was.. I don't even know what to say because it wasn't really my thing. It's going to take a while for me to get used to it. Since I was in the process of making things right, I had to do right by Mantwa. I have to let her go, there's no use in staying with her when I don't feel anything for her. It's not fair. I called her up and we met up for lunch, wasn't really the right place to break up with her but I really have to do this..

She showed up, I made sure that we met up close to her workplace. At some restaurant. She looked around and spotted me, then she came up to my table.

Her: Good afternoon

Me: Hey

I stood up and opened the chair for her..

Her: Thank you

She sat down..

I felt extremely bad doing this, she's a great person and I don't wanna break her heart..

Her: How was Bible school?

Me: It was okay I am not used to it as yet

Her: You'll get used to it soon

Me: Hope I didn't disturb you at work

Her: I'm on lunch

I nodded while looking down..

Her: Is everything okay?

I looked at her..

Me: I called you up here because, we need to talk

Her: Talk?

Me: Yeah

Her: It sounds serious

Me: It is serious

Her: What is it?

Me: Mantwa you a.. You a very beautiful woman both inside and out. You have a beautiful heart, you an amazing person

She started shaking her head no..

Me: Mantwa

Her: Please don't do this

Me: I'm really sorry

She was trying very hard to hold back her tears..

Her: Is there someone else?

Me: No there's no one else

Her: Then why are you doing this to me?

Her eyes were glowing with tears now..

Me: Mantwa..

Her: I don't understand.. Nazo I love you, what am I not doing right?

I tried to hold her hand but she retracted it back..

She stood up..

Me: Mantwa wait..

She made her way out..

Me: Dammit!

—

NOMSA

On our way back to the house Ntokozo was

driving and I was laid back all relaxed in the car..

Her: How did you pull that off?

Me: I have my ways.. Blackmail

Her: I didn't think that you were going to pull this off I mean everything?

Me: You had little faith on me Sister

Her: Yazi I still can't believe it

Me: our lives are finally going to change for the better

—

NOMVELO

It was very quiet around the house now and I was alone. I tried calling Niso a few times but his phone was off..

The door opened and Danger made his way in..

Him: Kwaze kwathula (it's quiet)

Me: Everyone has left

He closed the door..

Him: usele uyi one? (you all left alone)

I nodded..

Him: How did the reading of the will go?

I sighed..

Me: He gave everything to Nomsa

Him: What? That doesn't sound right

Me: He only left 10 000 for me Danger.. Only 10 000

Him: Something is not right here! That's not possible.. JJ wouldn't do that

Me: Well he did!

Him: Okay look.. I'm going to get to the bottom of this

He opened the door and walked out..

Me: Danger!

.

To be continued

No edits

43

SNAZO

I decided to give Mantwa some space I didn't wanna call her and be busy crowding her space, if I call her it will confuse her more. Back when I was still in my ways this wouldn't have affected me, not even a little. I would've just moved on to the next like nothing happened, I guess I do have a human heart after all.

Tonight I decided to cook dinner, nothing serious just a meal that was easy and didn't require much time.

I was alone in the house, Niso was out in the streets doing shady things a Gugu was over at our neighbour's house, you know women and

gossip. I was singing while cooking..

I was whistling one of my favourite songs while cooking, when a knock disturbed me..

I closed the pot and went to open, it was Nomvelo. I guess she didn't expect to see me just as much as I didn't expect to see her. She moved her eyes from the ground and looked at me, she looked so drained and tired. She was tired both physically and emotionally. We looked at each other for a while before she broke the ice. She cleared the hair from her face, her hair was loose i didn't even know that she had such long hair..

Her: Hi

Me: Hi

Her: I.. I am looking for Niso

Me: He is not around

I saw the disappointment in her eyes..

Her: Ohw.. I will leave

She turned back and was ready to leave..

Me: Let me try him for you

She turned and looked at me, that portion of her hair came back at the front again..

Her: I already called him a few times his phone is off

I looked at my watch..

Me: He will be home soon if you wanna wait for him

I don't even know why I was suggesting that..

Her: Okay

I let her in..

Me: You can have a seat

She sat down..

Her: Thank you

Me: I am actually busy cooking

Her: You cook?

Me: Yes I do

She slightly smiled while nodding..

Me: Would you like something to drink?

Her: No thank you

She played her hair ribbon around her small wrist..

Me: I.. I am very sorry about your Uncle.. I know that he meant a lot to you

Her: Thank you

I turned the stove off..

Me: Would you like something to eat?

She didn't know how to reply to that, she got shy all over again..

Me: Maybe you can judge my cooking better

She chuckled..

I opened the cupboard and the door opened again, Gugu walked in..

Gugu: Yho that took long

She didn't expect to see Nomvelo..

Her: Nomvelo

Velo: Gugu

Gugu looked at me..

Gugu: What.. What a pleasant surprise

Nomvelo didn't say anything..

Me: She is waiting for Niso

Gugu: He is actually parking the car I bumped into him at the gate

My eyes were just glued on Nomvelo she looked very uncomfortable, the room even went quiet..

Niso walked in after a while, i don't think he also expected to see Nomvelo..

Niso: Velo

Velo: I have been trying to get a hold of you with no success

Him: Ya I was busy

She stood up..

Him: Are you okay?

He rubbed her shoulder..

Velo looked at us..

Niso: Let's go get something to eat

He held her hand..

Velo: bye

Guugu: bye

They walked out..

Gugu: Aii I can't wait for Niso to get a more decent girl

Me: isn't she decent?

Gugu: she is way too different nje I can't connect with her.. Uhlukile (she is different) too much of a princess nje nezandla zithambile (she seems lazy)

I shook my head while laughing..

Gugu: Uhlekani? (why you laughing) you know what im talking about

She sat down..

Her: You can dish up for us..

–

NOMSA

The first thing I did when I got home was to celebrate, Ntokozo and I we were popping champagne one way..

Me: Mntaka Ma life is going to get better now, things are going to change for me and my children. Have been separated from them for a very long time with JJ not even wanting them to

step foot here

Ntokozo: Ya mara that was very cruel.. JJ was a ruthless man

Me: At least he got what he deserved!

Her: Cheers to that

As we were busy having a good time the door flung open and Danger made his way in, he just flew in without even knocking..

Ntoko: Haibo!!!

He looked at us..

Me: Danger what are you doing here?

He made his way to me, I took a few steps back..

Ntoko: Should I call the Police?

Me: No it's fine

Danger: Give my Daughter what belongs to her!
Everything here belongs to her!

Me: Danger the will was read and...

Him: I don't care what the will says!

Me: You should care because legally everything is mine

He put his hand on my throat and pushed me back against the wall, Ntokozo screamed a little..

Ntoko: Cha mina ngifonela amaphoyisa (I am calling the police)

Danger was really mad, it was my first time seeing him this mad. He looked me in the eye..

Him: You stupid greedy woman! You don't even know how JJ attained his riches! Everything is going to disappear and you going to be sorry! Riches attained with blood sacrifice they don't last

He let me go...

Him: Why don't you ask yourself why the mighty

JJ fell all of a sudden?

I put my hand on my throat..

Me: You going to be sorry for putting your hands on me!

He took out the keys to his taxi..

Him: I quit!

He threw them at Me..

Him: Find another taxi driver... Plus I took this job for my Daughter I wanted to make sure she was okay, now I don't have any reason to stay here!

He clicked his tongue and then walked away..

Ntoko: we should go and open a case for him!

I shook my head no..

Me: I know how to get back at him, he is going to be sorry for putting his hand on me!

—

NOMVELO

I didn't feel like eating, lately I had lost all interest in food, my appetite was on and off..

I put down the fork, we were at galitos..

Him: You not hungry?

Me: No

He wiped his mouth with the saviettee..

Him: I'm sorry that my phone was off, I had business to take care off

Niso's sudden financial stability was questionable, one moment he was struggling then all of a sudden he had money. It was very suspicious..

Me: Nomsa got everything... Everything was signed off to her

Niso: What?

Me: He only left me 10k

Him: That doesn't sound right

Me: I'm just so tired Niso I don't even know what to think anymore, plus my Grandmother went to the hospital today.. Her BP was acting up

He laid back on the chair...

Him: This is messed up!

Me: Very messed up that I am going to fail at school.. I don't think I'll ever show myself there

He extended his hand to me...

Him: I'm here.. We going to get through this.. I promise you

He brought my hand closer to his lips and kissed it..

Him: We going to make it... Trust me, I got you

With his dishonesty I don't know if I still trust him.

—
MANTWA

I wiped my tears as I continued..

"sometimes life get's too difficult.. I am broken inside and I hate feeling this way. I am tired of constantly being hurt, I can't take it anymore"

I folded the letter and then looked at the rope on the floor..

Me: I'm sorry Mom but it got too much.. I can't take it anymore this pain is too much

I wanna end the pain, I know that when I'm dead no one will toy with my emotions ever again!!

.

To be continued

No edits

44

SNAZO

I woke up in the early hours of the morning at around 2am, to hear someone trying to open the kitchen door. I got up and went to check, it was Niso. I locked my room and we walked into the house both of us, he tipsy..

Me: Where have you been?

Him: Around

I closed the door..

He sat down on the chair and silence loomed around..

Him: Nomvelo lost everything?

Me: Meaning?

Him: Her Uncle signed everything off to his wife

Me: That's...

Him: Only left nomvelo with 10k

Me: That doesn't sound like JJ

Him: Unless the wife did something because

apparently she wasn't supposed to get anything

Me: It does sound fishy

I remembered the holy water that Dawn gave me, he said that I can test it on Niso. If he is possessed then he will react to the holy water. I don't know why but my Brother has this dark force surrounding him, it's very heavy on me..

Me: Coffee?

Him: Naa I just wanna sleep

I went and got the holy water in the cupboard..

Me: Just one cup so that we can catch up.. It's been a long time

Him: Yeah why not

I poured water in the kettle and then poured a little in the mug..

Me: I don't know if it's me or if the water really tastes bad

I passed him the mug..

Me: maybe you will have a different answer

He drank a little and then shrugged his shoulders..

Him: It tastes good to me

I took the mug again and he didn't react to the water. If he is not possessed then what is it?

Why does he have this dark force all around him.

Most of all when Dawn was performing the exorcism why did Satan mean that he has Niso?

I really need to know what's happening with him so that I can help him if really the devil is after him..

—

NOMVELO

The following morning I woke up and tried to clean even though most parts of the house were clean, My Aunties cleaned thoroughly

before they left. Last night I was alone around the house since my Grandmother was not around, it was difficult I couldn't have a peaceful sleep. This new life of mine was depressing, I don't even know if I'm going to get used to it. I was tired, I wanted my Uncle back I wanted my life back. I could go back and live with Nomsa but she once hinted that life would get real for me when my Uncle is no longer around, I know for a fact that she would wanna get back at me. I threw the mop down and sat on the chair with my hands covering my face, I let out a soft cry. I cannot do this, I don't wanna do this

The door opened and surprisingly my Grandmother walked in, I breath a sigh of relief..

Me: Duchess

She closed the door..

Me: I thought that they would wanna keep you

longer at the hospital

Her: I couldn't stay for long knowing that you
all in the house

She looked around..

Me: How are you feeling?

Her: I will be fine.. They gave me pills

Me: That's better

Her: Where you trying to clean?

Me: Ya

Her: Don't worry you will get used to it soon

Me: Ya I will

Her: I know that you not used to this life but..

We going to be okay, don't lose hope

I nodded..

Her: Let me go and rest a bit

Me: Okay

She stood up..

Her: Don't you wanna go visit Nkuli for a while?

Me: I'll call her

Her: Okay baby

She walked to the bedroom..

—

SNAZO

I was doing my laundry and cleaning my room, it's been a while since I cleaned my room thoroughly. I was also playing music a bit loud to keep me going. I went to hang when my phone vibrated in my pocket, I put the basin down and got it. I didn't recognize the number but I answered anyway...

Me: Hello

The person didn't say anything, I heard a lot of sniffing..

Me: Hello?

Voice: Hello.. Is this Snazo?

Me: Yes.. Who is this?

Voice: uMa ka Mantwa (It's Mantwa's Mom)

That was surprising..

Me: Hello.. Hello Ma

Her: I'm calling to let you know that Mantwa was admitted last night, she tried to hurt herself

Me: hurt herself?

Her: She.. She hung herself but fortunately her little Brother walked in just in time

Me: What?

Her: You really broke my Daughter, I found her diary and..

Me: Which hospital?

Her: It's best you don't come.. Please stay away from my Daughter don't ever try to contact her,

you have broken her already

She hung up. I sighed in defeat, I know that I have broken her but I didn't think she would go this far

–

NISO

I looked at it..

Me: It's a bit heavy

Him: It's the real deal

Me: How much?

Him: 5 000

I took out 5 000 and gave it to him

Him: Sure bhoza

He walked away..

Since my meeting with Skylar I realized that I needed protection, most drug dealers would come after me since my business is taking off

really well. I need to protect myself at all times, so I bought a gun..

–

NOMVELO

I was watering the flowers outside when Nomsa's car pulled up.. I threw the pipe on the grass and waited for her to come out of the car, and she did. She made her way to the gate and made her way in..

Her: Velo

Me: Nomsa

Her: How are you?

Me: I'm hanging in there

Her: Uphi ugogo? (Where is your Grandmother)

Me: she's sleeping

Her: Let's find somewhere to sit and talk

We went and got chairs then we sat under the

tree..

Her: Nomvelo...

She paused..

Me: What?

Her: Your Uncle wanted to tell you something
but I death got to him first

Me: What did he want to tell me?

She looked at me..

Her: This is very difficult

Me: What is it?

Her: Nomvelo your father.. Your real father is
Danger

I kept quiet..

Her: I'm sorry

I couldn't believe what I was hearing..

Me: No..

I shook my head..

Me: No it can't be.. My.. My Uncle would never keep a murderer so close to us

Her: I'm truly sorry

Me: You lying

Her: I'm not lying.. Everyone knows, even your Grandmother knows

I know that Nomsa doesn't like me but to go this far and lie??

.

To be continued

45

MANTWA

Pain changes you, it changes the person that you once were. It's not easy to wake up and face life when your heart is heavy, People might think that my deciding to take my life was

selfish and foolish. We all different and we don't handle pain the same way, I have done been played and mistreated. When I found Snazo I gave him my all because I thought that he was different, different from all the guys I've been with. He accepted me for who I am, he didn't judge the fact that I was an introvert and enjoyed church more than a glass of wine at some bar. He allowed me to be me and never compared me to any other girl, I thought that we were going to make it. I thought that finally I had a chance to be happy but then life had other plans for me..

The Dr walked in, he was holding my file..

Him: Good morning

Me: Morning

My throat was very painful and I felt a bit dizzy..

Him: How are you feeling?

I shrugged my shoulders..

He opened my file and looked at it..

Me: How did I end up here?

Him: You were brought here last night after a suicide attempt

That means my Mother found me somehow..

Me: When am I going home?

He pulled the chair and sat down..

Him: Do you realize how fortunate you're? You could've died, suicide by hanging only countable people survive

Me: I don't feel so lucky

I read his name tag "Dr Patel" he is Indian, a good looking one for that matter. What am I saying? Most Indian men are very handsome..

Me: When can I go home?

Him: I can't release you just as yet I have to refer you to our psychologist for therapy but

she is not around she is on leave, just a few days left until she gets back

Me: Aren't there any other psychologists?

Him: There is one but I prefer Dr Khumalo she is very good

Me: So what do you suggest I do with my life for the next few days?

He chuckled..

Him: You will be fine

He looked at my file..

Him: You will be fine Man.. Ma..

Me: Mantwa

Him: Mantwa

I looked at his left hand and he didn't have a ring on..

Him: Let me go and see other patients, I will tell the Nurse to come and monitor you in the

meantime.. You're on suicidal watch

Me: Great!!

Him: Not that it's any of my business but.. What happened?

I kept quiet..

Him: I will call the Nurse

He walked to the door..

Me: My boyfriend dumped me..

He stopped..

Me: I know that it sounds foolish.. Almost killing myself for a man

Him: I'm sorry break ups can be messy, I remember my divorce it wasn't nice

Me: You divorced?

Him: Yes I am.. Been a year now

His pager went off, he looked at it..

Him: I have to go

I nodded..

–

NOMVELO

After Nomsa had dropped that Bomb on me she left, before confronting my Grandmother I called Danger to come but I didn't tell him the whole story. My Grandmother was upset, she was upset that Nomsa had told me the truth, what I don't understand is why my Grandmother and my Uncle kept Danger so close to the family after what he had done..

Grams: Mara uNomsa ucabanga ukuthi uwubani? (who does Nomsa think she is)

Me: Duchess that's not the point! I just wanna know why? Why was Danger kept close to the family after killing my Mother? He took my Mother from me! He butchered her, I was only 5!

Her: Nomvelo I..

There was a knock on the door..

Her: Come in

The door opened and Danger walked in..

Danger: Sanibonani? (Greetings)

I looked at him, I so wanted to go to him and kill him! He has been laughing with me and acting all caring towards me knowing exactly what he did! What devil is he??

I think he could sense the tension in the atmosphere..

Grams: What are you doing here?

Me: I called him

Grams: Velo!!

Danger: Konke k'hamba kahle? (is everything alright)

Grams: uNomsa beka la (Nomsa was here)

Me: She told me everything!

He seemed confused..

Me: You killed my Mother! All along you laughing with me, looking me in the eye everyday knowing exactly what you have done!!

Danger: What?

Me: You deserve to burn in hell!! How can you do this? Then after you act like nothing happened?

He sat down..

Him: I think you deserve to know the whole truth

I looked at him..

Him: I loved my wife, I loved Victoria with all my heart

Me: You kidding me right?

Grams: Don't make things worse?

Danger: I didn't kill Victor.. JJ did

Me: What?

Grams: Yey wena!! Don't lie about my Son

Danger: MaNgcobo it is the truth! That night I wasn't at home and yes Victoria was going to leave me because of my gambling and alcoholism but unfortunately JJ got to her first

Me: What are you saying?

Danger: JJ killed your Mother, he ripped her heart out for ritual purposes so that he could be rich, the reason why you can't remember is because he took you in and brainwashed you.. JJ had to keep you close so that his riches don't disappear

Grams: Phuma la kwami (Get out of my house)

Danger: I went to jail for a crime that I did not do.. Nomvelo the reason why your Uncle started getting sick like that is because his sins caught

up with him, your Mom came for revenge

My Grandmother stood up..

Grams: Ngithe Phuma!! (I said get out)

Danger: I worked for that man for all these years because I wanted to make sure that he doesn't hurt you, I wanted to know that you were okay and also he was blackmailing me

Grams: Ngathi angizwakali kahle ufuna ngibilse amanzi? (I don't think that you hear me very well, do you want me to boil water)

I stood up and ran out of the house..

Danger: Velo!!

I ran out as fast as I could..

–

SNAZO

I looked at Gugu..

Me: Mantwa was admitted last night

Gugu: Why?

Me: She.. She tried to hang herself

Gugu: What? Why?

Me: I broke up with her

Gugu: Nazo!

Me: Gugu the honest truth is that I wasn't in love with Mantwa

Gugu: Uyazizwa ukuthi uthini? (Do you hear what you saying)

Me: Gugu I wasn't going to keep on wasting her time

Gugu: Angiyikholwa ke le! (I don't believe this)
kanti yini ngawe no Niso (What's wrong with you and Niso)

Me: G..

Her: Hai maan niyaphoxa!! (You are disappointing)

She walked out..

Her: Yazi nje niyangi dina (You irritate me)

Me: Mara

Her: Aii suka maan!!!

–

NOMVELO

I ran so far that I was even struggling to breath, I was confused and hurt. This wasn't making any sense, What Danger said was soo deep that my mind didn't know how to process it. My own Uncle, the person I trusted killed my Mother? No! I know that he was a ruthless Person but this, this is just not right..

I sat on this other big rock, God what is happening? My life was just crumbling right in my eyes. Why is this happening to me? How will I get through this? This is beyond what I can handle. It's beyond me.

My phone rang in my pocket I didn't even bother

taking it out and answering, I wasn't interested in what they wanted to say..

–

SHINE

uBab'Shabalala was not around, he went out to run a few errands. We were done with one room, we were almost done with the other room too then it's going to be one room left..

Themba: Kube uNazo bekakhona ngabe sesicedile (If Nazo was here we would be done)

I threw the cigarette bud on the floor..

Me: uringa iWaar (you telling the truth)

Him: Aii athi sibuyele (let's go back)

We went back inside passing the main bedroom, I heard a bit of sobbing. I stopped at the door and Mrs Shabalala was crying..

Themba: Ntwana as'dlule (let's pass)

Me: Ima kancane (wait a minute)

She raised her head and looked at us..

Her: I thought I was alone.. I thought you guys were gone

Themba: Besingaphandle (We were outside)

Her legs were very swollen..

Her: I've been like this for a while now, it's draining I wish death upon myself because I can't take this anymore

Me: abo Doctor bathini? (what do Doctors say)

Her: They can't see what's wrong?

Themba: How come? Kuyabonakala ukuthi usezintlungwini (I can see that you in pain)

Her: I think it's spiritual but we tried going to prophets they prayed for me but nothing. We even went to traditional healers, we have tried almost everything. I have accepted that no one can help me, I just wanna die I don't wanna be a

burden to my family anymore

I cleared my throat..

Me: Eer..

She looked at me..

Me: Mina ngiyacava umuntu ongakusiza (I know someone who can help you)

She shook her head...

Her: No one can help me

Me: Usebenza ngazo le zinto (He works with this type of things)

Her: uyamthemba? (do you trust him)

I nodded..

Her: Ungamletha (can you bring him)

Me: Ya eish kodwa UBab'Shabalala akamfuni (Ya but Bab'Shabalala doesn't want him)

Her: I'll talk to him and convince him, if this person can work then it is worth a try

Me: ngizoringa naye (I will talk to him)

–

SNAZO

Just when I was walking out Nomvelo's Grandmother was standing at the doorstep holding on to the security door..

Me: Mangcobo?

She closed her eyes, she seemed to be in pain..

I helped her to walk in and then sat her down..

Me: Ngik'phathele amanzi? (should I bring you a glass of water)

She put her hand on her chest..

Her: uVelo wami akekho la? (Is Nomvelo here)

Me: Cha akekho (She's not here)

Her: Umzukulu wami Nkosi yam' (My grandchild)

Me: Yini kwenzekeni? (what happened)

She started crying..

Her: Akazi nelokishi mhlambe.. Wuuu
ngoyenzani mara (She doesn't even know the
hood.. What am I going to do)

I was lost.. I didn't know what she was talking
about..

.

To be continued

No edits

46

NOMSA

FIVE DAYS LATER

I was worried over the fact that the taxi
business wasn't going well, other taxi owners
didn't wanna respect me and in turn their taxi
drivers were very disrespectful towards my taxi

drivers. This whole situation has forced my taxis off the road, my drivers are worried about their jobs. They worried that they won't be putting food on the table for their families and now they also turning against me. It's one messed up situation that I wasn't prepared for, I definitely need someone like Danger to help me out. Someone they know and someone that they will respect, after all Danger was JJ's right hand man and I know that they will work better with him. Unfortunately after our fallout I don't think he is going to come through for me, I'm screwed!! I was thinking of bringing someone else, my cousin but then the taxi industry is very dangerous. I don't want him to be killed. So right now I don't know what to do, I don't have any plan.. Thuli walked in to have breakfast, she has moved out of res and she's moved in with me permanently. My Son didn't want to move in, he doesn't want to be a part of JJ's riches. Thuli uses Nomvelo's car, since it was in JJ's name it

now belongs to me and I gave it to my Daughter to make it easier for her to travel to school everyday..

Thuli: Good morning

Me: Morning

She sat down..

Her: How are you?

Me: I am well and you?

Her: I am okay

Thuli is a beautiful young woman and she is very smart, she deserves all beautiful things. She deserves the best in life..

Her: You seem like you have a lot in your mind

Me: I do have a lot in my mind

Her: What's wrong?

Me: Abangihloniphi nje neze la kule taxi industry (They don't respect me in this taxi industry)

Her: Ngoba? (Why)

Me: Because I am a woman, They don't respect me as much as they respected JJ

Her: That's terrible

Me: I am worried because the taxi business is the main family business it's what puts food on the table for us

Her: I understand ukhulumile no Danger ngalento? (have you spoken to Danger about this)

Me: Things are tense between us

Her: Something that cannot be fixed?

Me: Yes that's unfortunate

Her: You have to sort things out with Danger or else the business is going to go down the drain

Me: No I still have my pride left from this fight, I'm not going to go back and beg him. I will make this work

Her: I hope so

I really have to sort out this issue before we find ourselves broke..

–

SNAZO

Niso walked in while I had just finished eating breakfast, he seemed very pissed.

I went and put my dish together with the mug in the sink, while carefully studying his movements. He was banging things, while clicking his tongue here and there. He was impatient when opening things and in turn they would spill over, with his anger taking over I noticed that the pyramid tattoo glowed and sparkled, the original ink of the tattoo was black but when it glowed it became green. It was weird I didn't understand what was happening, I concentrated on it. It was a pyramid tattoo with an eye in it, the eye had a bright light in it...

Niso: Nazo!!!

I looked at him..

Him: Where you even listening to me?

Me: What?

Him: I said I've found Velo

Nomvelo has been missing for 5 days now, she hasn't been home since from that day when her Grandmother came looking for her. Her Grandmother has been worried sick, she hasn't been well these days since Velo left home.

When Niso came back that night I told him and he went to her house, Velo's Grandmother has been solemnly depending on Niso to find Velo for her. Niso has looked for her all over and nothing, kind of difficult looking for someone who doesn't even have friends around. Most people don't know her at a personal level, he was so worried he thought that maybe she got kidnapped, raped, and killed..

Me: Umtholephi? (Where did you find her)

Him: Groovy called.. She was with Groovy all this while

Me: uGroovy.. Groovy?

Him: Ya uGroovy

Me: Ya that doesn't sound like her style uGroovy is, she's just not the type of person Nomvelo would hang with

Him: I swear I'm going to kill her

Me: Calm down.. She doesn't need someone putting her more down when she's already down

He took his sandwich and then walked out, banging the door behind him like my statement didn't even make sense to him.

—

NOMVELO

I heard someone screaming my name and shaking me, I didn't wanna wake up but I was forced too. The person was shaking me violently that a peaceful sleep was impossible to achieve. I opened my eyes and it was Groovy..

Her: Haibo!! Kanti asisavuki na la ekhaya? (don't we wake up anymore)

I rose up from the pillow and sat up straight. I have been crashing at Groovy's place for the past 5 days, we haven't been doing much but drinking all the time. Groovy was the only person that I thought of at my time of heartbreak and she welcomed me, she saw that I was in distress and she let me stay at her house, with her and her Grandmother. Drinking everyday felt better and her Grandmother seemed not to mind at all. We would go to this other tarven in the morning at around 11am, then by 14:00 she would walk me back home because I would be faded. She would walk me

back with a few beers then later when I wake up I would drink. I think the reason why her Grandmother didn't mind is because she also drinks, but she prepares her own alcohol. She drinks traditional beer..

It felt so good to just drink my life away, being disconnected from reality like that and not having to think about what happened it felt normal to me. I couldn't, I couldn't face life and what happened sober. My life has become so unbearable that all I saw was no reason to live anymore. How was I going to do it? I literally have nothing and I have no family..

Groovy: Awuke ugeze bese uyadla (bath and then eat)

I was still not used to a hangover so I felt really sick. I threw my head back on the pillow and closed my eyes..

Groovy: Hai asazi (We don't know)

Groovy comes from a broken home and I think this is the reason why she is like this, at her house you hustle for yourself. I even had to sell my phone to make ends meet, it is that difficult..

–

SNAZO

I went to Dawn's office to fetch my cheque, I was part of some exorcism since I wasn't working with Themba and Shine anymore on their current job..

The exorcism that we did aired about three days ago and it had a lot of views. Dawn has his own channel where he airs some of the Exorcisms, it's not a publicity stunt but to let everyone know that such exists. It's also a way for him to make a living. I hope there will be a way for me too, to make a living when I become a preacher. I don't wanna rob innocent people off their money..

Dawn: Here is your cheque, you can cash it in anytime

It was R9 500

Me: Thank you

He sat on his desk while his other leg was balancing on the floor..

Him: I thought you would be happy.. You deserve every cent

I faked a smile..

Me: Ya thank you

Him: Something bothering you?

I went and sat on the small couch..

Me: He is not possessed.. My Brother is not possessed

Him: Shouldn't you be happy then?

Me: This morning when we were talking I noticed something

Him: What?

Me: He has this tattoo of a pyramid with an eye in it, it glowed. The tattoo originally it's black but when it glowed it was green

Him: A pyramid? With an eye?

I nodded..

He took his phone and was on it for a while..

Him: Is this the pyramid?

I went and looked at it..

Me: Ya exactly the same

Him: I can't believe it

Me: Believe what?

Him: He is the servant of Lucifer, this pyramid dates back to the Illuminati. The eye inside of it they refer to it as the "3rd eye" The eye that sees everything

Me: I don't understand?

Him: I don't know if he got the tattoo just for fun or maybe he admired it but he practically sold his soul to the devil with this stamp of ownership, the pyramid goes deeper. I don't think he realized the meaning of it when he got it

Me: Exactly what does it mean?

Him: It means that through this pyramid tattoo there's a connection between him and the devil, the devil has been able to control him through the tattoo

Me: Dammit! Now I know what he meant when he said he has my Brother

Him: The devil has his soul, He owns it

The connection will never be broken until he removes the tattoo and do away with everything that he gained when he still had the tattoo

This was a mess.. How do I get Niso to understand especially with the type of person

that he is now

–

NOMVELO

I was woken up by noise, when I listened carefully the voice sounded familiar. It was Niso..

Niso: Uphi? (Where is she)

Groovy: Phola tuu!! (Relax)

Niso: Ungang'tsheli ukuthi ng'phole!(dont tell me to relax) Don't come to me with that shit!!

I heard Groovy's grandmother shouting..

Her: Kwenzakalani? (what's happening)

She had passed out on that worn out couch, she had been drinking earlier on..

I quickly got out of bed and my first thought was to lock the door but, the door was not even in good condition. It didn't have a door handle,

we even used a folded paper to close it tightly..

The door flung open and he walked in, He was mad. He was figuratively roaring like a lion, I have never seen him that mad before. I stood there all frozen as he approached me, I didn't know what to say.

Groovy: Niso ima hau kanti yini? (Niso wait a minute)

He put his hand on my throat and then he banged me against the wall, banged the back of my head against the wall soo much that I swear I could feel my skull cracking..

Groovy: Niso yima uzobulala omunye umntwana (Niso stop it you going to kill her)

.

To be continued

No edits

NOMVELO

I don't know the end result of what Niso did to me other than waking up in the car with a banging headache. The headache would get more intense as I move my head, or if I touch the back of my head. I am even surprised that I'm still alive, he really was going for the kill..

He was concentrated on the road and I was quiet in the front seat, I was trying to process everything that happened earlier on. If my Uncle was here this would've ended badly, he would've killed Niso without even thinking twice or asking any questions. I am very confused with the sudden change of his attitude, I know that he has always been stubborn, he is a big disciplinarian but to go this far? I never imagined him going this far. This is the same person who never wanted to see a tear in my eye, he never wanted to see me sad or broken and all of a sudden he is the one hurting me. I

am very confused..

He was very impatient with other drivers on the road, he was just a different person. Different from how I know him.

We finally arrived at his place, he parked next to the gate and we got out. I followed his lead as he led the way. I really need to bath, I haven't bathe for two days, I looked like a mess. I was wearing Groovy's short, a spaghetti top, and flops. My hair was a mess, I didn't even comb it. All those girls I used to call ratchet I was one of them..

The house was quiet meaning that there was no one, it was just me and him. I got scared of what he might do to me..

I slowly sat down on the bed, my headache was getting a bit intense now..

He looked at me and shook his head..

Him: What are you even wearing?

I didn't say anything, he collected himself so that he could calm down..

Him: I'm going to get you some pain killers and some toiletries I'll be right back

He walked to the door..

Him: When I get back I better find you here or else..

His look was threatening on its own without him even completing the sentence..

Him: Nx!!!!

He banged the door behind him and my heart skipped a bit..

–

NOMSA

I went to see this other taxi owner, Nkosi. He is also well respected around here and I think that if we could partner then things would be better. I really cannot do this on my own, I need a male

figure someone that they will respect and fear.

We met at some joint and grabbed a bite, he was your typical taxi owner with a gold ring in his pinky finger. He dived in on those slab chips, they were drowning in different sauces..

Him: No... Ngiyakuzwa (I hear you)

I drank my fanta orange a bit..

Me: Ya nginenkinga la and ngicela uncedo (I have a problem here and I'm asking for help)

Him: Kahle kahle tshela mina.. Why u Danger kungabi wuye ongenayo? (Tell me something, why isn't Danger the one helping you)

Me: Well.. Things aren't really good between me and him, siye saba nok'xabana kancane nje (we had a fight)

Him: Hai mfazi ka JJ mina ngiyaxolisa angeke ngikhone ukuku nceda (I won't be able to help you)

I was disappointed..

Me: Ngoba? (why not)

Him: I already have my own taxis that come with their own problems, taking another load it's going to be heavy on my shoulders

Me: Ngaze ngadumala (I'm disappointed)

Him: I would advise you to talk things out no Danger because this business other taxi owners can crook you.. Bazok'thathela wonke lama Taxi (They will take all your taxis)

Me: Sengizabona ukuthi ngenzanjani (I will see what I can do)

–

NOMVELO

I needed pain killers and I needed them now, I couldn't tolerate the headache anymore. I heard the kitchen door opening and closing, maybe that's him. I got up and made my way to the

kitchen only to find that it was Snazo, he was holding plastics. Looks like he had been doing some shopping for groceries..

He paused while still holding the plastics and looked at me, it was a very embarrassing situation. Having him seeing me like this was very embarrassing..

Him: Hello

Me: Hi

He put the plastics on the counter..

Me: I thought it was Niso

Him: Where is he?

Me: He.. He wen..

Him: Are you alright?

I nodded and caused more pain..

Me: Ahhh...

Him: What's wrong?

He made his way to me, the closer he got the more I smelled his cologne..

Him: What's wrong?

Me: I have a.. I have a terrible headache

He looked at me for a while which made me very uncomfortable..

Him: May I?

I slowly nodded.. He rolled his sleeve and then got more closer, I hope I didn't smell horrible..

He extended his hand and put it at the back of my head, he gently ran his fingers around that painful area busy poking it here and there. It was painful, it was painful that I put my hand on his chest..

Him: Sorry it will just take a second

I closed my eyes as he continued poking until the pain seized a bit. It was soothing, he has magical hands..

Him: How does that feel?

I opened my eyes looked at him..

Me: A bit better

I removed my hand from his chest. He retracted his from the back of my head and started rubbing his hands together.

Him: That's not a tension headache, seems like you bumped your head or something there's an area that feels swollen

Me: How did you know the exact area where the pain arose from?

Him: I didn't know that's why I went all around trying to feel it

Me: But how did you know that it was at the back of my head?

He folded his arms..

Him: What happened?

His look intimidated me not in a bad way just, Nazo has always been intimidating. There's just something about him and now I find him even more intimidating, I don't know why..

Me: I fell..

Him: You fell?

Me: Yes

He looked at me as if like he was trying to see if I was telling the truth or not..

Me: I.. I should go and lie down a bit

I left him standing there and went to the bedroom..

–

NISO

I passed by at Nomvelo's place to get clean close for her, her Grandmother was relieved to hear that I found her..

Her: Ohhh Thixo wam'.. Thank you Lord

Me: Now you no longer have to worry she will be safe

Her: Can't she come back home?

Velo's Grandmother told me everything about Velo's uncle being a ritualist and how much it hurt Velo, she told me everything that transpired the day that Velo ran away..

Me: For now I think she will be more safe with me and my family, if she comes back here she might run away again. Give her time to digest everything and I promise you that when she has gotten over it, I will bring her back

Her: I'm just happy that she's okay

Me: Tomorrow I want to take her to town, see if we can find space for her at the college if not maybe she can get a job just to take her mind off things

She closed her eyes with her hands on her chest and started crying..

Her: Thank you so much.. May God bless you my son, may the almighty bless you.. Ohh thank you Lord, thank you for protecting my Granddaughter. Thank you Jesus.. Thank you for-

As she continued saying that I felt a bit of some hotness on my arm, I checked it and I had a red mark right on my pyramid tattoo, more like something burned me.

It was weird..

.

To be continued

No edits

48

SNAZO

I felt some type of way, Mr Shabalala's look was

piercing through my skin. I could clearly see that he didn't want me here but then again he was restricted from saying anything since his wife was the one who wanted me here. Shine had called me to come, he said that Mrs Shabalala had agreed for me to help her, he told me that she was desperate. I looked at her and she looked weary, she was tired. She had given up all hope that she might be saved from what she's going through, she was no longer hoping for a miracle but to die. She wanted to be rid of this pain and suffering. Mr Shabalala was making me very uncomfortable, I don't think I would proceed with the matter at hand until he leaves the room..

Mrs S: Baba bengisacela usishiye kancane nje
(Can you please give us some space)

It was almost as if like she read my mind.

Mr Shabalala stood up and walked out, I was only left in the living room with Mrs Shabalala

and her Daughter Zandile..

Mrs S: Yazi (You know)

She glanced down with tears falling..

Her: I am a burden to both my Husband and my Daughter, especially my Daughter. She should be concentrating on school, she should be going to the mall with her peers but she's always here with me after school being my Nurse. She's 16 years, she's way too young for this

Zandile looked down, she was still wearing her school uniform..

Mrs S: I have been to Doctors, I have been to Prophets but still

Shw closed her eyes and exhaled loudly..

Her: If God can just relieve me from this Pain, if God can just take me now it will be better for my Daughter

I stood up and went to crouch in front of Zandile who seemed very broken seeing her Mother crying like that. She was playing with her fingers. This child has a good and caring heart, most children would be complaining but all she wants is to see her Mother healed. She wants to see her Mother free from this suffering.

Me: Hey

She kept quiet..

Me: Do you know how blessed you're?

She shook her head no..

Me: Despite your Mother's condition you still respect her, you don't take advantage of the fact that she's wheelchair bound but you still keep that same respect that you always had for her even before the wheelchair situation

She wiped her tears..

Me: God has heard your cries, your prayer. Your

Mother doesn't know that every night you secretly pray for her to get better isn't it?

She nodded..

Me: Guess what?

She looked at me..

Me: Today all her suffering is going to go away, your Mother will be able to cook for you, clean and do all those things that she used to do for you before she got sick

Mrs S: Please don't put false hope on her

I got up and looked at Mrs S..

Me: Now a certain woman had a flow of blood for twelve years, and had suffered many things from many physicians. She had spent all that she had and was no better, but rather grew worse. When she heard about Jesus, she came behind him in the crowd and touched his garment. For she said; "IF ONLY I MAY TOUCH

HIS CLOTHES, I SHALL BE MADE WELL"

Immediately the fountain of her blood was dried up, and she felt in her body that she was healed of the affliction.

-Mark 5 verse 25-29 (NKJV)

She was now very wet with tears..

Me: Her faith is what healed her, I want you to have faith and believe that you healed. After today may you never doubt the existence of the almighty but most of all after this, may you find it in your heart to forgive the person who has caused you this suffering..

I had a clear vision about everything, Mr Shabala was having an affair and he got the lady pregnant. Since he was married he didn't wanna be tied down to a baby that was conceived through infidelity so he forced the woman to abort. The woman did abort because she didn't want to raise a baby alone especially

when she's unemployed. It didn't end there, Mr Shabalala had threatened to do away with her should she keep the pregnancy or tell his wife, and that's where the bitterness and hatred grew from this woman. As a form of revenge she resorted into witchcraft, she wanted Mrs Shabalala to pay for her Husband's sins. According to her, if it wasn't for Mrs Shabalala. Mr Shabalala would've never left her not forced her to have an abortion

I looked at her again..

Me: The person who did this is going to come and confess, in your heart I want you to find forgiveness and move on. With or without your husband

Her: I don't understand

Me: You will don't worry

I got on one knee and I held her leg. I squeezed it a bit..

Me: Receive this healing in Jesus name

She screamed a bit as the pain and cramps left her, the snakes that were compressing her legs let go. I held the other leg and said the same words..

I looked at Zandile and instructed her to get the basin that had water mixed with a bit of salt and a towel, to relieve the swelling. Zandile went to get the basin and the towel..

I put her legs in the basing and I could see that the lukewarm water was very soothing to her as she closed her eyes and held her breath a little..

I poured water on every part of her legs..

Me: You are healed.. I would like you to say those words

Her: I am healed

Me: Say those words until you believe that you are healed

Her: I am healed.. I am healed.. I am healed

Tears fell..

Me: I will be back

I went to the kitchen, got the paraffin and the match box then went outside to burn those snakes, to burn what was hidden below the ground by that woman who was bewitching Mrs S. As the snakes burned I could hear her screams, After this she is going to come here to confess so that she could release herself from the burning sensation. She is going to take off all her clothes in hopes that the burning will stop, after she had confessed and asked for forgiveness. Her sanity will be restored back by Mrs Shabalala's forgiveness. If not, she will be running around like a mad person. It is important that Mrs Shabalala finds it in her heart to forgive her, and I know she will because she is kind hearted..

I went back to the house and found her walking to the kitchen, her legs were still wobbly it was like she was a baby taking her first step. She will get the hang of walking again as soon as the swelling goes down, by next week her legs will be strong again..

Mrs S: I am healed.. I cannot b..

Me: No don't say that don't say "I cannot believe" you already believed it, you already believed in this healing

Zandile was so emotional too that she hugged her Mother..

Mrs S: I don't even know what to say

Me: Thank the Lord

The door opened and Mr Shabalala walked in, He couldn't believe it. He couldn't believe that his wife was walking again..

Zandile: Papa look.. Ma is walking again

I saw tears forming in his eyes too, he went and hugged her wife who was now sobbing and so was Zandile. It was a beautiful and emotional moment..

Mr Shabalala broke the hug and came to me, he wiped his tears and hugged me..

Him: Thank you.. Thank you Son

He was even trembling..

Him: Thank you very much

He broke the hug...

Me: I'm just a servant, thank the one who brought about your wife's healing

He nodded repeatedly shaking my hand..

Mrs S: God bless you.. May God richly bless you, you don't know what you have done for me and my family

Mr Shabalala went back to his wife..

Me: Now you can burn the wheelchair or even give it away

They laughed..

Me: Enjoy the rest of your day.. May God bless you

I hope they will be able to get through the news of the affair, I hope after the confession Mr Shabalala will change his ways. May this be a wake up call to him..

—

MANTWA

Therapy was going well, I wasn't 100% fine but I was getting there. Dr Patel would come to my ward every now and then, especially when he is doing nightshift to keep me company at times he would bring me Samosas. I was really enjoying therapy I didn't know that talking could cleanse the soul like this, I didn't know that I would find healing in sharing my pain. It was

easy for me to forgive Nazo because the breakup wasn't due to him ill treating me nor cheating, though I truly loved him but I am happy that he didn't hurt me in that way. At least no other man to follow will suffer for his sins because he didn't break me in that way. Tomorrow I was being discharged, I am looking forward to going home and going back to my life. Hospitals can be draining at times..

Him: Good day

He walked in holding a Tupperware..

Me: Good day

Him: I brought you some chicken curry

Me: When do you get time to cook?

Him: This was prepared by my Mother, she is at my place visiting for a couple of days

Me: Hmmm mama's boy?

He chuckled..

Him: Hardly

Me: Thank you for the chicken curry

Him: Are you happy that you going home tomorrow?

Me: Yes I am..

Him: It's good that you going home

(Silence)

Him: I would still like to remain friends with you even when you out

Me: I'd like that too

He smiled at me and I smiled at him too..

—

NOMVELO

I had a good nap although I still had the headache, it wasn't that tense anymore.

I opened my eyes and found Niso starring at me, he was sitting on the chair a bit close to the

bed..

Him: Hey

Me: Hey

I sat up straight..

Me: For how long have I been sleeping?

Him: For a while now

Me: Ohw

Him: I passed by at your house and got you some clean clothes

Me: Thank you

Him: I'm sorry.. I shouldn't have attacked you
I kept quiet..

Him: Before your Uncle passed on he made me promise him that I will take care of you, when you went missing I thought that I had broken that promise. I thought that I was never going to find you ever again, especially with these horror

stories of girls getting kidnapped and everything. I thought you were laying in a ditch somewhere dead I was scared

Me: I was not in a good space.. I was hurt and confused

He came and sat next to me, he pulled me closer to him and gave me a tight squeeze..

Him: You don't deserve everything that's happening to you, if you keep on going like this then you going to make that witch happy. I want you to fix your life, I am here and I'm going to help you. Just promise me that you will never run away ever again

Me: I promise

He kissed me on my forehead..

Him: I love you

Me: I love you too

.

To be continued

No edits

49

SNAZO

After the scenario with the Shabalala's I met up with Shine for a snack. Since we were working different jobs we hardly had time to chill and catch up, but now since they done we can hang out more. We were chilling at our usual spot as always, we were at gazini having some chips and ribs..

Him: Vele vele Ntwana cool drink?

I looked at the can of coke..

Me: Ya I don't feel like drinking

Him: Just say it nje ukuthi awusabutheli (Just say it that you no longer drinking)

I chuckled. Lately I have lost all interest in drinking, I hardly drink nor smoke. Both those

habits are growing out of me, funny with smoking I thought that I was going to have withdrawal symptoms but I didn't...

Shine: K'hambe kanjani? (how did it go)

Me: K'vaye grand but his Wife is going to be heartbroken when she learns that it's the mistres who did that to her

He whistled..

Him: Aii kubi (It's ugly)

We continued eating and chatting..

Shine: Manje wena no Mantwa? (what about you and Mantwa)

Me: The last time I heard she was in hospital, after I broke up with her she tried hurting herself. She attempted suicide

Him: Ngendaba yomjolo nje? (Just for dating)

Me: She was in too deep.. I still feel bad

Him: Mara umcavile? (did you check up on her)

Me: Naa.. Her Mom said I shouldn't call her again

Him: As long aGrand

Me: What about you and Sbosh?

Him: ahh uthi she's pregnant

Me: Serious?

Him: Ya ung'tshele kanjalo (that's what she told me)

Me: You think it's true?

Him: Ang'cavi uthe uzoya Doctor (she said she's gonna go to the Dr)

Me: if uringa iWaar Ntwana congratulations (If she's telling the truth.. Congratulations)

Him: Eish Ntwana incosi iExpensive mara nabangabe vele usthwele sisonke (A baby is expensive but if she is pregnant then we

together in this)

Me: Yizo Ntwana (That's how it's supposed to be)

Him: so sikela mina manje are you still going to date? (tell me something are you still going to date)

Me: Since I'm going to be a preacher soon I need to get married because I'm going to have a church

Him: Yho!! Ntwana wena vele Indaba zama white wedding

We both laughed..

Me: I just hope she's going to be worth it

Him: Unga stressi (don't stress)

We continued eating..

Shine tooked out his phone..

Him: Eish missed call.. Ngiyeza (I'm coming)

He got up and went to make a phone call.

–

NOMVELO

After bathing I felt relaxed and very clean, at Groovy's place I didn't do much of bathing. I went and joined Niso in the living room, he was sitting at the table and busy in his laptop..

I sat ontop of him..

Me: What are you doing?

Him: I was checking for vacancies so far I found 3.. Since you will be starting school again next year, I think it will be better if you get a job instead of lazing around

He kissed me on my shoulder while I nodded..

Him: mostly it's retail

Me: Anything will do for now

Him: We can work on your Cv and send it

tomorrow

Me: Okay but all my documents are at my Uncle's place.. Or should I say Nomsa's place

Him: We will go get them tomorrow

I noticed that he had a burnt mark on his arm..

Me: What happened here?

Him: I am not sure

Me: Is it painful?

Him: Just a little

He kissed me at the back of my neck..

Me: Tomorrow I should also go and see my Grandmother.. What do you think?

Him: I think she would appreciate that

He ran his hands from my waist all up to my breasts..

Him: I've missed you

Me: I've missed you too

I changed the sitting position so that we could face each other, and then we kissed.

Me: Maybe we should go to the bedroom, I don't want your Mom or your Brother walking in on us

Him: Okay

He picked me up and then we made our way to the bedroom..

–

MANTWA

I heard a knock at the door and it was Dr Patel, he made his way in..

Me: Going home?

Him: Ya.. I just finished my shift

Me: Okay

Him: I might not see you tomorrow when you leave, I'll be off

Me: That's bad

He walked in and sat at the edge of the bed while holding his laptop bag..

Him: How is therapy going?

Me: It's going well I'm really enjoying it

Him: That's good

Him: Not to be forward maybe I should have your number so that I can check up on you

He handed me his iPhone, and I put in my numbers..

This time around I don't want to be forward, the last time I took charge with Nazo it didn't end well. I ended up here..

Him: I'll call you

Me: Okay

Him: Good night

Me: Night

He got up and left...

–

NOMVELO

Right when we were still caught up in the moment, I heard the kitchen door opening and closing. I broke the kiss..

Niso: what?

Me: Someone came in

Him: So?

Me: So? I find it uncomfortable getting busy when someone is around the house

The TV went on..

Gugu: Niso are you home?

Niso: While we at it tomorrow we must also get our own place

I laughed..

Gugu: I saw your car outside

Niso: Ya ng'khona (I'm around)

Gugu: Okay... Are you hungry? Khane ngizopheka (I'm just about to start cooking)

Niso: Take your time

Gugu: Wenzani? (what are you doing)

Niso: Just resting

Gugu: Okay ke.. Manje indaba ka Nomvelo? (what about Nomvelo)

Niso: Eish Gugu we will talk later!

Gugu: Ngiyabuza nje kphela hau! (I'm just asking)

He got off me and laid next to me, he was hard..

Him: You know we can..

Me: No.. I don't trust your Mom she will be calling you when we caught up in the moment

He exhaled in frustration..

Him: Fine ke give me a hand job

He took my hand and put it inside his briefs..

Him: You will play with me until I come then after we going to go and talk to Gugu

I don't think Gugu likes me, and I hope that she will allow for me to stay here for a while until I am ready to go back to my Grandmother's place..

–

SNAZO

After chilling with Shine I went home, I wanted to have an early night. I unlocked my room and walked in, I closed the door and turned around. I saw this lady sitting on my bed. I freaked out a bit, she was wearing a white dress..

Her: Hi Snazo

Me: Who are you? And how did you get in?

She stood up and I noticed that she was slightly taller than me. She was pretty tall for a girl..

Her: My name is Helena.. You don't know how much I have waited to meet you

Me: How did you get in here?

Her: I'm an angel I can get in anywhere

Me: You a white?

I laughed in disbelief..

Her: I thought we were past that stage of you not believing

Me: Don't get me wrong I'm used to the glowing type of angels with wings?

She looked around..

Her: Well your room is quiet small, my wings are big but for all it's worth

She walked closer and stretched her hand to me. I stretched mine to her for a handshake and my our hands started glowing, there expelled this bright light

Her: Now do you believe?

She retracted her hand back..

Me: Wow

She walked around in the room..

Her: Out of all my charges you the one with an interesting gift

She looked at me..

Her: The gift of healing with your hands and with words.. You don't know how many broken souls you going to heal and save from suicide and premature death

Me: Thank you I guess

Her: Snazo I am responsible for you, whatever you do it's going to affect me too. I am meant to guide you

Me: I don't understand

Her: You need to understand that you won't be

able to save everyone

Me: Okay?

Her: And that everyone includes your own
Brother

Me: Excuse me?

Her: Snazo unfortunately Niso cannot be saved
I chucked..

Me: You kidding me right? Why not? Everyone
deserves to be saved

Her: He.. Apart from the fact that he is leading
many souls to doom sometimes fate is far
beyond human understanding

Me: Okay listen.. You don't understand, I
accepted this gift because of him! For him to be
safe at all times! If something happens to him
then all of this, I won't be able to do this

Her: Sweetie deep down you have accepted this
gift because you wanna save souls it's not

entirely about him

Me: I am not going to let anything happen to him!

Her: Nazo his soul belongs to Lucifer

Me: And I will fight him

Her: Nazo you a healer you can't really fight Lucifer head on

Me: I've been doing exorcisms with Dawn and trust me I am not scared

Her: I like your confidence but..

Me: but nothing!

Her: Do you realize that you cannot change fate? If I help you in this I am going to end up in Purgatory forever do you know what Purgatory is like?

Me: I don't care!!

Her: You can't save him!!

Me: I can and I will!

Her: No you won't!

Me: If anything happens to him.. I will rain blood on anything labeled a Christian out there, I promise you

Her: You don't mean that

Me: Yes I do! Mark my words!

.

To be continued

No edits

50

SNAZO

I couldn't understand I thought that Angels were supposed to be perfect, these perfect and innocent creatures that reside in heaven.

Having this Helena of an Angel tell me that my Brother cannot be saved wasn't sitting well with

me. I was now questioning if they really what they seem to be..

Me: I thought Angels were perfect mystical creatures, I thought you were perfect but now it sounds to me that you twisted!

Her: I know how it sounds but you don't understand

Me: When did my Brother even sell his soul? Niso is way too different from me, he doesn't even believe in the supernatural

Her: What's happening to him goes deeper, it goes beyond having a tattoo. Niso has always attributed traits that made him vulnerable for Lucifer to whisper to him. The tattoo just became strawberries ontop

Me: What exactly are you saying?

Her: He once said and I quote "if Illuminati is selling my soul for riches, and the only fear is dying broke. Then hell is where I decide to go"

that affirmation from him everyday is what got him where he is in the first place, following his anger, Arrogance, and stubbornness. Niso has sunk deeper and deeper he is leading more and more souls into doom. Just as you a servant of God, he too is a servant to his own master

Me: My Brother is..

Her: A devil worshiper.. Nazo people tend to look for an easy way out of tough situations and Niso saw what his doing as the only way out. His situation wasn't entirely lack and limitation. He wanted power, he wanted respect, he wanted riches even if it meant selling his soul

Me: He is my Brother there has to be a way

Her: This is not a demonic possession, he is not possessed but working for the devil. He can only be saved if he is willing to give up what he got from the devil I don't see him doing that. I

have looked at it in all possible ways and I still get the same result

Me: I will conjure Lucifer if I have too

Her: I know how much you love your Brother and how much you care for him but Nazo your Brother is a different spectrum from who you are now, this goes way deeper than you think. Innocent lives are at stake Mothers are crying for their children I am sorry, I am here because you matter more than you think to us. You have to fulfill your destiny.. You are saving and he is killing

Me: He matters to me too!! He is my Brother and he matters to me!

Her: I am only telling you this because I want you to be able to let go when the time comes, we cannot stop the reaper when it comes for his soul and if you save him then..

Me: So there is a way to save him?

Her: If you save him he is going to kill someone who is tied to your destiny

Me: I don't understand

Her: He is going to kill Nomvelo

Me: My Brother can be anything but he is not a murderer

Her: Your Brother isn't, but your Brother who sold his soul is! If he's saved then Nomvelo dies

Me: I don't care!! She can die for all I care she has been nothing but Pain ever since she came into our lives

Her: You not my first charge but you the first that's this stubborn. I am your guardian anything you do I will account for it, I will have to go to Purgatory forever and being there means my next charges are going to suffer

Me: You cannot see the future

Her: "Do you suppose that I came to give peace

on earth? I tell you, not at all, but rather division. For from now on five in one house will be divided: three against two, and two against three. Father will be divided against son and son against father, mother against daughter and daughter against mother" Luke 12 verse 51-53

I heard someone knocking at the door..

Helena: Wake up and open

Voice: Nazo!! Are you in Man?

I slowly opened my eyes and looked around in my bedroom, I was alone. Looked like I had passed out in bed. It was now even dark outside, for how long have I been out?

The knock persisted...

Me: I'm coming

I got out of bed while yawning and went to open, it was Niso..

Him: I thought you were still out

Me: I must've passed out when I got back

Him: This the 3rd time I came looking for you

Me: I must've been dead asleep

Him: Seems so

He looked around as I switched on the light..

Me: I even think that I had a dream.. I just don't remember what it was about

He chuckled..

Him: Did you go hard on the bottle or weed?

Me: Neither

Him: Ayt man I want you present.. Got something I wanna talk to you and Gugu about

Me: Now?

Him: Yeah now

Me: Ayt I'll be there

Him: Cool

He walked out..

That was very weird..

–

DANGER

Nomsa had called me to come and see her, she wanted to talk to me about something important. She poured me a glass of whiskey and I just looked at it..

Her: Danger you should be thanking me.

At least now Nomvelo knows the truth, at least she knows who her real father is

Me: You want me to thank you for ruining my Daughter's life? It wasn't your place to tell her

Her: Were you even going to tell her?

Me: She had just lost her Uncle.. Someone who mattered a lot to her she is emotionally broken

Her: I'm sorry and I'm sorry how things are but
Danger you and I have always been good
friends

Me: I'm no fool Nomsa.. What do you want?

I looked around the room..

Her: Okay look I will give Nomvelo R5 000 a
month, pay for her tuition fees until she's done
at school and give her back her car

Me: At what price?

Her: All you have to do is to mind the Taxi
business, I will make sure that you also well
taken of

Me: Do you even know the price of these riches?
Everything here is a sacrifice of my wife's heart
and blood! Do you know what JJ had to do to
get everything that he owned? Sacrificing his
own sister so what you going to do? Because
riches like this need blood sacrifice?

She kept quiet...

Me: I only stayed and worked for JJ because of my Daughter, I needed to make sure that she didn't become the sacrifice at some point.. Do you really think that I wanted to be a part of what caused me the greatest pain? Think again

I stood up..

Me: You don't know what you getting yourself into, so help you God

I made my way to the door..

—

NOMVELO

I was very nervous, nervous at how they were going to respond to Niso's request. I love Niso and right now he is my sanity, I am trying to heal from what happened and he is the love that keeps me sane. I was holding his hand tight as he delivered the news to his Mother and

Brother..

Him: I called both of you here because I wanted to talk to you about something that's very important

Gugu's look was already making me very uncomfortable..

Niso: I promised JJ that I will take care of Nomvelo, he asked me to and.. Nomvelo has been through a lot she's actually actually going through a lot and I think she should be close to me for time being I have already spoken to her Grandmother and she will be staying with us
They both kept quiet..

Gugu: I.. I don't think that's a good idea

Niso: Obviously it wouldn't be to you

Gugu: Niso don't involve yourself in other people's business let Nomvelo sort herself out with her family I'm sorry that you went through

what you went through and we know how you feel we just lost my Mother but you don't see any of us moving in at other people's places

Niso: Gugu!

Gugu: What? I am very uncomfortable about this whole thing.. Nazo would agree with me that Cohabitation is a sin

Me: It's okay I'll go back home

Niso: No you not going anywhere!

He looked at his Mom..

Niso: If you don't want her here then you don't want me here

Gugu: Niso life is not like that! You cannot do this!

Niso: Yes I can!! You busy preaching about cohabitation being wrong while you slept with every dick out there! Then got two sons whom you don't even know who their father is

Gugu: You watch your mouth!!!

Niso: You should be happy that I'm committed to one girl only instead of sticking my dick everywhere!

Gugu: Yey wena!!!!

Me: Niso stop

Gugu looked at Snazo..

Gugu: Uzomyeka vele? (you going to let him be like)

Niso: Yes let's bring the Prophet into this matter hoping lightning will strike me down! Nazo is weak! Since he took this retarded road he has turned into nothing but a weakling!!!

Nazo seemed like he was getting bored by what's happening, he stood up walked away with his hands in his pockets..

Gugu was hurt, she stood up and went to her bedroom, I really don't know what has gotten

into Niso. He was never like this..

.

To be continued

No edits

51

NOMVELO

I thought that I knew Niso but clearly I didn't. Yes he has always been a bit stubborn and arrogant but what he did last night, that was too much. I have never seen him like that, I never pictured him going that far as to disrespect his family like that. If he could treat his own Mother like that, someone who brought him into this world then who am I? What if he does the same thing to me and more? This thing called life has no sense of humor. Just to think that my life was perfect once upon a time and now

everything has just crumbled down, and then I learned that parts of what seemed like a perfect life was all a lie.. It was damn too much for me! I wish someone could understand the pain that I was feeling, it wasn't bliss at all..

I have been up now for almost an hour or so, the weather outside seemed a bit cloudy like it was going to rain. I wasn't sure about the time but all I know is that I had no strength of going out of this room, especially since it has been clear to me over and over that Gugu doesn't like me. I wonder how life could've been if my Mother was still around, I don't even know were to go home is not an option. My Grandmother stood by and watched her Son kill my Mother, I strongly believe that she knew. She knew that JJ killed my Mother but she said nothing because she was enjoying the fruits from the evil tree. If there's truly a God out there then he has failed me, I was 5 when I witnessed the

horror of my Mom being killed as if like she wasn't human. Her heart was ripped, she died in pain. She died while crying and begging for her life. I might not remember everything that happened that night but she was human and she didn't deserve to die like that...

Niso walked back in, if you wanna go out to the kitchen or anywhere you can. I don't think she has came out of her room..

Me: And you not worried?

Him: No I'm not

That was cold..

Him: Look my Mother and I, things have always been like this between us. Way before you came into the picture

Me: I don't know.. This is not the life I wanna live always bumping into walls with your Mother

Him: You don't have too.. We can go and find

our own place to live

Me: Still that won't solve the situation

Him: I don't know what you want then

Me: Maybe I should just go back home

Him: No..

Me: I can't run away forever

Him: You wanna go home so that you can run off again?

Me: I can't live here.. The environment is not nice

Him: I told you that we don't have to live here!! I can get us a place!

Me: You at school.. Where do you even get all this money from?

Him: That's my business!

His phone beeped, he took it and read the message..

(Silence)

Him: I have to go somewhere.. We will continue this when I get back, you and Gugu will just have to make it work and you not going home!!
Not as yet

He walked out and banged the door behind him..

–

SNAZO

The first thing I did when I woke up was to go and see Dawn he was at his studio. Niso is becoming too much, I don't like what he is turning out to be at all. With his sudden change of behavior I had no doubt that the devil is involved, I will have to help him before the devil totally consumes him..

I don't know why you but I've been having this weird feeling like I had to remember something, something that was very important. Last night I kept on having flashes of a conversation that I

had with someone, I don't remember what it was about and I don't remember who the person was..

I didn't expect to find him at his studio so early in the morning but then again Dawn is a workaholic he probably has been here the whole night with his team.

I knocked at his office, he was sitting at his desk with his laptop open. I heard screams I think he was watching one of the exorcism tapes..

Me: Hey

He closed the laptop..

Him: Nazo?

I walked in..

Me: How are you?

Him: I'm good just surprised to see you here especially this early

Me: Ya man sorry for just showing up and not even calling

Him: I guess now I know why my gut feeling has been telling me to go to work early

Me: I guess so

I closed the door..

Me: There was no one at the reception reception

Him: I know my team only arrives at 08:00am, it's 6:30am

I nodded..

Him: Is everything alright?

Me: Everything is not alright

Him: What's wrong

Me: I need your help

Him: You know I'm always here to help

Me: Ya I'm afraid this is something a bit

complicated

He gave me a puzzling look..

Me: I want to conjure Lucifer

He looked at me for at least 10 seconds without saying anything..

Him: I'm sorry I thought I heard you saying you want to conjure Lucifer?

Me: Yes I want to conjure him

Him: What's wrong?

Me: It's my Brother I have to save him

Him: And you think conjuring Lucifer will help?

Me: Dawn I wouldn't be asking this if it wasn't important

Him: Nazo you want to conjure Lucifer, you want to bring him here from hell.. You can't disturb a snake in it's territory and not expect to be bitten

Me: This is the only choice that I have.. The only shot at saving my Brother

Him: Nazo we can't do that.. Conjuring Lucifer will not only bring him about but also when that curtain is opened many spirits will cross over not friendly spirits and my teams will be here soon not all of them are believers they vulnerable to possession

Me: Close the studio for a few hours

Him: What?

Me: Dawn please.. I wouldn't be asking if it wasn't important. I am desperate

He looked at me for a while..

Him: Even if I wanted to help you Nazo it's not possible

Me: Meaning?

Him: You a healer you don't really go deep into fighting evil not as deep as an exorcist or a

prophet so you always have a warrior Angel with you that protects you from the Lucifer's dark soldiers... There is Noway that we can conjure Lucifer and not have the warrior angel attacking.. They can't be in the same room together

I looked around..

Me: Is it with Me now?

Him: It's with you at all times

Me: We will just have to take that risk

He exhaled..

Him: Are you sure?

Me: wouldn't you do the same for someone that you cared about?

Him: Fine.. If we do this then we have to do it quickly before the team gets here.. Follow me

He led the way out and I followed him..

–
NOMVELO

There was no way that I was going to stay here, not with everything that's happening. Though I really didn't wanna go back to my Grandmother's house but I have no choice, I cannot stay here while it's always world War 3. I'm going through a lot and I would like my peace..

When I got to the kitchen Gugu was there, it was a bit of a weird situation. I didn't know what to say, I couldn't turn back. She was washing dishes while humming a certain song at the same time..

I collected my self and walked closer to the door..

Me: Good morning

She stopped humming, she paused for a few seconds without even turning to look at me.

She then continued with what she was doing. I made my way to the door and opened but I didn't walk out..

Me: I'm sorry about last night... Niso.. I am going back home it was never my intention to make you and him fight

She ignored me, I wanted to say more but her attitude wasn't right. I walked out and closed the door behind me..

—

SNAZO

We were in another room that was much bigger and looked like a store room. There was a lot of boxes around, files, and other things that they use. There was even their equipment, cameras, lights, microphones and what not. He took down a box and handed it to me, I looked inside and it had crystals, chinks, a book and a few other things..

Him: We have to draw a Devil's trap and put crystals around it.. The trap and the crystals will trap Lucifer and any spirit accompanying him from causing any harm or possession..

He got down from the ladder..

He came and went through the box..

Him: Here

He gave me an amulet...

Him: It will prevent him and his friends from possessing you.. Put it on, it's for protection

I put the box down and put it on..

Me: How did you learn about this stuff?

Him: I'm an exorcist.. It's my job to know about this stuff as you call it

He took out the book and pages through until he got into some page that had what looked like a pentagon of some sort, he took the chinks and looked around the room..

Him: Help me move some of these chairs to create more space

We moved the chairs and created space, then he started drawing on the floor..

Him: This is the Devil's trap you should draw it in some parts of your house

Me: Yeah then my Brother won't be able to come in

We both laughed..

Him: Your Brother is blessed to have you.. He must be grateful

Me: Yeah we been through a lot together

As Dawn was setting everything up, the small window reflected a bit of light which in turn I saw a shadow of big wings flapping around behind me. I turned around and no one was standing behind me...

Me: Err Dawn

Him: Yeah?

Me: Come here for a sec

He made his way to me...

Him: What?

Look at this..

I showed him the shadow of the wings..

Him: As I've said before.

You have a warrior angel with you at all times..

Archangel Uri

Me: You can see him?

Him: Yes

Me: Really? How come I can't?

Him: warrior angels their true form is a bit scary, you might find it unpleasant when you see him plus you really need to be in tune with your spiritual self to him right now deep within you there's no peace

I looked behind me again and I still didn't see anyone

Dawn went back to the set up, I moved to the side and the wings followed me..

Me: Interesting

Dawn: What's interesting

Me: Nothing

I looked at him as he sat up everything, I might have one shot at Lucifer.. I hope this works

–

NISO

I met up with one of my clients, he looked like shit. He was trembling he had black spots around his eye, his lips were dry and his eyes were a bit red. He looked like he hasn't slept in a while..

He gave me the R2 000, while I have him 3 pills..

Me: You alright man?

He was shaking really bad, and he was dressed up very warm as if like it was snowing...

Him: Do I look okay?

Me: Go easy hey

Him: Are you mocking me?

He opened the plastic and took out one pill..

Me: Hey you can't do this here

Him: I really need a fix

Me: I know but not here

I looked around..

Him: I am going crazy I really need to do this right now!!

Me: Man just calm down!!

Him: You calm down!!!

He looked around..

Him: For the past few days I.. I swear man that I've been seeing the Devil's face.. I've been hallucinating without my fix, I've been seeing demons everywhere.. It's hard man.. It's really hard

I snatched the plastic away from him..

Him: Give me my shit!!

Me: You can't do this here.. Now keep it cool I'll drive you home

Him: No...

He looked around...

Him: Get away from me!!

Me: Ethen??

Him: Tell them to get away from me!!

Me: Man calm down there's nothing here

Him: Go away!!

He was acting all paranoid..

Me: Eth..

The security guard walked up to us, he monitors the cars in the parking lot..

Me: Ethen just calm down man

Him: No get away from me!!!

I tried holding him to calm him down but he panicked and started hitting Me..

Me: Fuck it Ethen!!

Security: Is everything okay?

Me: Everything is fine

Ethen: Get away from me!!

Security: Sir are you okay?

Me: He's fine

Ethen: Get away from me you bloody devil

Out of nowhere he jumped on the security and started attacking him, the security guard got his pepper spray and sprayed him..

Ethen: My eyes!!!

He went down..

Me: Ethen?

He went down on the ground while struggling a bit until he was perfectly still. His eyes had also rolled back and he had a visible mark on his arm of a cross that was upside down, it was very weird..

.

To be continued

No edits

52

NISO

My first thought was to get out of there as fast as I could but since the security guard was with me when everything went down I couldn't leave, I had to wait for the police so that I could give out a statement. Ethen has always been a

problematic client I get it that he was addicted but he could've waited till we met up in a private place, not at my local mall. I couldn't cut him off, I know him from school he was going to give me away..

I gave the police my statement something simple that Ethen and I were friends, we met up at the mall to catch up on school work since final exams were approaching. I haven't been to school in a while and since he was a closest friend he offered to come and give me notes..

Officer: You haven't been to school ngoba ubugula? (You haven't been to school because you have been sick)

Me: That's correct

He was kind of difficult to read..

Officer: Does the school know that you sick?

Me: It's tertiary attending is not compulsory It didn't occur to me that I should report

He nodded while writing in the pad..

Him: Why were you two meeting up so early in the morning?

Me: He had to go to school

Him: He couldn't drop the notes at your house?

Me: The hood is a bit difficult to navigate for People like Ethen, the mall seemed like a convinient place to meet up

He wrote again..

I saw the body bag being put in the pathology van. There was a crowd now, it was also composed of people who were on the morning shift..

Me: Is there any more questions?

Him: No Son.. That's all

Me: I can leave?

Him: Yes.. Though can I have your number

incase I need to see you again

Me: Yes Ofcause

I gave him my number..

Him: You free to go

Me: Thank you

I walked up straight to my car without even looking back..

–

SNAZO

Dawn: Are you ready?

Me: I'm ready

We had set up everything, what was left was for Dawn to say the spell and conjure him...

Dawn: Here goes nothing

He started reading from the book..

Dawn: "Zerutik ateratako suge zaharra, zu

biltzea ... Lucifer nondik zetorren"

Nothing happened, it was quiet for a while..

I turned and looked at Dawn..

Me: Did you read correctly?

Him: Yes I did

Me: Then what's happening?

Him: I don't know Nazo.. Plus it was a bad idea from the start

Me: Well read again

Him: You only have to say it once

Me: Obviously it didn't work

He stretched the book out to me..

Him: Wanna take a shot?

Me: I would if I knew how to read the language

He closed the book..

Him: Look let's cut our losses and-

All of a sudden we heard voices laughing, we heard them from the four corners of the room just going around. They were quite irritating..

Dawn: Seems like his friends are here too

When we were still being annoyed by the voices, a figure appeared in the middle of the Devil's trap. I've seen it before, the figure with a black robe. One that you can't put a face too..

The crystals started glowing they also played their part in trapping him inside

Lucifer: Nor izan zitzaizkidan ausartak niri konbentzitzeko (who had the guts to conjure me)

He slowly turned and faced us, well I'm assuming he was looking at us considering the fact that we couldn't see his evil face. It was hidden by that hat from his robe. I couldn't even see his legs the robe was covering that up, never mind his hands they were folded and the

robe covered them up too. I can just say all we saw was the robe and heard his voice, he was tall. Taller than the last time I had an encounter with him..

Lucifer: Sükut! (Silence)

The voices kept quiet..

Lucifer: My My My... What do we have here?

I heard wings flapping behind me..

Lucifer: inviting me in the same room with an angel, not soo smart. Dawn you should know better

The room trembled as if like there was an earthquake..

Lucifer: Good and evil cannot exist along side each other.. Choose either me or him here

I turned and looked at Dawn..

Dawn: You have to talk to the Archangel, if the ground breaks Lucifer will be set free from the

trap

Me: How do I talk to something that I can't see?

Dawn: Focus

I turned around and I couldn't see anything..

Dawn: Deep within connect with Uri

I closed my eyes in hopes to connect with the angel..

(10 seconds later)

Dawn: You might wanna hurry a bit

Lucifer: This is going to be fun.. My cup of tea!

I remembered deep within who I was doing this for and then I shifted my attention from the noise in the room and focused on the wings flapping. I then opened my eyes and there he was, standing right in front of me. He was a giant and his wings reached the ceiling, I still don't know how he was able to flap them around. He had a sword with him.

I just looked at him, I let the voice that we share deep within do all the talking without me uttering a word and he moved back. He didn't entirely leave the room..

I turned and looked at Lucifer, glad to see that the Devil's trap didn't crack and also no crystal shifted from it's place..

Lucifer: That's disappointing

Me: How come we can't see your face?

Him: I don't have a body! I am not human, for you to see my face I will have to possess a human being this robe covers me in case I need to make an entrance

Dawn: Good to know you haven't possessed anyone

Lucifer: Why did you bring me here?

Me: It's about my Brother.. I want you to cut the deal that you have with him

Lucifer: It's not that easy, see Nazo life is not as colorful as you think but we all have choices. In this battle of good and evil we choose which side we belong too and he made his choice

Me: I don't care what choice he made I want you to release him do you understand me? Or else-

Lucifer: Or else what?

I moved closer and Dawn stopped me..

I moved back again..

Lucifer: Do your path and he will do his!

Me: I will make sure that there's no rest for you!
I will-

Lucifer: Ah ah ah ah.. Hold your tongue now boy!
You listen to me. Stay out of my way and I will stay out of yours! And as for your Brother he will be soon useless to me you don't worry about that

Me: What does that mean?

Lucifer: Tick tok.. Tick tok.. Useless soldiers I tend to discard them and recruit new strong soldiers

Me: So what are you going to do? Kill me?

Him: You give me way too much credit

Me: You leave him alone do you hear me?

Him: With pleasure! Plus he will meet his doom soon!!

He then disappeared..

I was confused, much of what he said I couldn't understand..

—

HOSPITAL

I am Detective Zwane and I have been working on a case that's very personal to me. About a few weeks ago my Daughter got hooked into drugs as a way of dealing with her pain, see Me and her Mom we divorcing and when the

divorce has been finalized I will have to move to another place and she couldn't take that. She couldn't deal with the pain. She took some drugs that really messed her up, she is currently fighting for her life at the hospital and soon we might have to pull the plug because I don't think she will come back. Funny enough Doctors can't find anything wrong with her, her vital organs are still functioning well she just doesn't want to wake up. My wife went as far as getting a spiritual healer who told us that my Daughter's spirit is currently trapped in a dark place, guarded by demons. She tried performing a ritual but it backfired, she dropped on the floor and died. The only thing left now is to just pull the plug, there's no hope she will never come back. I have been dedicated in finding the person who did this to her, I will lock that Son of a b** and throw away the key. I looked at her..

Me: I promise you sweetheart, I will find the

bastard that sold you the drugs and he is going to pay for what he did to you and those other poor kids

My wife couldn't stop crying and it pained me seeing her in that state, I also wiped the tear from my cheek..

She kissed her on her forehead..

Her: Goodbye baby I love you very much

I kissed her hand..

Me: Goodbye sweetheart.. I love you

The Dr turned off the machine a part of me just died there, it went with my Daughter..

–

NOMVELO

Grams: Velo

She stood up from the chair, she didn't look so good..

Me: Duchess

She made her way to me..

Her: I was worried.. I was very worried about you

Me: I'm fine

She tried to hug me but I stepped back..

Me: It won't be fixed today.. It's going to take a while for us to go back to how we used to be

Her: I swear to you I didn't know.. I didn't know what JJ did, I swear on my life

Me: Either I.. It's going to take a while

Her: I understand.. I'm just glad that you back

I nodded..

Me: I'll go and lie down a bit

Her: Would you like something to eat?

Me: No thank you

I walked out on her to the bedroom..

.

To be continued

No edits

53

NISO

That was close, that was very close I'll need to be very careful next time or else these addicts will get me locked up. I got home and Nomvelo was nowhere to be found, I had told her not to go anywhere until I came back. Gugu was washing the curtains she does a lot of cleaning lately think it's her way to keeping sane with everything that has happened, especially since my Grandmother passed on..

Me: Gugu!

She ignored Me..

Me: Have you.. Did Nomvelo say anything to you?

She paused a bit before answering me..

Her: She went back home

Me: Home? That's what she said?

Her: Yes

Me: Okay cool

I walked away..

Her: Niso!

I stopped..

Her: We need to talk

I turned and looked at Her..

Me: About?

Her: I want to talk to you about your Father

That was not expected..

Me: Why now?

Her: Maybe knowing the truth will help you deal with this anger issue that you have

Me: Are you also going to tell me where he is?
How I can contact him?

Her: It's not that easy Niso.. This is reality and not everything will go your way, you and your Father aren't going to circle around his dinner table and catch up on things

Me: Now you giving me an impression that Nazo and I we were never planned, we were a mistake is that what you trying to tell me?

Her: Niso let us sit down and talk about this

Me: I don't think there's anything that we have to talk about.. I think I know now

Her: You don't understand

Me: Don't understand what?

She didn't know what to say..

Her: You can go

She continued with hanging the curtains as I walked away..

–

NAZO

Her: One plate of ribs + chips and a coslow salad..

Me: Thank you

Her: And one plate of steak + chips and onion rings

Dawn: Thank you

Her: Anything else? Maybe a refill on your drinks?

Dawn: No thank you I think we fine for now

Her: I'll be at the counter should you need anything

Dawn: Thank you

She walked away..

I glanced down at my plate, the food was very appetizing but I didn't feel like eating..

(Silence)

Dawn: When I first started on my journey of being an exorcist, since everything I was dealing with was scary enough I thought that things would be better in my personal life until..

I listened to him...

Him: My family didn't understand how I could just drop out of college to follow a calling, they were not heathens but at the same time I had a bright future. I lost my family, my parents disowned me I was literally surviving with the little money that my Sister sent me every month, she was helping me out until I was able to get on my feet. Quite frankly she also thought that it was just a phase, she thought that I was going to snap out of it and get back to my senses but unfortunately I didn't. It wasn't a game, it was my destiny. I did odd jobs here and there to survive and I moved a bit far from home and I fell inlove with this gorgeous woman. She became my world, she was the

only family I had.. I loved her, she was my life

Me: Then what happened?

Him: I exorcized a demon that was very powerful and I got ahead of myself, I felt big not knowing that I was actually bringing it home with me. It followed me home, I should've known because the exorcism was very easy. It followed me home and it possessed my Fiancé, I thought an exorcism was going to help and it did but unfortunately the demon had already killed her. Every bone in her body was broken, she was.. I couldn't recognize her anymore, the demon had ruined her. The scratches on her face she died while in pain, she suffered and I couldn't save her

I could see how this was breaking her..

Me: How did you get over what happened?

Him: I drank myself to death everyday.. I hated God, I hated everything that had to do with my

calling I abandoned it but then.. There was this day when I decided to live again, One thing is that you cannot cry forever there's a time were you will just have to stop crying. I realized that the devil is going to break me, he is going to use every opportunity that he can get to break me so I can shift from my calling and when I do that more and more People would suffer. I made a personal choice then, that my Fiancé's death was not going to be in vain I made it a point that I will save as many souls as I can so they won't go through what I went through. Look at me now, I have a beautiful wife I have achieved a lot. One thing about God is that he restores, whatever you lose while serving him he restores it. Might not be the same but it will be worth it and much better than the previous one

I thought about his statement for a while..

Him: Your chips are getting cold

He gave me a lot to think about..

–

NOMVELO

I tried to sleep but I was only tossing and turning, a lot was going through my mind. It's a bit difficult to attain a peaceful sleep when your mind is infested by lethal thoughts. How did I get here? From the life that I used to live how did I get here?

It is not a joke when they say life is Unpredictable. I heard the gate opening and closing, probably my Grandmother's people. I really feel like clearing my mind with a 6 pack, just to be whisked away from reality for a while..

While I was laying on my bed and thinking about my now life I heard my Grandmother talking to someone in the kitchen, sounded like Niso. I swear my heart pounded at that moment, Niso has changed to someone that I don't know..

I got out of bed and made my way to the

kitchen, it was really him..

Grams: Angisho uyambona? She is safe! (You can see that she is safe)

I looked at him and he looked lost, deep in his eyes he looked lost and tired..

Me: Duchess can you please give us some privacy

Her: N..

Me: Please

She looked at him..

Her: uyeke ukurasa la kwami! (stop making noise in my house)

She clicked her tongue and walked away...

I looked at him, the table in the middle was helping incase he wanted to get physical..

Me: I decided to come back home

Him: Why?

Me: It's the only home I have now

Him: You can come live with me

Me: Yes I can but I don't want

Him: Why? When you were with Groovy did you perhaps meet someone that you wanna go back too?

Me: Sorry?

Him: Are you being fucked by someone else?

Me: Okay I think you should leave

I went and opened the door, he came and held my arm very tight then pulled me close to him. He was angry, he was very angry and breathing heavy..

Me: I.. I am not seeing anyone

Him: Don't lie to me because I will-

I closed my eyes, I didn't wanna imagine him being a monster..

Me: This is why we cannot live together.. I'm scared, I'm scared that you might kill me

Him: Now you saying I'm a monster?

Me: You hurting me

All that was left was for him to roar like a lion..

He let go of my arm..

Him: Come home with me.. I promise you that everything will be okay

Me: I can't

Him: Nomvelo please.. Don't, you making me very angry

Me: Just leave

Him: I am not go-

Voice: Konke k'hamba kahle? (is everything going well)

It was Danger, I didn't even hear the gate..

Me: Yes.. Niso was just leaving

He looked at me with those eyes full of rage

Niso: Guess I'll see you later

I nodded..

Danger shifted and then Niso made his way out..

Danger: Are you okay?

Me: I'm fine!

I went back to my bedroom and locked the door..

–

–
SNAZO

After our meal we made our way out of the restaurant, I appreciate Dawn sharing his pain with me. I really needed to hear that

As we were walking to the car I accidentally bumped into someone..

Her: Eish!!

Me: I'm really sorry

She looked at me and I looked at her, It was Busi and she was wearing my jacket..

Her: Nazo?

I did think that we were going to meet again.
She took off the jacket...

Her: I.. You know something told me to put on the jacket

She handed it to me..

Me: Thank you... How is everything now?

She shook her head with tears in her eyes..

Her: My.. Things between me and my Mom are now better, we..

She wiped her tears..

Me: That's good to hear

Her: I said that affirmation everyday, especially when she was at it and after about three weeks she started changing. Things started changing I

even got a job and saving up for school next year

Me: I am glad to hear that

She tried kneeling before me but I stopped her..

Her: I.. I owe you my life, if it wasn't for you I would've committed suicide

Me: Don't thank me.. Thank the God you served who saw your pain and sufferings, I'm just human I don't deserve you kneeling down before me

She nodded...

Her: Either way thank you.. You don't.. I mean because of you God really came through for me when I didn't think that he would

Me: Don't shift from him anymore

Her: I won't

Dawn cleared his throat..

Me: I have to go.. Stay blessed

Her: Thank you

I smiled and walked away..

Dawn: And that?

Me: Exorcise your demons and let me heal broken souls

He hit me a bit on my shoulder and we both laughed..

.

To be continued

No edits

54

NOMSA

Danger really got to me with what he said and since the taxi business was going down I have decided to sell all our taxis and I'm going to invest the money. JJ didn't leave much money

he only had R500 00, I'm going to use that money to start a concrete business, one that will generate more money for me and my kids.

I had told my sister everything that Danger said to me and she was more scared than I was..

Her: Sis I am not so sure about this

I looked at her, we were sitting outside and having drinks..

Me: Not sure about what?

Her: What Danger told you means that everything that JJ had was attained through his Sister's blood, such riches are dangerous

Me: That's why I'm selling everything and starting afresh

Her: Why don't you just give Nomvelo everything?

Me: And be left with what?.. Ntokozo I don't wanna move back home.. It's embarrassing.

Wena nje just leave everything to me, things will

be better when I have sold the taxis and started a new business

Her: If you say so

Me: What you need to do now is to get us more champagne

Her: Whatever you say

She stood up and walked to the house to get champagne. As I was sitting and minding my own business I saw a woman standing at the gate, she was wearing a very long white dress. She was just standing there holding on to the gate and starring directly at were I was sitting. I looked at her hoping that she would make her way in but she didn't, she stood there. I was starring back too until Ntokozo walked out of the house with a bottle of champagne..

Ntokozo: This is the last bottle that we have

I looked at her waving the bottle at me then I looked at the gate again and the woman wasn't

there anymore..

Ntokozo: I'll open

She put the bottle on top of the table and then sat down..

–

MANTWA

Being back at home was somehow a roller coaster of emotions, looking at that area where I had tied the rope from made me to be a bit angry with myself. If my little Brother didn't walk in just in time I wouldn't be here today, I wouldn't have survived. My Mother walked in..

Her: Are you settling in well?

I nodded..

Her: if you wanna change bedrooms..

Me: No it's fine.. I'm okay

Her: Are you going to go back to work?

Me: Ya I will.. Maybe tomorrow I first need to talk to my boss and see if I still have a job

Her: Everything is going to be okay.. Let me leave you to rest a bit

Me: Ma..

She looked at me..

Me: I'm sorry.. I'm sorry about..

Her: It's okay I'm just glad that you okay

Me: I'm glad too

She walked away and didn't close the door..

Her: Let's keep the door open for now

Me: I understand

Her: I'll check up on you

Me: Okay

She walked away..

—

SNAZO

I got home and I found Gugu crying, she was sitting on the couch that my Grandmother used to sit on it was practically her favorite couch because it gave her a more clear view of the TV..

She wiped her tears as I made my way in..

I sat on the arm rest of the couch..

Me: What's wrong?

Her: I don't know.. I don't know what got into my Son

I sighed in frustration..

Me: Niso?

Her: Today I wanted to talk to him and finally tell him the truth about his father but..

Me: But what?

Her: He didn't wanna hear

Me: That's a first

Speaking of the devil, I heard the kitchen door opening and closing. When he got to the doorway that separated the kitchen from the lounge he stopped and looked at us, then he made his way to the bedroom.

Me: Niso

He stopped..

Him: What?

He said that with his back facing me..

Me: Gugu wants to talk to you

Him: I don't want to talk to her

Me: I wasn't asking you

He turned and looked at me..

Him: You don't get to control me anymore Nazo, you not my Father!

I got up from the armrest of the couch but Gugu held my hand..

Me: Boy come and sit your ass down before I do something that I'm going to regret later

He walked in and then sat down, I sat down too..

Me: You going to sit there and here what your Mother is going to say if I hear even one word of disrespect coming from your mouth, you going to be wheeled out of this everyday in a wheelchair I'm going to break both your legs! Do I make myself clear?

He nodded..

Me: Good!

Gugu looked at me and smiled..

Her: Thank you

Me: I'll be right back

I already know the story about our father I just never told Niso, I wanted Gugu to do it

—

NOMVELO

After bathing I had hoped that Danger would be gone but he was outside cleaning the yard...

Him: Where are you going?

Me: Out

Him: Out where?

Me: Danger leave me alone

Him: Nomvelo we need to talk

Me: About what?

Him: You know about what

Me: I don't wanna talk about it trust me!

I opened the gate and walked out..

—

NISO

Gugu: I want to talk to you about your Father

Me: Ohw

Her: You were right.. To him you and Nazo were a mistake since he was a married man

Me: I'm not surprised

Her: He.. I was having an affair with my Boss, the white family that gave me a job as a maid I had an affair with the man of the house

Me: Where was his wife?

Her: He was a business man.. He did a lot of traveling and I was not entirely a live in maid he had got me a place to stay wasn't something fancy though

Me: So he would visit you?

Her: Yes.. When I fell pregnant with you he ended the affair, told me that he cannot do it anymore and that his family was more important to him than anything

Me: What were you thinking Gugu? A married man ontop of that he was white!

Her: Judge me all you want Niso it's okay but know he never wanted anything to do with you and Nazo, that's why I never told you about him I stood up and walked to my room..

Me: Yeah whatever if that makes you sleep better at night!

–

DETECTIVE ZWANE

I was in my office holding my Daughter's necklace when one of the lieutenants walked in..

Him: Sir

Me: Yes lieutenant please sit down

He sat down..

Him: Sir I think we might have a break through with the drug case

Me: Yes?

Him: Other the dead victim we have another one

that's willing to give us a name of the drug lord

I stood up..

Me: Are you serious?

Him: Yes sir

Me: Is the person here right now?

Him: Yes sir

Me: Please prepare an interrogation room for me

Him: Yes Sir

Me: How did you get the person?

Him: breaking in at some convenient store, I think he wanted money to buy more drugs

Me: That's true.. We can give the person full amunity if they give the name of the drug lord

Him: Yes Sir

He walked out..

Finally I might get the person who took my baby away from me..

.

To be continued

55

DETECTIVE ZWANE

I Went to the interrogation room and he was sitting at the table his hands were handcuffed because he seemed very agitated. I assume that it's been a while since he last had a fix, after all drugs eat out from your pocket at all times and when you find yourself broke, you resort into stealing and other things just so you can get the next fix. I unbuttoned my shirt sleeves and pulled them, this crack head is the only chance that I have at nailing the bastard. I pulled the chair opposite him and sat down, I put the file down and the tape recorder. Drug addicts are hard to crack they wouldn't just give

up their dealer just like that so I have to approach this situation with caution..

Me: I am Detective Zwane

I looked at him..

Me: Would you please state your name and surname for me

He kept quiet for a while..

Him: Andile.. Andile Mavundla

Me: How old are you?

Him: 22

Me: It says here you broke in at a convinient store, why would you do that?

Him: I was hungry

Me: You were hungry?

Him: Yes

Me: Andile we get a lot of addicts here and according to me I can see that you have the

signs and symptoms. Dry cracked lips, you very agitated, you keep on scratching yourself, paranoia and a lot of other things. Seems to me like the drug you on is very dangerous you even lucky to still be alive

He kept quiet. Was I on the right track? I think I was because he hasn't asked for his lawyer as yet and he seems pretty smart

I took the tape recorder and turned it off, I have one shot at this and I'm going to use it right..

Me: Okay Andile the judge won't be lenient on you, you seem smart. You don't look like you from a struggling background so your excuse of "I was hungry" it won't work, you looking at what 5-10 years? And trust me jail is not that easy. What you see on TV is real

He didn't know what to say..

Me: I can only help you if you help me.. All I want is a name, name of your dealer. I know

that you might be scared and think he will come for you but I promise you that he won't hurt you and we'll make sure of that. I will personally make sure that your case goes away if you could do this for us, we have been trying to tail this guy for a while now

Him: Why should I believe you? How do I know that you won't still send me to jail?

Me: have to work with trust here, but I assure you that I will do right by you. I will even make sure that you go to rehab

A few seconds passed with him still silent...

Me: You way too young to have a criminal record

Him: Why do you want the name of my dealer?

Me: Because.. I lost my Daughter because of him, she couldn't beat the addiction and in turn it took her to the grave.. Please

Him: You promise that you will get me out of this mess?

Me: I promise

Him: He's n.. He's name is Niso we usually met at the mall or in town not really about were he lives but I'm suspecting the hood.. Could be this one or another one

Me: Niso?

Him: Yes I only know the name

My mind dated back to the lieutenant he told me that he spoke to Ethan's friend at the mall where Ethan died, if my mind serves me correctly he said he's name was Niso. He took his details. If it's really him I will talk to the Captain and we going to have to protect Andile so that he can testify against him, this is going to be a serious trial we need to put this bastard away for a long time

—

SNAZO

I am hoping that the talk between Niso and Gugu went well because I couldn't check up on them after that, Shine called me and told me that we have a client somewhere in the fancy houses of Johannesburg. I was taken by the neighborhood and the houses when we drove there, how can someone who lives here want us to service his house. It just didn't make sense, they usually get serious professionals People who are experts at this

Shine whistled as he admired the house, it was a very nice house and it got my attention too...

Me: Shine how did you get this?

Shine: Eyy nami ang'keni kahle mara nje eish it's complicated nyana (I don't know but it's a bit complicated)

We were taken to the back of the house were we sat down with the owner and discussed

what we supposed to do over drinks. Seems like there's hope for our business..

—

NOMVELO

I came back home after I had a few drinks at Gazibo, I wasn't drunk just slightly tipsy. I walked in and Danger was still around, this is the same person I've been trying to avoid...

I went and checked my Grandmother's room she wasn't around..

Me: Where is my Grandmother?

Him: She went to church.. Midweek service

Me: Aren't you done? What are you still doing here?

Him: Because we need to talk

Me: I thought we talked

Him: Seems like there's still some things that

we need to talk about that you should make peace with

Me: I don't need to make peace with anything because the person who owes me answers is not here! He is dead! And you just let everything be, you knew he murdered my Mother and you allowed him to just raise me like nothing happened!

Him: I was in jail! I went to jail for his sins. It's kind of difficult when your wife dies at your house like that, the husband always becomes the first suspect and on my side I couldn't prove my innocence, JJ had already corrupted the law to his favour and I didn't have a leg to stand on. Jail is difficult Nomvelo, it's not a walk in the park. You piss off certain people they make you pay, when you still new you will feel the heat! You sleep with one eye open and a toothbrush under your pillow, it's always fights and a battle for superiority. I was in that position and I was

innocent, innocent and still bleeding inside for the death of my wife now I could've killed myself but I didn't! I had to hold on so that I could be out and make sure that JJ doesn't come for you too. I had nothing Nomvelo, I only had to work with faith! Praying everyday that I don't get a harsh sentence so I could come back for you and you know what? Even the hardest chains break when you have faith. Yes I didn't come back when you were young but I did come back, when I got back life got more harder for me. I couldn't get hired anywhere who wanted to hire an ex con? A murderer? JJ played his cards right and he was the only one who gave me a job. He wanted to keep me close so that he can know my every move, he wanted to protect you from knowing the truth and I did keep quiet. Wanna know why? Because the life he gave you seemed better than the one I could've given you, he was taking you to school doing everything for you that I

wanted you to have. I didn't wanna confuse you and I thought protecting you from the truth was the best way but.. No child deserves what your Uncle put you through, he kept your sanity by brainwashing you.

It was hard to process what he was saying, he spoke from his heart because I saw a tear falling down from him..

Him: I might not have been the best Father but I was always there, I protected you even when you didn't realize and I will continue doing so because that's my job. I promised your Mother that I would do so..

He wiped the tears from his face as I sat down..

(Silence)

Me: How was she like?

He looked at me..

Me: My Mother.. How was she like? My Unc.. JJ

always told me about her but I wanna hear from you because you know her better

Him: I have some old pictures back at my place that I can show to you

Me: Exactly where do you live?

Him: I was renting at some house but now.. I have my own shack by that side were there's shacks.. I don't think you know it

Me: I would like to see the place

Him: We can go now so that you will know were to find me if you need me

Me: Okay.. I'd like very much

–

NISO

I got a call from a client who asked to meet up with me, wasn't at the mall it was at some open field were local kids usually play soccer

I looked at the time again and the client was 5min late, I didn't take my car. I actually walked here from home it's not far. I looked at the time again, I hate it when they do this.

As I was about to walk going back home a police car made it's way to me, I turned around and another one came behind me. I looked around and all in all it was 3 of them, there's no way I was going to get off easy even if I run they will open fire..

Me: Shit!!!

The door opened and one of them walked out with his gun..

Him: get down on your knees, hands where I can see them

Another officer yelled to him..

Officer: Sir you can't do that he might be armed
He didn't listen, he was determined to get to

me..

Him: Down on your knees

I got down on my knees and put my hands on my head..

He got to me and started handcuffing me, he let me stand up and searched me. He found my pocket knife and a stack of the drugs in my pocket..

He turned me around and took out his phone, he showed me a wallpaper of some girl..

Him: I want you to look at her because you stole her from me you bastard! And I'm going to make you pay!!

He pushed me and started reading me my rights, I was fucken screwed!

.

To be continued

No edits

56

NISO

I was being watched at the station while I made my phone call, I think that I might've done more damage than I anticipated and pissed off a few people in the process. People who are clearly on the side of the law.

I started by calling Nazo but he didn't pick up, I then called Gugu..

Gugu: Hello

Me: Gugu it's me

Her: Niso?

Me: Ya.. Listen I don't have much time

Her: You don't have much time what's happening?

Me: I got arrested

Her: You got what?

Me: I need you to get Nazo to come and see me before they move me

Her: Niso I don't understand.. What happened? What did you do?

The officer signaled that time was up, that wasn't even a minute..

Me: Get Nazo to come see me at the police station

Her: You arr.. You know what I'm coming

Me: Gugu just get Nazo to see me! Stop being stubborn about this!

The officer took the phone from me..

Him: Asambe sboshwa! (let's go prisoner)

—

NOMVELO

It was a bunch of shacks all around, Danger's shack was a bit small. It was only the kitchen

and the bedroom if that's how I may put it.
There was a curtain dividing the kitchen and the
bedroom. I sat on the chair and looked around,
it was very neat. He really keeps this place
looking good..

Him: It's not fancy but... This is my home

Me: I understand

Him: I doubt I'll stay here for long, Someone is
going to get me a job in Johannesburg as an
Uber driver

Me: That's very good

Him: It pays very well too so I've heard

Me: That's very good

Him: Would you like something to drink?

Me: No thanks I'm fine

Him: I know how difficult this life is for you, but I
believe that everything happens for a reason,
you can still make it in life. Your future wasn't

tied to JJ

Me: Ya maybe

Him: What are your plans? Do you want to go back to school?

Me: Yes maybe next year but I would like to do a different course one that will get me a job.. Maybe nursing or something like that

Him: That's good.. Nursing is good you will get a job and I'm sure by then I would've gotten the job and I'll help you with your fees

Me: That would be great.. Thank you

Him: So what are you going to do this year?

Me: Maybe get a job and help my Grandmother out here and there.. Plus I need a new phone

Him: What happened to your old phone?

Me: Long story

Him: Well this is not much but..

He took out his phone..

Him: It's a mobicel trendy.. You can use it until you get a new phone

He took out his sim card and gave it to me

Me: Thank you

Him: Wanna go get something to eat?

Me: Yes

I stood up..

Him: We can get chips and fish then go back to your Grandmother's place

He went and got the album..

Him: You can have this too

Me: Thank you.. You still have a lot to tell me about her

Him: There's a lot to tell but we'll get there

Me: I hope so

–

SNAZO

Something didn't feel right, I had some feeling more like the fear of the unknown clouding my heart. My Grandmother would refer to this feeling as "Uvalo"..

We were still having drinks with Marcus, the owner of the house and he was about to tell us how he got our contacts..

Marcus: I saw your add on Gumtree and I thought to myself that let me try these guys out. I was initially going to hire some guys from some company but... They very expensive and I am a person who likes to save

Shine: How much did they charge you?

Marcus: A lot trust me.. I don't know why they were expensive I mean it's just the garage one garage and I hope you guys won't charge me a lot too

Shine: What do you want us to do?

Him: Put ceiling.. How much will you charge?

Shine looked at me..

Shine: Can we discuss it?

Marcus: Yes of course

Shine stood up and walked away.. I followed him

Shine: And then wathula? (why were you quiet)

Me: Eish I'm not feeling well

Shine: Smoko? (what's the problem)

Me: Ang'cavi (I don't know)

We leaned against the car..

Shine: Ucabanga ukuthi simbize malini? (how much do you think we should charge him)

Me: The garage is big so it's going to take up most of our time worse he wants it done in 3 days

Shine: 3k?

Me: Ya but will first ask him how much he is willing to offer

I heard my phone ringing inside the car, I unlock and got it. It was Gugu..

Me: Gugu?

Her: Nazo kunini ngikufonela? (I've been calling you)

Me: I left my phone in the car.. Is everything okay?

Her: No.. Niso called me uthi he got arrested

Me: He got what?

Her: uthi he wants to see you before they move him

I lowered the phone..

Me: Dammit!!

Gugu: Snazo usesekhona? (are you still there)

Me: Ya.. I'll go to the police station right now

Gugu: please pass by the house and get me

Me: Albright.. I'm on my way

Shine: Yini? (what's wrong)

Me: Niso fucked up and got arrested

Shine: Ini? (what)

Me: Let's seal the deal with Marcus and then go down to the police station

Shine: uNiso edanyanya ya neh kuyamangaza (Niso in jail that's shocking)

–

NOMSA

I was moving JJ's things from the bedroom to the Garage, as I was nicely packing the boxes in the garage I felt some type of way. I felt like someone was standing behind me, the hairs at the back of my neck stood up. I slowly turned

around and there was no one standing behind me, I turned back to continue with what I was doing and the woman that I saw at the gate was standing right in front of me. She put her hand on my chest and I was sent flying across the room, I hit the wall and fell..

Voice: Nomsa!!.. Nomsa wake up!!

I opened my eyes and gasped for air, it was my Sister waking me up. I must've had too much champagne that I passed out on the couch..

Ntokozo: It was just a dream Sisi..

It didn't feel like a dream though, it felt very real..

–

NAZO

I had to leave Shine behind to finalize the deal since Marcus had a lot to say, I went and fetched Gugu then we made our way to the police station. Gugu was very worried she even

brought a Tupperware along, prepared something to eat for him..

We got to the reception and went to enquire there..

Me: Good afternoon

The officer looked at us..

Me: We here to see me my Brother Niso Buthelezi, I believe he got arrested a few hours ago

He checked on some book for a while and then came back to us..

Him: Okay wait here I'm coming

He disappeared for a while leaving us all anxious, He returned with the most hardcore Detective. Detective Zwane..

Zwane: Look what the cat dragged in.. Nazo Buthelezi, I should've known

Me: I believe that you have my little Brother here?

Him: Yes.. The little drug dealer

Gugu: Wait.. What?

Him: He was arrested for dealing drugs

Gugu: I don't know who you talking about but my Son is not dealing drugs okay?

Him: Clearly you don't know him that well.. He robbed a lot of parents their children, he deserves to rot in hell and I'll make sure that he does!

Gugu: Watch it sir! Don't talk about my Son like that

Me: Can I see him?

Zwane: Yes.. This way

I looked at Gugu..

Me: Maybe I should go in alone

She went and sat down as I followed Detective Zwane, he led me to the holding cell..

Zwane: 5min..

He then walked away, Niso came closer..

Him: Thank you for coming

Me: Zwane is going to crucify you, he got me locked up a few times I know him

Him: That's why I asked you to come, I want you to get me a good lawyer. I have money in the bank I'm sure it can cover legal costs if the case doesn't drag. I have some documents in the drawer you can check them out there's a pin there

Me: What the fuck did you get yourself into?

Him: Nazo please this is no time to be pissed at the situation.. I doubt I'll even get bail, he will make sure I don't get bail

Me: Zwane is hardcore, I'll try and get you a good lawyer just.. Just stay alive in there I will check if my crew is still inside they will protect

you

He nodded..

Him: Don't worry about me I'll be fine

Me: Jail is not a walk in the park

I looked around..

Him: And please do me one last favour

Me: What's that?

Him: Chek up on Nomvelo for me.. She's too fragile this might set her back

Me: Niso..

Him: Please.. I don't want the hood to swallow her

Me: Yeah fine I'll check up on her every now and then

Him: Thank you

.

To be continued

No edits

57

–

NOMVELO

I was having a good time with my Grandmother and Danger, they were telling me stories about my Mom, just dating back to the stories of the past. Experiencing such a moment proved to me that money is not everything. There's moments that money cannot buy and this is one of them, the love and the warmth from those who care about you. We heard a knock at the door, we all looked at each other..

Me: I'll get it

I stood up and went to open. We had just finished eating the chips, bread and Russians. I really found the meal delicious

I opened the door and it was Nazo, what is he doing here?

Me: Nazo?

He looked at me..

Him: May I?

Me: Uhm yes.. Please come in

He made his way in. He took off his cap, can't really separate him from caps..

Grams: Velo.. Ubani? (who is it)

Me: It's Nazo

Him: Sorry to just show up late but I have something to tell you.. It's about Niso

Me: What about Niso??

Him: He..

My Grandmother showed up..

Grams: Nazo

Nazo: MaNgcobo

Grams: uyaphila kodwa? (are you well)

Nazo: Ngiyaphila (I am well)

Me: He's here to tell me something about Niso

I looked at him..

Him: Niso is.. He got arrested earlier today

Me: He did what?

Grams: What happened? Why did he get arrested?

Nazo: He was.. He was dealing drugs

Grams: He was what?? Niso and drugs?

Me: I don't understand.. How? I mean..

Nazo: It did come as a shock

Danger walked in..

Danger: Is everything okay?

Grams: No.. Umfana kaButhelezi uboshiwe

(Niso got arrested)

Danger: Velo's boyfriend?

Grams: Ya

Danger: What happened?

Grams: Bathi he was dealing drugs

Danger: Errr

Nazo: I just thought I should let you know so that you don't get worried when you don't see him

Grams: Thank you for letting us know

Nazo: I think I should go

He headed straight to the door and walked out..

I couldn't believe what I heard, Niso was dealing drugs? How stupid can he be?

—

NISO

I was transported to prison the following day after being held for the whole night in the holding cell. Zwane is on to me so bad that he won't let me get bail, he wants me to rot in prison. I found the things that they do before you go in very degrading, having to be checked if you don't have any weapons on you or if you don't have any drugs with you. Squatting almost naked and coughing twice, everything about prison was just sickening..

The cells looked crowded, The guard walked me down the corridor to my cell. Cell 26..

He opened and I walked in, everyone looked at me. It was a lot of guys in here, how did prisons get soo crowded now or it's just this one?

Guard: Nidlale kahle bafana (play well boys)

I didn't know which bed was mine, I looked around and the place was very untidy. I stood there not knowing what to do or were to go, was

I scared? Yes I was these are real hardcore criminals..

They started whistling, made inappropriate comments they did make me feel like I was fresh meat indeed. In the mist of my being verbally attacked I heard a voice calling out at the back..

Voice: Yey nina voetsek! Thul'umsindo
(Everyone keep quiet)

They kept quiet..

He made his way through and came to me, he did look somewhat scary. He stood a bit far from me and looked at me, from head - to- toe. He walked up much closer, I swallowed..

Him: Niso? Niso Buthelezi?

I nodded..

Him: Khululeka usekhaya la! (Feel free this is home)

I was confused..

He turned and looked at everyone..

Him: Eyakibo Nazo! (He is Nazo's Brother)

They made comments. He turned and looked at me..

Him: Uyabona if le yakini azange ing'bhelele ngabe si ringa I story esi hlukile manje (If your Brother didn't call, we would be talking something different right now)

He put his arm around my shoulders..

Him: Khululeka mchana angeke sikwenze nex, into ek'mele uz'khathaze ngayo yilaba abangekho la (Relax we won't do anything to you, you just need to worry about the other inmates that are not in this cell)

We got to my bed and I put the blanket ontop of the bed..

Him: Sinane TV encane la, sibukela ibhola (We

have a small TV were we watch soccer)

I sat on my bed and he did too..

Him: Ok'mele ukuthi ukwazi ngathi ama26
wukuthi siyancedana la (what you need to know
about us here is that we help each other)

Me: Ngani? (with what)

Him: Aii sizok'sikela Unga Worry (we will let you
know)

He pat me on my shoulder..

Him: ubaluleke Kakhulu kithi (You very
important to us)

I was fucked..

–

NAZO

I looked at my number "26" tattoo on my wrist
that I always cover with my wrist rubber band or
my watch at times, it's not really big and it

doesn't stand out. I never had it removed because I thought that I was going to fuck up and go back inside, cell number 26 we were more than just cell mates. We were a family..

I had contacted Mageba still can't believe he has a cellphone, that guy hustles a lot while behind bars. Mageba is doing life in prison, he has been very problematic throughout his teen years and most of his adult life. Prison is home for him, he almost rules it. I know that he will keep Niso safe only if Niso is in his cell. Gugu disturbed me when she walked into the kitchen, I moved my wrist band to cover the tattoo. I wanna remove it but I am uncertain, I am uncertain about my current life..

Gugu: Morning

Me: Morning

She looked like she didn't get enough sleep..

Me: Did you get enough sleep last night?

Her: No.. I couldn't sleep knowing that Niso is in there, do you know how dangerous it is in there?

Me: I know.. I was once there remember?

Her: Ya.. Sorry

She sat down..

Me: I'll make you some cup of tea.. Niso is going to be fine in there, I know a few people who are like family to me. They will look after him

(Silence)

Her: Where did I go wrong? Where did I fail him?

Me: Don't blame yourself I think the person who needs to be blamed is me, I wasn't a good role model

Her: You were trying to do what you thought was best to provide for him and Ma

Me: And in the process I forgot that he was watching, Niso he.. He took after me, he

followed right in my footsteps

Her: You never sold drugs.. I don't understand he was going to school I mean he was going to graduate in a few months time and he had to mess up his life just like that?

Me: We just going to have to get him a good lawyer, one that will get him 15 years max

Her: Can he get that?

Me: I'm hoping.. The lawyer is somewhat harsh though on drugs, rape, and murder to name a few but he is a first time offender and the lawyer can use me as a bad role model and hope that the judge will be lenient

She was drained.. I have never seen her this drained..

Me: Hey.. I'm going to get him out I promise

Her: In the process of you trying to get him out don't lose yourself because I can't lose you too

Me: I'll be fine

Her: Is this what Ma had to deal with?

Me: Meaning?

Her: You and Niso? She had to deal with you guys like this?

Me: Pretty much

Her: I wish I was here more often

Me: We going to get through this, we going to make it

I hope we do make it..

—

NOMVELO

Danger was driving me to my Uncle's place to get the rest of my things especially important documents so that I can start looking for a job. Danger had borrowed the car from a friend who is a mechanic, was nothing fancy it even made

a lot of noise as he was driving.. I was lost deep in my thoughts, I was thinking about Niso. I won't survive losing him, I've been through a lot lately my heart won't be able to survive it..

Danger: Are you okay?

I sighed..

Me: Was thinking about Niso

Him: You and him really have something serious going on?

Me: You can say that.. I just hope we survive this jail situation they won't take it lightly

Him: Faith kiddo.. I never thought that I was going to make it but I did

Me: Do you believe in God?

Him: Why?

Me: You talk about God a lot

Him: Your Mom did

Me: Ohw

Him: Do you believe?

I shrugged my shoulders..

Me: I don't know.. Church wasn't a big thing at JJ's place

Him: Well all that is going to change now, your Grandmother is a big believer

Me: Ya it seems like that

We finally arrived at the house and we parked at the driveway, we got out and went to the intercom..

Danger pressed, Someone else attended to us.

I'm guessing it was Nomsa's sister or Thuli..

She opened the gate and we made our way in, soo many memories are wondering around here.

Memories that I didn't want to visit again.

Nomsa was the one who opened the door for us..

Her: Wow I can't believe my eyes

Me: I'm here for my things

Her: How are you Nomvelo? I'm well too..

Please come in

We made our way in..

Her: Father and Daughter.. I never thought I would see this day

Me: I'll go get my things

Danger: Should I come with you?

Nomsa laughed..

Me: Naa I'm good.. She's harmless

Danger: I'll be in the car

I wait to what I once considered my room to get my things..

Nomsa: Jonathan has been trying to get a hold of you?

I didn't even notice that she was following me..

Me: He can give the money to you.. I don't want it

Her: It doesn't have to be like this Velo you can come back home

Me: No thank you.. I don't wanna indulge in riches that my Mother paid the price for

Her: You know you very ungrateful! After everything that JJ did for you? I hope you will be happy in the hood! Working an ordinary job and living an ordinary life

Me: At least I'll be living that life with a clean conscience, can't say the same for you

.

To be continued

58

NOMVELO

ONE YEAR LATER

My biggest plan for this year was that I was going to go back to school, doesn't necessarily mean that I was going to do the same course I just wanted something that was going to afford me a stable job after graduating. Those were my plans but unfortunately I got so much comfortable in my job that plans of going back to school seemed far fetched. I previously worked at clicks as a sales consultant and I would play more on the makeup section, one day when I was handling my hustle some woman got impressed at how I knew much about make up that we alked a great deal, she realized that I knew a lot about the world of fashion too so she told me that she has a shop that sells cosmetics and would like it very much if I came on board. The offer was very generous I accepted and she hired me. I make a reasonable salary every month, and I am very content with my new job. As much as I didn't want to visit my old life but my best friend

Amandla couldn't lay off on me, she tried her very outmost best to always keep in contact with me. I got so tired of pushing her away and we continued with our friendship. She's currently doing her last year and very much worried about getting a job next year, at least the college helps with getting you a job when you done but provided that you were a good student throughout. I can say that I am a bit happy with my life, I have a job and I can afford to provide for me and my Grandmother. Danger did get the job as an Uber driver, he is no longer staying at the shack he has moved in with us he is living in the room outside and he is also helping a lot financially..

When it comes to Niso I really don't know what to say, his trial took longer than anticipated and he was given 25 years without the possibility of parole. I was there throughout his whole trial but surprisingly after he was sentenced and I

tried to visit him he refused to see me, I go there once a week to see him and each time he has refused to see me. I don't know why he does that to me, I don't know why he doesn't want to see me..

Today I had knocked off early as usual and I had gone to visit him, I always go with Danger. I was at the waiting area as always and the guard came back alone, please don't tell me that he has refused again..

Guard: Sorry but he is refusing to see you

I exhaled. I really am trying to be there for him, I'm trying to save our already struggling relationship but.. I don't know why he's doing this, I don't know why he's refusing to see me. I stood up and looked at Danger..

Me: Let's go

He stood up and we went.. I was hurt, there's nothing more hurtful than holding on to a

relationship that you not even sure of anymore...

–

NAZO

Things have been going well with me. our business really took off that we had to hire one more person since I had other commitments and couldn't engage myself in it full time. It's now a company that gave birth to plumbing, we have registered it Shine and I we the owners. He is fully committed to it making sure that everything runs smoothly because I'm hardly around. With regards to me and my gift in two days time I will be at Mpumalanga preaching, Mpumalanga is the province were ill be residing at soon. I thought that my church was going to be based in Gauteng, but God had other plans for me. I have been helping Dawn with exorcisms, I have been helping out in my business with Shine and helping out were my gift takes me. It's not easy I should say, my life

has never been this busy. With my business doing well we have decided to expand, I want us to be based also in Mpumalanga but the money that I'm going to make there is no entirely going to be mine. The business operating in Mpumalanga the money generated from there is going to help God's People. There more my business grows the more and more I can help God's people accordingly as how I'll be instructed from high above. Unfortunately I won't be financially benefiting from my church but helping others..

Dawn and I had just got back from our trip. We were at Kzn for the whole month performing exorcisms, we have just landed at OR Tambo Airport I was glad to be back at home. We were still at the airport having lunch while waiting for the driver to come pick us up. I was on my laptop, my sermon is in two days and I was nervous, it'll be my first time preaching in front

of a church..

Dawn: You nervous?

I looked at him, then went back to my laptop..

Me: A bit..

(Silence)

Me: Is the GOAT going to be there?

Him: No the GOAT is in New Zealand

Me: That's good

Him: Good that he is New Zealand or good that he won't be attending your Sermon?

Me: Both

He chuckled..

Him: Zaine is not that scary

Me: He doesn't scare me just that I've watched his videos online and I don't think my first sermon is going to impress him, he is the GOAT after all

Him: He wasn't this good when he first started too

Me: Yeah whatever

(Silence)

Him: Have you talked to her?

Me: No

Him: When are-

Me: It's not that easy.. How do I walk up to my Brother's girlfriend and say "You supposed to my wife, we need to get married first before I can start my own church in MP" God is perfect in all ways but I am still sceptical with Nomvelo being my wife

Him: I thought you had a vision where it was made clear that she is your wife..

Before I could even move to Mpumalanga and start my own church there, it was made very clear to me in a vision that Nomvelo is

supposed to be my wife. She was never intended for Niso, she was always intended for me. She is my rib and I am very much in denial with the whole situation.. It can't be, Nomvelo and Niso they have something serious going on I can't do that to him. The vision has to be wrong, for the first time heaven has to be wrong...

Dawn: I'll be right back.. I have to check up on my wife

Dawn's wife is pregnant with their very first child, leaving was even a challenge for him. He didn't wanna leave her alone. I'm hoping for such too, a family, a wife but definitely it can't be Nomvelo. Worse I don't even see her that way..

—

NOMSA

Life has been very tough my R500 000 that I

invested in starting a new business didn't work out, it turned out to be fraud. My taxis that I sold only made R200 000, that's not even enough. 5 taxis amounting to R200 000? This was pure bad luck. I had tried selling them to some dealerships but none budged that I was forced to sell them to some taxi owner who only offered me 200k, that was mockery at it's best. The money was not enough considering water&electricity, I don't wanna mention Thuli's fees. She failed and repeating isn't cheap, it's eating out of my pocket. I was stressed, I was very stressed. I had no choice but to consider selling the house, the real estate agent put R800 000 to it and I'm only going to get R500 000 from it. Life was tough, life was extremely tough. We have to be out in the next few weeks, I don't even know where I'm going to go. My Mother's house is definitely not an option..

—

MANTWA

Dr Patel and I went from being close friends to ending up in a relationship, we now engaged to be married and I'm happy with him. For the first time in my years of dating I have a man who loves me, who is very much obsessed with me and I don't mean that in a psycho way. He was on leave and we were in Durban visiting his family, since we planning on getting married in a few months time I have to learn a lot about his culture and he has to learn about mine. At first I was scared that it wasn't going to workout, I mean we come from different worlds but to my surprise his family gave me a very warm welcome. It has always been him, his mother and his sister, his Father passed on when he was in varsity. I was happy with him, he is very sweet, loving, and very caring. It seems as if like if I had lasted with Nazo then I was going to meet Emmanuel Patel. God works

in mysterious ways indeed..

–

NISO

Mageba was very furious, he was pacing up and down in the cell. It was just me and him, with a few other guys who didn't have visitors, well I has a visitor but I refused to see her. I have been refusing to see her now for a while..

25 years is a long time for her to wait for me, she has to move on. Nazo told me that she has a job and that her life is starting to make sense, I don't wanna confuse her I want her to be happy with someone else. Maybe not now but someday she would want to married with kids and definitely I won't be able to give her that when I'm locked up in here, having her come here to see me won't make her move on. She has been through a lot and I want her to move on..

Mageba: Yazi Entlek nje lendaba angiyitholisisi kahle (I don't understand this matter very well)

There's a lot of things that one requires to do in prison for protection, Mageba knowing didn't mean that he was going to offer me free protection especially when he had that I was dealing drugs when I was outside. The business had to go on, we had to operate it from the inside and everything was going well until our rivals knew about what we were doing and they stole our drugs. I know very well that if I can be found they going to add to my sentence but what can I do? Jail is not easy if I don't get protection I won't make it..

Me: Obviously we have a rat in our cell

Mageba: A rat? Usho ukuthi kukhona la osithengisayo? (Are you saying that someone here is selling us out)

I shrugged my shoulders..

He hit the bars with his hand..

Him: Ngimthole nje!! (If I find him)

I laid back on my bed and got her picture under my pillow, I looked at it for a while..

It hurt, it hurt a lot. I love Nomvelo with all my heart but since things aren't really looking up for me I have to let her go..

.

To be continued

GOAT= GREATEST OF ALL TIME

59

DAWN

I haven't been around home that much was busy doing exorcisms here and there, sometimes a bit far away from home that my wife had to go through most of the pregnancy alone. I did feel bad I wanted to be here for at all times, wanted to go with her for her Dr's visits

and attend pregnancy classes with her but unfortunately what I do takes me away from home most of the time. It was very quiet when I got in, Now that she's very close to her due date I don't like it when she's alone. My Mom was supposed to be here with her..

Me: Mom???.. Sway??

I checked the living room first before heading upstairs, it was also quiet in there. When I walked upstairs to the bedroom, she was laying on the bed with her eyes closed and her headsets on. Sway has this habit of not wanting to wear an underwear, I hope she doesn't go out in public without wearing one. She had her knees up and she was wearing one of her short dresses. I dropped my bag on the floor hoping it would wake her up but it didn't, so I made my way to her and kissed her..

Her: Hey..

Me: Hey

Her: I didn't hear you come in

Me: I know.. If I was a serial killer you would be in trouble

Her: I'm glad you not one

Me: Still don't like wearing an underwear?

Her: No.. I told you that it makes my cookie very hot

I chuckled..

Me: That's a first.. Did you talk to your Gynae about it?

Her: No it's not like I'm bothering anyone

Me: Do you go out in public not wearing one?

Her: I always wear one.. How was Kzn?

Me: It was okay

Her: You didn't bring home any unexpected visitors right?

Me: The house is protected.. You good

I put my hands on her tummy..

Me: And how are we doing over here?

Her: We doing okay

Me: What did the Dr say?

Her: That she's big

Me: Ya you do look bigger than the last time I saw you.. Did mom come?

Her: Yes and she left yesterday

Me: She left you all alone?

Her: Ya she had to attend something important back at home

Me: At least I won't be doing exorcisms up until you give birth

Her: Really?

Me: Yes but in two days time I'll be going to Mpumalanga, it's Snazo's first Sermon

Her: That's nice

Me: It is..I have a good feeling about him, he's going to go far

Her: Are you going alone?

Me: Yes sinc-

My phone rang, I took it out and it was Zaine..

Me: Let me take this.. It's Zaine

I stood up and walked to the balcony to answer the call..

Me: "076" In New Zealand?

Him: I am back.. Landed last night

Me: Thought you were coming back next week

Him: Family emergency

Me: Is everything okay?

Him: Yeah nothing I can't handle but listen.. I wanna attend his sermon, what's his name again?

Me: Snazo.. And he was praying that you don't come

Him: Why?

Me: He referred to you as a GOAT

Him: Such a title but I am hardly one, that belongs to Ayo

Me: Either way..

Him: You will tell me the venue.. Somehow I have a good feeling about this kid, was watching the last exorcism you did with him

Me: Ya there's just something about him

Sway: Honey??

Me: I have to go

Him: Don't forget to give me the name of the the venue and the time

Me: I'll do that

Him: Stay blessed

Me: Stay clean from possession

He chuckled..

Him: Bye

I hung up..

—

SNAZO

All I wanted to do was to just get home, bath and then sleep. I was very tired and I felt a bit disoriented, I guess flying is just not for me..

When I made my way in I heard voices coming from the living room, I was shocked to see Nomvelo with Gugu all laughing and talking nice..

Gugu: Haaaa! You back

Put my bag on the dinning table, Gugu stood up and came to give me a hug..

Her: I'm so glad you back I've missed you

My eyes were fixed on Nomvelo, she ran hers around the room..

Gugu: How was Kzn??

Me: It was okay

Gugu: You have to tell me all about it

Me: I will but I wanna rest first

Gugu: Okay you can go and rest

Nomvelo stood up..

Nomvelo: I should probably go

Gugu: Thank you for stopping by

She was wearing a black dress with black stalkings and heels, the dress looked good on her slim body. She greeted me as she passed through, I turned and looked at her as she walked out of the room. She wasn't struggling with those heels and they gave her a sexy walk. Gugu hit me on the shoulder to get my attention..

Her: Hau tell me a bit about Kzn, and how was flying for the first time? I am very curious

Me: What was that all about?

Her: What?

Me: You and Nomvelo? Are you guys friends now?

Her: Ohh not entirely, she passes here everyday to greet when she knocks off

Me: Really?

Her: Ya.. I think I misjudged her

Me: In what way?

Her: Niso was convicted last year and every week she goes to see him even though he refuses to see her, she hasn't moved on I think she truly loves him.. Which girl would stay that committed to someone that she will only see after 25 years

Me: I guess so but please don't get too attached,

see what happened with Mantwa

Her: I have learned my lesson

Me: Let me go and rest a little.. I'll tell you everything later when I wake up

Her: Alright go and rest

I took my bag and I searched for my keys then I went to the door, when I opened Nomvelo and I bumped into each other. I think she was also trying to open and somehow when I opened the door handle pulled her in. I had my hand on the side of her arm was preventing her from falling..

After a few seconds of awkwardness I lowered my hand..

Me: Sorry I..

Her: No it was my mistake.. I'm sorry

I stepped aside so that she could make her way in..

Her: I forgot my bag

I then walked out to my room..

–

NISO

When we were going outside one of the cell mates from the 28s accidentally bumped into me. I got very irritated.. I whistled to him

Me: Ekse

He stopped and turned around..

Me: Ung'nyathelile (You stepped on my shoe)

Him: Bekuyi mistake

Me: Still I want that "Sorry"

He shook his head and walked away..

Mageba: Just let it go

I followed him..

Me: Eita bra

I put my hand on his shoulder and forced him to

turn around..

Me: Ithi sorry joe (Say sorry)

Mageba: Eyy iyeke maan (Let it go)

He looked at my sneakers and then spat on them..

Him: Hade mfwethu (Sorry)

I glanced down at my sneakers..

Me: Ku sharp

I turned around and then turned back with a punch right across his face, we got into it..

The fight didn't last long, Mageba separated us and now we had attracted attention to us.

Mageb: Yini inkinga yakho? (What's your problem)

The dude spat out blood..

Him: Sizohlanga futhi poi (We will meet again)

He walked away, Mageba pushed me..

Mageba: Uyahlanya? (Are you crazy)

I clicked my tongue and walked back inside..

Mageba: Yewena mfana kaButhelezi!!!

I ignored him and went back to the cell, I got Nomvelo's picture and looked at it again. I was missing her very much..

–

NAZO

I was standing at some roof top, the building seemed very high. It was cloudy and very chilly. I heard a voice behind me speaking..

Voice: I know it seems unfair but..

I turned around and it was Helena. I usually see her in my dreams, that's how we communicate...

Her: When you saw her today.. You felt something didn't you?

Me: I felt nothing

Her: See Nazo she was always tailored for you, she was never his to begin with. Their relationship had to happen so that she could be closer to you, the devil worked hard to try and intervene but fate worked more harder they weren't supposed to fall for each other this much

Me: This is wrong..

Her: One's destiny is never wrong, she is your destiny... Won't be easy but..

Me: I can't do it

Her: Yes you will.. Let fate take it's course

I opened my eyes, I had passed out on my bed...

Me: This cannot be

.

To be continued

MANTWA

The visit seemed short, but I really enjoyed spending time with his family. They very good people they welcomed me with open arms, I never thought that they would accept me seeing that me and Emmanuel we very different people. Their culture seems a bit difficult to adapt too but I hope that as time goes on I will be used to it. I was in the bedroom making sure that all my things were packed and that I wasn't leaving anything behind. He stood at the doorway and looked at me..

Me: What?

Him: You seemed like you enjoyed being here

Me: Yes I did.. Your Mom and your sister they very nice

He made his way to me..

Him: Well then I'm happy that all of you are getting along

Me: At what time are we leaving tomorrow?

Him: We going to leave very early, it's going to be a long drive

I was still a bit worried about what's happening, I am happy and my relationship is healthy. He is an amazing person who cares a lot for me, when you have been a victim of bad relationships for too long and then you get a good man it seems like a fantasy that will end soon..

Him: Something on your mind?

Me: No.. I'm okay

Him: You can talk to me

Me: I know but I'm okay (Smiling)

We heard a soft knock at the door, I turned and looked. It was his Mom..

Her: I hope I'm not disturbing anything

Patel: No you not. We were just packing

Her: I just wanted to let you know that dinner is ready

Patel: We'll be right there

She smiled and walked away..

Patel: We should go and eat.. We will finish up here later

Me: Alright

He kissed me on my forehead..

Me: I'll be right there just want to freshen up a bit

Him: Okay

He walked out and I sat on the bed trying to let everything sink in..

—

SNAZO

I met up with Shine at Gazibo, it's been a minute since I last saw him. We were having dinner and

he was telling me about the company and the clients they have had since I've been away, I was trying to be attentive but a lot was on my mind..

Shine: Ngathi kuzomele sicashe futhi (Looks like we will have to hire again)

(Silence)

Him: Snazo

I looked at him..

Him: Manje? (and now)

Shine and I we very close, I could never lie to him about anything. I trust him a lot, we have been friends for a long time now. Even when I told him about the gift he still stuck with me, I'm very sure that he is here to stay..

Me: I'll be moving to Mpumalanga soon to start my own church there

Him: Ung'tshelile ngaleyoy ndaba (You already

told me that)

Me: Ya but before I can do that.. There's something I need to accomplish first

Him: Khuluma nami (Talk to me)

Me: I need to get married

He whistled..

Him: Manje ngoba vele since indaba yaka Mantwa akekho umuntu ohlekisana naye (Since Mantwa's situation you not seeing anyone)

Me: Ya that's true but I had a vision about the girl that I'm supposed to marry

Him: Ng'gwalisele (Tell me)

Me: Nomvelo.. I don't know how but she's part of my destiny

He looked at me for a while all confused..

Him: Awume kancane.. Nomvelo.. Nomvelo?

Me: Ya that one

His eyes widened..

Him: iCherry yentwana yakho? (Your Brother's girlfriend)

Me: I don't know what's happening Shine

He whistled while shaking his head..

Him: Kanti lezinto zenu zisebenza kanjani?
(How do these things of yours work)

Me: Eish nami angazi (I also don't know) all I know is that she was always meant for me

Him: Inzima le ndaba.. Manje uzoyenzani? (This is a difficult matter, what are you going to do)

Me: Ang'keni joe (I don't know)

Shine: Manje ngoba awumncwasanga nex ke lo mntwana? (You don't even like this girl)

I remained quiet and thought about when I saw her today..

Shine: Nazo

I looked at him..

Him: Ungang'tsheli ukuthi... Naa Ntwana iMess lento (Don't tell me.. This is a mess)

Me: One big mess

–

NISO

The guard came and took me from my cell, said that I had a visitor and that they paid him for this private meeting. At first I thought that maybe it's Nazo because he hasn't come to see me in a while. We got to the waiting area and there was no one there, it was very quiet. I turned and looked at the guard, then I saw a few guys walking in. One of them was the one that I attacked earlier.. Shit!!!

One of them looked at the guard..

Him: Ta fader (thanks)

The guard nodded while standing by the door,

they made their way to me. It was 5 of them.
The one who seemed like a ring leader started talking...

Him: Entlek wena mafikizolo ucabanga ukuthi kukini la neh? (You think this is your house)

I didn't say anything.. He looked at the others..

Him: Mgibeleni (Beat him up)

They started beating me up while he sang..

Him: "Izimali zami kade ngizidla nawe.. Aww' sfebe ngiyay'funa imali yam"

–

NOMVELO

The following morning I woke up and prepared for work, I need to be at work exactly at 7:30am. My shift is from 8:00-17:00 but we obliged to go in 30min earlier, and then on Saturday we do a 09:00-14:00 shift. My Grandmother walked in as I was eating breakfast..

Her: Good morning

Me: Morning Duchess

She sat down..

Me: Are you okay?

Her: Ya just my knee is troubling me again

Me: I'm sorry to hear that

Her: You know the uniform looks good on you

Me: Thank you

Her: I am very proud of you, you doing very well

Me: Thank you

Her: So tell me does your boyfriend still refuse to see you?

I exhaled in defeat..

Me: Yes

Her: Mara Velo 25 years is a very long time, are you sure that you going to wait for him? Phela

before I die I wanna see you married with kids.
Before the Lord remembers me I wanna see my
Great Grandchildren

We both laughed..

Her: But on a serious note he threw away his
life, it's not your fault that he made bad
decisions and you shouldn't suffer. Move on
with your life, 25 years is a lot you not getting
any younger

—

NOMSA

I was at the kitchen going over my bank
statements, our last money seems to be going
a bit faster than expected. This is bad, this is
very bad. Thuli made her way in..

Her: Morning Ma

Me: Morning

She looked at me..

Her: Konke k'hamba kahle (Is everything going well)

Me: No.. We almost broke

She made coff..

Me: Yazi Thuli if only you knew how difficult life is for us now, you wouldn't be playing around at school

Her: I wasn't playing around Ma

(Silence)

Me: Although JJ had money but uNomvelo used to work very hard at school, she always got good marks. She never took advantage of the fact that she was from a well off home

Her: Wow! So now you going to compare me to her?

Me: I'm just saying.. Futhi nje ngabe uyayeka Konke nje ufune umsebenzi (I think you should leave school and look for a job)

Her: What? No!

Me: What's the use because you busy failing?
You adding to our financial problem

Her: I only failed once Ma

Me: It doesn't make a difference Thuli!

Her: I think I should go to school

Me: Enjoy the last few days with that car
because soon I'll be selling it

Her: Yeah whatever Nomsa!

.

To be continued

No edits

Thank you very much for some of the home remedies you gave me, they helped me through the night. I'll continue using them. Thank you very much truly appreciate it

61

SNAZO

Later on I went to see Niso it's been a while since I last saw him, The last time I saw him was a few days before I went to Kzn with Dawn. I waited a bit longer this time around for him, at some point I thought he refused to see me same way he has been refusing to see Nomvelo. The guard came with him and I was taken by how he looked like, he was badly beaten up. He couldn't walk on his own the guard was helping him walk, and he was even a bit rough with him. I stood up and looked at him, his left eye was very swollen, he was badly bruised I was surprised that he could even walk. The guard let go of him and walked away, took him a while to sit down..

Him: Hey

Me: What the hell happened?

He paused a bit before answering..

Him: The 28s

Me: What do you mean?

Him: Be a lot easier to tell if you could sit down
I sat down..

Him: I got in an altercation with them

Me: Where was Mageba in all of this? Where did they attack you?

Him: They bribed the guard to get to me

Me: Of course! They still dirty as hell

He coughed a bit causing himself pain..

Me: Why haven't they given you medical attention?

Him: I'll be fine

Me: Niso you look badly hurt

Him: I think we should spend this time talking

about other things than what they did to me

Me: I would rather take this time and have you checked than..

I looked at him..

Me: Wait a minute.. You don't want medical attention because you being suicidal, you was hoping that the 28s could beat you to death

He didn't say anything..

Me: Dammit Niso!.. You could still get parole

Him: Parole? I'm supposed to do 25 years without the possibility of parole and Zwane is going to make sure of that, I am not getting parole and I am not getting out of here.. Ever!

Me: What does that mean?

Him: Mageba and I we.. There's a lot of things that are happening inside Nazo that could add up to my sentence

Me: You still pushing the drug business aren't

you?

Him: I need protection, I need to do Mageba favours or else he will have me moved to another cell and I'm not going to be someone's bitch!! I'd rather die than have someone drilling my ass, Being Nazo's kid Brother doesn't afford much protection!

Me: I should've known Mageba was going to use your crime for his own benefit

(Silence)

Me: Look ill make a plan.. You just need to hold on for a while

He shook his head..

Him: What you need to do is to accept the situation, accept that..

Me: No..

Him: You need to let me go.. Don't try anything that might destroy the life that you have created

for yourself

I have been broken down a few times but this, this moment right here it felt like thousands of needles were piercing through my heart..

Me: I have always looked out for you, you my brother

Him: You can't protect me from everything, I knew that what I was doing would have serious consequences.. I've destroyed lives, I ruined futures and I ruined good families. Most parents lost their children because of me these are all their tears

Me: I don't want to hear you talking like this

Him: Just take care of Nomvelo for me, help her through this she's very fragile

Me: Niso no..

Him: And take care of Gugu too

He stood up and looked at the Guard who made

his way to us..

Him: Bye Bro

Me: I'm going to find a way.. I promise

The guard helped him back to his cell and I sat there wiping my tears, I'm not going to give up on him..

—

NOMVELO

I was at the kitchen hitting up my lunch, I had bought streetwise two earlier and put it in the fridge because at around 13:00 kfc gets very full. I yawned while looking at the microwave and and hoping it would stop on zero already, I was very hungry. It eventually did stop on zero and I opened taking the plate out, I had put the pieces on a plate. When I closed I noticed something unusual, something very unusual. I think I saw a woman standing behind me, I saw her being reflected by the microwave since it

was silver in colour and almost like a mirror image. I turned around with my heart beating fast and I saw no one standing behind me, I faced my front again and looked at the microwave I didn't see her anymore. It was almost as if like she had just vanished into thin air...

The door opened and I freaked out while dropping the plate on the floor. Charlene walked in, Charlene is my boss..

Her: Are you okay? I didn't mean to scare you
I nodded repeatedly..

Me: I'm okay

She glanced down at my chicken pieces on the floor..

Her: We can get you something else to eat

Me: It's okay.. I.. I don't think I'm hungry anymore

Her: Are you sure you okay?

Me: Yes I'm fine.. I.. I just need some fresh air

Her: When you come back please see me in my office I wanna discuss something with you, something important

Me: Ohw

Her: Don't look worried my dear it's nothing serious

Me: Oh okay then I'll be right back

I walked out to get fresh air..

–

NISO

I was taken back to my cell and I was in a lot of pain, I think a few of my ribs were broken. I slowly laid down on the bed while facing up, I closed my eyes as I struggled to breath. I started coughing in hopes to open up my chest walls, though it was extremely painful but I

forced through until I coughed up blood

It was little drops of blood that I wiped off with my hand...

I heard the bars opening again and it was Mageba, could hear his voice..

Mageba: vele la ninama favorites, oyi one wethu ushaywa kanjani nikhoba? (you have favorites around here, how does one of us get beaten up while you around)

The guard loud..

Mageba: Aii suka maan Tsek!!

I was struggling to breath, drawing in air hurt a lot...

Mageba: Niso..

Something was wrong.. The beating must've caused a lot of damage..

Mageba: Niso ugrand? (Are you alright)

I couldn't say anything.. It was a mess

Mageba: Ehh Fader!! Fader!! (Calling the warden)

Mageba: Ungasenzi so Ntwana yam' bekezela bra.. (Don't do this to us, hold on)

–

SNAZO

I didn't drive out right away, I was in the car with my head against the wheel. I was helpless, I felt very helpless. The law can be a bitch sometimes, Niso pisses off the wrong People. I raised my head up and hit the stirring wheel a few times out of frustration..

Me: Shit!!!!!!!!!!!!

I have never been this helpless before..

I started the car..

"Beloved..."

I wasn't listening, I didn't wanna listen..

–

NOMVELO

I went back to the store to hear what Charlene wanted to say to me..

I knocked at her door..

Her: Come in

I made my in and sat down..

Me: You wanted to see me

Her: Yes there's some form I need you to sign

Me: A form?

Her: You did very good last month Nomvelo and I'm very impressed so I just wanna give you a R500 clothing voucher you know it's how we show gratitude to our employees

Me: Wow uhm.. Thank you

Her: No thank you.. We very happy to have you in our team

.

To be continued

62

NOMVELO

My Grandmother goes to sleep early as long she had dinner, drank her medication, and watched that local drama that plays at 18:30 on SABC 1 then she's fine. It was now around 21:30 and she had already gone to bed, I was sitting outside with Danger. We were just catching up. He was having castle lite as usual, and I was having a fruit juice..

Him: How is work going?

Me: Work is going well today I was given a voucher for R500, Charlene is very impressed with me

Him: That's very good kiddo

(Silence)

Him: And how's the situation with your boyfriend now?

Me: Still the same.. I'm even debating with myself if I should again

Him: You know what I think and don't take this the wrong way

Me: What?

Him: I think he is being distant so that you can forget about him and move on, after all 25 years is no child's play

Me: Well you got parole, and if this faith thing works he might get one too

He chuckled..

Me: I just wish he could talk to me at least, tell me that I should move on rather than playing hide and seek

Him: If he does tell you are you going to move on?

I shrugged my shoulders..

Me: I don't know, all I know is that I love him and I wanna be there for him. Same way that he has been there for me when I couldn't cope with everything that was happening

Him: Ya that's good.. Starting over is going to take a lot of your strength, especially nowadays committed is very scarce relationships and marriages are suffering because of cheating

Me: That's very true you should see on social media, almost everyone is complaining.. These days staying faithful to only one person seems very difficult to achieve. I don't want to be dealing with a guy that's everywhere

Him: Just take your time..

Me: Can I tell you something?

Him: Yes

Me: And don't think that I'm crazy

Him: What is it?

Me: Today at work when I was hitting my lunch in the kitchen I saw..

Him: Saw what?

Me: I think that I saw someone standing behind me it was a woman, couldn't see her clearly because the microwave was the one that had her reflection it was a bit distorted. I turned around and she wasn't there

He kept quiet for a while..

Me: I know it sounds crazy but.. I felt a presence with me

Him: It doesn't sound crazy.. If it happens again tell me and we will consult someone

Me: Therapist?

Him: No a traditional healer

Me: Isn't that too extreme?

Him: No.. The traditional healer will help us communicate with the spirit, could be your ancestor

Me: Mom type of ancestor?

He started coughing..

Him: I.. I don't think so, your Mom is resting in peace

Me: Ohw

Him: Just tell me when it happens again

Me: I will

–

NOMSA

I was on the phone with my Mother, Mothers are our pillar of strength. When life gets tough or when things don't go right they're always there to help us carry on. My Mother never liked JJ from the start, she warned me about him. She once said his presence is too heavy in

translation she was simply meaning that there was too much cruelty surrounding JJ and that he had too much blood in his hands. I allowed JJ to make me abandon my family, especially my kids. I was a bad Mother I won't lie, I chose the easy way out of life and abandoned my kids..

Me: Akulungi Mama (It's not working Mom)

Her: Ohh mntwana wam' (ohh my child)

Me: I don't know what to do (crying)

Her: I never not even one bit trusted JJ's ways of making money, there was too much evil that was in his heart. Everyday I prayed that God would free you from him, even his death was confusing and very sudden

Me: I don't know what to do Ma

Her: sell the house and come back home Nono, it's going to be difficult to adjust at first but you can start over from it's not too late.. Come home sana lwam' (come home my child)

–
SNAZO

I was laying on the couch watching Tv, I heard the bedroom door opening and Gugu walked out. I looked at the time it was 22:45.

She made her way to the lounge and sat down...

Me: Awunabuthongo? (Insomnia)

Her: You can say that.. I tried falling asleep for the past hour but my heart would start beating very fast.. Nginovalo nje (fear of the unknown)

Me: I'm also struggling to sleep

As we were sitting and talking I saw lights flashing, A car parked outside by the fence

Gugu and I looked at each other, we heard the gate opening and I put the Tv on mute as we made our way to the kitchen waiting for a knock. When someone banged on the door I unlocked and opened, it was Detective Zwane he was

accompanied by other two officers. We let them in. Seeing the smirk on his face I already knew what was happening, something bad happened to Niso..

Gugu: Officers why are you here soo late?

Zwane cleared his throat..

Zwane: Apologies for coming this late but some other news they can't wait till the morning

Gugu: What news?

Zwane: It's about your Son Niso Buthelezi

Gugu held on to my arm..

Gugu: Wh.. What about him?

Zwane: He was badly beaten last night by other inmates and it was founded that he kept quiet about it, and his cell mates didn't notice too

Gugu: Is he okay? Is he at the hospital?

Zwane: He had severe internal bleeding and he

had a few broken ribs so was his rib cage, his vital organs were affected in the process, his heart and his lungs got pierced through. When he was taken to the hospital today in the afternoon, they operated right away but he went into shock and he died on the operating table
It was silent for a few seconds..

Zwane: I'm sorry.. My deepest condolences

Gugu let out a loud cry while sinking on the floor..

Gugu: No.. No.. No.. Hayi umntwana wam' (not my child)

Zwane: I'm very sorry

Gugu: No... Bring back my baby (Crying)

I looked at them...

Me: You can leave now

Zwane: Ohh uhm..

Me: Just leave Detective, this is no time to gloat

Zwane: Fine

He looked at his colleagues..

Zwane: We can go

They walked out and even left the door opened,
I tried helping Gugu to get..

Gugu: Hayi uNiso!! Bamenzeni umntwana wam'
(What did they do to him)

I was trying to help her up but I was breaking
myself, my eyes filled up with tears..

By now Gugu crying and the cars outside
attracted our neighbours. Sis'Joyce walked in
with her Daughter..

Sis'Joyce: Shlobo kwenzakalani? (what's
happening)

I looked at Sis'Joyce..

Me: Please can you.. Can you help Gugu to the

chair

She came and helped her..

Sis'Joyce: Yini Snazo (What's wrong)

Me: It's Niso he..

Gugu: uNiso usishiyile (Niso is no more)

Sis'Joyce also let out a cry of her own..

Me: Just be here for her until I get back.. Please
I went and took my car keys then left..

–

NOMVELO

I woke up while gasping for air, I don't know what happened but my heart was beating very fast. I felt scared, I felt this overwhelming fear and I was also struggling to breath.. I looked around and my room was dark, I put my hand on my chest while crying.

Me: Duchess!!! Duchess!!! (shouting)

My Grandmother came rushing in..

Her: Velo..

Me: Duchess something is wrong with me

She switched on the light..

Her: Yini Velo? (what's wrong)

Me: I don't know.. I can't.. I can't breath

Her: Ima let me call Danger we will take you to the hospital.

I really don't know what was happening, I have never experienced this type of feeling before..

–

SNAZO

I had bought a few beers and I drove up to an open field, it was very dark and very quiet. I got out with a few cans of beers and stood went to sit ontop of the bonnet, I opened one and drank..

"He died on the operating table.. He died on the

operating table"

I rubbed my eyes and his image was stuck in my head, he was in excruciating pain when I saw him earlier today..

"You need to let me go.. Don't try anything that might destroy the life that you have created for yourself"

I put the can down and rubbed my face with my hands..

"You can't protect me from everything, I knew that what I was doing would have serious consequences"

I took the can and threw it away, I went and started kicking the Tyre..

Me: Why?? Why?? Why?? Why??

I moved away and looked up at the stars..

Me: I thought we had a deal!!! I thought we..

Tears just started falling...

Me: Why??? This is not what I signed up for! I did more bad things! He didn't deserve this! He is a good kid!! What am I supposed to do now? How am I supposed to live?? You supposed to be the good guy here! You called me to save lives, save lives from the hand of the devil!! I.. We done!!! Whatever shit hell deal we had, we done!! I'm done!!

.

To be continued

No edits

63

NOMVELO

I spent the night at the hospital and this morning I was feeling a bit better but shadows of that fear still haunted me. They sedated me last night when I arrived and I slept through the whole night, this morning very early I had to bath and eat then the Dr came and asked me

some questions and what not also my blood sample was taken to the lab for further testing and to rule out any deadly toxins from my blood..

The Dr came to see me again I think he had my results..

Him: Good morning

Me: Morning

Him: How are you feeling now?

Me: A bit better.. Just wondering when can I go home

Him: You will go home first thing tomorrow morning, after your blood work has come through

Me: What is wrong with me?

Him: The possible diagnosis for now is a panic attack, all your symptoms lead to a panic attack

Me: I know what a panic attack is but what I felt

last night.. It was so intense I thought that I was going to die

Him: When it's severe it gets to that point but what's good about it is that it cannot kill you

Me: Thank God for that

Him: As soon as your blood work comes through, you will go home tomorrow morning

Me: Thank you

He moved on to my neighbour. I hate hospitals and I can't wait to be out of here, public hospitals are a mess. Nurses aren't really friendly, you share the ward with a lot of other people and just hope that you don't get haunted. You also pray that no one dies in your ward during the night. It was even hectic for me to sleep on this bed, how many people have slept on this bed and died? It was frustrating..

—

MANTWA

I was shocked to hear that Niso is no more. We got the news earlier this morning..

Me: I can't believe Niso is no more

Mom: It's very surprising.. He died in jail but then again I heard the Buthelezi boys are very problematic and that Nazo has had a lot of encounters with the law, you lucky that you dodged the bullet

Me: Don't be like that.. Nazo turned his life around and Niso he was in school, he was doing his last year in teaching

Her: Then how did he end up in jail? The school thing must've been just a front

Me: Don't judge

Her: I'm not judging

(Silence)

Me: Nazo must be broken.. He loves his Brother

more than anything and anyone in this world

Her: Sad for him but life is not a walk in the park

Me: I should come with just to see if Gugu is holding up well and if they need help, I'm sure their relatives haven't arrived yet. It was a sudden thing

Her: You not coming with Mantwa

Me: Why not?

Her: These are the same people who almost made you to take your own life, that family I heard they bad news just be grateful you done with them

Me: Ma don't be like that

Her: Mantwa you have a fiancé that loves you focus on that, focus on him. He is a good person and educated don't ruin what you have for a useless family!

Uhmm okay that was a first, My mom doesn't

usually blow up like this..

–

SNAZO

I was woken up by the sun and I realized that I passed out in my car. I looked over and I had a lot of cans on the passenger's seat. I threw them out via the window and started my car then drove home. I was driving a Polo that I got a few months back, I bought it with my check from Dawn and the money that our business generated. It wasn't new, was a good second hand Polo that I got for 120k. I didn't buy it straight away I budget first for a few months and then I got it, it was red in colour. I felt like shit, my head was buzzing and I still felt a bit drunk. When I was on my street I saw Dawn's car parked at my house, I didn't need any type of fuckery right now..

I parked mine at Sis'Joyce's gate and made my

way in on foot. The backdoor was opened and furniture was being carried out.

I made my way in through the back door and Dawn sitting in the lounge with one of my Uncles, he seemed uncomfortable and my Uncle has a PhD in making people feel very uncomfortable..

Uncle: Yewena mfana.. Ubuyaphi? (Where have you been)

Me: Malume (Uncle)

Him: Ungathi Nyalume, Nyalume! Ubuyaphi (Where are you coming from)

I looked at Dawn..

Me: Dawn

He slightly bowed his head to me..

Me: I'll be back

I walked out to the bathroom and Gugu was sitting on the mattress with my Uncle's wife.

She had a mini blanket around her shoulders, she had a doek on and she was looking down while rocking herself back and forth....

Me: Sanibonani (Greetings)

Aunt: Snazo

She was holding the snuff, you can't separate her from that..

I looked at Gugu..

Me: Unjani? (How is she)

Aunt: Hai kunzima (It's hard) akadli, akafuni nex nje (she's not eating, she just doesn't want anything)

I looked at her again, then I looked at my Aunt..

Me: I will see you guys later just call me if you need anything

Aunt: Sizodinga iGrocery ezinye izihlobo zethu zisendleleni (We will need groceries, our other relatives are on the way)

Me: You will write me a list

Her: Okay

I went back to the Dawn, we can go and talk in my room. He stood up..

Me: Malume ngiyabuya (Uncle I am coming back)

When we walked out we bumped into Mantwa and her Mom at the door, been a while since I last saw her. She still looked good I just stood there and looked at her for a minute or two until her Mother cleared her throat, the eye contact was broken..

Me: Sanibonani (Greetings)

Mantwa's Mom was the first one to respond.

Her: Sicela ukungena (May we please go in)

I shifted..

Me: Ya sorry

They made their way in..

–

NOMVELO

I was so bored that I tried to force myself to sleep but I couldn't achieve that, my bed was the closest to the Nurses station and they were making a lot of noise. They were eating and laughing, just being very annoying..

As I was tossing and turning I saw my Grandmother and Danger making their way to the Nurses, I was puzzled. Visiting hours start from 14:00 in the afternoon. They talked to the Nurses for quiet a while and I saw one of the Nurses pointing at me then they made their way to me, they looked somehow drained..

Me: What are you guys doing here?

My Grandmother hugged me..

Her: Velo.. How are you feeling?

Me: I'm feeling well

They had brought food with them...

Danger: What did the Dr say?

Me: Said it was a panic attack

Grams: A panic what?

Me: Nothing serious Duchess, they even discharging me tomorrow

Danger: That's good

He put the food ontop of my small cabinet..

Danger: We brought you some food.. Chips, ribs, coslow salad and a 100% fruit juice with some snacks to push time

Me: Thank you

I could see that something was wrong..

Me: Is everything okay

They looked at each other..

Me: I am not dying guys so relax

Grams: We came early because.. There's something that we need to tell you

Me: What?

Grams: I believe that what happened to you last night was a sign

Me: A sign of what?

Her: Velo there's no easy way to tell you this but..

Me: But what?

Grams: uNiso he passed on yesterday, I think you had that panic thing yakhona because of that.. It was a sign

I didn't understand the statement..

Me: I don't understand

Danger: uNiso passed on yesterday Velo bathi he got into a fight thad later on took his life

My Grandmother put her hand on my cheek..

Her: I'm so-

I moved my head back a bit...

Her: I'm sorry baby

It's not true...

Her: It is

Me: It's not.. They made a mistake

Danger: Velo

Me: He wouldn't do this to me!! (shouting)

Everyone looked at me..

I calmed down..

Me: When I get discharged tomorrow we will go to the prison and enquire, they made a mistake.

You will see they made a mistake

They didn't know what to say. I cleared my throat since I felt like it was dry..

Me: Please pass me my food

Danger passed me the plastic, I struggled a lot to untie it. My hands were trembling

Danger: Let me help you with that

He took it, I sniffed and tried to block my tears..

Me: Everything is fine you guys will see.. He is fine, they made a mistake. They humans they make mistakes.. He is fine

I wiped my tears..

Grams: Velo

She came and hugged me..

Me: He wouldn't do that to me Duchess, he loves me too much to put me through that.. He wouldn't hurt me like this (Crying)

Niso is not dead.. It's just not true...

–

NAZO

Dawn: I heard about your Brother.. I'm sorry

Me: Thank you

Dawn: At least you will be back in time from Mpumalanga for his funeral

I looked at him..

Me: You kidding me right?

Him: You can't bail out, it's tomorrow. They expecting you

Me: They can go to hell!!

Him: I know you hurting but don't do this

Me: I want nothing to do with religion, exorcisms, preaching, the gift I have.. I want nothing to do with any of that! I never was a fan of this religion bullshit!!

Him: Okay I understand that you hurting and as a human-

Me: You don't understand shit!!! You lost a

pussy once that you replaced with another one,
and you married this one! She's pregnant yall
are going to be a "beautiful" multiracial couple! I
lost a Brother, you can't replace that!!

(Silence)

He chuckled..

Him: Okay you hurting, I'm going to give you
some time to collet yourself!!

He walked out while bumping into me on
purpose..

I clicked my tongue...

Me: Nx!!!

—

To be continued

No edits

64

NOMVELO

The following day I was discharged from the hospital and my Grandmother came to fetch me, we used a taxi to go back home. I didn't know how I was feeling but from where the taxi dropped us off, to walking home. I could see a lot of activity from Niso's house..

Grams: Do you wanna go in?

I looked at his house for a while and then I nodded. I didn't think I was going to go through pain again, I have suffered enough mentally and emotionally. I need a break from hurt, a break from heartache..

We walked in through the back door, it was wide open. My Grandmother greeted those that we found in the living room and she asked if we could go to the bedroom, they allowed us. Gugu was sitting on the mattress with some woman, seeing her in that state just confirmed everything. It confirmed that he was gone..

My Grandmother greeted and we sat down on the chairs. My Grandmother introduced us to the other woman, and in turn she also introduced herself as Niso's Aunt...

Aunt: Umuhle Sisi (You beautiful)

I just nodded..

Grams: uGugu unjani? (how is Gugu)

Aunt: She's taking it very hard

She turned to her..

Aunt: Gugu uNomvelo no MaNgcobo-

Gugu looked at us, she looked at me to more specific. Her eyes reflected a lot of sadness and pain, she was broken and so was I..

Gugu: I'm.. I'm sorry Nomvelo, I know how much you loved him

I think it was difficult for me because I was the only person who didn't see him while he was in prison, maybe if I saw him it would make the

pain a bit better. Just a bit though.

Me: Can I go to his room?

Gugu nodded..

I stood up and made my way to his room, nothing was touched or moved. It was still as how I remember it everytime I've been here. I walked to his bed and sat down, one of his t-shirts was on the bed. I took it and looked at it, I brought it closer to my nose and it had his cologne. My eyes filled with tears. I put it on then laid down on his bed and closed my eyes..

—

SNAZO

She was tired and the condom wasn't doing justice anymore. We have been at it since from last night, I think I was going hard on it because it's been a while since I last had it.

I was having it from the back, pinned her down

on the bed and locked her hands against her back so that she doesn't disturb me. It's just a random bitch I picked up last night when I went drinking with an old friend of mine Senzo, I bought her a few drinks with her friends and I took her with me to Senzo's place for a night. I wasn't going to come, at least not as quick as she wanted because she was in pain. So be fair I opted that she gives me a blow job for a while to speed up the process. I sat on the bed and took off the condom, she went for it and I pulled her her hair back. I forgot how nice this is..

She went on and on and I was close to come, instesd of telling her I just came in her mouth, she spat them out..

Her: You could've warned me

She got up and wiped her mouth, then started dressing. I stood up and went to to dress up too..

Her: I have never been with a guy who had such an appetite just like you, I am burning and in pain

Me: Can you just dress up and go

Her: I'm going to need money for a taxi

I gave her R200 and then she left.. I walked out of the bedroom to check Senzo and he wasn't around, probably went to work..

–

NOMSA

Agent: This is a very nice house

Me: Thank you

Her: You selling it with the whole furniture?

Me: Yes

She looked around again..

Her: Okay I am sure that someone is going to buy it before the end of the month

Me: That would be good

Her: Okay so I would need you out by the end of the week

Me: I have already started packing

Her: I'll be in touch

Me: For how much are you going to sell it for?

Her: R 900 000

Me: Not bad

Her: Not bad at all

She gave me a handshake..

Her: ill call you

Me: Thank you very much

She smiled and walked out. I looked around and this is no longer going to be my home, now I am moving back to poverty and the hood...

—

MANTWA

Patel: I will pick you up at 18:00

Me: Okay

Him: I love you

Me: I love you too

Even though our cultures clash, according to him I was supposed to have moved in at his place since we engaged but in my culture he is meant to pay Lobola first. We meeting up later on so that we can discuss the lobola thing, I need to explain to him how it's done and what not then he can give his opinion too, I wonder how it's going to work out..

My mother walked into my bedroom..

Me: I was on the phone with Patel, we meeting up later on

She kept quiet and then she sat down on my bed..

Me: Is everything okay?

Her: Mantwa do you know how blessed you are?

Me: Yes

Her: I mean I saw you with your ex and.. I hope that you won't ruin your relationship with someone who almost made you kill yourself

Me: Mom-

Her: I'm serious

Me: I won't.. What Nazo and I had it's over

Her: I hope so

My Mom's sudden hate for Nazo is really disturbing..

.

To be continued

No edits

65

NAZO

SATURDAY

Days went by fast, faster than I wanted them to go because I didn't look forward to his funeral. Now that the day was finally here it made the nightmare real, seeing him in the coffin made it real too. He didn't look the same I almost couldn't recognize him, the bruises were still there and his face was very swollen. His lips were dry and a bit cracked, his eyes were shut permanently. It was a lot to take in, I didn't have tears no more I've wasted them all during the week. I don't show my weakness to People, no matter how broken I was I just couldn't show it to everyone else. I deal with situations my own way. At 10:30am we left for church, the funeral was gonna take place at my Grandmother's church. It's funny because I've been here not so long ago to bid farewell to my Grandmother, and now it's my Brother.

I don't understand how this life thing works..

Gugu was done, she was hurt when my Grandmother died but with Niso I have never seen her this broken. Physically she was here but mentally and emotionally she was gone, I don't even think she was aware of what was happening. They had flowers on his coffin, I actually paid for the whole entire funeral. They had his picture at the front..

I looked around and Shine was sitting at the back, Nomvelo's Grandmother was around but I didn't see Nomvelo. Damn! Nomvelo, I have totally forgotten about her..

"Ngangiyison' Esibi

(I was a terrible sinner)

Esaya Enkosini

(I came to the Lord)

Kwathi Ngegama Lika Jesu

(By the Name of Jesus)

Ngathol' ukukhululwa

(I found freedom)

Wez' umthandazo wami

(He heard my prayers)

Wangithethelela

(He forgave me)

Wangethula umthwalo

(He took away the burden)

Wangishiya neculo

(He left me with a song)"

A few people stood up and sang along, I looked at his picture on his obituary he was smiling.

Smiling like death wasn't going to meet up with him anytime soon, he didn't deserve this. I've done terrible things in my life but Niso does one mistake and then it's the end? I don't

understand..

"Ngizomethemba njalo

(I will surely trust him)

Ngob' uyayazi indlela

(For he knows the way)

Uzongihola ngeso angisekele impela

(He will lead with his eye and support me indeed)

Ezulwini ngolanda

(When I get to heaven)

Ngibonge phakade

(I will forever thank him)

Wangethula umthwalo

(He took away the burden)

Wangishiya neculo

(He left me with a song)"

–

NOMVELO

I was woken up by a panic attack I've been getting a lot of those lately and I'm still trying to control them. I looked around and I still felt a bit wasted, I rose my head up and it was heavy. I had his mini blanket with me, I took it with me that day when I was at his place I didn't steal it they let me have it. We used to sleep with that blanket when it was hot, it's not big just a small nice blanket. I didn't go to his funeral, I was even at home. I was visiting my cousin Nkuli been here since Thursday. I've developed an addictive relationship with alcohol, I drink before going to work, I drink at work and I drink when I knock off. It's something that happens everyday. Alcohol might not make it all right but when I pass out I sleep like a dead person, nothing invades my mind. It's like my mind just shuts down for that time. The only thing I'm

battling with is that it brings about a lot of depression, I've overdosed on pills but it wasn't something serious and I become fearless to commit suicide. I've tried hanging myself, I've tried drinking rat poison but I couldn't go through with it. Something deep inside of me didn't want..

I had passed out on the couch, I looked at the time and it was something to eleven. I got up from the couch and made my way to the kitchen, I poured myself whiskey and gulped it down. Not exactly my favorite but I need to take my mind off what's happening today back in the hood..

–

SNAZO

His friend spoke well about him, our neighbour Sis'Joyce even shed a tear or two. It was an emotional service and now we were off to the

cemetery. My Aunties were talking in the family car but my mind was far away, we were following the hearse and my eyes were glued on his coffin at the back of the hearse I didn't take any interest in what they were saying. The ride was very long..

—

NOMVELO

I was broken and I didn't know how to fix myself, I didn't see any reason to live anymore. My vision was getting blurry as I tried putting the glass on the counter, I was already 40% drunk if not 50%. My broken heart started all over again. I literally went to the couch to get the blanket and I made my way to the balcony, all I wanted was to be rid of the pain..

—

SNAZO

When we got to the cemetery something weird

happened. As I was walking to where we were supposed to sit I heard the voice deep within..

"Beloved.."

I stopped.. I looked around and cleared my throat then continued walking..

"Beloved.."

Me: Not today.. Not ever!!

—

NOMVELO

I looked down and it was a long way down, I closed my eyes with tears falling..

Me: We finally going to be together my love

It was a bit difficult to go through with it, the blanket fell as I was trying to leap off the edge. I looked at it and sighed in frustration.

I got down to pick it up and a familiar hand helped me to pick it up, it was him. He stood in

front of me with his ever beautiful smile..

Me: Niso?

He put the blanket around me..

Him: Here you go

Me: But.. How is this possible?

Him: Anything is possible

He appeared real, he was holding me..

Me: You left me.. (crying) why?

He shook his head no..

Him: I didn't leave you

–

NKULI

I walked out of my bedroom to check up on Nomvelo, I had checked up on her a few hours ago and she was sleeping. I don't like how she's burying herself in alcohol and at the same time I don't know how to help her.

Me: Velo?

It was quiet but the sliding door was wide open, I got scared. I made my way to the balcony but stopped halfway. She was standing there and hugging herself, surprisingly she was smiling through her tears..

Her: I did tell everyone that you not gone, but they don't believe me. No one believes me

She was talking as if like she sees him, as if like he was standing there. Right in front of her. I got emotional, tears burned my eyes. It was a heart breaking moment to witness..

.

To be continued

No edits

66

SNAZO

3 MONTHS LATER

It was still difficult to go through life without Niso, I would go to his room a few times in the morning hoping that I would find him there but I would find the room empty. Gugu was trying to make it through every day without him, what happened has drifted us apart. I am always out getting up to no good, I'm hardly at home. With regards to my gift I still heard the holy spirit communicating with me but I was just too ignorant, I wanted nothing to do with my calling. I blamed God for everything, I thought by answering to him and serving him he would take care of my loved ones guess I was wrong. How could he sit back and let my Brother die, it's not fair

I slowly opened my eyes to be welcomed by the presence of someone who looked very familiar, he was standing there in my room going through his phone. How did he get in? I must've

been really knocked out to not hear someone breaking into my room. I rose my head up and that grabbed his attention..

Him: Finally he is awake, thought I was going to stand here forever

I was very confused..

Him: Your Mom let me in

Gugu has a spare key to my room..

Me: What are you.. What are you doing here?

Him: I don't know between you drinking and the girl you supposed to marry also drinking it's just one drinking problem and it's setting you back

Me: I don't need a lecture

Him: I'm not lecturing you

I chuckled in disbelief..

Me: Zaine Radebe the GOAT standing in my room I guess I must be important up there

He chuckled..

Him: I could be doing something else right now rather than being here but..

(Silence)

Him: Why don't you bath so that we can go out for a ride

Me: Cool just give me a few minutes

He gave me a weird look..

Me: What?

Him: I was told that you very arrogant and full of yourself.. I was expecting a fight or something

I exhaled..

Me: I'm just tired of fighting, that's what I've been doing ever since.... I'm just tired

He nodded..

Me: There's no escaping it is there?

He nodded..

Me: There's no escaping this right?

Him: You can't escape who you are, no matter how much you run

I ran my hand on my face..

Him: I'll be in the car

He walked out.

—

NOMVELO

I have been staying with Nkuli for all this long my Grandmother agreed for me to stay there for this long because she thought fresh air would do me good, she thought being away from here a bit will help me. Unfortunately that was not the case, I sank deeper and deeper into alcohol that Nkuli couldn't take it no more. Each time when I get too drunk I would change, I would become a different person and she couldn't take it anymore. She couldn't take being my

bodyguard. We got home and I just threw myself on the couch, I was tired and very hungover. Though the hangover wasn't new.

Nkuli: Gogo nawu umuntu wakho (Grandma here is your person)

She put my bag on the floor..

Grams: kwenzekeni? (what happened)

Nkuli: Hai mina ngihlulekile (I am defeated)

Grams: Kodwa Velo (but Velo)

Nkuli: She needs professional help Gogo before she really commits suicide

Grams: Nami angisazi (I also don't know)

Nkuli: I am exhausted, I couldn't sleep peacefully most nights because I had to wake up and check on her. Check if she is still breathing, she is drinking like a fish I don't know anymore. She broke a couple of things at my place, when she is drunk she becomes a total

different person

Grams: I don't know anymore.. I've been praying yazi uze ulahle nomsebenzi omuhle (she even left a good job)

Me: Eish ngicela nigakhulumi ngami ngathi angikho la (Please don't talk about me as if like I'm not here)

Nkuli: Hai Gogo let me go to my place so I can sleep

She stood up..

Nkuli: You must consider getting help for Velo gogo.. Professional help

Grams: I'll talk to Danger

She hugged my Grandmother and then looked at me..

Her: Ubengcono mntanasekhaya (get well)

My Grandmother walked her out..

–

SNAZO

When I was done bathing I went to the house to check on Gugu, she in Niso's room busy folding his clothes...

Me: Hey

She looked at me..

Her: Hey

Me: What are you doing?

Her: It's time we give his clothes away to people who need them, I'll take them to church

I slightly smiled and nodded..

Me: I'm going out with Zaine I'll be back later, call me if you need me

She smiled at me..

Her: Thought I lost you too

Me: I'll see you later

Her: Okay

I turned around and started walking away...

Gugu: Nazo

I turned and looked at her..

Her: Thank you.. Thank you for not losing yourself

Me: See you later

–

MANTWA

Me: "Matric, at least 2 years experience, compute literate.."

Patel: Good morning

Me: Morning

He buttoned his shirt around his wrist...

He came and kissed me on my forehead and I put the iPad on the table..

Him: What are you doing?

Me: Looking for a job

Patel honoured how things are done in my culture, he paid lobola for me a few weeks ago after almost a month of convincing his family. After paying Lobola I moved in with him and next year we planning on getting married, we still have to budget since weddings ain't cheap. With the wedding we going to do it his way, the whole wedding will include his traditions and beliefs. It's only fair..

Him: Are you succeeding?

Me: Well I got a few posts that I'm going to apply for

Him: That's good

Me: Should I make you something to eat?

Him: No thank you.. I'm already late I'll grab a cup of coffee on the way

Me: You have a long day ahead of you

Him: I'll get lunch.. I promise

Me: You better

He kissed me..

Him: I'll see you later

Me: later it is then

Him: I love you

Me: I love you too

He took his things and left..

–

SNAZO

I don't even know where we were going, I don't know why he was even here. I don't think he understands what I've been through.

Me: Where are we going?

Him: I want you to meet my family

Me: You got me up for that?

Him: Trust me.. It will be worth it

The drive was a bit quiet, I didn't know what to say to him. I mean what do you say to a person like him? It seems like God has been good to him. He is very successful, I wish God could've been this good to me too. I wish he didn't take my Brother away..

To my surprise we stopped at a cemetery.

Me: I don't understand

Him: You not the only one who lost someone, someone who was dear to you. When I was in the process of becoming a prophet, when I answered to my calling. I lost my Father, then my Mother, and then my Brother. I lost my whole family. You even blessed to still have your Mother, I had no one other than the girl that I was supposed to marry and she was broken. She suffered sexual abuse from her step father and in the process she fell pregnant,

Her step Father was a cult leader.

This was shocking, I never knew about this.

Him: Come and see my family, I wanna show you their tombstones their last resting place so you could see how much I lost when I became a prophet. I don't usually come here but I will make an exception for you

He opened the door and got out, I opened the door and got out too..

.

To be continued

No edits

67

SNAZO

"IN THE LOVING MEMORY OF LEIGHTON
RADEBE. A SON, BROTHER, AND FATHER.

MAY YOUR SOUL REST IN PEACE"

Zaine: The remains of my late Brother lie underneath this tombstone

Me: How did he die?

He remained quiet for a while..

Zaine: He was possessed the day he finally repented, his soul left his body. I always believe that he died in peace

Me: I'm sorry to hear that

Him: Leigh was perfect, he was the perfect son. He had a respectable job, he was very religious and my parents were very proud of him. They thought that he was going to be the one to get the gift but unfortunately it was passed on to me and I never understood why. I never believed in God, I was a music producer and my career was starting to take off no make that it was taking off. My artists were winning awards, I had the money, the fame and the girl. I was happy with who I was, I was happy with how my

life was until..

Me: Until?

Him: Until I started seeing things.. Strange things that I couldn't understand and that's when my Father realized that the gift had been passed on to me instead of Leighton. My Brother was furious and so was my Mother, he just didn't understand how it worked. He wanted to be a prophet so bad that he worked very close with the devil to bring me down. Things got worse when my Father passed on, My mom and Leighton they became my enemies my Mom didn't even like Bonolo. It was a mess, it was a very big mess

(Silence)

Me: You know all along I thought you had it easy, looking at your life right now I thought that everything was easy for you

He laughed..

Him: I wish.. There were times I never thought I was going to make it. I was tested, I endured and the devil took blows at me but I'm still here today

Me: It's not easy to get over the death of someone close to you, I wake up everyday blaming myself and wishing that it could've been me he was young, smart, had a bright future. He was meant to graduate soon and me on the other hand my future didn't look so bright, I wish it was me who died. I know Niso could've handled my death better

Him: You much stronger than you think, you might never understand why it had to be him but there's a reason. Behind everything there's a reason. I might not know your Brother but if you two were really that tight, I doubt he would want you to live like this

We started walking away..

Him: He destroyed many souls and it is your destiny to save a lot of the souls that are remaining, you taking a stand against hell and doing the opposite of what he did is the best way to avenge his death. You trying so hard to destroy yourself, you running away from your gift.. You can't run away from it, it's who you are and the more you self destruct there more and more the enemy snatches many souls. You giving hell the upper hand

I exhaled..

Him: Prophet Ayo Fazel Badru he fights off witchcraft, he saves families from the curse of witchcraft being passed on from generation to generation. He faces off diplomatic witches and powerful witchcraft, he has earned the right to be called the GOAT, he is the Greatest Prophet of all time

Me: Then what are you?

Him: He is the greatest Prophet of all time and I'm the powerful Prophet of this lifetime, we all gifted differently Badru and I we able to save the physical being of a person we fight evil on a daily basis but you..

He stopped..

Him: You go as far as healing the soul, what you do is very remarkable and very special. You save souls from depression, mental anguish and from the hand of the devil, you cleanse a mind that is full of confusion, you mend a broken and bleeding heart. The devil is striking back, and he is doing it through depression. More and more broken souls result in suicide because of distorted thoughts, your are needed. Don't give hell the upper hand. If your Brother got a second choice he would make things right but unfortunately he is not, so make things right for him. First of all you need to get your future wife right, she is breaking at least that's what

Helena said

Me: Helena gossips? I knew she was no good
(Laughing)

He laughed too and continued walking..

–

NOMVELO

I found myself in a pure white room. The walls were painted white, the ceiling was also white and the window had no curtain. The whiteness in this room was overwhelming, I couldn't see even a small stain..

Me: Hello?

My voice echoed. I was wearing a pure white dress, something about this scene was not right. What's happening? Am I dead or something? I looked around and I couldn't see a door, all I could see was just the window. I walked up to the window and stared out, the grass outside

was very green and beautiful. There were sunflowers around and trees. The sun was shining bright, I even saw doves flying around..

Me: Wow.. What is this place?

As I was taken by the beauty of this unknown place I heard a voice behind me..

Voice: Nomvelo

I slowly turned around and there she was, My Mother..

Me: Mom?

I recognize her from the pictures, she was glowing and had this beautiful smile on her face. Her smile just made my world complete, she was very beautiful..

Her: Hey sweetheart

I didn't know how to react, I had different emotions..

Me: Am I.. Am I dead?

She shook her head no..

Her: You not dead

Me: Then what's going on? What is this place?

She made her way to me..

Her: You very beautiful.. You everything that I imagined you would be

She gave me a hug. Her hug came with a lot of warmth and love, the moment felt real. She seemed real..

She broke the hug..

Me: I.. I thought you were hurt

Her: I was hurt.. I was hurt very bad

She brushed my hair back..

Me: I wish I knew you.. I wish that..

She was smiling at me..

Me: You seem so real Ma

Her: I wish I didn't leave you

I wiped my tears..

Her smile vanished and her eyes wondered around..

Me: What's wrong?

Her: She is coming.. We don't have much time

Me: Who is coming?

Her: The reaper.. She has to take my soul to the other side but, ever since that night when my soul departed from my body I never left your side I was always with you. I refused to go because you were holding on to me, I couldn't leave knowing that you were not okay. What you see now is not who I am anymore

Me: I don't understand

Her: When I refused to go I became a bitter soul because I saw him and everyday that I saw him your uncle there more and more bitter I was,

without realizing I became a bitter soul

Me: Ma..

She held my hand..

Her: It's time for you to let me.. It's time for you to let go and start your new life

Me: I don't understand

Her: Someone is going to ask for your hand in marriage I want you to say yes. I saw his heart and he is a very good person, he is a very special person and your future lies with his.

Together you and him will achieve a lot, you will have good times with him and if you allow him he is going to love you in time you will be very happy with him

Me: I don't understand

Her: I want you to say yes to him, when you say yes I will be able to rest in peace knowing that you in good hands. I will be able to move on to

the other side

Me: Mom I don't understand

She started shimmering..

Her: Say yes and open your heart to him, allow him to love you

Me: Ma??

She disappeared..

Me: Ma?? Ma!!

I opened my eyes and looked around the room, I was dreaming. I remember the dream I remember it very vividly. I got up and walked out of the bedroom

Me: Duchess??

She wasn't around the house so I made my way to her bedroom. I was broke and I needed something to drink..

I searched through her things until I found her

purse, it had R500 in it. I took R200 and then put it back, I went back to the bedroom and put on my shoes then walked out..

–

SNAZO

Zaine drove me straight home, unfortunately he couldn't come in..

Him: I have to rush home

Me: Ya thanks for the ride

Him: I hope soon I will be attending one of your sermons

Me: Yeah I hope so too

Him: See you around man and be good

He gave me a handshake and then I opened the door, I didn't go out of the car as I had one last question for him..

Me: Exactly how am I going to tackle this

situation with her? What do I say to her?

Him: You tell her truth.. Your relationship with her is going to start a bit different and it's going to seem weird at first but I am sure that as time goes on everything will fall into place

Me: Let me guess Helena told you that?

Him: Well she gossips a lot about you (pun intended)

I chuckled..

Me: See you around

Him: Take care

I got out and closed the door then I waved at him as he drove off. I turned and looked at my house, I think I should discuss this with Gugu first..

.

To be continued

No edits

68

NOMVELO

Later on we were having a very good time at Gazibo, I had called Groovy and she came over with a few People. Over the phone she told me that she will come with someone who has money and that I will just have to play along and entertain him then he will buy us more and more booze since my R200 won't take us anywhere. They did arrive they actually came with a car, the owner of the car is the one that I'm meant to entertain so that he could keep on spending. It was just 5 of us, 3 guys and 2 girls. The two girls being me and Groovy. We were having a really good time, I learned that the Guy's name is Ace. He wasn't that good looking and he wasn't ugly either, just a normal person. I was sitting ontop of him and he really didn't mind spending on us. Ace is a good guy no lie

he was making us laugh with his friends it was a good night indeed, Better than most nights I spend alone drunk and crying myself to sleep. The only thing that I didn't like about him is that he was very touchy, I would constantly yank his hand off when it goes up to fondle my breast or when he tries to squeeze it inside my Jean I would stop him because I'm not about that..

Ace got more alcohol for us, they were having Castle lite, Groovy and I we were drinking flying fish. I had just finished my second last can when he got me another 6 pack..

Ace: Kuyabanda (It's cold)

He squeezed me a bit tight..

Him: Awuzwa amakhaza? (Aren't you feeling cold)

Me: Not that much.. I'm good

He tried to kiss me but I pulled back, I could see he was getting a bit impatient with me giving

him a tough time..

"Should I hold on or pass Will you let me crash
Should I hold on or pass Will you let me crash
Should I hold on or pass Will you let me crash
Should I hold on or pass (Will you let me crash"

They were playing Collide by lazy zamar, one of the jams that has grown in me. I found myself falling inlove with it, it's a good song to jam too when you having a good time..

My night was going very well and we were planning to leave after I had finished the last 6 pack of my beers plus I was starting to get wasted, maybe halfway through the last 6 pack I was going to be carried home there was no way that I was going to walk on my own..

Groovy: Woza so jaiva (come let's to dance)

Me: No I'm good..

Groovy: Sowudakwe ngaleyoy ndlela vele?

I nodded..

Ace: Ufuna uku Lala (You want to sleep)

I nodded..

Ace: athi ngiyise uNomvelo kubo (let me drive Nomvelo to her place)

His friends agreed..

Ace: Asambe (let's go)

Me: Let me finish this can

Ace: Do you want help with it

Me: Okay

I passed it to him and he also drank, as we were sharing my can there was kissing in between.

Now I was just too vulnerable to even fight off his hand squeezing my breast.

Since I was sitting ontop of him I could feel that he was getting hard, really hard that he was squeezing me very tight to him..

Groovy: Hai akenimeni tuu (please stop)

We stopped..

Ace: Asambe ke (let's go)

Me: Wait it's not finished

Ace: Iyeke moss uwaphethe amanye (leave it you have other ones)

Me: Hai maan you don't waste alcohol

Ace: Ok qeda ke (finish it then)

I kept on drinking and I don't know why it was hard to finish, Ace really wanted to leave..

Just as I was about to finish a red Polo pulled up, and when Ace was holding my waist helping me to stand up the doors opened Nazo came out, he was with a friend.

My heart immediately sank lower to my knees, I sat on Ace again..

Ace: Vele udakwe ngaleyoy ndlela yokuthi awusa

kwazi nokuma (You that drunk that you can't even stand up)

I don't know why I was this scared, I mean Nazo means nothing to me. I shouldn't even allow his presence to make me this uncomfortable...

Friend 1: Ace nceda omunye umntwana (Help her)

Ace: Nomvelo sukuma sambe (Nomvelo stand up, let's go)

My mind just froze..

Groovy: Yini kanti? (what's wrong)

Me: That's.. That's Niso's Brother

Groovy turned..

Groovy: Kuphi?

Me: The one.. The one wearing a green tshirt

Groovy: Serious? Wuye uNazo lo uNiso beka hlala akhuluma ngaye (Serious that's the

Nazo, Niso has always talked about)

Me: Yes that's his Brother

Groovy: Akaphenduke phela ngimbone kahle
(Can he turn so that I can see him)

It's more like he heard her, he did turn and saw us..

Groovy: Yiiii kanti naye muhle so? Kahle kahle umama walaba fana ubani ye? (So he is also handsome, who is their Mother)

I saw him saying something to his friend and then they made their way to us..

Me: Shit!!

I mumbled under my breath..

Ace: And then manje? (and now)

My heart started beating very fast as they got closer, Nazo didn't seem happy. He has this intimidating look of his and right now he was about to give me a heart attack. His friend was

the one who started talking..

Friend: Fede majita? Niphethe no Nice ngapha (how are you guys, you even have a lady in your company)

Then the friend looked at me..

Friend: ngapha Niphethe no Nomvelo (on the other hand you have Nomvelo)

Nazo's eyes were fixed on me..

Groovy: Sanibonani (Greetings)

The other guys greeted too..

Friend: Mina vele bathi nguShine igama, ngiyaqala ukunibona la esgodini sethu (they call me shine and it's my first time seeing you guys here in our section)

Groovy: Vele thina siphuma ngapha emaExt (we from another hood)

Shine nodded..

Ace: So singanicenda bafethu? (can we help you guys)

Shine: Aii nje besithi... (We were saying)

Ace kissed me on my neck because he saw that I was uncomfortable..

Ace: uRight? (are you okay)

I faked a smile and nodded...

Shine: Sek'bekwa nama kiss entameni ngathi kuzonyiwa nje (Now there's kisses on the neck, things are about to get out of control)

Ace: Kunani umuntu makacabuza umuntu wakhe? (what's wrong with a guy kissing his girl)

Shine laughed..

Shine: Umuntu wakho? (Your person)

Ace: Yini uyagoloza? (are you saying something)

Shine chuckled and shook his head..

Shine: Ukhuluma nami Skhokho? (are you

talking to me)

Nazo's look was still piercing through my skin....

Groovy: Ake nimeni (stop it)

She looked at Shine..

Groovy: bhut'wam asizanga ngokulwa (my Brother we not here to fight)

One of Ace's friends started talking too..

Friend: Aii asambeni.. (let's go)

Ace: Nje vele kuxabanelwa ukuthi umuntu ubambe umuntu wakhe (Now we fighting because I am holding my person close to me)

He kissed me on my cheek..

Ace: Yazini baby Asambe (Babe let's go)

Groovy: Hau akenimeni sisaziwisa (wait we still having fun)

Ace: No uzwile uBaby ufuna ukuyolala (you heard Nomvelo wants to go and sleep)

He kissed me again on my cheek while squeezing my breast, Ace was really trying to show off..

Nazo: Ngathi lento seyizong'bangela iscefe (this thing is going to irritate me now)

He made his way to us and then he grabbed my arm not in a rough manner, he pulled me a little from him so that I could stand up..

Ace: Ayii entlek yini manje? (what's wrong now)

Ace also stood up mad and he looked at Nazo, Nazo gave him a serious look without saying anything. One of his friends stood up and Shine sat him down again..

Shine: hayi namahlanje Skhokho (not today)

Ace: Entlek ucabanga ukuthi wenzani? (what do you think you doing)

The way that Nazo was so serious I thought he was gonna push me aside and then punch Ace

right across the face, I was keeping the peace by standing in between them. Ace took out his pocket knife..

Ace: Makushuba Makushube (let it get ugly)

Groovy: Ace ima kancane tuu (Ace wait a minute)

Ace: No angeke amane nje athathe umabhebeza kanjalo nje, phela ngimbhejile lomuntu (He can't just take her away, I've spent enough money on her)

Shine: Umbheje ngamalini? (how much did you spend on her)

Ace: No imali eningi kabi (it's a lot of money)

Nazo looked at me..

Nazo: What did he buy you?

I wanted the ground to swallow me, this was getting out of control..

Me: 12 pack ye flying fish

Shine: Agh suka ukhalela iR158 (you complaining for R158)

Nazo: You heard that? You worth R158

He took out his wallet and took out R200, he stretched his hand to Ace and Ace stretched his hand to take the money, Nazo let it go before he could take it from him..

Ace: yini manje indaba zok'delela? (why you being disrespectful)

Nazo: Entlek ithi ngiringe nawe (let me talk to you)

Ace picked up the R200 and they walked away to a more hidden place to talk, Shine looked at me..

Shine: Hai nawe uyahlupha for iR158 nje (you problematic just for R158)

Friend 2: Manje siyahamba noma? (Are we leaving or what)

Groovy: Asimeleni uAce (let's wait for Ace)

They all just engaged in a random conversation while waiting for Ace..

I was the only one standing now, I was feeling very ashamed and cold at the same time..

Ace and Nazo came back after a while..

Ace: As'vayeni (let's go)

Groovy: Sekuyahanjwa nje just like that (We leaving just like that)

They took their alcohol while complaining, Ace also took the Flying fish that he bought me and they made their way to his car. Groovy hugged me..

Groovy: Bye mngani (Bye friend)

Me: Bye

They all left..

Shine: Ya neh

Nazo: Let me take this one home ngizok'cava jumpas (let me take this one home, I'll see you)

We walked to his car. I don't know what was being discussed but after Nazo said "you worth R158" that's when it clicked to me that Ace had other plans that what I had, he wanted to sleep with me. Was he even going to drive me home?

I was very ashamed and embarrassed, I didn't know what to say to Snazo. In the car he was playing music but the volume was very low, and I was sitting there searching for the right explanation..

Me: I..

I cleared my throat..

Me: I didn't know that he wanted to sleep with me

He didn't say anything..

Me: He knows Groovy, he is Groovy's friend and

I thought that he was being Generous by buy-
Nazo: ng'cela ungang'bangeli umsido Nomvelo
(Don't make noise for me)

It's very difficult to talk to Nazo, he can politely
switch you off with just one line..

.

To be continued

Please note that insert 69 will drop tonight, to
make it up for yesterday's insert. I was too tired
when I got back from work that I passed out
early, let me type for my other page and then I'll
type insert 69 after.

Thank you for your patience

69

NOMVELO

Nazo took me home and when I say home he
literally came inside with me, how bad can this
situation get? My Grandmother looked worried,

she was so worried that she was pacing up and down I am without a doubt that she might've called the police. That's how dramatic she is sometimes..

Grams: Velo ubuyaphi? (where are you coming from)

I sat down..

Me: I was out with friends

I still felt a bit out of place, but not as serious as how it was when I was at Gazibo..

Grams: Out with friends? Out with friends yani? Yokudakwa? (out with friends to get drunk)

I just wanted to go to bed and sleep, but she's not going to make that easy for me..

Grams: uDanger is driving around looking for you maan!! Haisuka Nomvelo!!

Snazo must be enjoying this because he was just standing there by the door with his arms

folded..

Grams: Did you take money from my purse?

Me: I borrowed it

Her: You didn't borrow it you stole it because you took it without asking, ngeka yok'dakwa nje! (just because of alcohol)

She pulled the chair and sat down while crying..

Her: Mina ang'sazi Nkosi yam' (I don't know anymore my Lord)

Me: I will pay you back Duchess

She threw the dish swab at me...

Her: Ngani? (with what) you lost a good job ngenxa yok'dakwa (you lost a good job because of alcohol)

She is just being way too dramatic..

Nazo exhaled..

Nazo: I will make sure that she pays you back

every cent, no make that double what she took because I found her a job

I turned and looked at him..

Me: You did?

Him: Yes it's a 8:00-17:00 shift, if you lucky you will knock off at 16:00. You starting tomorrow morning by 7am you have to be ready I'll pick you up

Grams: Ohh Nkosi yam' ngiyabonga Snazo, ngibonnga nokuthi umlethe ekhaya (Ohh God thank you Snazo, thank you for even bringing her back at home)

Me: If I may ask what kind of job is it?

He raised one of his eyebrow..

Grams: Take this job and stop asking a lot of questions!!!

Me: What if..

Grams: What if yani? If Snazo was

untrustworthy he wouldn't have brought you home safe! I know him from when he was young, his Grandmother was my best friend Snazo is a very good young man

Snazo: Thank you.. Uhm.. I should go

He looked at me..

Snazo: I'll come and get you tomorrow morning 7am sharp

He looked at my Grandmother..

Nazo: Senizosala kahle MaNgcobo (Good night MaNgcobo)

Grams: Uhambe kahle (Go well)

He looked at me..

Him: 7am I don't wanna come here and hear stories

I kept quiet and he walked out while closing the door behind him..

Grams: Kanti kukhona abak'khonayo (At least there's people who can handle you)

She stood up and went to lock the door..

Grams: awuhambe uyogeza bese uyadla then uyolala, uzwile ukuthi bazokulanda ngo 7 ekseni (Go bath then eat so you can sleep, you heard that he will fetch you at 7am)

Me: You really trust him?

Grams: uNazo is a very good boy though he made bad decisions in the past mara he is a very good boy, he grew up right in front of me and he loves his family more than anything. He has a big heart, he always wants to help out. According to him he could help out the whole world if he could, he has respect for elders and he loves his family more than anything. He treated his Grandmother and Mother with respect, there way he was with his Grandmother I am very sure that he will make a good

husband for someone one day. He was blessed with a very good heart isizukulu sakaButhelezi, no wonder why his Grandmother's gift was passed on to him. God didn't make a mistake

Me: What gift?

Her: Awugeza!! (go and bath)

My Grandmother speaks very highly of Snazo, "He treated his Grandmother and Mother with respect. He is caring and has good heart" He is this and that, I see none of that. He is very arrogant, very bossy, and very intimidating. That's all I know about him..

—

NOMSA

I really thought that maybe selling my house was going to my financial breakthrough. I had already made plans for the money and a set back arose. The house was already bought by a newlywed couple, they bought it through the

bank and they not able to move in because there's a lot that's happening. It's a problem after a problem. Apparently the water pipes burst and the house was flooded, from that 900 000 the house agent took some of that money to fix the damage. When we had sorted that issue out another one arose, it was a problem after a problem that we were now down to R500 000. They forfeited giving me my share because they say that I knew very well that the house had problems, hence why I wanted to sell it. They even threatened to take me to court should I try something stupid, and that is reporting them to the authorities. I had to make ends meet, I can't sit around at home and do nothing. I have to help around so while I'm still looking for a job I will be selling my clothes just so that I can be able to buy food at home. My Mom is no longer working so responsibilities are all mine..

I was at my station next to the community hall

were people get their sassa money. So far I had made R70, I arrived here at 6:30am to sell home made vetkoeks to everyone while they standing in the queue then later at 9am I will start selling the clothes..

Life can really humble you..

–

SNAZO

At 7am I went and fetched Nomvelo to my surprise she was ready. I haven't found her a job but we will drive to Dawn's workplace and see if he can't find her something that will keep her busy up until 17:00. At least when she's at work she won't have time to drink and act crazy. I haven't told Gugu about the Nomvelo issue, I still don't know how to break it down to her without shocking her..

Me: Let's go

I'm trying to be firm with her hoping that she will

stop all this madness, Nomvelo is very stubborn if I could laugh with her she won't take things serious. I drove off with her Grandmother waving goodbye to us, she looked relieve that at least Nomvelo has something that will keep her busy so that she can stop drinking. As we were driving to Dawn's place I was thinking of what I'm going to say to him because our last encounter I was very rude to him. Nomvelo brought me back from thinking a lot when she started singing along out loud to the song she was listening too, through her headsets..

Her: "Santa tell me if you really there.. Don't make me fall inlove if he won't be here next year"

I looked at her she had her eyes closed and was moving her head together with her shoulders, she was really into her songs I let her enjoy the moment while I listened to her. She wasn't a good singer..

Her: "I'm avoiding any missleto until I know it's true love that he thinks of, so next Christmas I'm not alone.. Santa tell me if you really there don't make me fall inlove again if he won't be here next year"

She opened her eyes and stopped singing, she started humming and I acted like I didn't hear nothing. She took the headsets off..

Me: Do you want something to eat?

She ignored me..

Me: Nomvelo??

Her: I don't know if I should answer you the last thing I want is for you to say "Nomvelo ung'bangela umsindo"

I don't know but I chuckled at that statement. She put her headsets again..

I noticed that she had Niso's bracelet around her wrist, she kept on touching it and looking at

it. The moment turned a bit sour, she was very quiet now..

I noticed tears, she turned her head and stared out of the window. She was listening to one of his old favorite song "50cent_Ayo Technology" I couldn't hear much but I heard the beat a little and I knew it was the song. Luckily I have all his favorite songs on my USB so I played it and sang along..

As I was jamming to it, while hitting the stirring wheel every now and then she turned and looked at me. She took off her headsets.

Me: "Baby this a new age, you like my new craze.. Let's get together maybe we can start a new phase.. The smokes got the club all hazy, spotlights don't do you justice baby

Why don't you come over here, you got me saying.."

Took her long enough to notice, she started

singing along too and I noticed that it lightened her mood a bit..

Us:" Aayooh, I'm tired of using technology, why don't you sit down on top of me Aayooh, I'm tired of using technology, I need you right in front of me"

She kept quiet as I tackled the next part alone..

Me: "Ooh, she wants it, uh uh, she wants it
Ooh, she wants it, (so), I gotta give it to her,
Ooh, she wants it, uh uh, she wants it
Ooh, she wants it, (so), I gotta give it to her,
Your hips, your thighs, you got me hypnotized,
let me tell you.."

She buried her face in her hands while laughing and shaking her head, I got her hands off..

Her: Gosh stop it!! It's awkward singing this with you (laughing)

Me: Let me tell you something" Baby this a new age, you like my new craze.. Let's get together maybe we can start a new phase"

She continued laughing and avoided eye contact as she tried to hide herself from blushing, but I had restrained her hands from doing that..

Her: Stop it!!!! You so annoying right now I don't wanna hear you sing that.. (laughing)

.

To be continued

No edits

Night

70

SNAZO

We finally arrived at the studio Nomvelo was in a better mood now since the whole singing thing in the car. I opened the door and we

walked in, when Zeash the receptionist saw me she lost it. She came to me running..

Her: Nazo!!

She is a very friendly person and gets along with almost everyone..

We hugged..

Me: Hey

Her: It's been a while since I last heard from you, are you okay?

We broke the hug..

Me: Yeah I'm okay

Her: I heard about your Brother.. I'm sorry

Me: It's okay.. Thank you

She looked at Nomvelo..

Me: This is Nomvelo and Nomvelo meet Zeash, she practically runs the place

Zeash gave her a handshake..

Zeash: You pretty.. Never seen such a pretty dark skinned girl

Velo: Thank you very much.. You pretty too

Me: Is Dawn around?

Zeash: Yes he is in his office

I looked at Velo..

Me: You can sit down I'll be right back

I then looked at Zeash..

Me: Keep an eye on her for me please

Zeash: I'll do that

I made my way to Dawn's office, his door was open and he was on the phone.

Dawn: At what time is the Dr's appointment tomorrow?... No I will definitely be there

I knocked and made my way in..

Dawn: Okay I'll call you back there's someone here to see me.. I love you too.. Bye

He put the phone down.. It was a very difficult moment I mean the last time we saw each other it didn't go well, I offended him..

Me: Zeash let me in

Him: What can I do for you?

Me: Look man that day I.. I wasn't myself but that..

Him: Don't even think about it, apologizing will be more awkward for me than it will be for you so it's cool I understand

That was a relief..

Him: How are you holding up?

Me: I'm getting there, taking it one day at a time

Him: So are you officially back?

Me: Yeah.. I'm back

Him: That's good

Me: I'm actually here to ask you for a favour

Him: I'm listening

Me: I am here with Nomvelo and I was wondering if you could give her a job or something

Him: I don't think I'm following

Me: Ever since she lost Niso she has been struggling a lot emotionally she has resorted into alcohol as a source of comfort I need her to keep busy. If she could be away from temptation everyday from 7:00-16:00 she might fight this habit of drinking

Him: I don't know what she can do around here plus she's not even in the budget

Me: Don't worry about that I will pay her, maybe R4 000 a month, make it like it came from you

He laid back on the chair..

Him: I don't know maybe she can be my PA

Me: That's a good idea maybe she can also help

you with exorcisms plus she needs to understand my world a bit better so that when the time comes it will be easier for to follow through

Him: That's a good idea, dangerous but it's a good one.. Do you think she will agree?

Me: She has no choice

I stood up..

Me: You can come and meet her

We walked out of the office to the reception..

Me: Velo

She looked at us..

Me: I want you to meet Dawn, he owns this studio.. He is the boss

She stood up..

Me: Dawn this is Nomvelo

He gave her a handshake..

Dawn: Nice to meet you

Velo: Same here

Me: Let me talk to you

We moved away a bit from Dawn..

Me: I'll come and pick you up later at around 16:00, I'm going to need you to behave and give it your 100%

She nodded..

Me: I'm serious Velo

Her: I'll be fine Nazo

I turned back and went to Dawn..

Me: I'll come and get her later and she's a bit stubborn but don't let her get to you

Dawn: We will manage.. Don't worry

I just hope that she will cooperate..

—

NOMSA

I was missing JJ, he was not a good person but life was better with him around. Much better than what I'm going through right now.

I was selling my best clothes at a cheaper price, clothes that I spent a fortune on I was selling them at a very cheap price and no one was buying as yet. People would just pick up and look at them, some even wanted me to reduce the price even more it was a disaster. My phone rang, it was Thuli..

Me: Thuli

Her: Ma.. My car broke down

Me: What?

Her: I don't know what's wrong it doesn't want to start

I exhaled..

Me: Where are you?

Her: At school.. It's at the parking lot

Me: Well leave it there and take a taxi home

Luckily the school is not far from home..

Me: At some point we will have to sell it so that you can be able to pay your fees for this year and next year

Her: Can't we get it fixed?

Me: With what money? Haven't you noticed that life has been very difficult for us?

Her: Fine we can sell it then

Me: See you later at home

Her: Okay

I felt tears coming, how did my life get soo messed up??

–

NOMVELO

I wonder what they do around here, it's a small

beautiful studio. This Dawn of a Person seems like a very decent man, how does Nazo know someone like this??

Him: You will be my PA, you will run errands for me and help around here

Me: Okay

Him: You must bring along your Cv

Me: I will

Him: You going to get R4 000 a month, that's your starting salary since you don't have experience

Me: It's okay and thank you for the opportunity

I ran my eyes around and saw a bottle of whiskey right across the room..

Me: What exactly do you do around here?

Him: I am an exorcist

Me: A what?

Him: It means that I ex..

Me: I know what an Exorcist is I just never thought Exorcists exist, thought it was all in the movies

He chuckled..

Him: We do exist and as a matter of fact we will be leaving in 10 minutes time for an exorcism around the neighborhood

Me: "We"

Him: Yes as my assistant you have to be there

Me: Okay let's back it up a bit.. I don't even watch horror movies and now you want me to live one?

Him: Pretty much

Me: What if I get possessed?

Him: I will exorcise you, but make sure that you don't get possessed

Me: Make sure that I don't get possessed? I am not comfortable with this at all

Him: You will be fine

He stood up..

Him: Come I'll introduce you to the rest of the team

–

SNAZO

Starting from today I will be spending a lot of time with Bishop McCarthy at the McCarthy Bible church doing minor sermons. He is my new mentor and I hope we will work well together. I will spend about 3 hours here then when I'm done I'll go and check up on Shine at work. Our business is growing..

Me: I thought I was coming in for a sermon?

Him: There's a youth service later on today at 15:00 and I want you to preach to them

Me: A youth service? What am I going to say to such an age group?

He chuckled..

Him: That's why you here.. I want you to take this time and pray ask for guidance from the holy spirit because honestly our young people are going through a lot, I heard about your Brother's passing and I know it's still a fresh wound maybe that can be your drive. Do you know the phrase "A broken heart can touch another broken heart" and I'm very sorry about your Brother

Me: Thank you

Him: Let me leave you while you connect with heaven.. I'll be right back

He walked out..

—

NOMVELO

I thought that Dawn was joking when he said that he is an Exorcist, but he wasn't. He introduced me to his whole crew including the camera man. Apparently they even have a channel for this, they record some of the Exorcisms and air them. How does he sleep at night?..

Him: These crystals help in trapping the demon, a circle of salt protects you from the demon and this..

He showed me a sign..

Him: We call this the Devil's trap.. Ohw and we going to need this too. Holy water and a cross I packed them..

Him: Don't look so worried you will be fine

Me: I don't think so

Him: You need to know about this incense..

Me: Incense?

Him: You marry an Exorcist or a Preacher or a Prophet

I laughed..

Him: You don't believe?

Me: I'm just imagining myself marrying a Pastor.. That will never happen

Him: Never say never

I picked up the box..

Him: Let's go put everything in the car

I continued laughing.. I just imagine myself marrying a Pastor, what a joke..

.

To be continued

No edits

NOMVELO

I seriously don't know what Nazo thinking bringing me to work here, this was not my cup of tea. I am not a religious Person, at my Uncle's place church was never considered there was never a time were we just prepared ourselves to go to church nor prayed every night. How does Snazo even fit in all of this? What is he doing with Exorcists? It doesn't make sense..

We made our way to the place, The whole entire time I was starring down at Niso's bracelet. I didn't go to his funeral simply because my being there was going to make it seem like I had accepted that he was gone, I didn't wanna accept until days passed by and he wasn't here. I miss his smile, his stubbornness, there way he cared for me, the intimate moments that we both shared. I miss him a lot, he was always

there for me.

Dawn: And we are here

He looked at me..

Him: Are you ready?

Me: Can't I just stay in the car?

Him: No come on, let's go

We climbed off and made our way to the yard, it was an ordinary family house. This is not my thing..

—

DANGER

Nomvelo has been out of control lately and we were struggling to get her on track. I got into her life already when she was old, sometimes discipline to a young woman might bruise our relationship, she will hit me with that card "You weren't even there" she has a lip. Though it was affecting me seeing her breaking like that and

being helpless, my Daughter has been through so much and I wonder if she realizes how strong she is.

Me: Do you think she will commit to this job!

Grams: I hope so, I think she will because Nazo seems to know how to handle her

(Silence)

Grams: I know this is irrational but he might be what she needs.. Someone who is grounded

Me: That doesn't sound right she was with her Brother

Grams: And Niso is not here, it wouldn't be cheating or anything. It is accepted in most black cultures for a man to marry his Brother's wife, in this case Niso and Velo weren't even married

Me: You have soo much faith in this boy

Grams: His Grandmother once told me

something about him that he is destined for greater things and the Pastor was talking about him at church, his past might not be impressive but he changed his ways. He has God's favour upon him even when he walks into the room the atmosphere changes, I don't know why but deep down I feel assured that Nomvelo will be happy and safe with him. He is going to get her into the right track and I will rest in peace the day I die knowing my Grandmother is taken care off

Danger: At the end I just want to see her happy she has been through a lot

Grams: She has I also want to see her happy

–

NOMVELO

Dawn: Thank you

The helper put the tray on the coffee table.

The furniture in this house was vintage, it was clean and seemed very peaceful. The Father of the charge as Dawn would refer to him was sitting across us, he is a pastor at some local church around here. Mr Gubler

Dawn: When did you start noticing that your Son's behavior was changing?

Him: A few months ago actually my eldest Daughter Cheryl is the one who noticed

Cheryl was standing by the door, her outfit was depressing. She was wearing a long skirt and a long sleeve shirt, her hair was neatly tied to a ponytail. I could see that being in the presence of Mr Gubler while wearing a Jean didn't sit well with him, it seems like he practices strict religious rules. Women shouldn't wear pants, they shouldn't wear jewellery now I have once watched a documentary about cults and how religion is used by religious leaders to oppress and discriminate against women. Maybe that's

another reason why I just never took this religion thing seriously..

Dawn: I would like to see your Son if you don't mind

Mr Gubler: Yes please

We stood up..

Mr Gubler: Uhm please no cameras if you don't mind

Dawn: Yes of course

Dawn turned and looked at his crew..

Dawn: You can wait outside please

They made their way out as we made our way to the Son's room, I was terrified. Such things cripple my soul, I am not a fan of horror things. The Father unlocked the bedroom and the first thing I noticed is that it was too dark, no sunlight was coming in.

Mr G: We keep the room dark, he says light

hurts his eyes

Dawn: I understand

Mr Gubler went and lit up 3 candles, they provided partial light. There were marks on the wooden walls more like scratches and also an unusual writing..

Dawn: Latin

He walked to check out the writing and I followed him..

Mr G: He writes on the walls or used too

Dawn: Et angelum perspiciunt lapsum

Mr G: What does that mean?

Dawn: Lucifer, the fallen angel

Mr G: Can you please help my Son?

Dawn looked at him and nodded..

We just moved around and I noticed some empty plates and glasses, Dawn kept on

reading the writings. As we were moving around I noticed some pole at the corner of the room were it was the most darkest, why would they erect a pole inside a bedroom..

Dawn: So where is your Son?

Mr G: He is right there

I heard a chain being dragged across the room and then I heard someone groaning right next to me. I froze with my knees shaking as the groans got more closer, I turned to my right and he was just right next to me. His eyes were very red, he had scratches on his face I don't wanna lie he looked like a monster. I screamed and moved backwards, I couldn't keep my steps accurate that I fell and he just got ontop of me..

Mr G: Rueben Stop!!

I was screaming as he was busy smelling me then he got his disgusting tongue out and licked me on my cheek..

Dawn: Uri!!

I felt a force pushing him off me and he hit the wall then fell, I crawled my way to Dawn and he helped me up..

Me: I wanna get out of here

Dawn: You alright

Me: No I'm not.. I think I'm possessed (Crying)

Dawn: Velo you fine.. You not possessed

We heard him laughing and the chains were dragged again, I moved and stood behind Dawn..

Rueben: Come on I was just greeting you! Now I know better than to harm a Preacher's wife, this whole room would rain down with Warrior Angels but I look forward to always make your acquaintance your highness

I held on to Dawn..

Rueben: Ohh how lovely it is to be divinely protected because of your husband while you

not even a believer.. It amazes me how G-

Dawn: We are not here for that!

Rueben: Ohh yes Dawn old friend! Glad we meet again

Dawn: Meet again?

He laughed..

Rueben: You don't remember all the fun time we had? Anna?

Dawn: Anna? Why would you mention my late Fiancé

It was quiet..

Dawn: Amus?

Rueben: In a flash!!!

He then started laughing again..

Dawn walked out of the bedroom again I was face to face with Reuben, but now he couldn't reach me. The chains restricted him.

Him: You smell nice.. I'm taking your scent with me

I quickly made my way out with Mr Gubler following me, Dawn was pacing up and down at the lounge..

Mr G: What's happening?

Dawn: I once had an encounter with this demon twice

Mr G: Yes?

Dawn: It killed my ex fiancé, when it leaves the body of it's host it leaves too much damage that the soul cannot contain

Me: Can I borrow your phone?

Dawn: I want to call Nazo

He took it out and dialed his number, I took the phone and walked out..

It rang at least 3 times before he picked up..

Nazo: Hello?

Me: It's me..

Nazo: Velo?

Me: Please come and fetch me

Nazo: What happened?

Me: I'm possessed

Nazo: You what?

Me: I have demon spit all over my cheek.. I am possessed I could even feel the demon taking over

He laughed..

Him: Where is Dawn?

Me: Dawn let a demon get ontop of me then lick me and posses me

Him: Nomvelo you not possessed

Me: Why did you bring me here for? Nazo what's happening?

Him: It's your new job I told you

Me: How are you into such things?

I saw Dawn approaching..

Me: Just come and get me!

I hung up..

Dawn: We leaving

Me: You not going to help?

Dawn: Not today.. I need to prepare for this demon

I gave him his phone back..

Him: Are you okay?

Me: No

He looked at me..

Me: I think that I might be possessed

Dawn: Yeah right

He walked to the car and I followed him..

Me: I can feel the demon spit taking over, I can feel my soul being taken over

Dawn: You're not possessed

Me: How sure are you?

Dawn: I'm sure

(silence)

Me: What did he meant that I am a preacher's wife?

He opened the door for me..

Dawn: I don't know.. Demons talk a lot of things that don't make sense

I got in and closed the door..

I looked back at the crew..

Me: Nobody touches me I think I'm possessed

Camera man: Really?

Me: Yes I have demon spit all over my face the demon held me down

Dawn: I told you Nomvelo.. You not possessed
He started the car and drove off..

.

To be continued

No edits

72

NOMVELO

We got back to the studio and Dawn was still down, I could see that what happened there got him in a very bad mood. There's a lot that lies behind him and that demon, seems like he has faced it before. Zeash looked surprised to see us walking in..

Zeash: Why so early? How did it go?

Me: It didn't go well.. I even think that I'm possessed

Dawn: She's not possessed

He walked straight to his office. I went to the counter at the reception to talk more to Zeash..

Zeash: what happened?

Me: Well the Demon was all over me, licking me and smelling me it was very disturbing

Zeash: Where was Dawn when all that happened?

Our Voices were very low because we didn't want him to hear us..

Me: It seems like he has a personal vendetta with the demon because he didn't even exorcise it, he just walked out

Zeash: That's a first he usually d-

Dawn walked in and we pretended as if like we were getting some work down..

Zeash: So these ones you just file them here and those ones you put them in that drawer

Me: Okay

Dawn: I'm going out for a bit.. Zeash please let Nomvelo go through the emails and choose 3 cases for us for our next Exorcism

Zeash: Ohh uhm yes I'll do that

Dawn: I'll be back

He walked out..

Zeash: Come

We went to Dawn's office and I sat at his desk..

Zeash: So you login and open all the emails then pick 3 cases.. Some other emails are just people being people some pull stunts and what not

Me: How will I even know which ones to pick?

Zeash: Just go with your gut feeling and then call the person and find out more that will help you to pick the right case

I don't know what I was doing..

Zeash: I'll be at the reception if you need anything, the username and password are at the notice board

Me: Okay

She smiled and then walked away. I looked at the laptop and didn't even know where to start, my eyes wandered around until they stopped on the whiskey. I tried to ignore it but I couldn't, I stood up and went to pour myself some then I gulped it down quickly. It felt so heavenly, something about it that goes straight to the soul..

–

SNAZO

The Youth gathered at the auditorium at the required time, it was about 30 of them. I spent almost my entire morning and half of the afternoon praying and searching deeper within me for a topic but I came up with nothing, I

didn't know what I was going to say. I didn't know why the holy spirit had suddenly gone quiet when I needed him the most. I stood in front of everyone and looked at them as they were waiting for me to preach for them, this is a different group of people. At their age they going through a lot and it is important that I deliver something that will build them, strengthen and help them to carrying on...

Me: Good morning

They greeted back..

Me: My name is Snazo and I am conducting today's youth service I'm standing here because I have to preach I have to do my duties as a preacher

Bishop McCarthy was sitting at the front..

Me: I haven't been ordained a preacher just as yet

They laughed..

Me: But please do take whatever I'm going to say and let it stick with you

Them laughing here and there eased the tension up a bit. I moved from where I was standing and walked around a little without saying anything, they waited for me to start.

Me: I am not going to preach today but we going to talk and you will realize that the talk will be worth more than preaching for now

I saw a few nodding their heads..

Me: I would like everyone to reflect back on their life, date back to when you were young up until your current age. You were born into this world not to increase the number of human beings, God wasn't bored and decided that let me keep myself busy by creating this certain person... You were divinely planned and you exist today because God wanted you to be here, you were never a mistake. Whatever happens in

your life or whatever is happening in your life right now and you feel like you can't make it, you feel like you can't go on anymore always know that you not a mistake. You don't exist by mistake. Unfortunately life doesn't come with a manual and the devil doesn't come with a warning, he's attacks are always unexpected and they're always straight. You need to understand you're God's creation, you're the perfection that he could never achieve and as long as you're God's perfect image he will always try to destroy you. That is why the world is what it is today because he is trying his hardest to destroy you everyday. When it comes to young people he often attacks the mind, depression has been his greatest weapon that he is using so that most souls could end their lives, he wants you to play God on yourself end a life that was given to you. A life that you need to nature and preserve everyday. Committing suicide is simply saying "God I'm giving up on

you, I'm giving up on the dream that you had for me. I am saying what I'm going through is greater than me, and it is certainly greater than you, I have given the devil an upper hand to destroy the perfection that you have created" ..

Everyone was quiet and listening to me..

Me: Not so long ago I lost my Brother, he was very close to my heart and I gave up on everything. I wanted nothing anymore to do with God or my gift but then I realized something I am giving in to what the devil wants, as long as you still living in this world he will always attack you. You will always be an enemy to him, the best way to fight back is waking up everyday and trusting God that you will get through whatever that you going through. There's more than one chapter in the Bible were God says "Fear not" actually living in fear you disobeying because God says it clearly that "Fear not", take it as a command obey the command and you

will always conquer. When situations come affirm it "Fear not, for I am with you" say it everyday until you believe it deep down, you're bigger than what you going through. It might seem as if like you will never make it but trust me when I say "this too shall pass" whatever you do guard your heart and remember while you waiting on God, God might be waiting on you too. He is waiting on you to trust him and be the conquerer that he created, you can never live a life where you won't experience storms but God's grace and Favour will always be upon you. God's silence doesn't mean he has left you, you will get through the stormy weather. The sun will shine and you will even forget that it was raining, all you have to do is to have faith in him. When you feel confused, when your mind is clouded by negative thoughts, when you broken look up and trust him for he will never leave you nor forsake you

By the time my mouth closed the whole auditorium gave me a standing ovation, deep down I knew that my first sermon was supposed to come from the bottom of my heart. I wasn't supposed to prepare it but I was meant to speak from the bottom of my heart..

"Well done Beloved.."

—

NOMVELO

Zeash knocked at the door, I shifted my eyes from the laptop and looked at her..

Her: I'm getting everyone lunch can I get you something?

I was tipsy from the whiskey that I've been stealing. She made her way in..

Zeash: We have monthly budget here for all the employees to get lunch everyday, so you can order anything that's not more than R150

She handed me the Menu, was Roman's pizza, Debonairs, KFC, steers and Galitos..

Me: I'll just have a burger, chips, and a cool drink from steers

Her: Alright... Are you winning?

Me: I'm getting there

She looked at me..

Me: What?

Her: Are you okay?

I faked a smile..

Me: Yes I'm okay

She slowly nodded..

Her: I'll be right back then

She walked away, I sighed in relief that was close..

I stood up and went to have more of the whiskey..

–
NOMSA

I went back home I had made R200 today, I have to use some of that money to buy food buy a braai pack and other things that we need at home. I went to the mall with my Sister Ntokozo, she let me keep my R200 and offered to buy groceries..

Her: Kuya kanjani? (how is it going)

Me: Hai kunzima Ntokozo (it's difficult) I don't even know what to do anymore

Her: I was thinking yazi

Me: About?

Her: Maybe you should see someone then do a traditional ceremony to beg the ancestors, hai khona Sisi this is not normal

Ntokozo might be right, a traditional ceremony might do. Why didn't I think of that?

.

To be continued

73

SNAZO

I was having a small chat with Bishop McCarthy about where too from here, we were having something to eat at some restaurant it was just after 16:00..

Him: You did well today didn't expect such a heartwarming youth service, you spoke directly from the heart

Me: Thank you, I didn't know what I was going to say until I started talking

Him: It was very motivating and I have no doubt that you going to were called for this, this is where you belong

Me: Thank you

(Silence)

Me: Where too from here?

Him: You meant to proceed with your gift, you need to start your own church soon and do more sermons while delivering God's children from the hand of the enemy but that needs to be done after you have taken a wife, you need your wife to always be at your right hand side while you carry on doing God's work

Me: That's going to take a bit of time, Nomvelo is not ready she's currently going through a lot and.. It's going to be difficult for her to accept my marriage proposal

Him: I understand but God wouldn't have chosen her for you if it wasn't meant to be, everything will fall into place just keep on with your work and your sermons and let fate do everything else

I looked at the time..

Me: I have to go.. I have to fetch her from work

Him: I will see you tomorrow and thank you again for today

Tomorrow I meant to go to some hospital, as I was praying earlier on I had a vision about some particular hospital that I need to visit tomorrow..

–

NOMSA

Ntokozo kept on looking at me as we were cooking so that I could go and talk to our Mother about consulting a sangoma and doing a traditional ceremony just so that my ancestors can be with me again and be rid of this dark cloud that has been following me..

It won't be easy talking to my Mother about this especially considering the fact that she's not into tradition, she doesn't fully believe in ancestors. I wouldn't say it's a religious thing for her to deny the existence of ancestors but

her church is very grounded and they have strict rules that they have to follow..

Ntokozo: You have to talk to her, you know you can't do the ceremony here without her permission

She was putting me in a very difficult situation but either way I need to talk to her, I can't do anything around here without her permission after all it's her house..

I made my way to the living room, she was watching TV while drinking rooibos tea..

I sat down..

Me: Ma

She looked at me..

Me: Beng'cela ukukhuluma nawe (I would like to discuss something with you)

She gave me her full attention..

Me: Ma I feel like.. Honestly speaking things

haven't been going well for me ever since my Husband passed on, it's like I have this dark cloud following me. Nothing of mine is working out and I am tired of what's happening, I have a lot on my shoulders and I think it's time I seek help

Her: Seek help?

Me: I would like to see a Sangoma and then do a traditional ceremony for the ancestors just to cleanse myself from th-

Her: Heeeeeeeee!!!! Imihlolo yami le! Ngaze ngalingeka (I am being tested)

Me: Ma please...

Her: Nomsa ngakukhuza kudala ngalento yakho no JJ (I long reprimanded you about your relationship with JJ)

I didn't need a lecture..

Her: Whatever is happening to you is happening

because you invited it into your life, his sins are catching up with you. You were in union with this man while you didn't even know how he made his money you enjoyed everything that he was doing for you and now that you paying for your sins you wanna disturb the dead resting peacefully? No sangoma is going to help you, no traditional ceremony will help you because that's not where your problem lies. You just need to find the people you have wronged and ask for forgiveness and then forgive yourself too so that things can go well with you too

Me: Ma..

Her: We not going to waste money that we don't even have for your own mistakes, I warned you but no money and greed was more important to you now suffer the consequences

She picked up her cup from the table and drank from it..

Her: If you want to do the ceremony do it outside there on the street not here in my house!

I knew she was going to be very difficult about this..

–

NOMVELO

I slowly opened my eyes and Dawn was partially leaning against the table with his arms folded and starring at me. I didn't even know that I had passed out on the small couch in his office. I was still feeling a bit out of place, I must've have went hard on the whiskey. I sat up straight..

Him: Hi

Me: Hi

This was embarrassing..

Him: Almost finished my whiskey

I kept quiet..

Him: It was a gift from a client, I don't really drink so I keep it there for the camera crew. After a hectic Exorcism they drink a bit to take the edge off and you just..

He whistled..

Him: You just went hard on it harder than them I still kept quiet..

Him: Pain is not nice, no one wants to wake up every morning with their heart heavy and eyes full of tears. Sometimes you cry so much that you even get tired of crying and you become numb, you don't have any will to keep on living. You suffocate and lose your breath, you just want something to help you whisk you away from reality something that will make you forget for that time being because life has become so difficult to face sober minded. You get scared of what you might do and you get trapped deep inside those negative thoughts, all you want is

for the pain to go away.. That's all you want for all the nightmare to go away. I'm sorry that you going through whatever you going through, I understand how it's like to lose someone that you made your life. When my Fiancé died I became self destructive, didn't believe that I will ever love another as much as I loved her but hey..

He waves his hand..

Him: I'm married to an amazing woman, she might not be like Anna but she's amazing in her own way and I love her very much

I wiped my tears..

Her: It might seem as if like I'm just talking a lot of rubbish but.. Love will find you again and you will even forget that you once hurt like this, no one will ever take his place but someone else can love you just as much if you allow yourself to be loved again

I shook my head..

Me: I'm just tired and I don't think I'll ever be in a relationship, I don't wanna give my heart away and be hurt again because the pain is very lethal

Him: I know b-

Nazo knocked once on an already wide open door and then made his way in. I faced the other way and wiped my tears..

Nazo: Good evening

Dawn: Hey

Nazo: Everything okay?

Dawn looked at me..

Dawn: Yeah everything is fine was just discussing the Exorcism with Nomvelo, the demon really got to her

Nazo: How did that go?

Dawn: We didn't do the Exorcism

Nazo buried his hands deep in his pockets, he was wearing all formal today. He really looked good I never thought that he had class..

Nazo: What really happened?

Dawn: It's a bit of a long story I'll tell you some other time

He nodded..

Dawn: And you? How was the serm-

Nazo cleared his throat..

Dawn: I meant how was the service with your client at work today?

Nazo: Now that doesn't sound right, sounds like I was prostituting myself

They both laughed..

Nazo: It went well

Dawn: That's good.. That's very good was the GOAT there?

Nazo: No.. He wasn't

I was lost, they were definitely speaking in codes..

Nazo looked at me..

Him: Are you ready to go?

I nodded while standing up..

Dawn: I'll see you tomorrow

Me: Tomorrow it is and thank you

Dawn: You welcome

Nazo looked at me..

Him: Are you alright?

Me: Yes I'm good.. Let me get my things

I walked out to the reception to get my bag..

Zeash: Leaving already?

Me: Yes

Zeash: What happened with you? When I got

back you had passed out

Me: Ya I.. I don't feel well

She chuckled..

Zeash: I also wouldn't feel well if I almost drank the whole bottle of whiskey

I looked at her..

Zeash: What were you thinking?

Me: Excuse me?

Her: I..

Me: We not that close for you to be addressing me like that what? I can hear you judging me from the back of your head

Her: Ohh my word chill girl what wrong did I say? You did drink the whiskey didn't you?

Me: How is it any of your business?

Her: Why you so sensitive

Me: I am not sensitive I just don't go well with

People who think they better than others, at the end of the day you also have your own demons!

Her: Yhooooo!! Bring it down it was not that deep!!

Dawn and Nazo made their way to the reception..

Dawn: What's going on here?

Me: Next time don't judge me because you don't even know what I'm going through

Zeash: I wasn't judging you sweetness I just said you almost drank the whole bottle of whiskey where is the lie in that?

Nazo: What?

I started hitting her with my bag..

Me: Don't do that!! Don't mess with me or I'll hurt you!! I'll hurt you very bad!!

Zeash: Ohh my word what's wrong with you?

Dawn: Hey.. Hey.. Hey!

Me: I swear I'll hurt you

Dawn got me away from her, Zeash laughed..

Zeash: I don't even know what I did.. Something is wrong with her

Nazo look at me and shook his head, he then made his way to the door..

Nazo: Soo disappointing

Dawn: We will discuss this tomorrow

Me: We not discussing anything because I'm never coming back here!! Ever!!

I walked to the door.. Zeash continued laughing..

Zeash: But what did I do? She has serious issues

I turned and looked at her..

Me: If you trying to impress Nazo dont use me!

I've seen how you were all over him when we walked in this morning, if you want him get him but don't use me! That's very low

Zeash: What? (laughing)

I quickly walked outside before I exploded. Everything appeared blurry because tears were burning my eyes..

I leaned against the wall and looked at my wrist, I touched his wrist bracelet that I had on. I wish he was here, I am what I am today because of him. He had to leave me..

Nazo hooted and I made my way to the car, I don't care about anything anymore I just wanna be at home in my bed. To hell with everyone!!

.

To be continued

No edits

SNAZO

Nomvelo's behavior and the fact that she was drinking at work really upset me. She's very disrespectful, very childish and has an awful attitude. Sometimes I feel like I could slap her right across her face so that she can get a wake up call. Our drive back home was very quiet I was happy that she didn't say anything because hell would've broken lose, I don't even know if she can be trusted at this point she's very irresponsible.

I followed her as she walked in the yard, we made our way into the house and she just passed her Grandmother and Nkuli in the kitchen as if like they didn't exist..

Grams: Hau! How was work?

A few seconds later we heard her banging the bedroom door, something inside of me moved..

Grams: Eish wena!! Uzophula umnyango wam!

(you going to break my door)

She looked at me..

Her: How was work? What happened?

I exhaled..

Me: Nomvelo is very disrespectful

Grams: Don't tell me that she ruined things for herself at work?

Me: I hope she adjusts. Just please make sure that she is ready tomorrow morning at 7am, she might need to be woken up

Grams: I'll make sure that she's ready by then..
Thank you very much Nazo

Me: You welcome

I looked at Nkuli..

Me: Hey

Her: Hi

Me: I should get going.. Have a good night

Grams: Thank you again, I really appreciate you helping us out with Nomvelo

Me: It's okay

I walked out and made my way home. I thought I had all the answers to certain things but with Nomvelo, I don't know. I don't know what I'm going to do with her...

I got home and made my way inside, I went straight to the living room and threw myself on the couch..

Gugu: The sermon was that bad?

Me: The sermon was good it went well

Gugu: So why the long face?

I sat up straight..

Me: We need to talk

Gugu: Err okay.. It sounds serious

Me: It is serious

She had worry written all over her face...

Her: What's going on?

Me: I don't even know how to say this

Her: Just say it already

Me: You know that soon I'm going to be ordained a preacher, I will have to move to Mpumalanga and start my own church there

Her: Yes I know

Me: That won't happen, not until I get married

Her: I do know that too, as a religious leader you need a strong woman behind you someone who will help you and mother the church

Me: Yeah that

Her: Are you seeing someone that you ready to marry?

Me: My situation is a bit different

Her: Ung'lahlile (You have lost me)

Me: I have already been let in on who I should marry

Her eyes widened a little..

Her: Uhm okay.. Who?

(Silence)

Me: Nomvelo

Her: Which one?

I looked at her..

Her: Wait! uNomvelo?

Me: I also don't understand Gugu but it is what it is, apparently this is how me and her were supposed to meet. It is by divine plan that we should be in union, and that wasn't going to happen if she never dated Niso. She was never his

Her: Wow.. I.. This is...

Me: I know how you feel

Her: What did she say about this?

Me: She doesn't know

Her: Yaah inzima lendaba (This is a difficult matter)

Me: I never asked for this honestly sp-

Her: I know I'm just shocked, but then if it is meant to be who am I to oppose God's plan and purpose with your future

I didn't expect that..

Her: I can say no, but that won't change anything

Me: You right I guess

Her: I just don't imagine Nomvelo being a preacher's wife (laughing)

I laughed too..

Me: It's not that funny

Gugu: It's actually hilarious.. Imagine her in front

of the church speaking, she's just gonna look at everyone and be like "Agh this is not even my style" (laughing)

Me: Or something like "Really Nazo you brought me here for this"

Her: Does she even know how to pray?

Me: I don't think so

Her: Do you even see her that way?

I shrugged my shoulders..

Me: They not lying when they say You can never understand God's ways. I don't know how we going to make it, she's too broken Gugu. She has dedicated her entire being to alcohol, she's disrespectful, she has an attitude, she's too childish. You know she even drank Dawn's whiskey?

Gugu: We all deal with pain differently, you and I might be handling Niso's death better but with

Nomvelo it's different. She never saw her in Prison then the next thing she hears that he is no more, she didn't even come to his funeral she hasn't gotten closure as yet. It will take a while, I believe she will make it but it's going to take a while

Me: We don't have that much time

Her: If it's God's plan then time is always there, you two have to go through this together when you there for her at her lowest it will be easier for her to give in when that time comes

Me: I don't even know how to help her

Her: Nazo there's no scripture in the Bible that's going to help you win her heart, winning Nomvelo over won't be biblically based. It will have to be from you as a man, it might not even be that deep just show her love and affection and that you care, be there for her especially now that she's lost and broken

Me: Sounds so easy

Her: I know how firm you are, loosen the grip a little. If you see her as a wife you will need to stop treating her like a kid. Start treating her like an adult, if you continue being this too firm she will see you as a big Brother, or Niso's big brother who is trying to help her get through whatever she's going through then she will look for someone else when she's fine

Me: I have never had this problems with a girl before, I've always had my way with girls

Her: Not every girl is the same

I laid back on the couch...

Her: You should bring her over for dinner tomorrow

Me: For real?

Her: Yes for real.. She's going to be my future daughter in law phela

Me: I'll bring her over.. You enjoying this aren't you?

She laughed again..

Her: You guys are way too different I wanna see how everything is going to work out

Me: This is not a joke

Her: I know baby but for now it is a bit funny

I got up..

Her: Eat so that we can pray, I wanna wake up early tomorrow morning and clean for my Dau-

Me: Stop it!

I made my way to the kitchen as she continued laughing..

—

NOMVELO

I heard a knock at the door..

Me: Come in

The door opened and Nkuli walked in..

Her: Hey

Me: Hey

She came and sat on the bed, I stopped playing with Niso's bracelet to give her my full attention..

Her: How are you holding up?

I shrugged my shoulders..

Her: Grams said you got a job

Me: Ya but I'm not going back there anymore

Her: Why?

Me: I don't like the environment and people who work there, there's this girl she's very judgemental about everything and I don't think I like her

Her: Did you at least talk to her about that?

Me: I had a physical altercation with her

Her: A physical what? You fight now? (laughing)

Me: Don't laugh... She really pissed me off

Her: I'm sure it's something that can be fixed

Me: We'll see

(Silence)

Her: So you and Nazo seem pretty close?

Me: We not close he drives me to work and then drives me back home, he is the one who got me this job that doesn't even make sense

She nodded..

Her: It's just a work situation right?

Me: Yes what more can it be?

She kept quiet..

Me: Wait.. What? You think that..

Her: Let's face it.. Nazo is Nazo

Me: Yes but I don't see him that way, I'm sure he

also doesn't see me that way

Her: Well I'm glad because it would very awkward, he is my ex and you my cousin

Me: Nazo is very intimidating I wouldn't be in a relationship with him, I wouldn't be free at all. He is too much of a disciplinarian

Her: He comes across like that at first and yes he is a bit intimidating but trust me he is a good boyfriend. Very caring, sweet, lots of fun and I think I miss the sex more than anything.. We used to have the best sex wasn't always the normal routine type of sex, there was time for making love you know as usual then there was time for hardcore fucking, serious fucking with no messy

Me: I don't think I wanna hear that.. Please stop!

Her: Agh you not a kid anymore

Me: I know but it's going to be very awkward the next time I see him

Her: I think I enjoyed the rough sex more than I-

Me: Okay that's enough get out of my bedroom

Her: I thought we were sharing our sexual experiences with the guys we've been with

Me: I definitely don't wanna hear such about him

Her: His current girlfriend is very lucky, he is an amazing guy and very protective

Me: Can we talk about something else?

She looked at me..

Her: Loosen up a bit.. You need to get laid, at least be addicted to the D instead of alcohol

Me: I don't think I want to be in a relationship

Her: I didn't say be in a relationship just casual fucking

Me: Definitely not that

Her: when was the last time you got laid?

Me: Just days before Niso got arrested

Her: That long?

Me: I'm fine please leave

Her: Where am I going to sleep? Phela I'll be here for a few days

Me: You can sleep with your Grandmother

Her: Ungadlali ngam' (don't play with me)

I laughed..

Her: Come on

She got up and came to lie next to me, she put my head on her chest or cleavage rather..

Me: Tell me more about Nazo but not the nasty sex details

Her: What do you wanna know?

Me: What kind of a person is he when he's out of that strict shell of his, what kind of a boyfriend is he? How was your relationship with

him? How did he become a thug? Why is he like this?

Her: Why you so interested all of a sudden?

Me: He is the closest thing I have now to Niso, I wanna see how much they differ from each other

Her: Creepy but okay..

She brushed my hair back while telling me about him as if like he was a bedtime story..

–

SNAZO

I woke up the following morning and prepared myself for the day ahead. Ever since I started acknowledging my gift I have made a difference in other people's lives, but I haven't helped a lot of People as yet...

Today it's going to be different, I have never helped more than just one person in a day. I

hope everything goes well. I was a bit nervous because I don't know how much evil I will encounter, some other sicknesses are demonic than natural. The devil doesn't only capture souls through possession, sometimes he captures souls through sicknesses and other things. Last night I was shown a teenage girl about 16 years of age, very well reserved, still a virgin and suffering from severe bleeding which occurs randomly even after her periods. The bleeding is accompanied by very painful cramps, so much that she is always in and out of the hospital most of the time. I was shown her latest medical report where she is meant to have surgery because Doctors have concluded that she is at a high risk of developing cervical cancer. The real cause of her suffering is not what western medicine has concluded, In actual fact spirituality she has been captured and married off to a demon. She has a spiritual husband which. I know how far fetched this is

going to sound to the Doctors who studied medicine and surgery for 6 years, but just because one doesn't believe in certain things that don't mean those things don't exist. As much as good exists so does evil, but they can't exist alongside each other..

Voice: You know your Mom was right last night I freaked out a bit, I turned around and it was Helena.

Me: Geez! I could've been naked

Her: Will it make you feel better knowing that I am always with you even when you bathing

Me: No.. It doesn't make me feel better

Her: There is no sexual connection between Angels and humans

Me: Don't you have somewhere to be?

Her: I am your guardian Angel where else should I be?

Me: There isn't any other prophet or pastor or preacher that needs guarding other than me?

Her: You one of a few

Me: One of a few?

Her: Gifted to see in the spiritual world, not everyone can see us

Me: And the other few?

Her: They have their own guardian Angels

Me: I'm almost going out

Her: I've come to make sure that you ready for today

Me: I'm fine

Her: You seem a bit nervous

Me: I'll be fine Helena you don't have to hold my hand you could've just sent a good luck text

Her: Angels don't carry cell phones

Me: It was sarcasm

Her: Sarcasm?

I heard a knock at the door..

Me: Bye Helena

Her: No one can see me but you

Me: Bye

I went to open, it was Gugu..

Her: Your shirt is ironed and ready

I let her in..

Me: Thank you

Her: Before you wear it, I don't wanna wrinkle it

She hugged me..

Her: Know that I'm very proud of you

Me: Thank you

She broke the hug..

Her: Go on and make me proud

Me: You not going to cry on me right

I put on the shirt and she buttoned it..

Her: If Ma was here she would be proud too

Me: I know

I do wish that she was here

.

To be continued

75

NOMVELO

I was up at 5am the next day that it even surprised my Grandmother, I had a lot in my mind that I ran out of sleep in the early hours of the morning. Apart from what Nkuli and I were talking about I am often disturbed by unsettling thoughts. I have been through a lot, that perfect life that I once had came crashing down in an instant like a plane and at times I struggle to come into terms with everything that has happened...

Do not be certain about things in your life whether good or bad as life might take a different turn..

I was sitting at the table and eating soft porridge, my Grandmother usually wakes up very early in morning and pray. When she's done praying and reading her Bible she then takes on the house chores, at around 11am or so she will rest. This morning she decided to cook soft porridge for me before I went to work..

Her: You woke up all by yourself this morning..
That's very good

We heard a knock at the door..

Me: I'll go and open

I went to open and it was Danger, we haven't seen much of each other lately because of his demanding job. It's going to be worse now since I also started working..

Him: Hey kiddo

Me: Hey

He greeted my Grandmother too..

Grams: I made some porridge sit down and I'll dish up for you

He had a Vodacom plastic with him..

Me: What's that?

Him: This is for you

Me: A phone?

Him: Yes.. A better phone

I took the plastic from him..

Him: Something to say we proud of you for getting another job, I know life is not easy but thank you for trying and stay strong at all times

I took out the box and it was a Nokia 6..

Me: Wow.. Thank you very much

Him: You welcome.. At least it's better than the mobicel

Me: Way better.. Thank you again

Grams: Here you go

Danger: Thank you

His phone rang..

Him: Excuse me

He stood up and walked out..

Grams: How did work go yesterday?

Me: It was challenging

Her: Nomvelo jobs are very scarce, having grade 12 doesn't help much anymore. It's mostly about connections and you very blessed to have found a job, most people would be very grateful if they were in your position and wena you playing with your job

Me: Grams please

Her: I'm just saying don't play with your job

Me: I won't

Danger came back..

Danger: That was Nomsa

Grams: What does she want?

Danger: I don't know said she come by today

Me: To do what?

Danger: Not really sure

Grams: Can't she just stay wherever she is, and enjoy my Son's fortune that she stole from Nomvelo

Danger: I don't know what her problem is

We heard another knock at the door, I had no doubt that it was Snazo..

Grams: Come in

The door opened and it was indeed Snazo.

Lately he rocks formal and it looks very good on him. You know Gugu must've been involved with a very handsome for her to have such good

looking boys, she must be very proud..

Nazo: Good morning

When I looked at him I remembered my talk with Nkuli last night about him, I drifted into a world of my own that I never knew existed. You know that Yuna in me surfaced and all I could hear was:

" I feel a little rush, I think I've got a little crush on you. I hope it's not too much"

It was a breath taking moment..

Grams: Velo

I looked at her and she signaled that I should stand up, I looked at Nazo and he was looking at me. That all black formal outfit looked really good on him, it added soo much class on him..

Me: I'll go get my bag

I stood up and went to get my bag, I closed my eyes and spoke to myself...

Me: Come on Velo.. He is Niso's brother
(whispering)

Nkuli was gone and her sleeping positions aren't very pleasant, she was facing up with her legs wide open. I shook my head and walked out..

Grams: Behave today

Me: I will

I walked to the door and since he was standing next to it, our hands both reached for the door handle. When his touched mine, it sent electrical impulses throughout my body. It was an awkward moment, I lowered mine and he opened for me..

Me: Thank you

I walked out and he followed me, his nice smell also followed me all the way to the car. He unlocked and we got in, I just faced the front and avoided more awkward moments. He

started playing music at least that's going to kill the awkwardness, Alicia keys came on as we took off. He didn't say anything and I also didn't say anything, I would just steal glances at him here and there as he focused on the road...

"You give me a feeling that I never felt before, it's something that's impossible to ignore. I was wondering maybe could I make you my baby, if we do the unthinkable would it make us look crazy.. If you ask me I'm ready"

Actually he was becoming something that's impossible to ignore, and he was making things very difficult for me..

I was only brought back to the land of the living when he touched my wrist, made me wonder if I missed anything that he said..

I looked at him..

Him: You not wearing his bracelet today

I looked at my wrist and I didn't put it on this

morning..

Me: I forgot

I did forget.. How can I forget?

Him: You forgot?

Me: Yes

Him: I want us to pass somewhere first, already spoke to Dawn that you going to be late

Me: Where are we going?

Him: You will see

—

MANTWA

Patel was involved in a car accident last night on his way home from the hospital. I wanted to go to the hospital right away but it was late and I didn't have transportation so the following day I made my way there. I was very worried, I hope he is not badly hurt. My Mother accompanied

me to the hospital to go and see him, at the reception they didn't give me a tough time. One of the nurses offered to take us to his ward..

–

NOMVELO

Snazo drove straight to the cemetery, he didn't have to explain anything I knew exactly why we were here. I felt emotions taking over as the car drove in, I felt some heaviness in my heart and I also felt a lump stuck on my throat..

Me: Why are we here?

He parked a bit far from the gate and got out, I didn't wanna be here. I would rather be anywhere but here, I don't know why he brought me here. He came and opened my side of the door..

Him: Come

I looked around at all those graves and

tombstones..

Me: No

He crouched next to me and held my hand..

Him: You can't run away from this forever

My whole body trembled and my eyes filled with tears..

Me: I don't wanna be here

Him: You won't be able to move on until you find closure, I just want you to see where he's resting place is that's all and then we will go

They don't understand, they don't understand how difficult this is for me..

Him: Come

He helped me to get out of the car and then he held my hand as he led me to his grave. With every grave that we passed my heart died a little knowing that we were nearing to his.. We finally got to the side where there was countable

tombstones, the graves still looked fresh indicating that it hasn't been long since they were laid to rest. He stopped at a certain grave, I glanced down at it.

Nazo: This is where he is resting, next month a tombstone is supposed to be erected but I wanted you to see his grave first raw as it before the tombstone rests on it

There was flowers ontop of it, and it was clean. Maybe that's because it hasn't been long since he was buried..

Nazo: He didn't just leave you, he left me too I held on to him as I cried, he hugged me..

Him: I lost him too

It hurt, it hurt really bad..

Me: He's never.. He's never coming back

Him: No.. He's never coming back

I have been in denial for far too long, seeing his

grave just made me realize that he is gone. He is gone forever and he is not coming back, what I need to do now is pick up the broken pieces of my heart and move on. I will forever hold on to his memories though..

.

To be continued

Insert 76 will follow later

76

NOMVELO

"You wipe away all tears, you mend the broken heart, You the answer to all it Jesus. You wipe away all tears, you mend the broken heart, you the answer to it all Jesus.

Way maker, miracle worker, promise keeper.

Light in the darkness my God that is who are.. "

Driving to Dawn's studio from the cemetery, the

choice of songs were mixed from his USB and somehow that song came up. I didn't know who the artist was but I listened to it carefully and somehow the words just got to me, they got to me deeply which was funny because gospel music isn't my choice of music at all. I was feeling numb now, I wanted it to hurt like always but at that moment it didn't. It didn't hurt as how it hurts everyday... We arrived at the studio and he parked the car, I got my bag and got out he did too. We both made our way inside..

Zeash was at the counter as always, when she saw us her face lit up or should I say her face lit up when she saw Nazo..

Zeash: Nazo.. Nazoke.. Nazo (singing)

I don't wanna lie Zeash was award winning irritating, I felt irritated by her especially after what happened yesterday..

Nazo: How are you?

Her: Now that I've seen your cute face I'm good sugar and how are you?

Nazo: I'm good

Her: You look nice

Nazo: Thank you

Her: And good luck for today.. Dawn told me

Nazo: Thank you again.. Where is he?

Her: He is around here somewhere

She looked at me..

Her: Hi Velo

I ignored her and made my way straight to Dawn's office, Dawn wasn't in his office..

I put my bag on his desk and stared at the window, I could say that his view wasn't so bad..

Nazo: You okay?

I turned and looked at him, I thought he was still busy entertaining Zeash..

Me: I'm okay

He walked up to me..

Him: Come here

I walked up to him and he hugged me..

Him: Can I trust you today not to mess up?

Me: I have no intentions of messing up, I don't have the energy today

He broke the hug..

Him: So if you had the energy you would mess up?

I shrugged my shoulders..

Me: Maybe

He looked at me..

Him: I'll come and get you later

Me: Okay

He put his hand around my waist and then

kissed me on my forehead, that was what I needed. To feel his warmth, his closeness, and the feel of his lips anywhere in my body.

This wasn't right but the feelings felt right, we haven't even spent that much time together for me to feel something other than him being my late boyfriend's brother. It certainly wasn't love but deep down there were feelings that were betraying me, betraying how I should see him. After the kiss on my forehead I thought that he was going to let go and then leave but I guess it was difficult for him too, we shouldn't even be doing this. It's not right. As if things couldn't get more weird, here I was standing on my toes to meet him halfway as our lips met he is a bit taller than me. His other hand found it's way too around my small waist, I wasn't too comfortable with the kiss or relaxed so my hands just held on to his arms as we kissed. You know when something is wrong but deep you don't wanna

stop, you so wrapped around the moment that you just pray it escalates to something more. Something more than just the connection started by exchanging spit, I don't even have the right words to explain the moment..

A voice interrupted us, I quickly let go and wiped my lips. It was Dawn clearing his throat. I was a bit embarrassed and Nazo seemed chilled about the situation, it didn't bother him that Dawn just walked in on us kissing..

Dawn: Good morning

Me: Morning

Nazo: Morning

He made his way in. Nazo looked at his wrist watch..

Nazo: I have to go

Dawn: Good luck for today

Nazo: Thank you

Seems like he had a big day ahead of him,
everyone knew what it was about except for me.
He wiped my lower lip with his thumb..

Him: I'll see you later

I was too ashamed to say anything so I just
nodded..

He looked at Dawn..

Nazo: Later

Dawn: Later it is

He walked out..

Dawn: How are you doing this morning?

Me: I'm doing..

I cleared my throat, the kiss still got me feeling
a bit dizzy..

Me: I'm doing good

Dawn chuckled..

Dawn: You know the drill we have an exorcism

to prepare for

Me: Yes Sir

–

MANTWA

I was happy to see that Patel had minor injuries, just a bruise on his forehead and a broken arm. I can take that than him being in a critical condition...

Him: Okay you hurting my arm now

I broke the hug..

Me: I'm sorry

I don't wanna lie I was scared, I was very scared..

Me: What happened?

Him: Some drunk driver ran the red light and hit me from my side

Me: You could've been seriously hurt

Him: Yeah I know but thank goodness I didn't

Me: Thank goodness you didn't

Him: They'll discharge me tomorrow and I'll only be back at work after two weeks, I'll be doing consultations no surgery until my arm heals

Me: I'm happy to hear that.. You can just relax while I take care of you

Him: I was thinking that we can take a mini vacation

Me: You supposed to be at home relaxing.. We not going anywhere

Him: Come on, it's just my arm

Me: I am not taking that risk, do you know how worried I was? I didn't even sleep last night

Him: I'm sorry

Me: Don't be.. It's not your fault, I should leave so that you can rest.. I'll come back again later

Him: Or you can just wait for me at home, I'm coming back tomorrow morning just one day

Me: Okay I'll come and fetch you

Him: That's better

He pulled me closer to him with his other hand and kissed me..

–

NOMSA

I took what my Mother said seriously maybe she is right, maybe I just need to apologize so that I can be rid of my guilt and the curse. I don't know how JJ's family is going to react to my asking for forgiveness especially his Mother, she can be hardcore at times. I was with my Sister, she is the one who drove me here. The most important person that I wanted to ask forgiveness from was Nomvelo, she is the one that I hurt a lot..

I knocked at the door and there was no reply.

Ntokozo: knocked harder

I knocked harder..

MaNgcobo: Ngiyeza! (I'm coming)

My heart sank lower to my knees...

She opened the door after a few seconds..

Her: Ufunani? (what do you want)

Me: Ma..

Her: Ngithe Ufunani? (what do you want)

Me: May we please come in?

Her: How dare you show up at my house after everything that you have done?

Me: If you could just allow me to explain

Her: Explain what? Explain stealing my Granddaughter's fortune? She is trying to move on from what happened so don't come here and confuse her! Don't ever set your foot here or

else I'll pour you with hot water!

She clicked her tongue and then banged the door right in our faces..

–

SNAZO

Bishop Mccarthy and I made our way to the hospital that I was shown in my vision, it was a local hospital in some hood. It was a bit bigger than I had thought "Phomolong hospital". The hospital catered to the community and I heard that even other people from different hoods do come to this hospital and last year unfortunately it had more deaths than any other hospital. I thought that we were going to have a difficult time getting around, having to explain ourselves and then having these highly educated personnels frowning at us or criticizing us because of our different beliefs but that was not the case. Higher management

welcomed us in with the utmost respect, Bishop McCarthy's reputation goes a long way. At that moment I felt important, I was shown respect by people who were older than me. People who held serious professions, people who were more educated than I was. When God chooses you for his work, even those who are above you when it comes to education they will respect you.. Dr Nhlapho the chief surgeon at the hospital was the one who insisted in taking us around, he was in his mid 60s and I heard that he went to Harvard. Well his English says so. I like the fact that he was open minded, he didn't criticize us particularly me because I'm the one with the gift instead he spoke words that were accompanied by great respect. I thought science ruled the world of medicine, it's good to know that there other professionals out there who do believe in God. The first patient that I was meant to see was that young girl, she has been on my mind since I had that vision. Before

we left Bishop McCarthy and I prayed first, the holy spirit was with me. The whole of heaven was with me. I could feel it..

We got to the ward, ward 7A. Bishop McCarthy and Dr Nhlapho went to talk to the Nurses at their station as I looked around. Too much sorrow filled this ward, these young girls and women were victims of their own womanhood turning on them. Some were due for serious surgeries having their ovaries, and fallopian tubes removed. Some had miscarried, it was a lot that they were going through. With a blink of an eye, her cries drew me to her. Deep down she was broken and had lost all hope. Her inner voice that was crying almost made my ears bleed, I walked around until I was in her row. Other girls were sitting up straight and talking to each other, she was the only one who was sleeping and seemed to be in distress. As I walked up to her the other girls kept quiet and

looked at me, some gave me shallow smiles
some signaled to each other with their looks. I
greeted them..

Me: With how you ladies are looking at me I'm
guessing that you don't get much male visitors

The one who seemed to be their spokesperson
was the one who answered first...

Her: We do get male visitors just not as hot as
you

After that comment most of them blushed and
made funny noises..

Nurse: Ladies let's behave

I made my way to her bed, the spokesperson
said something again..

Her: Whoa!! Zanele akasasho ukuthi wazi
uBrother obaba kanje (Zanele didn't mention
that she knows such a handsome guy)

Nurse: Ntombi.. Shh..

She kept quiet..

I looked at the Nurse and she made her way to me, Dr Nhlapho and Bishop McCarthy stood at a far distance..

Nurse: Zanele sisi

She opened her eyes and they were a bit swollen, seems like all she does is just cry.

Nurse: Someone is here to see you

She looked at me and I smiled at her..

Nurse: let me help you to sit up

straight

The Nurse helped her and I could see that she was in pain, the Nurse put pillows behind her to support her back..

Nurse: I will be at my station

Me: Don't leave.. We might need you

I rubbed my hands together and then stretched

my hand to her for a handshake..

Me: Good morning.. My name is Snazo

She slowly stretched hers to mine, she was weak and her hand was shaking very bad..

Her: H.. Hello

She touched my hand and I gently held it, she looked at me and she started crying..

Me: It's okay..

She shook her head no..

Me: It's okay, you have been crying for a long time now and God finally heard you. Heaven came to visit you

Her cry was painful, it pierced through the hearts of the ones who were in the ward. I even saw the Nurse taking off her glasses and wiping her tears.. That is what happens when you think God has forgotten you, the devil takes a few steps back and hell trembles with fear. You go

as far as questioning if it's true or not..

.

To be continued

77

SNAZO

I mean what do you do when all you have known is nothing but Pain and sorrow? What do you do when you have prayed and showed God your wounded heart only to wake up the next morning and go through the same thing again? That human part of you losses hope, losses faith, and losses the will to live. You start to question the existence of God, your ears start to open wider to those who speak ill about God, you start to question yourself if really whom they say is the almighty does exist. Pain can strip you naked to a point were you lose yourself and start doubting what you know and believe..

Me: I know that this is going to come as a shock to you, you have been through so many prophets and you have been prayed for so much that you just don't believe anymore. You don't know what it is and what is not, let your heart be at ease because I am no Prophet. I bring with me no physical substance that you can drink and put all your hope in for a healing, I come in the name of the self existence one Jehova Sebawoth. To you at this present moment he comes as Jehova Raphah, God your healer.

I sat down at the edge of her bed while still holding her hand and she was still wet with tears..

Me: It's sad that your Mother is not here to witness her prayers being answered, Day and night she has been crying to God for your healing. When you gave up all hope, she refused to give up hope. Each time when you rolled on

the floor crying in pain, deep down she silently prayed because God was her only hope. When those pain killers seemed to be working for that little while and you finally rested, she would throw herself on the floor and start weeping but to her she wasn't throwing herself on the ground she would imagine throwing herself at Jesus'feet and crying. Crying for her Daughter's healing. She prayed according to Luke 10 verse 39, Mary Magdalene. Mary Magdalene was one of the women who supported Jesus'ministry. She traveled with him greatly and always sat at his feet listening to his teachings, Your Mother put herself in Mary's shoes but with her she threw herself at Jesus'feet for your healing. She had faith that one day you will be healed and that one day is today. God is never early and he is never late, when this sickness started two years ago you thought that it was how a woman should be relieved every month, you thought it was normal seeing that your friends also went

through the same but with you as months went by it started being abnormal. As much as biology tells you otherwise but spiritually you go through cleansing every month to be reminded that when God created you, He had to come in contact with blood. He didn't create a woman from dust but he created a woman from a man's rib and after today when it's that time of the month don't see it as a curse ever again but see it as a reminder, as an honour to your creation. See it as God reminding you that his hands came in contact with blood when he created you, it was never his intention for you to feel this much pain when you go through that process. Everything that God has created through his perfection the Devil always tries to destroy and 2 years ago when you and your friend went to that antique shop to buy a few things and you saw that charm ring and you bought it, know that the ring was cursed. When you placed it in your left finger it opened a

spiritual marriage between you and a certain demon that has been visiting you most nights, when you sleep every night and you felt that certain pleasure and warmth in your womanhood know that it wasn't normal for you because you had gotten yourself into a spiritual marriage with a certain demon known as "Baphomet" and we here today to end that union. When your Mom comes later on I want you to tell her to take the ring to your pastor so that he can unchant it and burn it.

I looked at the Nurse and she got closer..

Me: Can you please put your hand in her womb

She did so..

Me: Please do press a bit harder

She did..

Me: I'm just a healer, I'm going to pray for your healing and Bishop McCarthy is going to pray for you too and break the marriage, I'm breaking

the sexual bond that exists between you and the demon. God is restoring you back to having a normal cleansing every month one that won't land you in hospital all the time, you will be able to be normal like your peers. You will be healthy and have kids of your own, that cervical cancer diagnosis exists not anymore it has been written off. You will never go through this ever again..

I put my hand on the Nurse's shoulder as she closed her eyes and I did too, when I closed my eyes I saw Baphomet standing right next to Zanele's bed and when I opened my eyes I could feel his presence in the ward he has been by his "wife's side" that's why she has been compressed soo much and not able to do anything..

Me: "Lord let your will be done in this body, by divine power let her be healed by the stripes of Jesus. His blood was spilled so that hers

shouldn't be, his flesh was ripped so that hers shouldn't. When he endured those beating, when his flesh split and his blood was spilled he endured that so that through his stripes and his blood your children will be healed. There is no operating table where her body is going to lie still while a piece of her is being taken away, only your hands filled with blood when you created her so no devil will come in between that. Let not the sin of her ancestor (Eve) follow her, it was never your will for a woman to bear so much pain not until the enemy tricked her. Restore her back to her health, let the spiritual connection of unhealthy intercourse be broken! Let your will only be done in her life. She is set free! Free! Free! Free! Free! Free!

As I continued saying that she started screaming..

Me: Let the blood of Jesus cleanse her, never again will she experience such pain and misery.

Happiness and joy will follow her, you knew her from since she was in her mother's womb therefore her future stays bright with you. No cervical cancer will torment her, she will be healthy up until the time comes for her to bear her offspring. Bless her future generation and bless her future marriage that will be brought into her life as a blessing by you. I ask all this in the name of Jesus christ of Nazareth. Amen..

Nurse: Amen

I looked at the nurse..

Me: Could you please get her a glass of water?

She walked away..

Me: How do you feel?

Zanele: Better

She removed the covers and got down from the bed, she stood up straight and I saw most of the other girls shocked..

Zanele: I couldn't even stand straight, I had to be helped all the time. If I had to bath a wheelchair would be brought that's how much in pain I was.. Thank you very much

Me: You welcome

I held her hand and walked her to Bishop McCarthy who placed his hand on her head and prayed for her to break the marriage..

–

NOMVELO

I put the crystals in the box..

Me: All done Dawn

Zeash: Hey

I turned and looked at her..

Me: Hey

I turned around again and continued with what I was doing as she made her way in..

Her: How are you?

Me: I'm good

Her: Nomvelo please know that I am not a person who likes tension, I don't like fighting and arguing and what happened yesterday shouldn't have happened.. I just like to joke around a lot and sometimes that rubs people off the wrong way, I'm really sorry if I offended you in anyway. It wasn't my intention

Me: It's okay.. I'm also sorry that I hit you with my bag

Her: You lucky I let you be I could've beaten you up black and blue

Me: You wish

We both laughed..

Her: Anyway not to be forward or anything but what's the deal between you and Nazo?

Me: Why? Do you like him?

Her: Not entirely.. Me and him are just good friends that's all

Me: Same here

Her: Are you sure?

Me: Yes I am

She folded her arms and nodded..

Dawn walked in..

Him: Everything ready?

Me: Err yes..

Him: Good because you sitting this one out

Me: I am?

Him: Yes.. This one is dangerous can't afford to have you getting possessed for real

Me: Uhm okay

Him: Ya unfortunately being a preacher's wife won't help you this time around

Me: What?

He looked at me..

Him: Huh?

Me: You said something about me being a preacher's wife

Him: Was pulling your leg, I'm acting on what the demon said to you the other day

He took the box..

Him: See you later ladies

He walked out..

Zeash: Uhm what is going on?

Me: I don't know but we going to find out..

Come on, do you have Nazo's number?

Her: Yes I do

Me: What a close friendship

Her: Don't be jelly it's strictly for professional reasons, I onced booked him a plane ticket and

I-

Me: It's okay Zeash you don't have to explain yourself

–

SNAZO

Dr Nhlapho: Whatever doubts I might've about you, they completely went out of the window. It's not everyday a Pastor comes here and heals the sick, though we health professionals and try our best at all times but we also need a miracle here and there

I looked at Zanele as she now had the confidence to sit with the other girls in the ward and talk. She was smiling and laughing it was a beautiful moment to witness, for a change she was happy. She wasn't crying and broken. The Nurse called her Mother to come over hoping I will meet her before I am done with what I came here for..

Dr: We can proceed

Me: The next P-

My phone vibrated and I took it out, I have to take this. It's Dawn's office..

Dr: You can't ignore it?

Me: Unfortunately no could be about my Nomvelo

Bishop: When it involves the wife you should attend to it pretty fast

We laughed as I moved away from them to answer..

Me: Hello?

Velo: Nazo what's going on?

Me: With?

Velo: With everything.. Exactly what is going on? Why am I here? What is it that you not telling me?

Me: Can we do this later? I am very busy right now

Her: Busy? Alright I see where this is going later I'll be gone, you won't find me here!!!

She hung up, I tried not to let her tantrum get to me. I went to the Dr..

Me: Can I quickly find an empty room?

Him: Empty room?

Me: Yes even if it's were they keep their cleaning material just an empty room

He looked around..

Bishop: Is everything okay?

Me: No but everything will be okay

He directed me to a room not far away that looked like an empty single ward, I closed the door and leaned against it..

Me: Helena

I looked around..

Me: I know you around

She appeared..

Me: I need your help

Her: With what?

Me: I need you to restrain Nomvelo for me just for a while until I'm done here

Her: I am not supposed to leave you

Me: I'll be fine

Her: Nomvelo is not my responsibility.. You're my responsibility

Me: Just for a while.. Hurry up because she might leave

I opened the door and then closed it again... Me: One last thing.. Please shook her a bit for me, for the fact that she yelled at me

I opened the door and Walked out..

–

NOMVELO

Me: I'm leaving

Zeash: Why? What happened?

Me: Screw this!!

I took my bag and walked to the door..

Zeash: Nomvelo wait!

The door violently closed on it's own, I freaked out a little and so did Zeash. I stretched my hand to open and as soon as I touched the handle I don't know what happened, was almost as if like the handle had an electrical charge because it sent me flying across the room and I came in contact with the wall then fell on the floor, I swear that I saw what looked like a giant angel with a sword standing at the door before I blacked out..

Zeash: Nomvelo!!!!

.

To be continued

78

SNAZO

I was able to get to a lot of patients in a short period of time, some didn't need to be prayed for they just needed a touch of heaven. During my minor breaks I realized that I had a few missed calls from Dawn's office, I called back but no one picked up so I just let the situation be. The next stop was at the TB ward, right at the entrance it was written that no one is allowed inside without putting on a mask which you will get at the Nurses station. We made our way in and as always when the chief of surgeon and Bishop McCarthy went to explain to the Nurses what we were here to do I made my way in, I didn't get that far until the Nurse called out.. Her: I'm sorry Sir you can't go in without a mask

I smiled at her..

Me: Thank you very much but I'll be fine

Her: Unfortunately it's compulsory if you refuse to wear one then I won't be able to let you in

I walked up to her and gently pulled her on the side..

Me: I don't need one

She looked young, I think it hasn't been long since she started working. She looks like she's fresh from school..

Her: We do get Pastors and Prophets who come to pray for our patients all the time and they put on the masks too

Me: I don't think you understand, if I put on the mask then what I'm here for won't be achieved. No patient will believe in my words nor the healing they supposed to receive if I wear a mask, it will seem like I also don't believe in the

one who sent me

She kept quiet...

Me: I understand that you doing your job and I respect that but I really don't need the mask

Another Nurse walked up us..

Her: It's okay Sir you can go ahead

I looked at both of them..

Me: Thank you

I turned and then made my way to the patients. I was in the male section of the ward and I was walking while scanning every patient. I noticed one patient in particular, he was the only one who had a mask on and I made my way to him..

Me: Good day

He nodded as to reply to my greeting..

Me: May I?

I reached for the mask and he held my hand..

Me: It's okay

I took the mask off..

Me: How are you?

He coughed..

Him: I'm well thank you

Me: You don't have TB now do you?

Him: No Sir.. I have lung cancer. One of my lungs has collapsed and the other one is about to collapse too, unfortunately Doctors can't help I only have months to live.

He chuckled..

Him: I'm dying a stupid death.. I'm a heavy smoker I should've stopped the minute I found out that my other lung had collapsed

Me: And you still smoking aren't you?

Him: Only because I heard I'm dying in a months time so let me die by my own sword though

Nurses don't know that I smoke

I pulled the chair and sat down..

Me: You a teacher, you teach at some secondary school am I right? You take your job seriously and your students admire you very much and since you have been at the school, matric students are now acing the subject you teach which is Mathematics

He looked a bit surprised..

Him: Yes that's true

Me: Not only that but you started a program for all those naughty students who attack teachers, by organizing a trip for them to the nearest prison and having them know that if they don't change that's where they'll end up

Him: Yes.. How do you know? Does anyone from your house go to the school where I teach?

Me: No Sir.. I also know that you're a bread

winner at home. You and your wife only have one child but when her sister passed on years ago from Aids you and your wife took in her 3 kids since no one in your wife's family wanted to take them. By then your wife wasn't working, you were the only one working and your salary wasn't enough to cater to 4 kids but you tried your best. Unfortunately you lost your only child he was gunned down and then you brought the other 3 very much close to your heart, since your wife couldn't convince anymore. One of them is at a tertiary level now, one of them is doing matric and the youngest is still in primary

Him: Who are you? How do you know soo much?

Me: my name is Snazo and I know that you not that much of a spiritual man but God remembered you today sir. Your wife still needs you and the kids need you too

Him: Huh?

Me: In the world that we live in now some orphans are being mistreated. Most people take them in only to abuse them or to gain financially from them but you Sir, you one of a few people who cared for them and gave them a good life. Not only did you do a good deed but you touched God's heart, and now heaven is showing favour unto you

He just couldn't believe what I was saying to him..

Him: You are doing a good job both at school and at home, because your selfless deed that's why God is giving you a second chance. It is not your time as yet

I stood up and put my hand on his chest..

Me: Recieve your healing today through the touch of heaven. You have been given a second chance in life, use it wisely and completely stop smoking

I removed my hand..

Me: May you continue being blessed

He was speechless, didn't know how to react nor what to say. Most people don't know that their hearts is what connects them to heaven sometimes, God doesn't have an eye of a human being. He doesn't look at the outward appearance but he looks at the heart, whatever happens keep thy heart pure at all times. On my way out to get fresh air whilst Bishop McCarthy blessed the whole ward with prayer, I saw Helena standing at some door she signaled that I should come and I went in there. It was like a store room, a lot of things were kept there..

Her: We have a problem

Me: Problem?

Her: Nomvelo is at the hospital

Me: What?

Her: When you asked me to go and distract her I sent Uri

Me: You sent a warrior Angel to my wife? I mean my future wife?

Her: You said to shake her a bit

Me: Yes shake her a bit not send her to the damn hospital!!

"Beloved.."

I closed my eyes and regained my composure..

Me: What did Uri do?

Her: He pushed her a bit and I opened her spiritual eyes so that she could see him, I thought that would shake her up more

Me: Dammit Helena!!

"Beloved you still under ministry"

Me: She's supposed to have dinner with us tonight what am I going to tell my Mom? I sent

an Angel to attack my.. To attack Nomvelo?

Her: I was only following orders

Me: How is she?

Her: I don't know

Me: Let me think for a second

"Beloved.."

The holy spirit just made contact at the right time, maybe just maybe this can be sorted..

"Beloved I will not engage myself in a situation that I wasn't consulted with, you cannot use a warrior Angel for personal gain. A warrior Angel's touch to a human being can be deadly, they were specifically created to fight evil and the enemy"

Humbling myself and apologizing for that stupid act was the only thing in my mind right now..

"All in all she will be okay her being at the

hospital will gain you time to complete what you here for, she will be fine"

Me: Thank you

"Helena will go and erase her memory of seeing Uri and what happened, in the meantime we have more work to do Beloved"

I looked at Helena..

Me: If you do more than what you required to do I sw-

"Beloved don't use God's name in vain.."

Me: We will continue this discussion later

I walked out, I can't believe Helena did that..

—

NOMVELO

My arm was extremely painful and swollen, I felt pain when I tried to move it an surprisingly I had this weird colour now. I don't know what

happened, all I know is that I woke up at the hospital with a swollen and painful arm. Zeash was standing next to me.

Nurse: There...

Me: It's still painful (crying)

Zeash: Why has it changed colour?

Nurse: It's Hematoma has to do with trauma, it's nothing too serious.. Exactly what happened?

Me: I don't know..

I looked at Zeash..

Zeash: She fell

The Dr walked in..

Him: Hello I am Dr Chauke

Zeash greeted him back..

Nurse: Patient's name is Nomvelo, Nomvelo Ngcobo she's 22 years old and presented with a bruised arm

He came and looked at my arm..

Him: What happened here?

He squeezed a bit and I felt excruciating pain

Nurse: Hematoma, I think it's trauma from an injury. It is said that the patient fell

The Dr shook his head..

Dr: No this is a large petechiae, seems like a blood vessel ruptured hence soo much internal bleeding in this area and the reason why she's feeling soo much pain. Do an Xray and let's see how much damage is done but the patient will definitely need a small surgery

Me: Surgery?

Him: Everything is going to be okay don't worry, it's just a minor surgery to repair the damage.

It's really nothing to worry about, I must say though that it was a pretty bad fall

I looked at Zeash..

Me: Did you call Snazo?

Her: Yes voicemail

Dr: When you done with the Xray come and show me and we'll take it from there

Nurse: Yes Doc

He smiled and walked out..

Me: Ohh my word what happened to me Zeash??
(Crying)

Zeash: Don't worry the Dr said you going to be fine

Nurse: You really have nothing to worry about

Me: If you can't get a hold of Nazo please call my cousin and tell her what's happening her number is 0834732285, her name is Nkuli please tell her to come over

Zeash: Okay I'll do that

Nurse: Come.. Let's go and do the Xray

She helped me to down from the bed..

–

NOMSA

I was defeated, very defeated that MaNgcobo didn't want to hear anything from me. On the other hand I did expect this from her, after all she has never liked me not even when JJ and I were still married. My Mom walked in and found me crying. She sat next to me on the bed..

Her: Nomsa be honest with me please, why is all of this happening to you? There has to be something that you did for all of this to be happening to you

I wiped my tears..

Her: I cannot help you if you don't talk to me

Me: Why? So that you can judge me?

Her: That's what you think I've been doing?

(Silence)

Her: Everything can be fixed, nothing is too hard for God

Me: I did what you said I should do but MaNgcobo hates me, she doesn't want to hear me out

Her: At times we hurt People so much that "sorry" cannot repair the damage that was done but then sometimes acknowledging your wrongdoings and asking for forgiveness is all that you can offer, if you sincerely sorry it doesn't matter if your offender forgives you or not but God sees deep down your heart that you sincerely sorry. Give it time and give them time Pray to God that they forgive you and then start over, you will see everything will fall into place. Konke kuzodlula (This too shall pass)

–

SNAZO

We took a break and drove to town to get

something to eat, it feels good deep down knowing that I'm making a difference in other people's lives. I took out my phone and I had missed calls from a number that I didn't know, I called..

Zeash: Snazo hello

Me: Zeash?

Her: Yes I called you with the landline phone at work earlier and you weren't picking up

Me: I was busy.. What's happening?

Her: Nomvelo is at the hospital, she hurt her arm really bad and now they have to operate

Me: Operate? How bad is it?

Her: We waiting for the Xray so that the Dr can look at it

Me: Where is Nomvelo?

Her: Hold on a bit

(After 10seconds)

Velo: Hello

Me: Hey sweetheart how are you?

Velo: I hurt my arm and..... (Crying)

All I heard was "I hurt my arm and" I couldn't hear the rest cause she started crying..

Me: Calm down I can't hear you

She continued crying..

Me: Calm down a bit I'm sure it's not that bad doll

Her: I'm in a lot of pain Nazo.. (Crying)

Me: I know and I'm sorry but you'll be fine

Her: But I don't want to be operated (Crying)

Me: If the Dr says you need one then you have to allow them to operate you, I'll make sure that I'm the first person you going to see after the operation

Her: You promise?

Me: I promise... Give Zeash the phone so she can update me because it's a bit difficult communicating with you when you crying this much

She gave Zeash the phone..

Zeash: Hello?

Me: When is she going under?

Zeash: I'm not sure and I've been trying to call Dawn I think he's busy.. Snazo I need to go back to work there's no one there

Me: Okay text me the name of the hospital and I'll see what I can do, I'll probably send my Mother there

Zeash: Okay..

Me: Just don't go as yet until she gets there

Zeash: Alright

I put my phone on the table..

Bishop: Everything okay?

Me: Nomvelo is in Hospital

Him: What happened?

Me: It's a bit of a long story..

Him: So what you going to do? You wanna go to the hospital?

Me: I'll call my Mom to go there and when I'm done with the remaining patients I'll go

Him: I hope it's not something serious

Me: Me too

Helena messed up big time..

—

NOMVELO

I scare easily so to hear that I needed surgery was scary to me. I was now in a hospital gown and we were waiting for the Dr to come look at

my Xray and then hear from him what's going to happen next, The Nurse said that I might not be able to go home today because of the surgery..

Zeash: How are you?

I shrugged my shoulders..

Her: I have to go

Me: Go? No who is going to be here with me

Her: I got a hold of your cousin she's on her way, I'll leave when she gets here and I think Snazo is also sending someone over

That was a bit of a relief too..

Me: Okay

She sat down..

Me: Zeash what really happened?

Her: I don't know too Velo, what happened was very strange

I had no memory of what happened to me

.

To be continued

79

NKULI

I was supposed to have arrived at the Hospital about an hour ago or so but my Grandmother wanted to tag along too and she passed by somewhere first before we could go to the hospital. The girl who called me told me something about Velo falling at work and hurting her arm really bad, It was a confusing story so I hope that she will explain further when we get there. I am worried about Nomvelo, my cousin has been through a lot and it seems like more and more bad things are still happening to her. When she gets discharged we should do a ceremony for her because seriously, this is not normal. We arrived at the Hospital and made our way in, we didn't know were to go

so we made our way to the reception..

Me: Hello

The receptionist looked at us..

Me: We here to see my cousin, her name is Nomvelo Ngcobo. I believe she was brought in this morning, she had an injured arm or something like that

Her: Okay give me a few minutes to check

We waited for her to check and then I ran my eyes around until I saw a familiar face sitting at the waiting area, it was Gugu...

Me: I'm coming

I walked up to her..

Me: Gugu?

She moved her eyes from her phone and looked at me..

Her: Nkuli

She stood up and we hugged..

Me: Hi.. Uhm wow it's been a while

Her: it's been a while indeed, how are you? You look great by the way

Me: I'm good and thank you very much

We sat down..

Me: You here to see someone?

Her: Yes I'm here to see Nomvelo

Me: Really?

My Grandmother made her way to us..

Gugu: Yes.. Snazo called me and told me that Velo was brought in this morning so I had to come because the girl who brought her in had to go back to work

Grams: Gugu kunjani? (how are you)

Gugu: Ngiyaphila MaNgcobo wena unjani? (I am well and how are you)

She sat down on the other side, Gugu was in the middle..

Me: uGugu naye uze kuVelo (Gugu is here to see Velo)

Grams: Bathi unjani? (how is she)

Gugu: The Dr said she's going to be fine she just needs a minor operation on her arm since it is badly hurt

Grams: Kahle kahle kwenzakaleni? (what happened)

Gugu: The lady said she slipped and fell then hurt her arm

Me: Bekadakiwe? (was she drunk)

Gugu gave me a weird look..

Gugu: No I saw her before the operation she wasn't drunk, she's fine

Nkuli: uNomvelo unamabhadi straight (Nomvelo has bad luck)

Grams: Nkuli!!!

I kept quiet..

Grams: I'm just glad she's okay eish Velo wam' bantu

Gugu: I'm going to get water.. MaNgcobo would you like some?

Grams: Yes

Me: I would like some too

Gugu: what happened to your legs? I'm only getting MaNgcobo ngoba umuntu omdala (I'm only getting for MaNgcobo because she's old)

She stood up and walked away..

Grams: Kanti yini ngawe? (What's wrong with you)

I turned and looked at her..

Me: Koko vele what's happening between Nomvelo and Snazo? Bayajola yini? (are they

dating)

Grams: Haibo I am not with Velo all the time I don't know who she is dating, and we don't talk about such

Me: So you find everything that's happening okay? For the fact that Gugu is here, it means that there's something happening between them. Why would she be here?

Her: Yey! Nkuli noma bayajola inkinga ikuphi?
(Even if they dating where is the problem)

Me: It's not right what Velo is doing, it's not right that she's fooling around with my ex!

Her: Why do you care? You and Snazo are no longer dating! Plus I wouldn't mind if they date because he really cares about her and Nomvelo seems to be comfortable with him buka manje he even got her a job

Me: It's not right Koko.. Mina my feelings don't matter? Every time you always defending her

Her: You still inlove with him?

Me: Of course I am.. Nazo and I didn't really break up he just went to jail and I gave up waiting for him, plus Nomvelo is way too young for him! She won't handle Nazo she is not woman enough for him!

Her: He has changed, he is no longer that that old Nazo that you once knew

Gugu came back..

Gugu: Here you go MaNgcobo

Grams: Thank you

I seriously couldn't believe this, Nomvelo and Snazo??

—

SNAZO

I thought that we were never going to finish but we did, it was indeed a long and tiring day. We finished at around 15:00, now it was time for

me to go and see Velo after dropping off Bishop McCarthy at his place. I really have to be there when she wakes up or else I'm not going to hear the end of it..

On my way to the hospital I received a call from Shine..

Me: Shine

Him: Snazo fede? (how are you)

Me: Ngi grand wena? (I'm good and you)

Him: Ngi sharp Ntwana (I'm good)

It's been a while since I last spoke to him..

Him: Cava khona amaphepha nyana that you have to sign (There's papers that you have to sign)

Me: Now?

Him: Ya kuyaphuthuma (yes it's an emergency)

I exhaled..

Him: Sharp ngiyazwakala (I'm on my way)

Things are becoming a bit difficult for me now, juggling everything at once is becoming a bit too much..

–

NOMVELO

It seems like I was scared for nothing because the operation was a success and it was a minor incision, though my whole arm was numb. I couldn't feel anything and I was a bit drowsy. I wasn't put under general Anaesthesia, they did something called Regional Anaesthesia where they numb that area that needs to be operated by doing a nerve block. Seeing that I was scared they sedated me so that they could work efficiently, and finish in due time. The swelling hasn't gone down and the petechiae was still there too I hope I do recover soon, thank God it is my none dominant arm. I would be worried if

it was my right arm..

Dr: Can you feel that?

Me: No

He was poking my arm with a pen..

Him: We will see when the Anaesthesia wears off

My Grandmother walked in, she was with Nkuli and Gugu..

Gugu: There she is

I was completely out of it, I just wanted to rest some more..

They were even scared to hug me..

Gugu: How are you feeling?

Me: Tired

Dr: The surgery went well I would like to keep her here for two more days just up until she gets sensation on her arm

Grams: Your arm looks bad.. Is it painful?

Me: I can't feel anything

Gugu brushed my hair back..

Gugu: You even look tired

Me: I am.. Just a bit

Dr: Please don't tire her some more, after
10mim I want to see her resting

He walked out..

Gugu: What happened? Nazo said you fell

Me: I am not really sure.. That's what Zeash
said too that I fell and blacked out

Nkuli: Where you drunk?

I looked at her..

Me: No I wasn't drunk

Grams: Nkuli awume kancane.. (Nkuli wait a
minute)

Gugu: I brought you something to eat, do you
want to eat?

Me: Not now

She kissed me on the cheek..

Gugu: Agh shame bantu.. You did great I'm proud of you

She kissed me on the cheek again..

Gugu: Maybe we should go so that you can rest

Me: I am scared of Hospitals, can one of you stay?

Nkuli: I'll stay

Gugu looked at me..

Me: It's okay

Grams: Manje mina ngizohanjiswa ubani? (who will drive me)

Gugu: I'll give you a lift

Me: You drive?

Gugu: Yes I.. I'm using Niso's car

I nodded..

Gugu: I'll see you tomorrow angithi?

Me: Okay

Gugu: Get some well deserved rest

Grams: Ube ngcono yeva Velo? (get well)

Me: I will duchess

Gugu looked at Nkuli..

Gugu: Make sure that she eats.. I bought her some burger and chips

Nkuli: I will

Gugu hugged me..

Gugu: Bye baby.. See you tomorrow

Me: Bye

Gugu: I love you

Gugu had a problem with me in the early days of my relationship with Niso, halfway through

she warmed up to me and we became good people. Now she's being way too nice and it's making me very uncomfortable..

Grams: Bye Velo.. I'll see you tomorrow

Me: Bye Duchess

They walked to the door..

Grams: Unayo nje ne License Gugu (do you even have a license)

Gugu: Asambe MaNgcobo noma ufuna ukugibela iTaxi yini? (Let's go or do you want to catch a cab)

Grams: I'm only asking because I never heard that you went to a driving school

I laughed at their petty argument..

Nkuli was being somehow, I was sensing an attitude from her..

Her: Do you want to eat?

Me: Not now.. Maybe later

Her: Okay

Me: Thank you for coming

Her: We family

I smiled..

Her: Get some rest I'll be back.. I'm going out for a smoke

Me: Okay

She took out a pack of cigarettes from her bag and a lighter then she walked out..

–

NOMSA

I called Danger to come so that we can talk and honestly speaking I didn't even think that he was going to show up but he did..

Me: Thank you for coming.. Would you like something to drink?

Him: No.. I don't have all day.. Ungibizeleni?
(why did you call me here)

Me: Danger I want to talk to Nomvelo

Danger: About what?

Me: I just.. Please I want to talk to her, I went to MaNgcobo and she slammed the at my face

Him: What were you expecting?

Me: I know that what I did caused the Ngcobo family a lot of pain especially Nomvelo and MaNgcobo, I wouldn't have called you if this was not important. Please Danger I need to talk to Nomvelo

He looked at me..

Me: Please

Him: I'll see what I can do

Me: Thank you

Him: I'm not promising you anything though

Me: I understand and thank you.. Thank you very much

–

NOMVELO

I tried to sleep but it was difficult, I would close my eyes for a while and then open them again. Something about hospitals that creeps me out, being alone in the ward made matters worse. I closed my eyes again this time for longer than the last time and when I felt like now I was going to fall asleep I opened them again, this time around Nazo was standing at the door and starring at me..

He was holding a small white teddy bear, he waved it around..

Him: I come in peace

He made his way in..

Me: You said that your face was the first thing

that I was going to see when I was done with the operation

Him: Look at you.. You look drained, was the operation necessary? Should we sue the hospital? What if it was a minor bruise?

He was trying to be extra as always and shift my attention from being upset that he didn't keep his promise..

Me: You said that your face was the first thing that I was going to see

He put the teddy bear away..

Him: I know Nana.. Unfortunately I got held up somewhere but at least I'm here now

Me: Whatever you were doing was more important than you keeping your promise?

He raised one of his eyebrows..

Him: I'm sorry Mrs Buthelezi I didn't know that we were married for you to be on my throat like

this

I kept quiet..

He sighed..

Him: I'm sorry that I didn't keep my promise ke,
are we cool now?

I shrugged my shoulders..

He leaned over and kissed me on my neck..

Him: Even if I do this?

Me: Stop it

He gently sucked my neck which was a bit
ticklish, I laughed..

Me: Stop it Nazo

He continued and I was just laughing, until we
heard someone coughing. He stopped, it was
Nkuli. I felt very somehow..

She made her way in while holding some paper..

Her: Snazo

Nazo: Nkuli

She handed me the paper..

Her: Your hospital bill

I took it and looked at it..

Me: R7 000?

Her: The next two days are also included.. What did you expect? It's a private hospital they will charge you for almost everything. The food, the treatment, the water you going to use when you shower that's even nothing for a 3 days stay including the operation

I looked at the paper again..

Her: So what you going to do? Duchess won't be able to pay and I don't see you earning that much unless Danger has 7 000 just lying around

I was exhausted.. I didn't need this..

Nazo: I'll settle the bill first thing tomorrow morning

Nkuli: Of course you will settle the bill why didn't I even think of that

Nazo: ukhuluma nam' kanjalo? (are you talking to me like that)

Me: Nazo you don't have too

Him: I want too, let me handle the bill and you focus on getting better

Nkuli: Well then I probably should go.. I'll see you when you get discharged

Me: You won't come tomorrow?

Her: Do you really need me?

Me: Come on..

Her: Fine I'll come with Duchess

Me: Thank you

She gave Nazo a very nasty look, she then took her bag and walked out..

Nazo: Petty as always!

I looked at him...

Him: Was expected from her

Me: Do you think she's upset because of what she saw?

He took the paper and looked at it..

Him: I don't really care Nomvelo if she's upset or not, it won't change anything

I couldn't help myself I found myself laughing. Forgot how arrogant the Buthelezi boys are..

Him: Come on get some rest

Me: Can you stay for a while up until I fall asleep?

Him: I'll stay

He sat at the edge of the bed and he looked at me..

Me: Can't you find something to do than starrng at me?

Him: What can I do?

Me: I don't know read a magazine, play with your phone just find something

He chuckled..

Him: I have a better idea

Me: What is that?

He took off his shoes and then came the other way around and got in bed with me, I shifted a bit to give him some space. I laid my head on his chest..

Him: Now you can try and fall asleep

I closed my eyes..

Him: Wait.. Give me a kiss

I raised my head and looked at him..

Him: What?

Me: You very weird

Him: I didn't hear you say No

He kissed me, we kissed for a while that I even

forgot we were laying in a hospital bed.

It was a tense and yet a very passionate moment. I broke the kiss and still close like that I stared at his lips, he ran his thumb on my lower lip. This was soo wrong but somehow it's like we getting very much drawn to each other. A part of me was embracing the moment and another part of me felt like I was betraying Niso, but I just couldn't stop myself from falling for Nazo. Am I really falling for him? I think I am and it seems I'm falling for him very hard..

—

NKULI

I didn't really go I hung around a little in the corridor just observing them through the window the whole time, and seeing them all cosy like that and kissing confirmed everything. A tear escaped my eye, I can't believe Snazo would be go that low as to getting back at me

with my own cousin! I know that I've hurt him but he has no right to do me like this..

.

To be continued

80

SNAZO

Today I didn't have anything to do other than going down to the company and see how everything is going then go and settle Nomvelo's Hospital bill. I even woke up a bit late today, I needed the rest. I was at the kitchen on my laptop busy checking how the website is going for our company and if everything is still going smooth, the business is booming that now we need to hire more people. Tomorrow I'll be putting out posts, we need to hire at least 3 more people with or without experience...

Her: The package was sent Sir, here is your

reference number "N0082561"

Me: Thank you very much

Her: Have a good day Sir

Me: You too

I sent Nomvelo a little gift at the hospital, I hope she will love it. Gugu walked in..

Her: Good morning

Me: Morning

Her: Have you seen my car keys?

I looked around at the counter and they were laying next to the bread tin, I took them..

Me: Here

I didn't really look her when she walked in, I only managed to look at her when I was about to give her the car keys..

Her: Thank you

I retracted my hand back..

Me: Hold on Mama Bear.. Where are you going?

Her: I'm going to the mall to get groceries

Me: Dressed like that?

Her: I didn't know it was a sin to dress up, Now give me my keys!

Me: I am too old to have a step father you do know that right

Her: Who said anything about.. Yeka uk'phapha!
(Stop being forward)

She snatched the keys from me..

Her: If you bored go see Nomvelo at the hospital

She walked to the door..

Me: I hope you not going to be bringing him around here

Her: Stay out of my business

She opened the door and I went back to what I

was doing, she didn't go out I heard her talking to someone. Then Nkuli walked in, I closed my laptop. She closed the door and looked at me..

Me: Can I help you?

She walked up to me and then she slapped me, she tried to slap me again but I held her arm..

Me: Stop it!!

She managed to escape that tight grip and she picked up anything that her hand could land on and started throwing it at me..

Me: Nkuli stop it!!!

She just threw things at me..

Her: You a bastard!!! I hate you!!!

I went up to her and held her tight, as she cried..

Her: Why Nazo, why would you do this to me?
(Crying)

The last time I saw her this broken was when I

got arrested, the first time she came to visit me..

–

NOMVELO

It was very difficult eating with one hand, my other hand was still numb. I couldn't use it...

I was eating cereal, they also brought me a fruit salad, a plain yogurt and orange juice.

I was supposed to have eaten this at 7am but I woke up late, and showering was also another struggle. I couldn't get Nazo off my mind and the beautiful moment that we had last night, I don't even know at what time he left. It was good falling asleep in his arms..

The Nurse walked in..

Her: You have a gift

It was a small box small box that was wrapped in silver and had a white ribbon..

She gave me the box...

Me: Who is it from?

Her: I have no idea.. It didn't come with a card
I unwrapped and opened it, it was a wedding
gutter..

Nurse: Wow are you getting married soon?

I was confused but the small card inside
cleared the confusion..

"Keep this safe because I'm not going to buy
another one

-Snazo"

She took the card and read it..

Her: Wow most guys would propose with a ring
and he sent you a wedding gutter I am
impressed he is different

Me: It's just a practical joke.. Nothing serious

Her: Is he the one that you were all cosy in bed
with last night?

Me: Where you spying on us?

Her: Never!.. But he is an eye candy, he is very fine and now he sends you a gutter hmmmmm he is bold!! I like that

I looked at the gutter..

Her: Practice phela, show him that you accept the proposal and put it on your thigh

Me: Stop it really it's just a practical joke nothing more.. We not even dating

Her: To me it seems like you two are in a relationship and you just don't know it yet

That got me thinking..

Her: What? You don't want him? He is married?

Me: No it's not that.. Just that..

Her: Just what ?

Me: Nothing.. It's nothing

She took the gutter from me and looked at it..

Her: It's very beautiful

Me: I guess so

What exactly is Nazo playing at? What does the gutter mean..

–

SNAZO

When she had calmed down I let her go..

Her: Why are you doing this? For how long have you been sleeping with my cousin?

Me: I'm not sleeping with Nomvelo

Her: Then what is happening because I am confused!

Me: Nkuli I don't have to explain myself to you

Her: Yes you do! Couldn't you find another way to get back at me? My own cousin Snazo?

Me: You think all of this is about getting back at you?

She looked at me..

Me: Nkuli if I remember correctly you left me!
You left me because you couldn't wait and you buried yourself in guys that had money and I'm the bad guy??

Her: You could have any girl that you want why my cousin? Nomvelo is way too young for you!
You what? 28? She's 21! She's not woman enough for you she is still a child!

Me: And you are?

Her: I love you and yes I have accepted that you and I cannot be together anymore but to go and date my cousin? Why not some random girl! I don't wanna be slapped in the face with your perfect little romance with Nomvelo, she's my cousin and yes she's always going to talk about you and you expect me to be okay with that?
Really Nazo? It hasn't even been that long since Niso passed on an-

Me: Don't you dare bring my Brother into this! Nkuli what's happening between Me and Nomvelo is beyond human understanding

Her: So there is something happening between you two?

Me: Don't do this.. Not right now I thought you were happy with your new life

Her: Look me in the eye right now and tell me that you don't love me anymore

Me: Don't

She got very close..

Her: Please don't do this to me

She wrapped her hands around my neck..

Her: Please

She kissed me and then she lowered her other hand down on my crotch and she squeezed me..

Her: I still love you and I want you

The door opened..

Gugu: I for-

I pushed Nkuli away from me..

Gugu: I forgot my purse

Nkuli cleared her throat and made her way to the door, Gugu was blocking the door..

Nkuli: Do you mind?

I knew deep down Gugu wanted to strangle her. Gugu shifted a bit and tripped her on purpose..

Gugu: Watch your step.. Don't fall

Gugu closed the door and looked at me..

Me: It's not what you think it is

She looked at me and then her eyes went down on me, she chuckled and then shook her head no. She walked out to the bedroom.

–

NOMVELO

I was lost deep in my thoughts while holding the gutter, I mean definitely something has been happening between me and Nazo. There's this connection that I can't explain between us and I'm afraid that I might be falling for him, falling a bit hard. On the other hand there's a lot to consider, I still feel like I will be betraying Niso. I heard a knock at the door, it was Zeash and Dawn. She was holding my bag..

Zeash: There's our patient

I smiled at them..

Zeash walked up to me and hugged me..

Zeash: How are you feeling?

Me: Better

She snatched the gutter from me..

Dawn came to hug me too..

Zeash: Is this a wedding gutter?

Dawn: How are you feeling? Heard what

happened.. I'm sorry

Me: It's okay I'll be okay

Zeash held the gutter at me..

Dawn: Are you getting married soon?

Me: No Snazo sent me that as a practical joke

Zeash: Who sends a gutter as a practical joke?
It's like sending someone an engagement ring
as a joke

Me: Stop asking a lot of questions and help me
unzip my bag

She unzipped the bag for me and I took out my
phone..

Me: Put his number for me

She looked at me..

Me: I wanna ask about the gutter stop being
forward

Dawn: They going to discharge you when?

Me: After two days

Dawn: How is your arm?

Me: It's still numb

Dawn: That's strange.. Wasn't the operation yesterday?

It was..

Zeash: Here

Me: Thank you

I sent him a text:

"A gutter?

-Nomvelo"

Dawn: And your arm is still numb?

Me: Should I be worried

He looked at it..

Him: Well we will hear from the Dr

Snazo replied to my text:

"Are you smiling?"

I literally smiled at that text...

I replied back..

"I'm confused"

Zeash: And now?

She took my phone from me..

Me: Zeash!!

Zeash: Are you and Snazo dating?

Me: You too forward

Zeash: The Preacher's wife!! Hmmmmm girl are you ready to be a Preacher's wife?

Dawn: Zeash!

Me: What are you talking about?

Her facial expression changed..

Zeash: I.. Did I say something wrong?

Me: What do you mean Preacher's wife?

She kept quiet..

Me: Nazo is a preacher?

Zeash: I thought you knew

My phone beeped indicating that a text came through, Zeash gave it to me. It was Nazo:

"I'll unconfuse you when I get there"

I put the phone next to me..

Zeash: I thought you knew.. I'm sorry

She looked at Dawn..

Zeash: I thought she knew

.

To be continued

81

NOMVELO

Everything was very confusing, Dawn and Zeash

left me very confused. Snazo walked in after a while, today he was in casual wear and he had his hat on. Everytime when I see him I get butterflies in my tummy, his presence is very soothing. He pulled the chair and sat down..

Him: How are you feeling today?

Me: I'm tired of laying in bed and doing nothing, just starrng at the wall most of the time and thinking. It's very boring I just wanna go home

Him: You will go home

He is usually very extra but today he was very reversed which is not like him, it was more like something was bothering him..

Me: Are you okay?

He played with my fingers..

Him: Dawn told me what Zeash said to you

Me: I'm confused.. What is going on? She said you a preacher

Him: That's not entirely who I am

Me: I don't understand

Him: I am..

I waited for him to find the strength to tell me

Him: I think it will be better if I show you

He started poking my arm..

Him: Do you feel anything?

Me: No

He rubbed his hands together and then placed them on my small arm, he looked at me..

Him: Can you feel that?

Me: Feel what?

Him: Wait

I waited and after a few seconds I felt the warmth of his hands..

Me: How?.. How did you do that?

I then felt a tingling sensation. He gently squeezed my arm and I felt it, my sensation was starting to come back to me..

Me: How did you do that?

He moved his arms..

Him: Try to move your arm

I tried moving it and it moved though it was trembling a bit but I could move it, I could even move my fingers..

Him: This is who I am

I looked t him dumbfounded..

Him: I am actually a healer, I heal with words and with the touch of my hands

I didn't know what to say..

Him: It's a gift that has been passed on from generations, my Grandmother had it and between me and Niso one of us had to get it. It was Me, I got the gift

I wanted to say something but I didn't know what to say..

Him: I understand if you speechless, it's a lot to take in

He held my hand..

Him: I never asked for this and at first it was difficult to accept. Velo all that I have known was the life of crime and hustling, that was who I am but fate had it otherwise. I am currently happy with who I am right now and it would mean a lot to me if you could be a part of my life, I know for a fact that you feel the same way that I do. It's not going to be an easy road and I'm not going to use any tactics to get you to be with me, I want it to come from you. All that I'm trying to say is that I think I love you Nomvelo Ngcobo. It would mean a lot to me if you could agree to marry me

He looked at the gutter..

Him: That's why I sent you this

He took it and gave it to me..

Him: You can keep it until you have made a decision, you don't have to make the decision now you can think about it

He stood up..

Him: I will give you some space up until you have an answer for me

He kissed me on my forehead..

Him: I settled your hospital bill by the way and you will still have a job at Dawn's studio though I will no longer be driving you, I'll ask a friend of mine to drive you

He kissed me again but this time on the lips..

Him: Get well

He then left. I always have an answer to everything but this, I searched deeper for an answer but I came back with nothing..

—
MANTWA

Me: Room number 3B, here are your keys and please enjoy your stay

Customer: Thank you very much

I got a new job at some fancy hotel, Patel knew someone who knew someone who got me the job. I am the receptionist and my shift for the next two weeks is going to be from 10:00-19:00. The pay is very good though the contract is going to run for 3-5 years, but at least it's good experience..

I liked the uniform more, Grey & white with a touch of black here and there. I work with a gentleman called Bruno at the reception, he is very nice and very forward I'm suspecting that he is gay but then again let me not just assume..

Bruno: My green grapes we in trouble

Me: What trouble?

Him: We have a large group checking in tonight for some function around here

Me: Large group?

Him: A very large group please check how many free rooms we have currently and those who are meant to check out at.. What's the time now

Me: 13:30

Him: There's ones that are supposed to check out at 16:00, call them and see if they can check out an hour before so that we can send the cleaning crew to go and clean

Me: Okay I'll do that

Him: Thank you Darling you came at the right time

I went to the computer and checked..

—

NOMVELO

I wiped my tears and hid the gutter as Danger walked in, he had food with him.

Him: Hey kiddo

Me: Hey

Him: I didn't know what to get you so I got you a bit of everything

Me: Thank you

He put the plastic ontop of the cabinet..

Him: Do you wanna eat something?

Me: I ate lunch at 12:00

Him: Are you full because I got you really delicious food

Me: Yall just want to get me fat.. What do you have?

Him: KFC, McDonald's, and I got you a home cooked meal from some traditional restaurant

and snacks then juice

Me: I'll have KFC for a change, I'm now tired of burgers

He took it out and then gave me..

Him: Streetwise two

Me: Thank you

Him: How are you feeling?

Me: Better.. At least now I can move my arm

Him: When are they discharging you?

Me: Not sure

(Silence)

Him: So why were you crying

I looked at him..

Me: It's nothing

Him: Talk to me

Me: Err..

Him: What's wrong?

Me: I think I am in love with Snazo.. You know Niso's Brother

Him: I know who he is... So what's the problem?

Did he hear me?

Me: I.. It won't feel right if we date

Him: Why? Because you were dating his Brother who is no longer no more?

Me: Apparently he is a healer and a preacher, he is now a religious being.. I don't know much about religion, all I know is that it's strict and then there's Nkuli it's a lot Danger and Nazo is not looking for just a girlfriend he wants a wife.. He proposed with a wedding gutter

I took it out and showed him..

Him: So fast?

Me: See what I mean? Religion is too strict

Him: But you love him and not the religion

Me: I don't know Danger it's just a lot.. He said he will give me some space, I miss him already

Him: All I can say is that he looks very responsible and mature, he seems like a good guy

Me: He is a great guy, he knows how to boyfriend too.. I don't know, I really don't know

Him: If you in love with him and wanna be with him go for it before someone else snatches him, he might be a preacher and all those things but he is still a man

I laid back and closed my eyes..

—

SNAZO

"We 5 minutes from freedom

Somebody tell my mom I'll be back when I'm cleaner

I'm really close to my dream up

Bebengenandaba, manje iyindaba zami ziyaziwa

Kuyafiwa, tell them I'm a believer

Long walk is not a boy riding out in a Bhima

Nare patlela ao'bena

Bathi akuna space manje izinja zami ziyagiga

Ama Visa, sigijimisa umadiba

Sabela impilo e-right iyabiza"

Me: Eyy Shine awuyicime leyonto, ing'phathisa intloko (Shine switch that thing off it's giving me a headache)

He switched it off..

Him: Yini indaba manje (what's wrong)

I ignored him and went back to the records..

Him: Entlek iBusiness ivaya grand mele ngabe we celebrating (the business is doing well we

should be celebrating)

He was right, the business was indeed doing well. Last month we made a lot of money..

Him: Phuma nayo.. Udliwa yini? (Out with it, what's eating you)

I looked at him. We might be different now but Shine has always been my home boy, he has been down for me for a long time..

Me: I came clean to Nomvelo

Him: Umshele ngey'ndaba zeNcwadi engcwele? (did you hit on her by using the Bible)

Me: No.. Shine be serious

Him: Ngi serious Ntwana beng'zokgabha strait (I'm serious, I was going to turn on you)

Me: I don't know what I'm going to do, ung'hleli ku oxygen lomntwana (I don't know what I'm going to do, she can't let me breath)

Him: ungasabi uzozwakala (she will come

around)

Me: You sound so confident

Him: Phela wena uyimpintshi yam' (You my friend)

Me: Anyway I need a favour

He looked at me..

Me: She's going to be out soon so she's going to need someone who is going to drive her to work and pick her up

Him: Manje ubheka mina? (You looking at me)

Me: You just gonna drive her nje just for a while

Him: Aii Nazo uNomvelo uyahlupha ushaya islungu aze as'khipe ngamakhala (She is very fluent in English)

I laughed..

Him: Into zabo.. "Why this.. Why that"
ungazodlala ngami (don't play with me)

Me: Thank you Shine.. I owe you one

Shine: Ehh..

.

To be continued

No edits

82

NOMVELO

2 WEEKS LATER

He opened the can of beer and started drinking..

Me: Excuse me you know better than to drink and drive

Him: Excuse me ngizovele ngikushiye la estradini (I will leave you here on the road)

I kept quiet and glanced down at the Wedding gutter, ever since he gave to me I've been wearing it around my wrist. I will admit that I miss him a lot, we haven't kept in contact ever

since that day at the hospital. He just only sent his friend to be my driver and Shine is a headache, me and him don't get along at all. It was a Saturday morning and he was driving me to have my stitches taken off, then later Nkuli and I we going to the mall to get a few things. Our relationship is a bit better now since she realized that things between Nazo and I are tense..

Me: Shine

Him: Yini? (what)

Me: Does Nazo talk about me?

Him: Ngizowazelaphi mina? Uyabona akekho la
(How would I know because he is not here)

Me: You don't have to be rude I was just asking a simple question

Him: Ndaba ubheda Kakhulu nawe! (problem you full of it)

Nazo was not around, he is at Mpumalanga so Gugu said. He has been gone for almost a week now, I don't know when he's going to come back. He is only on WhatsApp and at times I find myself typing to him when he is online but I then I never send the message, I miss him a lot though...

Shine: Ngizok'mela la (I'll wait for you here)

Me: You not coming in with me?

Him: For ini manje? (what for)

Me: I heard it's painful

Him: Nomvelo anginalanga lonke, i Saturday namhlanje umuntu mele alungiselele ukudakwa (Nomvelo it's Saturday today, a person should be preparing to get drunk)

I rolled my eyes and got out of the car..

I banged the door..

Him: Uzobuyela kini ngeyinyawo wena dodu

uyezwa? Tsek! (You will walk back home)

Out of everyone Nazo got me Shine to be my chauffeur, we always at each other's throats. I'm surprised we haven't killed each other..

–

SNAZO

Me: What you don't understand is that God sometimes can send a frustration to save you from another frustration, for instance say you all dressed up for an interview. You even woke up very early to catch the first taxi so that you don't get there late because this happens to be your first interview from all the posts that you have been applying for. You catch the first taxi and unfortunately it breaks down in the middle of nowhere, the driver tries to call the taxi Marshall but he can't get through. You keep on looking at the time and realize that now you getting late and it's frustrating you, if you don't

get to the interview and you miss this opportunity it's going to send you back to square one. Frustrated as you are, you put pressure on the driver and both of you end up clashing because of your frustration. A few hours later an alternative means of transportation comes by, at that time you don't wanna hear nothing! You wet with tears because your interview was at 11am and now it's 12. You have missed the opportunity and you don't feel like going there anymore but deep down you don't wanna give up, something deep inside says "go it's better showing up late than never" you get there and you hear that the building had caught fire, more than 20 people died in there who came for the interview because there was no way out. When you enquire you realize that it happened exactly at 11am, the same that you were supposed to be there. God saved you from a death that was premature, and the following day you get called

from another company and they become so impressed that they hire you straight away after the interview. What happened? God saved you from a bigger frustration. Here's the thing how God thinks is not how we think, if he thought exactly like how human beings think then he wouldn't be God. Let what's happening into your life right now become your testimony one day, and in everything that you do guard your heart.. May everyone have a blessed day

They started clapping. I didn't expect such a crowd, there was a conference at some church known as "The Apostles of Christ" I was invited to preach there up until the conference finishes, and also I need to heal a lot of people. The conference wasn't held at their church but they hired a hall because not only was it their church members who attended but they also had visitors, so they had to get a bigger accommodation. Zaine came through so did

Dawn and they had a guest with them that they wanted me to meet. Right after I preached their Pastor went to the pulpit to close the intersection, we will meet again at 13:00 for the last service. I will be continuing with my topic from then. I went to take my seat next to Dawn, Ziane had arrived a bit late he is the one who came with the guest. Dawn was the one who told me that Zaine will bring someone..

Pastor: Thank you Rev Nazo, I'm only addressing him as that because he is not entirely a Pastor but he is a preacher and a healer so the title "Reverend" seems fit. I am sure that most of the ladies in here wanna know if he is married or not

The ladies made some noise which was very awkward..

Him: Don't worry Rev I'm here to protect you and I'll make sure that no one bothers you when you walk out of here. Don't worry ladies he is

going to have his own church around here you can all go there and fill it up

We all laughed..

Pastor: On a more serious note thank you Rev Nazo, may God bless you more and we cannot wait to hear more from you. We can all stand up and I will close the service so that we can go and eat and then come back later for the last service

—

NOMVELO

It was painful taking off the stitches that I even bled a little, so they had to put a gauze and gave me pain killers and an antiseptic.

I wish Nazo was around, he knows how to make everything okay. Shine dropped me off at home, and Nkuli was already waiting for me so we went to the mall. We were going to do our own mini braai you know just have some fun since

the festive is approaching.

Everything was on her since her blesser sent her 5000 to spend for the weekend..

Her: Uzophuzani? (what are you going to drink)

Me: Anything will do

Her: Kungcono you no longer depressed so you won't be trying to commit suicide

She gave me the bottle of Gin, we got tonic water, Bernin ciders, and a bottle of Amarula. She went as far as getting 3 liters of 4th street too

Her: Do you think it's going to be enough? Phela it's not even 13:00 yet

Me: it'll be enough

Her: I'll get some more Bernin, if we don't finish today we'll finish tomorrow

We got the alcohol and then when we were done we went to buy meat at Pnp..

–

SNAZO

Zaine: That was a good sermon, you really called for this

Me: Thank you

Zaine: Snazo I want you to meet the real GOAT, Meet Prophet Faziel Badru

He turned to the Prophet..

Zaine: This is Snazo he is one of us but not a prophet though, he is a healer and a preacher

We shook hands..

Me: It's good to meet you

Badru: I've heard a lot about you

Dawn: Let's go and get something to eat boys, maybe we can use this time to talk about how we going to cheat on our wives

We all laughed..

Zaine: Nazo can ride with Badru, they need to get to know each other and if you thought our wives were strange wait until Badru tells you about his wife

Badru: Are you married?

Me: Not yet

Zaine: His soon to be wife is very heavy on the bottle, it's a bit of a complicated situation

Badru: That's better.. My wife was supposed to be a diplomatic witch

I chuckled..

Me: What?

Him: I'll tell you on the way

We all walked out..

–

NOMVELO

As we were driving back home I kept on typing

a message for Snazo:

"I miss you a lot, I want you to come back so that we can talk" I erased the message..

Nkuli: Yazi I'm glad that we didn't let this yaka Nazo to get to us, we family after all and family means everything.

I faked a smile..

Her: We going to have a very good time today

Me: Yes we will.. We going to have a very good time

I'm willing to let lose today, just forget about everything that's happening..

.

To be continued

No edits

83

SNAZO

We were at some restaurant eating before we go back to the conference. My life has always circled around friends who were corrupt, if we sitting together we thinking about the next crime that we must do or entirely talking about things that won't get us anywhere just land us in jail. This current change in my life sharing the table with the big guns was remarkable, we talked about random things..

Me: I heard you mentioning something about your wife being a "Diplomatic witch"

Badru: She once showed up in one of my sermons drunk

Dawn laughed...

Badru: She completely blacked out and by then the holy spirit had hinted that she was the girl that I was supposed to marry

Zaine: I'm sure you were like God I've handled a lot of things from witches to demons but this..

This is another form of demon

We all laughed..

Badru: I looked around and said maybe it's a classic mistake but each time my eyes landed on her

Dawn: What happened next?

Badru: You know when it's meant to be.. It's meant to be, we started a relationship and that's when I realized that I had to help her. She came from a family of riches, her family used witchcraft for riches and in turn they put a curse on her. They put a curse on her that if she sleeps with any man that man will not wake up the following day, basically Mercy was a..

Dawn: Sexual murderer

We laughed..

Dawn: I remember when Sway and I met she was just too messed up. She had a spiritual

husband, her brother was a ritualist it was a lot that was going on

Zaine: I'm thinking Nazo you have it easy

Dawn: Maybe because he's the last born

Zaine: I mean yes Nomvelo went through great tragedy but she doesn't come with much other than a drinking problem

Dawn: She's actually a very nice girl but she's a headache

Me: Don't even mention it

Dawn: She has a lot of growing up to do she is still a child and still trapped in childish behavior

Badru: How old is she?

Me: 21

Zaine: I think Bonolo was 19 when we first started going out

Me: I just hope that this break I'm giving her will

actually make a difference

Some ladies walked up to up..

Lady: Good day

We greeted back..

Lady: Me and my friends were sitting right there and we saw Prophet Zaine, I just want you to know that every Sunday I tune into your channel and you have helped me soo much

She started getting emotional..

Her: And I also noticed Dawn Baker the Exorcist, I also watch your videos on YouTube though their scary but I am so blessed to be in a restaurant with such Powerful men.. Can we please get a picture with the both of you?

Me: I'll take the picture

She gave me her phone and I waited for them to pose then I took the picture, when I was done I handed her back her phone..

Her: Thank you

Right there after handing her the phone I felt a bit weak, I looked at her and noticed that she was limping..

Badru: I think it's time to go

Zaine: I think so too

I went up to her as she said down..

I greeted her friends before talking to her...

Me: I'm sorry but can I ask you something?

Her: Yes

Me: How long ago did that heavy box full of toothpastes fall on you at work?

She was shocked..

Her: Excuse me?

Me: Some time at work when you were at the back, a box full of toothpastes fell on your foot

Her: How did you know?

Me: I'm sorry.. I'm a spiritual healer and when I handed you your phone back suddenly I felt a bit weak which signified your emotion and mental being, you feel weak most of the time because you emotionally tired. You even stopped going to work because your foot doesn't want to heal. Doctors keep on saying there's nothing wrong with you, but every night you feel a lot of pain that you can't even sleep

She wiped her tears as one of her friends pat her on the shoulder..

Me: Know that what happened that accident was demonic, Tha devil wanted you to lose your job so that you can suffer to provide for your kids since you a single parent.. Know that today you healed and you can go back to work, I crouched and massaged her swollen foot. As I squeezed a bit harder she flinched.

I then stood up and asked her to do the same, she stood but was still scared to completely put

her foot down...

Me: Come on put more pressure on it

She closed her eyes and started walking, she put more of her balance on it and she realized that it wasn't painful anymore, she lost it. She sank down on the floor crying.

Her friends were also shocked, I walked back to the guys so that we could leave..

–

NOMVELO

At first I wasn't all for the braai but as we started preparing, I had about 2-3 glasses of wine and my mood changed. I was now more into the braai and drinking, you know just having a good time. It was still me and Nkuli around, my Grandmother is coming back tomorrow she had gone to see some relative of ours that was said to be sick..

Nkuli was preparing the fire outside so that she could braai the meat and I was busy preparing salads. We had the front and the kitchen door open, as we playing music. We were playing our favourite songs..

"These friends keep talkin' way too much

Say I should give you up

Can't hear them, no, 'cause I...

I've been here all night

I've been here all day

And boy, got me walkin' side to side

I've been here all night

I've been here all day

And boy, got me walkin' side to side"

Nkuli walked back in while singing..

Her: How far are you?

Me: I'm getting there

Her: You know this song kind of reminds me when I first started dating Nazo, I was all naive and innocent and my friends would constantly warn me like "He is not your type of guy, he is too rough and hardcore"

She talks a lot about Nazo lately which I don't understand why..

I let her be and continued with what I was doing..

Her: Let me go and pour the charcoal

I took my glass and drank from it then I went to my bedroom and got my phone, at that point I got the courage to text him. No make that I sent him a VN..

Me: "You left and you didn't even tell me where you going or what you going to do, I only heard that you somewhere in Mpumalanga. Did you leave because of me? Are you planning on now being far away from me? Please come back

home. I miss you a lot and I love you, come back home to me so that we can talk. I am hurt that you doing this to me, you Nkuli is even doing this braai for us and already I'm getting drunk"

I wiped my tears..

Me: "Come back home Nazo.. I miss you a lot"

I sent it and it delivered, was only one tick. I called him and his phone was on voicemail..

Me: Nazo come on!!!!

I sent him another VN..

Me: If you with something else there or fucking some random bitches just tell me because really I can't!!! I can't deal with that type of shit you hear me??? (Shouting)

Nkuli: Nomvelo!!

Me: I'm coming!!

I went back to the VN...

Me: Get your shit together you hear?

I sent the VN then I walked out of the bedroom..

–

SNAZO

If was now full, full than how it was earlier on and I was already about 10min into my preaching..

Me: There's something that we cannot run away from and that is our emotions, we have no control over our emotions at times and that's just simply being a human being. You were created with love, but because the devil will always destroy the perfection that God has made he planted certain seeds of his own and that is Jealousy, anger, and hatred. You were created with love so you should put nothing out there but love. Remember life is a game of boomarangs whatever you put out will always come back to you. "Do unto others as you

would have them do unto you" you cannot spend your time hating other people and being wishing them bad things and expect good things to come your way? No that's not how it works. You will always get what you put out. I was talking to someone outside a few minutes ago before the sermon started and she said "Me and this other girl have been best friends for a very long time, lately things haven't been soo good between us. I fell pregnant right after matric and unfortunately I couldn't continue with school anymore, those dreams that me and her shared of going to varsity together stayed a dream to me since reality kicked in and I had to get a job so that I could care for my child. My baby daddy forced me to abort and at times when life got difficult I wish I did. I didn't understand why my Parents were punishing me soo much, my Father stopped talking to me altogether and my Mom told me that now that I have a child I am no longer their responsibility,

If I can make babies then that means I am adult and adults take care of themselves. This year my Friend bought a car, she went to varsity and graduated then got a job at the bank. She doesn't have a child and she is said to get married next year. I have stopped communicating with her because her life is a thorn to me, she is moving forward while I'm stuck. My Mother tells me about her everyday and reminds me that I'm a failure, if it wasn't for my baby I would have long committed suicide. Her friend succeeding in life is a thorn to her, those are strong feelings and emotions that she cannot control because she feels like she failed herself. She is living a life full of regrets. In such situations I tend to say that suppress those emotions with an affirmation. Affirm that "What God does for others, he now does for me and more" see other people's success and prosperity not as a thorn in your heart but as an encouragement that if God can do it for others,

he will also do it for me. Let their success not break you but strengthen your faith. Remember our journey is not the same, life is no different from distant traveling. Most people travel by planes and most they take the bus, taxis, or they drive. Whatever the choice of traveling but we all reach our destinations, those flying may reach there faster but who said the view at the top is pleasant? The one in the bus might even have the best view while traveling to their destination than those who are flying even though they will reach their destination faster. All that traveling have one thing in common, be it a driver or a pilot they

All wanna get you there safely and they will make sure that they get you there. You fall asleep along the way but they don't, they control the vehicle with caution to make sure that you get there safely that's the main goal and that's how it is with our God. No matter how bumpy

the road may seem but he will get you there, others may reach their success before you but at the end of the day you will get to your destination too, and trust me when you get there you will even forget that the ride wasn't pleasant at times..

–

NOMVELO

By now I must've sent him about 20 voice notes and a couple of messages, I didn't understand why he wasn't getting back to me. So this is how it ends? This is how he does me? I was very mad and the alcohol wasn't helping either..

Nkuli is strong I don't know how she does it but she wasn't my state of drunk. She was tipsy. We were having soo much fun just dancing around and hugging each other while laughing and falling..

Us: "I've been drinking, I've been drinking

I get filthy when that liquor get into me
I've been thinking, I've been thinking
Why can't I keep my fingers off it, baby?
I want you, na na
Why can't I keep my fingers off it, baby?
I want you, na na"

Nkuli: Drunk in love!!!!

Me: Wait wait wait.. Come take a video of me
dancing

I took off my shirt and I got on top of my
Grandmother's dinning table, I was only left with
my bra and my denim shorts. I untied my hair
and started dancing while Nkuli recorded me..

Me: We woke up in the kitchen saying,

"How the hell did this shit happen?"

Oh baby, drunk in love we be all night

Last thing I remember is our beautiful bodies

grinding up in the club

Drunk in love

We be all night, love, love

We be all night, love, love

Nkuli: You go girl!!

After dancing I got down...

Her: Here

Me: Thank you

I immediately sent it to Nazo..

Nkuli: Drunk in love baby

She put her hand around my shoulders..

Her: I love you cuz

Me: I love you too

I started jumping around..

Her: What is it?

Me: I have to tell you something

Her: Okay what is it?

Me: Nazo asked me to marry him and I'm going to say yes

She looked at me and then laughed..

Me: You too drunk.. See you play a lot, that was funny

Me: I'm not joking look.. He gave me the gutter I've been wearing it around my wrist

Her: Nomvelo that's not funny

Me: I am not joking... I'm going to say yes

I heard a familiar voice calling out my name..

Me: Is that?

She walked in the lounge..

Me: Grovvy?!

Her: Mpintshi yam!!!

How the hell did she find out where I live..

.

To be continued

No edits

84

SNAZO

Church came out very late I didn't think that the service was going to drag that much, the afternoon service started at 13:30-16:30. Then we took an hour break so, the last service was from 18:00-22:00. During my hour break that's when the holy spirit showed me a lot of People that needed to be healed and others needed a deliverance, this time around I worked hand in hand with Prophet Badru. Most people were binded from reaching their success because of witchcraft, a lot was happening and a lot of people needed the deliverance. When the serv finally came out I stayed behind for a couple of people that needed to be prayed for and I got

into my hotel room at around 00:00, I was very tired that I went straight to bed. Fortunately the following day I was going to attend the morning service only, then at 13:00 in the afternoon I'll be driving back home. The morning service was to start at 10:00am, I'll be preaching at 11am up until at 12:30 or 13:00 in the afternoon..

I woke up at 6:00am to pray then at 7am I was able to hold my phone and check who contacted me last night. To my surprise I received a lot of Voice notes from Nomvelo, and also a certain video that I couldn't stop watching. I wasn't very happy with the fact that she was drunk and for her to even mention that Nkuli is the reason behind her acting like this, it truly rubbed me off the wrong way. I know very well that Nkuli is doing this out of spite and Nomvelo doesn't see that. After watching the video and listening to the VNs I called her right away and she didn't pick up, I checked her last

seen on WhatsApp and it was at 01:00am she's probably still sleeping so I called my Mother instead..

Her: Good morning Baby

Me: Good morning

Her: How are you? And how is everything going?

Me: Everything is going well

Her: Yazi I can't wait to hear you preach

Me: I'll get you the tape, they going to be selling them for R100 at the church

Her: Thank you very much.. I can't wait

Me: I'll set a reminder so that I don't forget

Her: Okay.. Is everything okay? Why are you calling me so early in the morning?

Me: I need to talk to you

Her: I'm listening

Me: Nomvelo sent me some VNs talking about

she loves me and that I should come back home so that we can talk

Her: Okay what's the problem?

Me: She was drunk Ma... Apparently Nkuli did some braai and she made Nomvelo drink, I know she's doing it out of Spite

Her: Obviously she's doing it out of spite, she's trying to break what you two have even though it hasn't started yet, and wena Nazo I'm disappointed in you! That day when I walked in and you two were kissing, were you going to sleep with her?

Me: No.. I would've stopped it before it went further

Her: Baby if Nomvelo is really meant for you then you will have to be serious with her, she has been through a lot and if you going to hurt her more then leave her Nazo. If you still feel like there's unfinished business between you

and Nkuli then leave Nomvelo, don't hurt her.
She's been through a lot

Me: I don't have anything to do with Nkuli Gugu,
what you saw that day was just.. Look she's my
past and Nomvelo is my future

Her: Then dont hurt her! You should know better
and I'm very disappointed in you I don't wanna
lie

I know that when Gugu starts, she's never going
to stop...

Me: Okay Gugu I have to go

Her: It's okay baleka (run away)

Me: I'm not running away I'm just late for my
service

Her: Baleka phela ngiyakwazi wena (Run away..
I know you)

Me: Bye Gugu.. I love you

Her: I love you too Nazo

–

NOMVELO

Somehow this place looked familiar, I've been here before. The pure white room, the small window, the white dress that I was wearing. I have been here before..

Voice: Velo

I turned around and there she was, My Mother. She has the most beautiful smile that I have ever seen before. Her smile makes everything okay somehow..

Me: Am I dreaming again?

Her: Yes but this time you here because I want to say goodbye

She walked up to me..

Her: Remember what I said before?

Me: That someone was going to ask for my hand in marriage and that I should say yes?

She put her hands on the sides of my shoulders and smiled..

Me: You were talking about Snazo weren't you?

She smiled and nodded..

Her: Yes I was

Me: Mom..

Her: He loves you Nomvelo and I know you don't understand what's happening but.. Believe in the love that he has for you and trust your heart then you will see everything else will be easy

Me: It's complicated Mom

Her: No it's not

She put her hands on my cheeks..

Her: I've been waiting for this day for a very long time and it has finally arrived, you very blessed baby. You don't know how blessed you are

I smiled..

Her: I love you Nomvelo and you have been my joy ever since I found out that I was pregnant, I wish that we had more time to spend together

Me: Me too

She kissed me on my cheek..

Her: I'll always be watching over you

Me: You leaving?

Her: Yes.. It's time for me to go now

Letting go was difficult, I wish she would stay and we meet in my dreams always.

Her: I am very proud of you

I felt my heart breaking..

Her: I love you Velo

Me: I love you too

She stepped back and held my hand until she disappeared, that was difficult to digest.

Knowing that this will be the last time that we ever meet. I was woken up from that dream by my phone ringing, I got it and checked who it was. It was Nazo, I didn't answer I just let it rang until it stopped. Then I sent him a message..

*****WHATSAPP*****

Me: I got your missed call

Him: More like you ignored my call

I wasn't in the mood, my heart felt heavy..

Me: What did you want to say

Him: I'm going to call again

Me: No.. Please don't

Him: Okay.. I'll be home later today, sizoyiqeda
(I'll be home later today, we will discuss this)

Me: Okay

He didn't respond again

I had a massive headache and I felt like sleeping more, that's what I hate about drinking. The hangover is shit!!

I got out of bed and made my way out of my bedroom, Groovy was passed out on the couch. I went and woke her up..

Me: Groovy!

I started shaking her until she woke up..

Me: What are you doing here?

She looked at me..

Her: Aii awume tuu (Wait a minute)

Me: What are you doing here?

Her: Haibo ngoba besijaiva sonke izolo (We were dancing together last night)

Me: How do you even know where I live?

Her: Izolo bengise Gazibo, then ngabuza ukuthi uhlalaphi, awaziwa Velo nginenhlahla that I

knew your surname (Yesterday I was at Gazibo then I asked around. No one knows you, I'm lucky that I know your surname)

I sat down on the couch next to her..

Her: Bhabhalazi? (hangover)

Me: A terrible one

Her: Drink water then sleep again

Me: I'll do

(Silence)

Me: Have you seen my cousin?

Her: uNkuli?

Me: Ya

Her: maybe usalele (maybe she's still sleeping)

Me: Let me look for her

I looked for Nkuli all around but I couldn't find her, it was very weird..

–

NOMSA

My Mom took me to church with her at first I was against the idea but then again if I attend church what do I have to loose? It's just church...

Ma: Are you ready?

I looked at myself in the mirror one last time...

Me: I'm ready

Her: Don't worry I promise you that everything is going to be alright

Me: I hope so

Her: Trust me.. I am your Mom, I will never lead you astray. You have tried by yourself and you failed, let's try it my way now

I nodded.. After all she's my Mother..

–

NOMVELO

My Grandmother came back earlier than I had anticipated, when she learned about what happened she was so angry she couldn't stop yelling at me and Groovy. We were cleaning the house and washing dishes Her: Mara ngiyahlololwa ukudakwa okungaka? (I am being tested with soo much alcohol)

You know when you have a hangover and someone yells at you, it makes your headache worse..

Her: Mara Nomvelo tell me, uzimisele ngani? (Tell me something what are your plans in your life)

I kept quiet and she looked at Groovy...

Her: Sowuhlangana nabantu aba so? (You now mixing with this type of people)

Groovy: Yooh Aii Velo ngizok'bona (Velo I'll see you)

Grams: Ungaphide ubuye la (Don't ever come

back here)

Groovy left..

My Grandmother looked at me..

Grams: Ang'sazi mina manje (I don't know anymore)

Me: I'm sorry

Her: Sorry? Nomvelo you can't live like this! I'm old I'm going to die soon and I don't want to leave you in this state! Just tell me how-

Me: Nazo asked for my hand in marriage and I'm going to say yes

She looked at me and said nothing..

Me: I'll be in good hands so you don't have to worry about me

I went to my bedroom and threw myself on the bed, I took my phone and went through my call log. I bumped into Nazo's number, I wish he was around. I miss spending time with him,

especially when I'm down like this.

.

To be continued

No edits

85

NOMVELO

My Grandmother woke me up, didn't even realize that I had fallen asleep...

Her: Sit up we have to talk

I figured that out.. I sat up straight so that we could talk..

Her: Earlier you mentioned that Snazo asked for your hand in marriage, now I don't know if it was a joke or you were serious

Me: I was serious, he did ask for my hand in marriage

Her: Are you going to say yes because of what I

said?

Me: No I was just talking I didn't mean that

Her: Please don't take what I said the wrong way because it didn't come from a bad place, I just want you to be happy and with everything that you have been through you deserve all the happiness in the world. I want to rest in peace one day knowing that you in good hands and you have a good future

Me: I understand

Her: How did you and Nazo even happen?

Me: I am not sure just..I can't even explain it
Duchess

I exhaled..

Me: Nazo is an amazing Person, he is very caring, full of love, a bit of a strict disciplinarian but he makes me wanna keep on living. A few months ago I didn't see the use of waking up in

the morning but with him in my life everything is different, he gives me a reason to wanna keep on going

Her: Do love him?

Me: I think I do

Her: Nazo is a very good soul, even when he was still up to no good, his Grandmother spoke very highly of him, said he was special and he is

Me: He is a healer and a preacher

Her: I know.. His Grandmother always said it

Me: He is very special, my heart melts everytime when I think of him. I have never been this sure about a guy before

Her: If you take that decision to be with him then there's a few things that you need to change. Being a Preacher's wife might require a lot from you, and if you love him as much as you say you do then adapting to a new life will

come naturally. What you need to understand is that Nazo is not looking for a girlfriend, he is way past that stage. He is looking for a wife someone that is going to go through this journey with him, he needs a strong woman behind him

Me: I know Duchess

Her: Can you do that? Are you ready for marriage? Can you be a wife to him

Me: I don't know about all of that but I just want to be with him

She laughed..

Her: You will be fine baby and Gugu is a great woman

Me: She is..We get along very well

She hugged me..

Her: I am very proud of you

Me: Thank you

She broke the hug..

Her: If you going to say yes to the proposal then there's a lot that I still have to teach you, helpers are good but don't let another woman cook for your husband or wash your Husband's clothes. The helper can help around but your husband must always be your first priority at all times

Me: That's very true.. I wouldn't be comfortable with another woman taking care of my Husband

Her: And the drinking must completely stop
Velo

Me: I'll get there

Her: Come on.. Let's go to the mall

She stood up and then walked out, I looked at the gutter on my hand. I hope that everything is going to workout well..

–

SNAZO

I was glad to be back at home, I was very exhausted and all that I wanted to do was to just sleep. Gugu was happy to see me..

Gugu: He is back

She hugged me..

Her: How was your trip?

I sat down..

Me: It was good just tiring

Him: Ohhh you poor thing I can tell by your voice

Me: How are you?

Her: I'm good baby no complaints

Me: That's good to hear

Her: So where is the tape?

Me: We going to need a DVD player for that

Her: I don't even know where it is

Me: We'll look for it

I took out my phone..

Me: Look at this

I showed her Nomvelo's video and also made her listen to the VNs. She couldn't help but laugh..

Me: It's not funny Gugu

Her: What is this all about?

Me: I don't know but it has everything to do with Nkuli

Her: Nomvelo should stop drinking clearly utshwala buyamhlula (alcohol is not for her)but then again I think she has hearts for you, after all there's some truth behind a drunk person

She gave me my phone back...

Her: Thatha Mam'fundisi maan!.. Maybe we can have that dinner tonight

Me: Are you sure?

Her: I'm very sure

Me: I'll call her

Her: Nomvelo should really watch out for her cousin, Nkuli doesn't have Nomvelo's best interest at heart. She's being very spiteful and she will stop at nothing to ruin you guys, ruin what you starting. A bitter ex is very dangerous

Me: I know and I'm not even going to confront her about this, this is what she wants. A reaction I don't have time to entertain Nkuli's pettiness

Her: Nomvelo will just have to be careful, I know it's her cousin and what not but she has to be very careful

Me: I'll talk to Nomvelo

Her: Do that

(Silence)

Her: We have to talk baby

Me: About?

She didn't say anything, I looked at her..

Me: You seeing someone aren't you?

Her: Not entirely it's a uhm..

Me: What is it?

She sighed..

Her: Your Father wants to meet you

My mind froze for a few seconds..

Me: What?

Her: He made contact and he wants to meet you

Me: Just like that?

Her: Well I've been meeting up with him remember that trip to the "mall" I went to meet up with him, he wanted me to tell him about You and Niso when he heard that Niso is no

more he asked if he could meet up with you

Me: Are you sleeping with him?

Him: Ini? (what)

Something about this story that doesn't make sense..

Her: I am not sleeping with him

Me: Gugu..

Her: Nazo I am still your Mother

I let her be..

Me: What kind of a person is he?

Her: He is very handsome, that's why he gave me such cute boys

She started squeezing my cheek..

Me: Stop it..

Her: My nunununu..

Me: Gugu stop it!

Her: Ohhh I'm sorry Mr Preacher now you too good for me to toy with you

Me: I'm 28

Her: Then you and Nomvelo should hurry up and give me Grandkids to toy with

She chuckled..

Her: I'm just imagining Nomvelo bei-

Me: Don't start...

Her: Don't worry I'll teach her a few things especially how to prepare your favourite dish, dumplings and chicken curry

Me: Now you talking

Her: So are you going to meet him?

Me: I'll see

Her: You don't hate him do you?

Me: No.. I gave up that hate long time ago but don't expect any relationship between me and

him, I don't know him and he has been absent for 28 years of my life

Her: I know and I understand

Me: Let me go and rest a little

Her: I'll start preparing dinner

Me: Thank you

Her: Don't forget to call Nomvelo

Me: I won't

I called Nomvelo while I went out to my room

Her: Hello

Me: Thought you didn't want to talk to me

Her: You exaggerating

Me: Am I?

Her: Ah Nazo, I didn't say that

Me: Anyway what are you doing?

Her: Waiting for my Grandmother.. We going to

the mall

Me: Walking?

Her: Yes

Me: I'll come and get you guys

Her: You don't have too.. We need the exercise

Me: Mara angik'celi moss (I wasn't asking you)

Her: Abusive tendencies have started

Me: Abusi... I want to hear you say that in my face

She laughed..

Her: You sound a bit tired

Me: Ya I am but I'll be fine.. Are you guys ready

Her: Yes we are

Me: Okay I'm on my way

Her: Okay

I hung up..

–

NOMVELO

The butterflies started again, Talking to him just does things to me..

My Grandmother walked in..

Her: Let's go

I turned and looked at her..

Me: Do I look okay?

Her: What do you mean?

Me: Am I dressed fine is my hair good?

Her: Why?

Me: Nazo is coming.. He is going to drive us to the mall

Her: Is it?

Me: Yes.. I hope you don't mind

Her: I don't mind just that he shouldn't get too

comfortable he still has to pay Lobola and I hope you haven't slept with him yet

Me: Duchess!

Her: What? Are you sleeping with him?

Me: No.. If course not

Her: Good keep it that way.. He might be a preacher but he is still a man

Me: I hope you won't say such things when he comes

Her: If you not sleeping with him then you got nothing to be embarrassed about

Me: Please don't say such things

Her: Anyway where is Nkuli?

Me: I don't know.. When I woke up she wasn't around but her car and clothes are still here

Her: That's odd.. Unless she went to one of her boyfriends

Me: Maybe

Her: Let me go get my phone and call her

Me: Okay

I heard a knock at the door.. I went to open and it was Nazo, I let him in..

Me: Agh shame you do look tired

Him: I'm fine thanks and how are you?

Me: I'm good

He came and kissed me while grabbing my ass..

Me: I missed you

Him: I've missed you too sweetheart

He squeezed my butt a bit harder..

Him: And someone has been misbehaving while I was gone

Me: That was very embarrassing.. I'm sorry you weren't supposed to see nor hear that

Him: Who took the video?

Me: Nkuli

Him: Where is She?

Me: I'm not sure where she went

Him: May that Neve-

My Grandmother walked in, Snazo let go of me..

Grams: Snazo

Snazo: MaNgcobo

Grams: We would've walked to the mall it's not far

Snazo: I don't mind

Grams: How sweet.. Just don't think we'll go easy on you when it comes to the Lobola negotiations just because you driving us to the mall

Snazo looked at me..

Grams: Yes I know she told me about the

proposal

Me: Duchess

Grams: I didn't know it was a secret

Snazo: I'm just surprised that's she's telling everyone while she hasn't even given me an answer

They both looked at me..

Me: Can we go already?

Nazo: And here we go

He walked out..

Grams: Aii Nomvelo, that's not what you said earlier on

Snazo: Before I forget my Mother said I should invite you for dinner tonight at my place

Grams: Thank you for the invitation, and tell Gugu we will be there

Me: We?

Grams: Yes we will be there

My Grandmother is just way too forward with this situation..

.

To be continued

86

NOMVELO

I was so nervous about the dinner so I kept on trying out a few dresses and a few skirts, I just didn't know what to wear. I finally found an outfit that I was comfortable with, my navy blue mermaid skirt. White vest that was tucked in and blue heels, I tied my hair into a bun and I didn't put much makeup. Just an eye liner, I did my eyebrows, and put on a lipstick. I hope I was not over dressed but at the same time I don't want Nazo's eyes to wonder around, I want him

to always find me attractive. My Grandmother was yapping as always up until we arrived at Snazo's place, we were right on time and Gugu was still setting up she was alone..

Gugu: Velo noMangcobo

She was surprised to see my Grandmother..

Gugu: Bengithi kuza uVelo kphela (I thought only Velo was coming)

Grams: Aww cha ngiyakwazi ukuthi uyalishaya bhodi manje ngizimemile (I know that you a good cook so I invited myself)

Gugu: There's no problem.. I'm glad ukuthi nizile (I'm glad you guys came)

She looked at me..

Gugu: Akamuhle yena bakithi (You look very beautiful)

Gugu is very extra and now she was making me blush..

Gugu: MaNgcobo ungangena uyohlala phantsi, sizoletha ukudla (MaNgcobo you can go and sit down we will bring the food)

My Grandmother walked to the living..

Gugu: Come and help me with this bhabha

I went and helped her..

Me: It smells nice

Her:

Wait until you taste it..

You can take that to the dinning table..

Me: Okay.. Uhm is Nazo going to be joining us?

Her: Yes he just went out he will be back

Me: I thought he said he wanted to rest a bit

Her: Nazo doesn't sleep for that long during the day, he is not a fan of sleeping at all

Me: Okay

I took the food to the lounge..

Gugu: Nice gutter

Me: Thank you

Her: Getting married anytime soon?

Me: I.. Well..

The door opened, Snazo walked in with Shine. They saved me from an awkward moment. Shine was holding a 6 pack of beer, well now it was a 5 pack and Snazo was holding a can of appetizer.. They walked in all laughing and all that laughter and talking too much siezed when they found us in the kitchen. Out of everyone Snazo brought Shine, the most annoying person on earth..

Gugu: Ngathi sekuzoba yi party neh? (Are we having a party)

Shine: MaGuguz!

Gugu: Weee Shine angisiyo intanga yakho (I'm

not your age mate)

He looked at me...

Shine: Bengithi nje sizodla kodwa manje ang'sazi kahle uma uNomvelo akhiphe eze Christmas (I thought this was just a dinner but now I don't know since Nomvelo is wearing her Christmas clothes)

Nazo chuckled...

Me: Ugezile nje? (Did you even bath)

Gugu: Ake nimeni (wait a minute)

She looked at Shine..

Gugu: Shine take let's go to the living room take the plates

Shine took the plates and they went to the living room, leaving me and Nazo in the kitchen..

Him: Umuhle kanjani.. With your Christmas outfit

I attempted to walk away but he gently grabbed my arm..

Him: Ngiyadlala (I'm just kidding)

He put the can on the table and bit his lower lip, while starring at mine..

Him: Umuhle njani (You very beautiful)

Me: Thank you

He is my weakness and I can say that I'm his weakness, when we alone he can't keep his hands to himself. We found ourselves kissing, he then picked me up and placed me on the kitchen counter. He came in between my legs and we continued kissing, he went down to my neck and started giving me love bites. Every bite paralyzed me, I can't even explain how he makes me feel because words aren't just enough. My hand was at the back of his head, he forced his hands under my vest..

Me: There's .. There's.. There's elders in the

living room

He continued kissing me and someone disturbed us..

Voice: Hai nina siyabeka ukudla lapho..

Nomvelo hlika (we put food there, Nomvelo get down)

It was Gugu, Snazo helped me to get down..

She looked at us..

Gugu: we waiting for you bese nina.. Yazini eLiving room manje! (go to the living room now)

I was a bit embarrassed..

Gugu: Anisakhoni nje nokuzibamba! (You can't even hold yourselves)

We walked to the living room and sat down..

We started dishing up..

Gugu: Nomvelo will say grace

I looked at everyone..

Me: Let's close our eyes

Grams: Awususe iBeer etafuleni mntaka Pinky!!
(Remove the beer from the table)

Shine removed his beer from the table..

We all closed our eyes..

Me: "With grateful thanks, love, and care. We bow our heads in gratitude, for the joyful blessing of our food.. Amen"

Everyone: Amen..

Shine: Is'lungu esingaka (such and english)

Gugu: I didn't know that you can pray

Snazo winked at me and I just looked away, not trying to show everyone that I was blushing..

We started dishing up..

Grams: I think I know what brings us here

There she goes again..

She looked at me..

Grams: Velo.. I think Nazo has been waiting long enough

All eyes were on me..

I swallowed and looked at him..

Him: Yes.. Yes I will marry you

He smiled..

Gugu: Finally!! Kunini silindile (we have been waiting for a while now)

Me: Wait you knew?

Gugu: Baby I gave birth to him, of course he told me

Shine: Sifile (we are dead)

Me: Drink your beer Shine

Grams: This moment is very blessed

Gugu: I agree.. Umakoti wami omuhle kangaka mara (Our beautiful bride)

I swear that my cheeks were now red from all

that blushing..

–

NOMSA

There was a knock at the door, I looked at the time and it was 20:00. We were all sitting at lounge watching TV.. The person knocked again, we all looked at each other..

Me: I'll get it

I stood up went to open, it was our Neighbour NaTwala..

Me: NaTwala

Her: Nomsa

Me: What are you doing here so late?

She made her way in..

Her: Ngiyaxolisa ukuningenela ebusuku so (I apologize for coming here so late)

Me: Is everything okay?

My Mom walked in..

Ma: Hau.. NaTwala, konke kuyakahle? (is everything okay)

Her: Shlobo Ngiyaxolisa ukunihlasela ebusuku so (Sorry for just showing up so late)

Ma: What seems to be the matter?

Her: Hai akukho lutho wena Shlobo (It's nothing serious my friend)

We looked at her hoping that she will eventually come out with it..

Her: I wanted to ask Nomsa if she will be able to help around at the joint, one of my Employees is on maternity leave

NaTwala has a fast food joint somewhere in town and it's making a lot of money for her.

Her: I know it's short notice but it would mean a lot to me if you can start tomorrow morning at 8am sharp

I didn't expect this..

I looked at my Mom and she nodded..

Me: Uhm yes.. I would love too, thank you very much

Her: kubonga mina (I'm the one that's thankful)

I know it's not much but it's a great start..

—

MANTWA

Patel was back home and everything going well between us, my life seems to be very peaceful. I sat ontop of him, I had just taken a shower and my body was still a bit wet and I had a towel wrapped around me, I wrapped my arms around his neck..

Him: Let's get married

Me: Huh?

Him: Next year is far, let's get married this

festive just a private wedding

Me: Are you sure?

Him: I know it's short notice but I'm sure

Me: Okay let's get married (Smiling)

I kissed him..

—

NOMVELO

The dinner was amazingly nice, Gugu can cook I don't wanna lie. After the dinner we drove my Grandmother and Shine home then after Snazo took me to this open field..

Him: I come here most of the time to look at the stars and the moon

He was leaning against the car and I was warm in his arms..

Me: They beautiful

Him: Not as beautiful as the one that I'm

holding right now

I looked at him..

Him: I love you Nomvelo

Me: I love you too

Him: Are you sure? Do you really want to marry me?

Me: I do

He kissed me...

Him: Let me take you home.. It's getting a bit cold

Me: Okay

He kissed me again..

Nazo is just soo sweet and I'm very blessed to have him. Nkuli wasn't lying when she said underneath it all he is a big teddy bear.

.

To be continued

No edits

87

NOMVELO

I was glad that Nazo was going to be the one to drive me to work, Shine can be very draining at times and it's not even funny..

I woke up in the morning as always and prepared for work, out of all the alcohol that we consumed over the weekend the wine was the only one left so I decided to have a glass before leaving for work, I needed that one glass or maybe two. My Grandmother just invited herself into my room without even knocking..

Me: Grams you supposed to knock first

Her: Why?

Me: It's polite

She saw the glass of wine on the dressing table..

Her: Ohh

Me: It's not like that

Her: It's 6:45 in the morning, you going to work

Me: I know Duchess and right now I really don't want to be judged

Her: Lobola negotiations are this coming Saturday you said that you ready to be a wife, you agreed last night at the dinner table when Nazo and Gugu mentioned that and in two days time they will be sending a letter to confirm

Me: It's just one glass of of wine Duchess

Her: At 6:45 while you going to work?

I kept quiet..

Her: Nomvelo if you not ready then don't marry Nazo

Me: What does me having a glass of wine have to do with me being his wife?

She looked at me..

Me: I just woke up feeling a bit depressed and it happens that I had wine and I'm having just one glass nothing serious, don't treat me like I'm an alcoholic because I'm not one!

Her: Anyway I tried calling Nkuli and she's not picking up, I'm starting to get a bit worried

Me: She will be back

I looked at the time..

Me: Nazo is going to be here any minute

Her: Okay enjoy work

Me: Thank you

–

MANTWA

I was starting my shift a bit late today, I swapped shifts with one of my colleagues. I was going to clock in at 13:00 in the afternoon

so In the meantime I decided to go and visit my Mother and my Brother, Though my brother wasn't around he was at school writing.

Nevertheless I was happy to see my Mother mostly because I want her to help me plan the wedding, together with Patel's Mother since we going to accommodate the Indian culture..

Mom: How many guests are you guys going to have?

Me: Patel said about 20 from his side and we can do 30 from our side

Her: We have a big family Mantwa.. 30 is little

Me: It's a private wedding Ma, we can't invite everyone it's going to be expensive

Her: Okay it's your wedding as long as you happy

(Silence)

Me: I wanna invite Nazo

Her: We can't get all our relatives to the wedding but there's space for an ex con who almost made you take your life?

Me: Ma..

Her: What am I supposed to say? I hate that boy with everything in me and I can't wait for karma to hit him

Me: You shouldn't talk like that

Her: What should I say? He had a good girl and he played you! He left you with a broken heart knowing your history with relationships cha! awungiyeye kancane nje! (leave me alone)

Clearly my Mom has strong feelings of hate towards Nazo that I didn't know existed but I feel like inviting him, so I'm going to invite him

—

NOMVELO

Nazo came to fetch me at 7:00am my

Grandmother was able to keep her mouth shut about me having a glass or two of wine. Not everyday is joyful, there are times when I just wake up very broken and today was one of those days, I wasn't feeling well..

Nazo: You very quiet this morning.. Which is very unlike you

Me: I'm fine

Him: Should we go get breakfast so that you can tell me what's eating you?

Me: I'm okay.. I'm not hungry

He held my hand..

Him: Nervous about the negotiations this coming weekend? I know it's too soon but..

Me: Are you sure that you want me to be your wife? I mean there are a lot of girls out there that you can marry

Him: I wanna marry you

Me: Nazo

He pulled over..

Him: What's wrong kanti?

Me: I don't know.. I just feel like I'm a big screw up in the world, you don't need someone like me especially since your gift means so much to you I don't know I feel like I'm not good enough

Me: You marrying me not who I have become, I know that it won't be easy for you to just wake up one day and change everything that you know that's why we going to take it one day at a time. I love you and I want you just as you are

He always has the right thing to say and deep down I love him but there's just too much doubts..

He squeezed my cheek..

Him: You going to be fine.. You'll see

I smiled..

Me: Maybe we can go and have breakfast

Him: You said no already... I don't do second hand responses

I laughed..

Me: Get over yourself

He joined the road again..

Me: What are your plans for today?

Him: I'll be checking a few things at work

I was surprised to learn that his business makes him soo much money Gugu told us about it last night over dinner, I checked their Facebook page too when I got home and they have good reviews. Their ceiling designs are out of this world, they also put tiles and now they even do a bit of plumbing here and there. Nazo is truly blessed, not everyone excells in such a business and with him it seems like everything he touches turns into gold. We went to eat

breakfast at Wimpy, he told me to order anything that I wanted in the menu so I compiled my own breakfast with the help of the waitress..

I looked at him as he was busy talking to the waitress putting in order, apart from him being extremely cute I still don't understand why he went for me. Nazo could have any girl that he wants why Me? I have no doubt that I'm way too childish for him and he wants to make me his wife..

Waitress: Should I bring you anything to drink in the meantime?

Nazo: You can bring the drinks together with our order

Waitress: No problem

He walked away..

Him: I'll be going to Mpumalanga soon and I want you to come with me

Me: To do what?

Him: My business is expanding so we want to have another branch at Mpumalanga

Me: I'd like that very much.. I can't wait

Him: Before I forget you have to pick a ring

Me: Really?

Him: Yes because we not going to have a white wedding soon

Me: Why?

Him: I wanna give you the wedding of your dreams only when I know that you ready.. Right now you not ready, you ready to be my wife but you not completely ready to be a married woman. After the negotiations we going to sign and we going to have a big lunch for both our families, Bishop McCarthy is going to bless our union but a white wedding that will be determined by you as time goes on, I don't want

to overwhelm you that much

I thought for a while..

Me: I understand and I respect your decision

Him: I'm glad that we on the same page

Me: While we on the same page with that I want you to be on the same page with me about something

Him: Talk to me

Me: I also feel like you ready to be a husband but you not ready to be a Father, so we won't have any kids until I feel that you ready.. I don't wanna overwhelm you

He laughed..

Him: That.. That is off the table

Me: It's on the table

He laid back and gave me a side smile..

Him: Just so we clear I'm not going to use a

condom

Me: Didn't say you should

Him: I'm not pulling out either

Me: Suit yourself

Him: And you not going to use contraception

Me: Now that's up to me

He remained quiet for a while while looking at me..

Him: Okay fair enough and sex everyday is on the table

Me: Fine by me

He raised his eyebrow..

Him: When I say sex, with me it's in two ways..
There will be time for making love and then there will time for..

He leaned over while biting his lower lip..

Him: Tearing that pussy up without having any

mercy

I put my hand on my face..

Me: Are you even allowed to say such things?
You shouldn't say such things

Him: I can't wait.. Plus I have a big appetite

Me: Where is the waitress with our food? This conversation is really starting to get out of hand

He laughed and took his phone..

Him: Let me check my Emails quickly

Honestly speaking the conversation was making me very horny and you know wine isn't really helping, it's been a while since I last got laid and right now I was looking forward to the negotiations mainly because I wanna get laid. Another thing that makes me to fall very much inlove with him is the fact that he saw fit to do things the right way first before we could give ourselves to each other in that manner. I love

him so so much and I couldn't ask for better redemption than him..

Him: Stop starring at me that much you going to end up melting, I know I'm that hot

I laughed.. Just to think that I woke up in a very bad mood and now I'm all laughing, I am very grateful to have him and I hope he is here to stay. I'm not ready for another heartbreak..

Me: I love you so much

He put his phone down..

Him: I love you too Nana

The waitress brought our breakfast..

.

To be continued

88

NOMVELO

After breakfast he drove me to work, I must say

that my day went from bad to being good in a matter of an hour. I love Nazo and I love spending time with him, if it was up to me I would be with him 24/7. There was no one at the reception so that gave us time to be all touchy, as always..

Me: What are your plans for today?

Him: Gugu and I we going to fetch my Grandfather for the Lobola negotiations this coming weekend

Me: Well with us, we have demons to exorcize

Him: You saying that as if like you enjoy working here now

Me: I think I do enjoy working here now, it's a very unique experience and it's an eye opener. I never thought that such things really existed

He kissed me..

Him: I'm glad you enjoying

Zeash: I knew that something was going on between you two

Nazo: Hey Zeash

Zeash: Hi sugar how are you?

Nazo: I am well and you?

Zeash: I am good

Nazo: I will see you later

Me: Okay

He kissed me again..

Nazo: What do you guys usually eat during lunch?

Zeash: We eat food

Nazo gave her a weird look..

Zeash: Don't worry we a small family so the company provides

Nazo: Okay that's good

Me: I'll see you later

Nazo: Later it is

He walke up to the door..

Zeash: Bye Sugar

Nazo: Bye

Zeash turned and looked at me..

Me: What?

Zeash: Spill it out Dearie I wanna hear everything.. How did it happen? Are you guys really a couple now?

Me: Yes we are a couple

Zeash: You two look sweet together but know that he will remain my crush

I laughed..

Zeash: Not that I'm going to steal him but he is my crush and will remain one

Me: Noted..

Dawn made his way in..

Dawn: Good morning ladies

Zeash: Morning Boss

Me: Morning

Dawn: Welcome back Velo

Me: Thank you

Dawn: Is everyone around?

Zeash: Yes I think so

Dawn: Seminar room

Zeash: Meeting?

Dawn: Yes

Zeash and I looked at each other, sounds so serious..

–

NAZO

I drove back home to fetch Gugu so that we can

go get my Grandfather..

Gugu: Almost done

She always takes forever..

Me: Is makeup even necessary?

She looked at me...

Her: Yes it is

I shook my head..

Her: So when are you going to meet your Father?

Me: I am busy

Her: Thought we talked about this

Me: You talked Gugu and I listened

Her: So you don't wanna meet him?

Me: I don't even know his name

Her: You can get to know him

Me: I will don't push

My phone rang, it was an unsaved number...

Me: Hello?

I didn't hear anyone from the other end..

Me: Hello?

I heard something breathing..

Me: Who is this?

Voice: Nazo it's me!! Please help me!!! (Crying)

Me: Nkuli?

It sounded like Nkuli..

Her: Please help me or he is going to kill me!!!

Me: What is going on?

Then I heard a voice at the background, a male voice..

Voice: Who are you talking too? How did you get access to the phone?

I heard a struggle and then I heard Nkuli screaming before the line went dead..

Me: Hello? Nkuli?

Gugu: What is going on?

Me: I don't know..

I called the number again but no one picked up..

Gugu: Nazo what's going on?

Me: That was Nkuli.. I think she is being held hostage or something

Gugu: Really? and the kidnappers gave her a phone? How nice..

Me: It sounded serious Gugu

Her: With Nkuli you will never know

—

NKULI

Me: And?

Jabu: Sounded a bit convincing

Me: A bit?

Him: I don't know Nkuli.. I have never faked a kidnap before I just hope that this is not going to come and bite me in the ass

Jabu is a good friend of mine and right now he is helping me fake my own kidnap..

Jabu: You really love this guy don't you?

Me: Yes I do and I'll be damned is he marries my cousin

I picked up the glass of wine..

Me: He could have any girl that he wants I don't know why he went for her, worse she was dating his Brother who passed on a few months ago I just don't know what's going on.

Something is not right, They seem very much inlove obviously whatever is going on started a long time ago but Nazo is not like that. He loved his Brother more than anything he wouldn't date Nomvelo while Nomvelo was still with Niso and if they started dating recently why would he

propose so quickly if he's not really trying to spite me..

Jabu: You think he is getting married to spite you? Marriage a big step I don't think he would do it to spite you

Me: Either way Jabu I'm broken. Nomvelo is going to live my dream

Him: Nkuli weren't you and the guy done? You looked like you moved on

Me: Nazo was in and out of jail, the last time he got locked up I didn't think that he was going to come out because he had soo many charges. I thought I was going to wait forever and I couldn't because things at home were not good. My Mother married another man who didn't want me, I didn't wanna live at my Grandmother's forever. When I finally went to school I struggled financially, I had to do what I had to do for my fees to be paid so I can get my

qualification it was never about love. It was all about money and now I hear he has a booming business and Nomvelo is just going to cash in on everything that's not right. I love Nazo with all my heart and him being this financial stable was going to be a bonus

Jabu: My ex left me for my best friend because he had money and I was down, I loved her and I wanted revenge but it was not worth it. Please don't do something that's going to ruin your future, to ruin what you have

Me: Nomvelo and I we have a close relationship she's my little sister and I don't understand why she would do this, I seriously don't understand why she would be a part of Nazo's plan to get back to me. I refuse to let this be.. It's not right at all

Him: I know that you hurt but this is crazy Nkuli, let them be.. Fighting them you'll only be hurting yourself, they sound like they truly inlove..

Anyway how did you even get his number?

Me: I stole it from Nomvelo's phone while she was sleeping

Jabu: Aii Nkuli, izinto ozenzayo (things that you do)

–

NAZO

Gugu: Are you okay?

Me: I'm good

Her: In a few days you will be making Nomvelo your wife, I've seen her with Niso. Then I've seen her with you. I will be honest I was in denial about your relationship with her but after seeing you guys together. I wish I had that when I was your age, you two are beautiful together. You make love seem so easy and now I'm without a doubt that it was meant to be so please don't ruin it with Nkuli. That ex of yours has always

been tricky, Nkuli is conniving Nazo and this is one of her plans

Me: So you saying I should let it go?

Her: That's exactly what I'm saying, if she is really kidnapped why would she call you? Why not call her family? It doesn't make sense at all and where did she get your number from? Nkuli is up on one of her tricks as always

Me: For her sake I hope not because nothing is going to change, I'm still going to marry Nomvelo

—

NOMVELO

Dawn: We will be leaving in 5min time.. Did you get all the details from Zeash?

Me: Yes I did

He looked at me..

Him: Is there something that you want to tell us?

Me: I don't think so

Him: Big day on Saturday

Me: Ahh Nazo already told you

Him: Congratulations

Me: Thank you

My phone rang..

Me: Excuse me

I went and answered, the number looked a bit familiar..

Me: Hello

Nomsa: Hello Velo

Me: Nomsa?

Her: How are you?

Me: What do you want?

Her: I got your number from Danger.. I would like to meet up with you so that we can talk

Me: About what?

Her: Please Velo

I sighed..

Me: Fine we can meet up and talk

Her: Thank you very much

She was extremely humble, which is unlike her..

Her: You will let me know which day suits you best

Me: Okay

Her: Bye

Me: Bye

.

To be continued

No edits

89

NOMVELO

FRIDAY NIGHT

It was like the week just went by very fast, before I realized it was one day before the negotiations. I was nervous about tomorrow, Danger will be handling the negotiations with one of my hardcore Uncles and also our neighbour's husband. I hope that everything goes well, I pray that no external force will intervene. I had contacted my friends from school Tori and Power and told them about the negotiations, they have been trying to contact me for a while now and I kept on ignoring them. The reason that I cut all contact with them was that, they were a painful reminder of what I could've achieved. Being a fashion designer was my highest calling and after my Uncle passed on that dream died and I had to drop out. I was shocked when they responded positively to the news, they were very excited for me that they planned a "Bridal shower". Talk

about being dramatic, while it's not even a white wedding. We were going to sleep over at some hotel for the night and then drive back home very early in the morning, Nazo paid for our stay at the hotel when I told him about the bridal shower and I also invited Zeash. My Grandmother was a bit against the whole idea at first but then she ended up agreeing. I was so glad to see Tori and Power again..

Me: Thank you guys for being here and thank you for this

Zeash: We should be thanking you because he paid for everything

Tori: Ladies we have Tanqueray that will go well with Tonic, strawberries and lemon. Then we have Moet, and we also have a bottle of two oceans sauvignon blanc.. So who is drinking what?

Tori and Power don't know about my current

relationship with alcohol and I don't think I wanna tell them. They have done very well for themselves, next year they graduating and this Dec they be attending a fashion show in the UK. I am in no position to be laying down my failures, this is our reunion and I want us to enjoy. We were wearing silk pajamas that were white in colour, not that ancient type of design and definitely the pants weren't long. Power had brought along bunny ears just to make it more fun..

Power: While we on the drinks and I'll have tonic water with ice only..

She turned to me..

Her: Tori and I got you a gift

Tori came with the box...

Me: What is it?

Power: Open it

I opened it and it was a very sexy black lingerie accompanied by an expensive perfume..

Tori: To spice up things in the bedroom

Zeash: You should try it on

Me: I am not going to try it on

Tori: Just know that if he can't f** you 3 times a day then we want it back

We all laughed..

Tori: And drinks are served

Zeash: I got you something too

Me: You guys shouldn't have

I opened Zeash's present and it was also steamy..

Tori: Handcuffs and a whip, I should've thought about getting you that

Me: This is just on another level I'm not going to use them

Zeash: Come on.. They really cost me a lot of money

Power: Are you even allowed to get that much dirty I mean you mentioned something about him being a preacher

Me: We definitely not going to use the handcuffs and what not

Tori: Never in a million years did I think you would date someone who is religious

Me: Well I also surprise myself at times

Zeash: He is actually not that strict when it comes to religion, he is a very cool guy and you wouldn't even tell that he is a preacher

Power: Can we see him?

Me: Ya I guess so

I took my phone and showed them his picture..

Power: Wow that's him?

Tori: Let me see that

He took my phone and looked at the picture..

Tori: He is very yummy

Zeash: I told you guys

Tori: Can you video call him? At least on
WhatsApp?

Power: Tori!

Tori: What? I wanna see him maybe Velocity is
playing us

Me: You always up talking bull (laughing)

Tori: Come on

Me: Fine give me my phone

They came and stood behind me..

I video called him.. I didn't think he was going to
respond but he did, he caught us off guard...

Me: Hey.. Hi.. Didn't think you were going to
respond

Him: Why wouldn't I?

Me: Thought you were with the guys

Him: I am

Me: What are you guys doing?

Him: Are you checking up on me?

Me: Not entirely

Him: We discussing the Bible.. Zaine is holding down the sermon

I laughed..

Me: Really?

Him: Ya he is a prophet after all

Power: Wait Zaine? I mean as in like Prophet Zaine Radebe?

Power is obsessed with Prophet Zaine Radebe, even back at school she would be watching his Sermons on YouTube..

Zeash: You know him?

Power: Who doesn't know Prophet Zaine?

Nazo: And who are you?

Me: Ohh these are my friends Amandla and Tori, the ones I told you about and you know Zeash..

Yall this is my husband

Zeash: Excuse us miss thang

Tori: We just wanted to see if you really as handsome as how we saw you in the pic

Nazo: And?

Tori: I am getting an erection right now so I think the statement speaks for itself

Nazo: What???

Trust Tori to say such things..

Me: Never mind Tori he is very extra

Power: Tori behave!

Tori: What? I'm being serious

We then heard another voice calling out..

Nazo: I have to go ladies

Me: Okay enjoy your night

Nazo: You too.. I love you

Me: I love you too

Tori: All of a sudden the temperature in this room just increased.. I'm going to get the drinks

Zeash: How about we make this whole thing a game?

We looked at her..

Zeash: Why don't we challenge them? Do the Kupe challenge send him the video and have them do the same

Power: You seriously gonna ask Prophet Zaine to do the Kupe challenge?

Me: You even heard they holding down a Sermon

Zeash: Trust me.. Where there is Dawn there's

no sermon

Tori: It's actually a good idea

Me: I don't know guys

Zeash: Come on it's a harmless song and I have the song

I really felt some type of way about this..

—

SNAZO

I looked at the dealer..

Me: Fold

I put my cards upside down on the table..

Dawn: Hit me

Me: Do you have a good hand?

Dawn: Trust me

The dealer hit him up and it turned out that Dawn didn't have a good hand, it was a flop..

Dawn: I almost had it!

I shook my head..

Zaine: Maybe if you boys could go slow on the beer it will help

Dawn and I we were the only ones drinking beer, Zaine and Badru were drinking ginger ale. Badru was the one hosting us, we were having our mini bachelor party at the back of his house by the pool..

Badru: Are you guys even supposed to be drinking?

Me: I'm going to be someone's husband tomorrow and in a week's time I'll be ordained a Preacher, this is my last encounter with beer after this our relationship is over. Plus I'm only having 2 or 3, I prayed on this..

I then looked at Dawn..

Me: I don't know what his excuse is

Dawn: I am an exorcist.. I don't do sermons and what not, I'm a different spiritual breed

Zaine: You just turned in your chip.. How long has it been?

Dawn: 3-4 years

Zaine: It has been a journey

Dawn: A long and good journey plus we gambling isn't that out of hand Prophets?

Badru: It's not gambling if there's no money involved

Me: Excuses.. Excuses...

We all laughed..

Me: Thank you very much for this night

Zaine: You welcome.. You won't get this night ever again so enjoy

My phone beeped.. I checked it and it was a video from Nomvelo, my heart sank a bit. I was

worried because the last time she sent me a video it wasn't so good. I downloaded it and played it, it was actually not so bad. It was good to see that she was having fun with her friends and I saw no evidence of alcohol..

Me: Ohw so this is a challenge

Dawn: Challenge?

I showed him the video since it wasn't violating anything..

Dawn: They want us to do that?

Me: Apparently

Zaine: Do what?

I passed him the phone, he watched it and then laughed...

Zaine: I am not doing that

Badru: I'm definitely also not doing that

Me: I'll deliver the sad news

I video called her..

Her: Hey you got it?

Me: I got it

Her: Totally a dumb ass idea from my friends

Me: We not going to do that

Her: I knew you weren't (laughing)

I turned my phone to Zaine..

Me: Wanna explain?

Zaine: I got cold feet.. And my age no longer allows me

Velo: Power come and see its Prophet Zaine

I handed him my phone, I was a bit surprised to hear Nomvelo saying that I didn't think that she knew Zaine, considering the fact that she's not that spiritual..

Power: Ohhh my word it's Prophet Zaine!! I am so blessed

Zaine: See that hype I'm getting.. That's the exact hype that the video will generate and it will be a problem for me because no one will take me serious anymore as a prophet but I guess Dawn can do it, he is an Exorcist he has nothing to lose

I laughed..

Dawn: Sorry ladies.. My reputation is on the line, demons won't take me seriously anymore

We all laughed as Zaine handed me back my phone..

Me: I have to go I'll call you tomorrow morning

Her: Okay enjoy

Me: I love you soo much

Her: I love you too

Zaine: The endless "I love you so much" When the relationship is still new and fresh reminds me back then when my relationship was still

new with Bonolo

Me: everything changed?

Zaine: I have 4 kids and a granddaughter who always wants her Grandmother's attention, life at home has changed

Me: You have a Granddaughter?

Him: Yes from my first born blessing.. He travels a lot so his Daughter lives with us and my other 3 are in varsity but they always showing up at home

Me: Can't wait to have my own soccer team

Badru: Excuse me I have to take this call

He excused himself from the table..

—

NOMVELO

"I wanna last, wanna last forever I wanna dance,
wanna dance all night I wanna last, wanna last

forever I wanna dance, dance, dance all night
Baby bend over, baby bend over Baby bend over,
let me see you do that yoga Baby bend over,
baby bend over Baby bend over, let your booty
do that yoga"

I forgot how much fun the girls can be and I
was so happy that I didn't drink that much,
Though I was tempted to have more but I
restrained myself. Tori and Zeash were a bit out
of it and Power is not a big fan of alcohol, so
while they were being crazy Power and I went to
stand at the balcony just to catch up a bit..

Her: I am so proud of you.. Tomorrow you
officially going to be someone's wife

I smiled..

Me: I know

Her: You don't seem happy

Me: I am happy just that..

Her: What?

Me: What am I going to be? A preacher's wife for the rest of my life?

Her: What do you mean

Me: You know that going to design school was my dream, I want to be a designer so bad Power

Her: You can still go back to college, you can still be a designer. Being a preacher's wife won't change that

Me: I don't think that's how it works, most of them are housewives you really think I can still travel the world as a designer while I'm a preacher's wife? Won't be my commitments change?

She exhaled..

Her: Did you talk to Nazo about this?

Me: No

Her: You should and he seems like a good

person I don't think he will forbid you from achieving your goals

Me: I hope not

Tori came up to us..

Tori: Come on you two Grandmothers! This is the last time we going to have this much fun

Power: Come on let's go

She held my hand and we went back in. I sat down and watched them busy dancing around, after tomorrow this part of my life won't exist anymore. Design school will always remain a dream to me..

.

To be continued

No edits

90

NOMVELO

SATURDAY

We left the hotel very early in the morning Power and Tori dropped me off at my place so that I could prepare for the day ahead, My intentions were to sleep a bit seeing that last night I hardly slept because my mind was wondering around and a lot of thoughts kept me awake. Being married be it traditionally or in a white dress is not an easy step to take, and marriage is definitely not an easy journey. There are things that you need to give up, Things that you required to do and most of the time compromising is always required. I have dreams and I have aspirations, I love Nazo and I am willing to be his wife but at the same time I am not sure if I'm going to be the wife that he needs. His life has changed and a lot is going to be required of me, let's face it I am not even a spiritual Person..

My Grandmother seemed happy, Nkuli's Mom

was around to help she will be fully hands on the pots and our neighbour MaSthole was also here to help with the cleaning. Nkuli has since disappeared knowing the type of person that she is, we not even sure if she's missing or just went to one of her rich boyfriends. My Grandmother and her Mother said we will see the matter right after the negotiations..

Aunty: And here is your dress together with your doek, the mini blanket and the flat shoes that you supposed to wear

I looked at it, it was a beautiful traditional dress. It wasn't an ancient design and I liked it a lot..

Me: Thank you

Her: Are you okay?

Me: Yes I am

She closed the door of my bedroom and then sat down on the bed. A few seconds passed without us saying anything..

Me: I'm just a bit scared, I mean I do love Nazo and everything but I don't know if I'm ready for marriage

Her: I understand.. I mean you young and you at an age were you wanna enjoy life

Me: I wanna achieve a lot of things, I wanna go back to design school at some point. I just want a lot of things for myself and I don't know if I'll be able to do all of that when I'm tied down. If I'm married I will have limited freedom and Nazo is now very complicated since he took a spiritual path

Her: Marriage doesn't necessarily mean that your love is over, not all marriages are a nightmare. Yes some Men might use Lobola to control you and every aspect of your life but not all of them are like that, Nazo is young and I doubt he would be a nightmare. You guys need to talk about your independency and see how he feels about you doing certain things like

going back to school and everything. Ma speaks highly of him and I know that he is going to make you happy, she told me there has been a lot of change in you since he came into your life. She says you have been laughing more, smiling more, she says your life has taken a different direction from that dark place that you were in. You have been through a lot Velo, you found out things that no one should ever know about their parent. I want you to know that we were also blindsided, JJ blindsided all of us. Look this is your chance at experiencing true love and happiness, I know Gugu very well we grew up together and she is a bit of a tough cookie but she is a very good person and she might not fill that void of Veronica but she will always be there. She will always be the Mother that you never had. Love is a beautiful thing and not all girls are this lucky, take this opportunity and embrace it. This is God blessing you and I wish you nothing but happiness, now listen to

your heart and believe in the love that you both share and turn a deaf ear to the whispers of fear

That was a mouthful, I needed to hear that.

Me: Wow

I felt myself getting a bit emotional..

Her: Now come on help us to prepare everything because time moves fast before you know it his Uncles will be here.. Come on get up

Me: Have you heard anything from Nkuli?

Her: No... Nothing, Nkuli is not a child and she needs to start acting her age because this life will only produce deadly results. She can't live like this forever

Me: A part of me wishes that she was here

Her: She would've been dramatic about everything, maybe this is fate saving us from her ruining things for you.. Come help me cook

so that you can learn a few things, I must send you a few of my recipes

Me: I would like that very much

Her: Let's go and get to it then

—

NAZO

I spent about 2 hours at the church compound, most of that time went to praying and meditation. I couldn't feel any external evil force that might wanna intervene and prevent the negotiations, it seems like everything is going to go well. I am proud of this part of my life. After Nkuli commitment never really crossed my mind but today I am starting on a new path with someone who is very dear to my heart. I chuckled at the thought of how my life has turned out, it's amazing how not so long ago right now we would be formulating a plan on how to pull out a perfect heist. And today, I am

saving souls. I still don't know why God chose me for this type of ministry while I never even believed in him, I never believed in his existence. It's amazing how life turns out, I believe now that God has a plan for all of us. If he could change a hardcore criminal like myself then there's no telling what he can do for you, tomorrow your life might change for the better. All that's needed is to have faith and believe in him, God will do it for you according to your faith. If he can do it for me then he can certainly do it for you too.. I was now waiting for Prophet Badru, he called and said that he will fetch me and that we have to go somewhere. I wondered where we going at this time of the morning. He sent me a text that he is outside, I stood up and made my way out. We were going to take his car and leave mine behind..

I gave him a handshake..

Him: How are you man are you good?

Me: Yeah I'm good

Him: Praying for everything to go smoothly?

I looked at the sky, it was a bit cloudy but it looked like during the day it will be hot..

Me: Naa I'm good

Him: Ready to go?

Me: Where are we even going? and how long will it take

Him: You'll see

I looked at him..

Him: Don't worry it won't take that long

I wonder where he was taking me..

—

NOMVELO

I looked at myself in the mirror again, I wasn't wearing any make-up not by choice but my family insisted that I don't wear any make up. I

looked at the mini blanket that balanced very well around my shoulders held together in the middle by a safety pin, I looked at the doek my Auntie was the one who helped me to tie it. I wasn't used to this look, it just showed that my old life is gone. The old Nomvelo is gone, I heard a knock at the door..

Me: Come in

The door opened my Grandmother walked in.

Her: Wow ave umuhle (you look beautiful)

Me: Thank you

Her: Our little Nomvelo is gone, today you going to become someone's wife

For the first time were my life is involved she had tears of joy, I have longed for someone to be proud of me..

Her: I am so happy and so proud of you Velo and I am grateful that God remembered you in

the depths of your pain and suffering

I blocked my own tears from falling..

Me: Soo much tears today

She wiped hers as someone else knocked again..

Grams: Come in

Danger walked in..

Danger: Good morning

We greeted him back..

Him: Wow you look different and very beautiful

Grams: That's what I was telling her

Danger: They going to be here in an hour's time..
Are you ready?

I nodded repeatedly..

Grams: I'll give you two some space

She walked up to the door..

Grams: Ohw Velo before I forget.. Gugu called she says you not supposed to have that mini blanket around your shoulders, they have one at their place and she will put around your shoulders later when you go to their place. That's how they going to welcome you as their bride

Me: Okay

Danger: We haven't even started and already they coming with rules

Grams: It's how they do things Danger it's not so serious

She opened the door..

Her: And don't be stubborn about anything, this is Nomvelo's day

Danger: We will try not too

My Grandmother walked out..

Him: Look at you, your Mom would be so proud

Me: Thank you

Him: Are you sure that you wanna do this? Are you ready to do this?

Me: Yes I am

Him: Okay then long as you sure

Me: You look good with the jacket and everything

He laughed..

Him: Not really my style but they need to see that we serious

My phone beeped, I went to check it and it was a WhatsApp message from Power..

Me: It's my friend

Danger: Okay let me go and make sure that your Uncle is not getting drunk already

Me: He is drinking?

Danger: He started very early, he might passed

out while we having the negotiations

I laughed..

Him: I think this is appropriate now

He came and gave me a hug..

Him: as long as you happy that's all that matters, all I want is to always see you happy

He broke the hug..

Him: I heard he is a pastor, Prophet what is he again?

Me: A preacher

Him: Yes that.. So there's no reason to threaten him

Me: I doubt

Him: As long as he treats you right then me and him won't have any awful altercations

Me: I'm sure he will

My drunk called out..

Danger: That's my queue to go

Me: Just monitor him

Danger: I will

He walked out..

I checked the WhatsApp message from Power and it read:

"I hope today goes all well, you deserve his love to the fullest" her message was accompanied by an audio. I played it

"K'dala ndilindile to say how much I love you, I got this message for you. Ndithi I do ngiyavuma I.. K'dala ndilindile nhliziyo yami yonke, I got this message for you Ndithi I do, ngiyavuma I"

I forwarded it to Nazo and then sat down on the bed waiting for his reply, took him a while before he was online. I saw him typing but then he stopped, I noticed that he was now recording something.. Then he sent the VN, with him he

was actually singing when I played the song and he started the song in the middle:

"You already waited up for hours

Just to spend a little time alone with me,

And I can say I've never bought you flowers

I can't work out what the mean,

I never thought that I'd love someone,

That was someone else's dream.

'Cause you give me something

That makes me scared, alright,

This could be nothing

But I'm willing to give it a try"

I blushed alone because I used love this song by James Morris, you give me something. He text me again..

*****WhatsApp*****

Him: If my Uncles and my Grandfather mess up we eloping, we going to get married in Vegas

Me: Lol that's insane

Him: Typing....

Me: I was nervous but now that you texted me I feel better

Him: I feel relaxed because I'm literally going to kill them if they mess this up... Literally!

Me: Hahaha ya that's funny

Him: I love you soo much and I can't wait to see you later

Me: That's if your Uncles don't mess up

Him: I still have some Gangster left in me they better not

Me: I have to go love

Him: Bye MaButhelezi jnr

Me: Bye Mr Buthelezi

Talking to him made me feel a whole lot better..

–

SNAZO

Badru: Okay we here

I put my phone in my pocket, I realized that we were in a car dealership..

Me: What exactly is going on?

Him: Let's go in

We got out of his Jaguar and we made our way in..

Me: Is this what I think it is?

Him: I don't know what you thinking

When we walked in it was almost as if like they were already expecting us, some woman met us halfway..

Her: Good morning Prophet

She also greeted me too..

Badru: Is it here?

Her: Yes Sir.. This way

She led the way and we followed...

Her: Here it is

It was a red Range Rover evoque..

Badru: Since you be doing a lot of traveling, Dawn, myself, and Zaine thought that it would be most convenient if you and Madam felt comfortable when you travel. So we got you this

I was speechless, I didn't know what to say..

Badru: Dawn and Zaine couldn't be here though they really wanted to be here

This was beyond the word "Amazing" I didn't know what to say for real..

—

NOMVELO

I was pacing up and down..

Aunty: Calm down.. Danger and your uncle know what they doing

I starred out of the window and they were waiting at the gate..

Me: Aunty they be waiting there for 30min now, what if they get tired of waiting and go?

Her: They won't

Me: This is ridiculous

I walked to the door and she stopped me..

Her: Velo don't..

Me: But..

Her: Let the elders handle this

I looked at them and they looked lost shame standing at the gate not knowing what to say anymore because they done been saying a lot of things and no one was attending to them, this was frustrating..

.

To be continued

No edits

91

NAZO

(Excuse any errors)

Later on I decided to spend a bit of time with Shine, we went to some pub&grill not far from where we stay. I was still shocked that Dawn, Badru, and Zaine bought me a Range. It's quite an expensive car and I'm very grateful to have them be this influential in my life. They have been doing this more than me, I am thankful that even though that pain of losing Niso won't go away but through them I am experiencing again how it feels like to have that brotherhood. They might not be Niso but they the type of

bunch that I need right now now as Brothers, and not forgetting Shine. We were watching soccer and eating grilled meat, Pap, and chakalaka on the side. He was drinking beer and I was stuck on appetizer..

Me: You know Shine thank you for sticking with me even when you found out that I am no longer that old Nazo, let's face it we lost our crew and you the only one who remained

Him: Akuna stress nja yam' (there's no stress)

The waitress brought us drinks again..

Her: 6 pack ye Heineken, and another appetizer

Shine: Siyabonga Ngwana (thank you)

I took out my wallet, then took out R500 from it to tip her..

Me: Thank you.. Ever since we got here you have been a very good waitress

She counted it..

Her: Wow!! R500.. Ngiyabona (thank you)

Shine: R500?. Sisi sorry kancane

She came back..

Shine: Ithi ng'bone (let me see)

He took the R500 from her then kept R200 and gave her R300..

Shine: Nazo sis'wam' Nazo mntanasekhaya
(Here you go my sister)

She looked at him very confused..

Shine: Hamba mntaka gogo, Hamba mntaka Ma
(you can now leave)

She walked away with her mouth slightly opened, I looked at Shine as he sat down..

Him: Nginceda wena gaz'lam' ksasa labantu bazokusogolisa bacabanga ukuthi udilika imali
(I am helping you because tomorrow these girls will trouble you thinking that you minister of finance"

I shook my head. My phone vibrated, I checked and it was Nomvelo..

Me: I'll be right back

It was a bit noisy inside so I went outside..

Me: MaButhelezi

Her: Too early to call me that

Me: Sekwenzakaleni manje? (what's happening now)

Her: They finally let them in, after 2 hours of waiting

Me: 2 hours? ekini bayahlupha serious (Your family is troublesome)

Her: I hope that everything will go well now

Him: We have plan B..

Her: Don't say that.. I want plan A to work

Him: Don't stress.. Everything is going to go well

Her: Okay I'll try to relax.. What are you doing?

Me: Nothing much.. I'm at the pub&grill with Shine

Her: At least you having fine.. Wish I was you

Me: Ungaqali (don't start)

Her: I have to go.. Hopefully I'll see you later

Me: I lo-

She had hung up. I clicked my tongue and went back inside...

Me: That was Nomvelo

Shine: K'hamba njani? (how is it going)

Me: They made my Uncles and Grandfather wait for 2 hours

He laughed..

Him: 2 hours? Kube yimi bengeke sime ngisho ne 30min (2 hours? If it was Me we wouldn't wait for even 30min)

Me: I'm just glad they let them in

Him: Makuhamba kahle gaz'lam umdlele nokuthi bamise zakini for 2 hours (If it all goes well, f** her for the fact that they made your Uncles wait for 2 hours)

We both laughed..

Him: Ngiyak'shayela, makabhadalele le 2 hours (I'm telling you, let her pay for the 2 hours)

Trust Shine to say something like this..

—

DANGER

For a minute or so there was silence between both parties, no one said anything. They put a bottle of Grant's whiskey on the small table together with a few R100 notes.

Nomvelo's drunk Uncle reached for the bottle, him taking the bottle clearly indicated to the Buthelezi family that we ready to talk.

Him: Ungachuba umncimbi (we can proceed)

One of the uncle's from the Buthelezi family started talking..

Buthelezi Un: Sibonga ukusiyamukela la ekhaya, ngoba siza nje sithunyiwe (thank you for welcoming us, we were sent here)

He cleared his throat..

Buthelezi Un: kwenza kele ukuthi kukhona intombi yala ekhaya ekuthiwa uNomvelo, kusho ukuthi uNomvelo lo uthinte intliziyo yomshana wam' uSnazo (It happened that one of the girls here, her name is Nomvelo. She touched my Nephew's heart)

(Silence)

Me: akenimchaze uNomvelo lo enikhuluma ngaye ngoba kungenzeka kanti ningene endlini eWrong (Describe her because it might happen that you entered at the wrong house)

They all looked at each other, the Uncle spoke again..

Buthelezi Un: ukukhuluma iqiniso sitshelwe nje igama nesbongo, nokuthi uhlalaphi (we were only told her name and surname, and also where she lives)

I stood up..

Me: Uma ningamazi sicela ukuthi nibone indlela.. Miningi imizi kangcobo les'godi zamani ezinye (If you don't know her then try another Ngcobo household around here)

Buthelezi Unc: ngathi sesizo dlalana manje, ningakhohlwa ukuthi you made us wait for 2 hours (It looks like we going to play each other now, don't forget that you made us wait for 2 hours)

Me: Bonani indlela (you can leave)

Buthelezi Un: Nxx ayisuka! Asambeni ziningi iyintombi langaphandle (Let's go there's a lot of

girls out there)

Me: Landani zona lezo ezingaphandle (go get the other ones outside)

What was supposed to be a peaceful negotiation turned into an altercation, that The Grandfather tried to cool down the situation..

Grandpa: Aww mfo kaNgcobo ayidle phela iyishiyele (Calm down)

We all kept quiet but between me and the uncle, we wanted to kill each other..

Grandpa: Asikhumbuleni ukuthi size ngabantwana la, akusiwo umcibi wethu (don't forget that we came for the kids, this has nothing to do with us)

We sat down again..

Grandpa: Ngixolise ngalendlela izongxoxo eziqale ngayo, asizanga ngokulwa futhi asizanga ngokudelela (I apologize for how the

negotiations have started, we not here to disrespect)

Nomvelo's Uncle opened the whiskey and took a sip. I'm glad I'm heading this negotiations because he has no idea what's going on..

Grandpa: USnazo umzukuluwami ukhule phambi kwam, umfana obekade nje elungile. Angifuni ukumkhuluma Kakhulu kuyoze kubonakale ngathi sengiyazifakela nje (Snazo is my Grandson he grew up right in front of my eyes, I don't want to speak much about him because it will seem like I'm exaggerating on other things)

(Silence)

Grandpa: Umfana ubone kukuhle ukuthi asibize asicele kuthi sizomumela namhlanje ngoba efuna ukuthatha intombi yenu ngentlonipho. Uma sibheka eskhathini samanje intsha iyaphithizela, amasiko ethu awasahlonishwa

ngokuphelele. Abafana bamanje badlala amantombazana kakhulu, thina sibonga ukuthi umfana uhloniphe nathi ngokuthi amlethe untombazana endlini ngentlonipho angamjampisi ama fence amfake ngama backdoor (Our Son saw fit to call us so that we can come here today and represent him. If we can look at what's happening today, our young people are all over. We are also grateful that our son respected us so much that he didn't sneak her into the house but wants her to come in respectfully)

We looked at them..

Me: Hayi I agree and I must say that we can proceed with the negotiations

—

NKULI

The punch that went across my face was very painful, I even thought that I broke my nose. As

if like that wasn't painful enough he threw a few more until I fell. I felt very dizzy.

Him: After everything that I have done for you?? You go and sleep with your ex! And now you pregnant by him! I am going to kill you Nkuli!

What's happening now is part of the plan, painful and gruesome as it may sound but I need evidence of physical torture to make the kidnap look real. What I did was that I lied to my current minister of finance, he is very possessive and very jealous so I used my being away as if like I hooked up with my ex. I hope that my plan won't take a different turn, I hope he won't kill me..

–

DANGER

Me: Sizocela izinkomo eziyi 5 uma sithi inkomo eyi one ngu R8 000, bese ngaphezulu sicele inkomo eyi one ezoya ku gogo kaNomvelo.

Kusho ukuthi izinkomo ezizokhishwa namhlanje zoyenza uR48 000 (we want 5 cows, estimating that one cow is R8 000. We also want one cow ontop of that will go to her Grandmother, meaning collectively it's going to be R48 000)

Uncle Bu: Ngaphambi kokuthi sikhipe leyo mali sicela ukumbona kqala uKoti (before we take out that kind of money can we see her)

Me: I thought you were never going to ask

I sent word that Nomvelo should be come and she did, her Aunt accompanied her..

Me: eeh Velo

She was looking down..

Me: These gentlemen are Snazo's Uncles and Granfather. They here on behalf of him to ask for your hand in marriage, do you know about them? And this?

She slightly nodded..

Her: Yes I know about this

The Aunt started Ululating as she sent her back to the bedroom. Snazo's uncles came closer to each other and started whispering then after they looked at us..

Grandpa: sinesikhalo la (we have a complaint)

We looked at them..

Grandpa: uKoti usidelelile ukuthi ame phambi kwethu akhulume isingesi, futhi ngokubona kwethu ngathi ulwini Lethu akalwazi kahle ngakho inkomo eyi one uhambile (our bride has disrespected us, she stood in our presence and spoke English therefore we subtracting one cow)

I knew they were going to do that..

Granpa: Kanti neyaka gogo ihambile umntwana ungena emendweni mele afundiswe, usivezele amahlombe kanti futhi akabingelelanga (even the Grandmother's cow we subtracting it

because she was supposed to teach her how to handle herself, she didn't greet and she was wearing a sleeveless traditional dress she should've covered up)

So two cows gone, now we left with 4..

Buthelezi Unc: futhi uMshana wethu kuyobe kunguye oyenza konke makuza ezindabeni zezimali (our nephew will do a lot financially)

Me: Asiybuyeleni ezinkomeni eziyi 4 ngoba uVelo wethu uza kaButhelezi engana ngane, wuye ozowandisa umndeni wakwa Buthelezi (let's stick to 4 cows because our Velo comes to the Buthelezi family without a child, she will be the one extend the Buthelezi family)

They looked at each other and agreed..

Grandpa: Isicelo sokugcina, kusho ukuthi angeke asidle la ekhaya. Asisho loku ngokudelela kodwa sicela ukuhamba noKoti ayosiphekela ekhaya kwaButhelezi, asifuni

ukubuyela lapho sivele khona singaka sizwa isandla sakhe. Futhi sifuna ukwazi ukuthi umntwana wethu ngeke alambe (we have one request, we won't eat here not because we being disrespectful but we want our bride to go home with us so that she can cook for us, we wanna taste her food seeing that we leaving soon. We also wanna know that our Son won't be starved)

We granted their request but asked them to at least have a bit of whiskey as a celebration to seal the negotiations, I hope they will treat my Daughter well..

.

To be continued

No edits

92

NOMVELO

My Aunt and my Grandmother were in my bedroom looking at me busy packing..

Aunty: You will have to leave the clothes for now, you will come back later and get them. We should go, already we are a few minutes late

Grams: They expect her to cook a full meal for them? Kanti banjani labantu bakwa Buthelezi? (They expect her to cook a full meal, what kind of People are they)

Aunty: Don't worry I spoke to Gugu she said she will help her

Grams: After we went all out cooking for them? Yazi bayadelela (they disrespectful)

Aunty: Asambeni before they start complaining (let's go before they complain)

We walked out to my Aunt's car as she was the one who was going to drive me to the Buthelezi household..

Grams: I want you to have all your lobola money so that you can go back to school with it

Me: All of it?

Her: Yes

Me: You can take half and I'll take half, I can't have all of it

Her: Are you sure?

Me: Yes I'm sure

We finally arrived and already the uncles were standing at the gate, Gugu was standing with them. She was holding the mini blanket. It's funny how most people were out and standing at their gates to see what's going on. We got out of the car and approached them, I was a bit nervous because it seems like his Uncles are full of shit. I hope that they won't give me a tough time...

Uncle: Siyakwamukela kaButhelezi. Sicela wazi

ukuthi izinto zakwa Ngcobo uzishiya
kwaNgcobo, noma umshando omkhulu ungeka
yenzeki kodwa hlala wazi ukuthi owusiyena
wakwa Ngcoba, ongowaka Buthelezi manje (We
welcome you to the Buthelezi household.

Please note that everything that belongs to the
Ngcobo family you must leave them there since
you are no longer a Ngcobo. Despite not having
a white wedding as yet but you are now a
Buthelezi)

Gugu came and put the mini blanket over my
shoulders as my Aunt and my Grandmother
started Ululating. We made our way in with
them singing, it was really a beautiful moment.
The Uncles took chairs from inside the house
and then they sat outside..

Gugu: How did everything go? I'm glad you're
here I was a bit worried. Negotiations can get
ugly at times

Aunty: They took longer than expected but

everything went well.. Noma nje abomalume bakho basogolisa (even though your Uncles were trouble)

They laughed..

Gugu: They had to come back with her or else Nazo was going to strangle them

They laughed again..

Gugu: Let's start cooking before they start irritating me

Grams: Let us not keep you then

Gugu: Thank you for bringing her home

Aunty: It's okay angisho vele besenimufuna namanhlanje (You wanted her today)

The mini blanket was a bit uncomfortable for me, I kept on positioning it well..

Gugu: Kuzomele uyijwayele ke Sisi ngoba you will be having it around your shoulders for 6 months

Me: 6 months?

Her: 6 months my sweetheart, you can't leave this house without the mini blanket and a doek, that's how things are done here. Everyone must know that you taken

I looked at my Grandmother..

Grams: What can we say? You're no longer a Ngcobo

I looked at Gugu...

Me: Does it mean I also have to wear such dresses for 6 months?

She chuckled..

Her: You can wear anything but those two things are a must, you can't wear like that always shame uNazo uzok'shiya (Nazo will leave)

One of the Uncles walked in..

Him: Siyabuya sisayo thenga ama beer (We will

be right back, we going to buy beers)

Gugu: Okay

Him: Koti

I looked at him..

Him: I can't wait to taste your food

I faked a smile..

Grams: ithi nathi sihambe (let us go too)

Aunty: Velo we will see you later when you come to get your clothes

Me: Okay

They both hugged me..

Grams: Uzoba right? (are you going to be alright)

I nodded..

Grams: Gugu

Gugu: Nihambe kahle Ma (go well)

They walked out..

Gugu: Asqale sthandwa sam' (let's start)

Me: Okay

Gugu: I'm soo happy at least now I'll have someone to talk too everyday

Me: Where is Snazo?

Her: He said he is coming.. He should even be here by now

I nodded..

Me: What are we cooking?

Her: Beef stew is going to take a while I'm sure they very hungry, we just gonna do chops, cook Pap, and fry cabbage for them mixed with carrots.. You can start peeling the carrots

Me: Okay

Her: Do you know how to cook?

I shrugged my shoulders..

Her: Ohh mara uNazo wam' uzolamba la (my

Nazo is going to be starved)

I laughed...

Me: Ahhh

I started peeling the carrots..

Me: Can I be excused for a while?

Her: Uhm okay

Me: I wanna go to Niso's room

Her: Alright but don't take long.. His Uncles are using that bedroom

Me: You took out his things?

Her: No.. I can never do that, I want his things there because I also visit that room once in a while

Me: Okay

Her: Do you miss him?

Me: At times I do but it doesn't hurt like before anymore

Her: That's good to hear.. You learning to live with his passing

Me: I guess so.. I'll be right back

Her: Okay baby

—

NKULI

I slowly opened my eyes and I was glad to notice that I was in the hospital, though I was a bit dizzy. This plan needs to work because I have risked it all, he was the only blessing that I had currently and after this our relationship is going to be affected. He might not even provide for me for a while but at least I have money to maintain myself, but that money will only maintain me for a short period of time and not forever..

I don't even know how I was brought in or what happened that time he was beating me, I must've passed out. The only reason why he

brought me in here is because he knows I won't report him, he has done this before and I didn't. Despite the fact that I need money, he is a very influential person and he knows people in high places the case won't go anywhere..

—

NOMVELO

Everything of his was still here in his room, from his toiletries all the way to his clothes. I took some white t-shirt that he used to wear frequently, it was one of his favorites. I looked at it for a while and then I took his cologne too and sprayed it a little on my wrist. The smell reminded me of him, it was almost as if like he was here in the room with Me..

Snazo: I miss him too

I looked at him as he made his way in..

Me: What do you think was going to happen if he was still around?

Him: I don't know maybe he was going to kill you and then I was going to kill him for killing you, and I'll be locked up now

I chuckled..

Him: All I know is that if he was here, then I wouldn't be standing here right now looking at my wife

Me: Ya.. None of this would've happened

I put his tshirt back..

Him: You look beautiful

Me: Thank you, I'm just not used to the blanket

Him: For how long are you supposed to have it around your shoulders?

Me: 6 months

He whistled..

Me: I know

He kissed me on my forehead..

Him: I'm not complaining though

Me: I know you wouldn't

Him: Come I wanna show you something

He held my hand and then we walked out.

Gugu was singing while busy cooking..

Snazo: Gugu come I wanna show you something

Gugu: What is it?

Nazo: Come you'll see

We all walked out to the front and a range rover was parked next to the fence..

Gugu: What is it?

Nazo: I got a new car

Me: A range?

Nazo: Yeap

Gugu: Haibo!

Me: You got a range?

Nazo: Not entirely

He unlocked it. The seats were red&black, they were engraved "Niso"

Nazo: Actually Dawn, Zaine, and Badru got it for me. The number plates are also going to be his name

Gugu: Why?

Nazo: Though I lost my only brother but I gained 3 more

Gugu: Ncoooh that's very sweet baby

Me: It's really beautiful

Nazo: Wanna tag along for a spin?

Me: Yes.. Why not

Gugu: Excuse me.. We have pots to attend too

Nazo: Pots?

Me: I'm cooking for your Uncles

He mocked me with a chuckle..

Nazo: You what?

I sighed...

Nazo: I mean you can't even fry an egg and they expect you to cook a full meal for them

Me: I can fry an egg

Him: of course you can

He pulled me closer for a hug..

Him: I was just playing with you

Gugu: Let's go finish up MaButhelezi jr

Nazo: This I have to see

We all walked back in..

—

NKULI

Dr: What is your name?

Me: Nkululeko Ngcobo

He was shining a little light in my eyes..

Him: Do you know why you here?

Me: Not exactly

Him: Do you know how you ended up here?

Me: No

Him: Do you know who did this to you?

I shook my head no..

Him: What do you remember?

Me: I.. I remember doing a braai with my cousin then her friend showed up and we were all having a good time and drinking. My cousin passed out and it was me and her friend left, halfway through our drinking some guys showed up and..

(Silence)

Me: They invaded the whole house and they wanted to take my cousin but I told them to

take me instead, I couldn't have her be violated anyhow. She has been through a lot

I closed my eyes..

Me: Is she okay?

Dr: Your cousin?

Me: Yes

Dr: I don't know you were found at the entrance last night, someone dropped you off at the entrance and left

I nodded..

Me: I don't care about what happened to me, all I wanna know is if my cousin is okay that's all

.

To be continued

93

SNAZO

Gugu and Nomvelo were busy cooking and I

had nothing to do around the house so I decided to go and see Dawn, my intuition strongly suggested that I should go and see him. My intentions were to thank him for the car, Zaine is a busy person so I will call him and thank him over the phone or maybe plan when we going to meet....

Dawn opened the kitchen door for me, he is another one that has a very beautiful house..

Him: Hey welcome

We had spoken over the phone and he directed me. I made my way in..

Him: You didn't get lost?

Me: No.. Not exactly

He closed the door..

Me: Badru and I went to collect my car earlier today

Him: And do you like it?

Me: It's a Range Rover what's there not to like?

Him: Then it's good that you like it.. We chose the right car

Me: Thank you Man

Him: You welcome.. Come this side I want you to meet my wife

We walked out to the backyard, they were having some sort of a mini braai or something. Meat was on the grill and some lady who seemed very pregnant was sitting on the chair right by the sliding door..

Dawn: Sway I want you to meet someone.. I want you to meet Snazo

Her: Finally I can put the face behind the name

Dawn: This is my wife Sway

She got up from the chair very slowly..

Me: You don't have to get up

Her: I'm pregnant not paralyzed

She extended her hand to me..

Her: It's nice to meet you

Me: Nice to meet you too

Her: Would you like to join us?

Me: Uhm.. I..

Dawn: Well he is a married man now so..

Sway: Heard about the negotiations, I hope they went well

Me: They did

Her: Can't wait for the white wedding then, at least I'm giving birth in a week's time so..

Me: I'm sure you can't wait

Her: You right about that.. I can't wait to meet her

Some woman made her way in..

Her: Mr Dawn.. Here's the bowl you wanted for the meat

Dawn took the bowl..

Dawn: Thank you.. Thank you Keke

She smiled and walked away..

Sway: Ohh Keke.. Meet our guest

She came back..

Sway: Meet Snazo and Snazo this is our helper Keke

I gave her a handshake..

Me: Nice to meet you

When she shook my hand I felt my strength leaving me, it was like I was being drained of my strength and suddenly felt a bit weak. Usually when that happens it symbololizes emotional weakness...

Keke: I'll be at the kitchen

Me: uhm I'm sorry.. Can I talk to you for a second?

She looked at me..

Me: Can you please give me your hand

She looked puzzled..

Me: I know it's weird

She extended her hand to me and I held it, then looking at her I could see that she was emotionally broken and tired..

Me: You going to be okay

She kept quiet..

Me: I know you have been waiting to hear someone say those words to you "You going to be okay"

Her eyes immediately filled with tears..

Me: for how long have you been married?

She cleared her throat

Her: 4 years

Me: And you live with your Mother in law and your sister in law together with her child?

Her: Yes

Me: Your husband is not always around because he works far from home?

She nodded...

Her: Yes

Me: Know that it's not your fault. There way that his Mother teats you is not your fault, you didn't do anything wrong. There's no excuse for someone to treat another person in a cruel manner especially when you have done nothing wrong to her. All you ever wanted was her approval and acceptance since your own mother passed on but instead she just hates you. The problem is with her and not you, what you going through know that God is with you he hasn't abandoned you. And know that you going

to be okay, you going to be okay. You have cried soo many tears and you even scared to tell your Husband about how his Mother is treating you because you don't want to be the reason that they going to fight

Her: That's true

Me: I'm giving you an affirmation today, everyday before you go to sleep and every morning when you wake up tell yourself that you going to be okay, don't lose your faith in God..

Her: Thank you

She wiped her tears and went to the kitchen, Sway stood up and followed her..

Dawn: Keke has been with us for a while now, she is part of our family and not even once did I notice that she was going through something

Me: Just because you see someone smiling everyday doesn't necessarily mean that they

happy. There's a lot of pain and tears behind many smiles

Looked at the time..

Me: I have to go.. I think I had to come here for her

Him: Thank you for stopping by

Me: You welcome

—

VELO

After serving the Uncles Gugu was supposed to drive me home so that we could get my things but surprisingly we didn't go straight home..

Her: We have to make a stop somewhere before we go to your house

Me: Where are we going

Her: We are going to meet someone

Me: A friend? A relative?

(Silence)

Her: Nazo's father

Me: Really?

Her: Yes

I didn't understand why I was meeting Nazo's father with her and not Nazo..

Her: I need a favour from you

Me: Okay

Her: Sometimes the only person that a man can listen too is his wife so I would appreciate it if you could talk to him, about meeting his Father

Me: Does he wanna meet him?

Her: Well the last time we spoke he wasn't clear

Me: I don't know.. I mean he is not Niso stubborn but Nazo is very intimidating and I don't think he is going to be happy about this

Her: You his Velo.. You know which buttons to

push and even if it means getting on the kitchen counter then I'll allow it

We both laughed..

Her: If he says no to you then I'll stop pushing.. I want you to meet his Father so you can see the kind of person that he is

–

NKULI

I had asked at the hospital for them to call my Grandmother so that she can come and see me and she didn't come alone, she showed up with my Mother. I didn't know why my Mother was here because she is a person who hardly visits home. My Grandmother hugged me, in the state that I was in, her heart broke a little..

Her: What happened Nkuli?

Me: It's a long story Koko but it happened that weekend when you were away, Nomvelo and I

had a small nyana braai and some guys invaded our space. They were brought by Nomvelo's unsavory friend, they wanted to take Nomvelo but I.. I offered myself to them instead because I wanted to protect my cousin, she has been through the most

Grams: Ohh Nkosi yam' Nkuli (Ohh my God)

Me: I'm okay Grandmother.. Ngizoba right

Grams: I'm glad you okay

Me: Where is Velo? Is she alright?

Grams: Yes she is

Me: Where is she? Why didn't you come with her?

Grams: uVelo is..

Me: She is what?

Mom: uVelo bebamukhiphela amalobola namhlanje, uVelo uMakoti Waka Buthelezi manje (Today they were paying dowry for Nomvelo, she is now a bride to the Buthelezi

family)

Me: I don't follow.. Niso is dead, unless she's marrying him from the grave

Grams: uShada uSnazo (she's getting married to Snazo)

So it was true, that day when Velo said Nazo proposed it was true..

Grams: Ngiyazi kubuhlungu Nkuli Kodwa (I know it's painful but)

Me: Ningayivumela kanjani into enje Gogo? (how can you allow something like this to happen)

Grams: Nkuli

Me: No!! uVelo was dating uNiso and now she's marrying the Brother, how is that right? She slept with Niso now she's sleeping with Nazo how does that not spell "Whore"

Mom: Hai wena!! You are in no position to be

judging uVelo. At least she doesn't give herself away to men for money, at least she respected herself even after everything that she went through

Me: Yazi nikhohlakele (you're evil)

Grams: Nkuli...

Me: Ngicela ngihambe, futhi ningasabuyi
(please leave and don't come back)

Mom: Ma asambe

My Grandmother looked at me..

Me: Hambani! (leave)

Mom: Asambe Ma (let's go)

How can Nomvelo do this to me..

—

NOMVELO

We met him at some restaurant, he was already waiting for us when we walked in. Talk about

being punctual..

Gugu: Richard

He got up as we approached the table. He was wearing a suit and he was very good looking, you know those good looking old men. I think that he could be in his mid or late 50s..

Gugu hugged him..

Gugu: Have you been waiting for too long?

Him: No I wasn't..

Gugu: Ohh.. This is Nomvelo

Him: Hi Nom...

Gugu: You can just call her Velo and Velo this is Richard, Snazo and Niso's Father

Me: Nice to meet you Sir

Him: Likewise

Gugu: Velo is Snazo's wife

Him: Really? That's nice.. When did it happen?

Gugu: Today.. He was paying her dowry

We all sat down..

Him: That's nice.. I wish I was there

My phone rang, it was Snazo...

Me: Excuse me.. It's Snazo

I walked away to answer..

Me: Hello?

Him: MaButhelezi where are you?

I looked at Gugu and Richard..

Me: Around

Him: Around kuphi? (Around where)

Me: Just around

Him: I'm going to ask you again and I need you to give me a straight answer.. Where are you?

And don't say you fetching your clothes

I kept quiet..

Him: We now lying to each other?

Me: No..

Him: Where are you?

Me: Just around

Him: sizoxabana uyezwa? (we going to fight)

Me: I'm with Gugu.. We passed by to meet a friend of hers before going to get my things at home

He kept quiet..

Him: kuGrand sizoyixoxa mowubuya (it's fine we will discuss it when you get back)

He hung up..

Gugu is putting me in a lot of trouble..

.

To be continued

NOMVELO

[They're first time]

Gugu and I drove back home after we had a meal with Nazo's Father. There way that they were so cosy it was just a bit suspicious, I think that something is going on between them. It was clear that Gugu still had hearts for him, I don't blame her though he is handsome. Nazo didn't call again I knew that he was fuming wherever he was which made me uncomfortable and uneasy, I wanted to go home. When we were done we went home to get my things, my Aunt wasn't around only my Grandmother was around and then we finally drove home. It was 21:00 when we got there...

Gugu: You want me to go in with you?

Me: No I'll be fine

Her: Thank you again for coming with me

Me: You welcome

She went inside the house and I went to the room. I had noticed earlier that he extended it, he took parts of the storeroom next to it and turned it into a bathroom. It's good that we have a bathroom now and we had a mini lounge too our long couch in the bedroom was facing the big ass flat screen.. I opened the door and walked in, he was sitting on the couch while watching TV. He had on his briefs only, can't blame him though it was a bit hot and he had the fan on...

I closed the door and leaned against it.. He pretended as if like he didn't see me, Nazo is difficult but at the end of the day he is a man.

I took off the mini blanket and threw it on the bed and then made my way to him, I was a bit nervous what if he turns me down? After all Nazo is a bit of a different Breed, he is his own person. I made my way to him, he was leaning forward with his arms balancing on his knees. I

pulled my dress up a bit and pushed him back a little then I sat ontop of him. He gave me a serious look and it made me more uncomfortable, but then after all like I've said before he is a man. Haven't heard one saying no to a pussy. I put my hand at the back of his head and kissed him, at first he didn't follow through but then after a few seconds his strong hands were already moving up my thighs and pulling my dress more further up...

We continued kissing and his grip became a bit tight around my tiny waist. I gasped for air and he broke the kiss. He kissed me again and then he helped me to take off the dress and the doek, One thing that I have been blessed with is long natural hair. My hair is long so I hardly do weaves, I mostly like do braid it half and then do a bun. He ran his hand on my hair while his other hand squeezed me closer to him. I think we both have been waiting for this day, our

breathing was unstable and all that we wanted was each other. He got up from the couch while picking me up and then he threw me on the bed, he came ontop of me and continued kissing me. He went down to my neck and left a few love bites there, he got my bra off and then his tongue circled around my nipple which made pleasure to kick in. He further went down to my belly button and then down on my honeypot. He ate my cookie first while my underwear was still on, just gently biting it through my underwear and when I tried closing my legs he parted them and I couldn't close them..

—

NKULI

My Mother came alone this time around, she made her way in. My mom and I we not the best of friends, we spend most of our time fighting, what am I saying? We have always spent most of our time fighting. We don't have that Mother

and Daughter bond...

Her: Nkuli

Me: What are you doing here?

She walked closer..

Her: I know you and I know what you about

I kept quiet..

Her: You chose your own path, you thought giving those men your body in exchange for money will make you happy?

Me: What are you doing here?

She unzipped her bag and took out a picture, she then showed it to me. It was a picture of me when I was around 16 or so..

Her: This is my Daughter... This is the Daughter that I had. Not what you're today

When I started having blessers that's when I changed my looks here and there, I got butt

injections and I bleached my skin a bit just so that I can keep my image perfect at all times. If my image is perfect then I get more blessers, I mean if I don't get more then I won't be able to afford rent nor keep on paying my car installment..

Her: Don't you dare think of ruining things for Velo

Me: Why do you care so much? Nomvelo is not your Daughter you should care about me!

Her: You very conniving and cold hearted! Remember how you almost ruined things between me and my husband? Nkuli stop! This evil heart won't take you anywhere

Me: Go!! I don't need you!! I have never needed you and I won't start today! You have never been a Mother to me! Koko was always there and you weren't!

Her: I feel sorry for you

Me: Leave!! Or should I beep the Nurse?

Her: Don't ruin things for your cousin just because you chose an easy way out of life, see with all this fake physical image that you got going on now, it still didn't bring Nazo back. Baby understand that Men don't always get possessed by your big ass and thick thighs, if you can't respect yourself forget about marriage. You will always be a sex object, a one night stand. Learn to respect yourself and men will respect you too

I swallowed..

Her: Nazo is madly inlove with Velo if you go after them you will only be hurting yourself because I don't see him leaving her. He loves her and she loves him

She left the picture on the counter and then she walked away..

—

NOMVELO

Been a while since I last been sexual and Nazo stretched me a bit, or a bit more. I pushed him a bit with my hand and instead he took both my hands and pinned them against the bed. Was a bit painful when he penetrated me but as he went along I started enjoying. It was a pain mixed with pleasure, a part of me wanted him to stop but another part wanted him to carry on. He was vulnerable ontop of me, while his one hand pinned both my tiny hands against the bed his other hand was caressing my body. I felt his warm breath against my neck, as more of my juices produced he started moaning. It was an intensifying feeling, I couldn't explain it. I can't put it into words what was happening. He let my hands go from that tight grip and as he increased his pace his grabbed my hair. Our lips were very close to each other, our breaths were still uncontrollable and I wanted him just as

much as he wanted me. By the look of things, we probably gonna go the whole night...

.

To be continued

No edits

95

SNAZO

The following day it was a Sunday and I wanted to take Nomvelo to church, I wanted us to visit Purgatory Zaine's church. Last night was epic, I don't even know at what we slept I have never been this intimate with a girl just for one night. It was an amazing experience and I can't wait for us to keep on having more and more of such experiences..

Gugu: Good morning

Me: Good morning

Gugu: How are you?

Me: I'm good

Her: Where is Nomvelo? Aren't we supposed to go to church?

Gugu was meant to tag along too with us...

Me: She's still sleeping

Her: It's 8am the service starts at 10am

Me: I am not sure if we will be able to go to church

Her: Why?

Me: She needs the rest.. She's very tired

Her: Tired? Tired from what?

I looked at her..

Her: Ohw she's very tired now I get it and I don't think I wanna discuss that with you

Me: Definitely not.. What we should be discussing is you taking my wife yesterday to see your baby daddy

Her: I know that you have issues with him and I took Nomvelo with in hopes that maybe she could convince you to meet him

Me: Why are you pushing?

Her: I thought you said you don't hate him

Me: I don't but at the same time not hating him doesn't mean that I want to know him, Gugu respect the fact that I don't wanna meet up with him and we can all move on! And stop using my wife for your own sinister acts

Her: Okay listen here.. Just because you a preacher and just because now you have a wife doesn't change the fact that you still my son and there's nothing stopping me right now from getting there and whooping your Ass!.. Talk to me like you got some sense you understand boy?

I didn't say anything..

She took the broom and pointed it at me..

Her: I said you understand?

Me: Yes Mam'

Her: Good

She put the broom back..

Her: Now I'll be watching Prophet Zaine his morning service on TV then yall decide if we going or not

Me: Okay

She poi her finger at me..

Her: I'll whoop your ass talking to me like you ain't got sense

I forget how crazy she can be at times, I don't know how many brooms sticks she used to break on me and Niso a few years back..

–

NKULI

Nurse: Excuse me? What are you doing?

Me: I'm leaving

She put the tray of food on the small table..

Her: Going where?

Me: Home

I was putting my bloody clothes on..

Her: You can't discharge yourself

Me: Yes I can

Her: No Mam' you can't

Me: Listen I need to get home

Her: You're in no state to get home, if the Dr didn't discharge you that means you not fit to go home

Me: My.. My husband is having an affair and if I don't get home to save my marriage I'll be filing for divorce

Her: You have a husband?

Me: Yes I do

Her: I'm sorry

Me: Between you and I, I wasn't kidnapped. I was trying to get back at him I was off to meet some guy that I met via the internet and it didn't turn out good

Her: So why didn't you tell the Doctor?

Me: I was ashamed

Her: I'm truly sorry.. Infidelity in a marriage can break you

I wiped my tears..

Her: Do you guys have kids?

Me: Not yet

Her: Do you think that you guys can work things out?

Me: I hope so because I truly love him

Her: Has he always been unfaithful?

Me: No.. This is the first time

Her: I don't even know what to say

Me: I need to get home

Her: I totally understand.. I'll get the discharge forms even though even though I might end up in trouble tomorrow

Me: Thank you

Her: You can have breakfast first before you go

Me: Thank you.. Thank you very much

She walked out..

—

NOMVELO

I felt someone giving me endless kisses all over my face..

Nazo: Wake up sweetheart

I was still very sleepy, we hardly slept last night. We only slept when my honeypot started burning really bad, even this morning it's still

burning and very sore..

Me: I don't wanna wake up

He pat me on my butt..

Him: You need too.. We have to go to church

Me: But I don't wanna go to church

Him: You don't have a choice.. You married a preacher, I can't show up alone

Me: No

Him: Come on I already got your things from Gugu's car

Me: I'm not going

Him: The service starts at 10:00am we going to be late

Me: No.....

Him: This is the first time I'm gonna see Zaine preaching

I opened my eyes..

Me: We going to Purgatory?

Him: Yes

Me: I'll go but only on one condition

Him: Yeah?

Me: I don't wanna wear the blanket

He chuckled..

Him: That's not even up for discussion

Me: Purgatory is a big church I really don't wanna show up wearing the blanket

Him: You not there for People moss

I looked at him..

Me: Do you wanna have sex again?

Him: That's unfair..

Me: You choose

(Silence)

Him: Fine only for today

I smiled...

He tapped me on my ass..

Him: Wake up and get ready then because you'll take longer than me

He kissed me...

Him: How are you?

Me: In pain.. In real pain

Him: Eish askies

Me: It was worth it though

He raised one of his eyebrows..

Him: Really?

I got ontop of him..

Me: Yes really

I was about to kiss him when he stopped me...

Me: What?

Him: You got to be kidding me!

Me: What?

He smiled at me..

Him: Uhm.. There's something that I need to do

Me: What is it?

Him: I'll be back

He tossed me on the side..

Him: I'll be right back

Me: Well you ain't getting none anymore

Him: We not going to sleep at church

He walked out..

–

SNAZO

Uri just had to show up in my room. I got inside the house and went straight to Niso's room..

Gugu: Are we still going to go?

Me: Give me 5min

I got to the room and closed the door, I looked around and he appeared. He wasn't alone, he was holding Helena who couldn't even stand on her own..

Me: Helena?

He put her down..

I went to her..

Me: What happened?

She had an arrow on her right side..

Me: Talk to me what happened?

I looked at Uri..

Me: What happened?

He didn't say anything..

"Beloved.."

Me: What happened?

"Uri's voice is too deep, it might tremble down the whole place"

Me: What happened to Helena?

"last night she was shot with an arrow specially designed to kill angels, she was shot by an angel of darkness. She doesn't have much time"

Her tears were glowing, they didn't look like normal tears. I wiped her tears and they still glowed on my hand..

Me: Can she be saved?

"Yes.. The arrow needs to be pulled out and it can be pulled out by one person"

Me: Who?

"You.."

Me: I'll put it out

"Beloved you need to heal her right after pulling it.. You have only been able to heal human beings but you haven't been able to do it with an Angel"

Me: How do I heal her?

"Tomorrow very early in the morning you must leave and go to the wilderness.. At the highest point of a certain mountain there's a sacred place were you will come face to face with Me, that's were you will be able to hear Me Cleary"

Me: Face to face?

"Not literally.. Uri will be with you, by the time light comes up you should be able to heal Helena"

I heard a knock at the door and then the door opened, Uri moved like a speed of lightning. He took Helena with him and his fastidious movement knocked down a painting..

Gugu: Where you praying? Did I disturd?

Me: No

I got up..

Her: Are you okay?

I looked at Helena's tears on my hand..

Me: I'm good

I approached the door..

Me: We should be leaving in no time

–

NKULI

The Nurse even borrowed me her phone so that I can call my Grandmother and have her pick me up...

Her: Why would they discharge you on a Sunday?

Me: I don't know Koko

We were walking to get a taxi..

Her: How are you feeling?

Me: I'll be fine

Her: You should've told me to bring you along clean clothes

Me: I'll be fine I just wanna get home

If Nomvelo thinks that I'm going to take this lying down, she has another thing coming..

.

To be continued

No edits

96

NOMVELO

I didn't know that Purgatory could get this full, they don't entirely show the whole audience on his channel on TV when he preaches. We were a bit late so from the door we were ushered to the front by one of the Ushers. We literally sat at the front just very close to the pulpit. I felt somewhat important, I mean Ushers just greet People at the door and let them go inside to find a place to sit on their own but with us it was different. And to also get a front row sit to

watch and listen to Prophet Zaine preaching was cherry on top, my friend Power is going to be very jealous. I don't really follow him but I know that he is a very influential person when it comes to religion, he is very admired by many and also hated by many. All in all I'm grateful to be here and be a part of such greatness. Gugu was extremely excited about everything, she couldn't even sit down she participated in the singing and dancing.

I didn't know the songs that they were singing so I was glued to my sit, Nazo sang along too but he didn't stand up. I was wearing a long dress and a doek with my favourite pair of heels, thank goodness dresses and I we have never been enemies now they coming in very handy. I think about 30min into the service I saw two Ushers, Ushering Zaine to his sit. He was followed by a woman who was holding a very cute baby girl, It was definitely his wife. They

were holding his Bible for him and also his wife's bag. He greeted starting from the corner of our row with handshakes up until he got to us, Nazo stood up and they hugged. They whispered a few things to each other and laughed here and there, he also hugged Zaine's wife. When he got to me I stood up, Since it was noisy with all the singing and cheering Nazo whispered something to him and he smiled at me then gave me a hug..

Zaine: It's nice to finally meet you

Me: Nice to meet you too

He let go of my hand and moved on to Gugu and the rest of the people who were in our row, his wife hugged me too. Literally Zaine's touch left me trembling a bit, there's just something about him that I can't quite explain. The Ushers put a small table in front of us and they put drinks on top of it, they did the same thing on Zaine's side. He walked to the front but didn't

get to the pulpit and they handed him his mic, he also followed through with the singing and with him he made it very fun. He was dancing and they were following his lead, it was just a beautiful moment to witness. I never knew church could also be this fun. Gugu was forcing me to dance and I was shy about it mainly because I didn't even know the songs..

After a few songs the congregation sat down

Zaine walked up to the pulpit..

Zaine: I greet you all in the name of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ.. May we please stand on our feet again so that we can worship the Lord

The congregation stood up again and he looked at the band and the chorus leaders, one chorus leader started a song and the band followed through..

—

NKULI

Nomvelo's room was empty, her clothes weren't here most of her things were gone including the makeup on her dressing table. It was true, Nomvelo was gone. Nazo took her, he paid Lobola and he took her..

I sat on the bed as my tears betrayed me. I mean I can get any guy that I want, Yes maybe when guys see me they see a sex object because of how I present myself. Old men see a sugar baby or a blessee that they can spend money on and in turn I give them a good time, I entertain them in a way that their wives can't entertain them. I wiped my tears. What Nazo and I used to share wasn't just another ordinary relationship, it was something special. Our love was very deep for each other and I always thought that we would find our way to each other and now Nomvelo is going to live my dream. I could've changed for him, I could've

been the wife that he wanted. I could've left this life for him. It made me sick to my stomach to even think that all the things that we used to do to me when we were intimate he was now doing them with her. I couldn't even bring myself to think about them in that way because it made me very angry..

The door opened and my Grandmother walked in..

Her: Should I make you something to eat?

Me: No thanks I ate at the hospital

She closed the door and came to sit next to me..

Her: I know how you feel

I chuckled, I doubt she knows how I feel or else she wouldn't have allowed this shame of Lobola negotiations to happen...

Her: Nkuli uNazo has changed he is no longer that old Nazo that you once knew

Me: And him changing his life also included marrying my cousin?

Her: Nkuli

Me: Don't Nkuli me Koko.. It wouldn't hurt this much if he married another girl, just a random girl but my own cousin? (Crying)

She sighed..

Me: Nomvelo is more than just a cousin to me, she's my little sister and it hurts Koko. It's like my heart had been ripped out of my chest, I also deserve to be loved. I also deserve some happiness, to have a family. He was mine Koko... He is mine

She hugged me as I cried..

—

NOMVELO

I thought nothing could go beyond worshiping but when he started praying I heard cries, I saw

a lot of members falling. I can't explain what was happening but something was happening, the atmosphere was different. Indeed religion goes deeper than what I anticipated. He waited for everyone to settle down before he could start speaking. When it was quiet he started talking..

Zaine: Today we very blessed if you thought that was extreme, wait until you find out what God has in store for Purgatory today. I did mention last week that we going to have a special guest today, I thought I could do everything until I met him. He is heavenly blessed with a gift that you wouldn't understand nor believe until he touches you

The church started clapping..

Zaine: he is a healer and a preacher. It is my honour this morning to present to you Reverend Buthelezi

They clapped again as Nazo stood up, he walked to the pulpit. The whole church gave him a standing ovation, I stood up too..

Gugu: That's my baby!!!

Zaine hugged him again and then gave him the mic, he then went down to sit next to his wife. Nazo also waited for the congregation to settle down before talking..

Nazo: Such a warm welcome I feel very blessed, I have never stood in front of such a huge crowd and..

He paged through Zaine's Bible..

Nazo: I was caught of guard, I was never told that today I would be the one leading the service. I got an invite to come and visit only to be ambushed by Prophet Radebe and the holy spirit. As the church was worshiping the holy spirit spoke to me and said I will be preaching this morning, I'm sure Prophet Radebe was

ambushed too

They laughed again..

Nazo: A while back when I was doing sermons I was a single man, and today I am here with my beautiful wife

My heart skipped when he said that..

Nazo: I'm blessed that God matched me with a chocolate muffin that I love very much

I started blushing..

Nazo: She compliments me since I'm the one who is a yellow bone

He looked directly at were I was sitting and I felt hot flushes..

Nazo: I thought that maybe should would be on her feet now

Gugu leaned over..

Gugu: Stand up

Me: No

Gugu: Stand up Velo

I slowly stood up and waved as the church clapped for me..

Nazo: She is very shy and I'm sure that we going to have an altercation when we get home about this but it's nothing that a credit card can't fix

The church laughed again..

Nazo: I am also here with someone else who means the world to me, I know that she could've neglected me a long time ago but she had no choice. She was stuck with me because she carried me for 9 months, and surprisingly she threatened me with a broom this morning

We laughed..

Nazo: This is her first time that she's going to witness me preaching and I'm very happy that she's here, welcome Ma

Gugu stood up too and waved..

Nazo: Without wasting any time I greet the whole congregation in the name of Jesus and Prophet Radebe thank you for trusting me today with your congregation

He paged through the Bible..

Him: I think I'll be more comfortable if I use my own Bible

He looked at me..

Him: Nana can you please bring me my Bible

Really now??

I stood up and took his Bible then walked up to hand it to him, my dress was a bit long I was pulling it up a bit with my other hand so that it doesn't trip me..

I handed him the Bible and I gave him a deadly look..

Him: Thank you

He took Zaine's Bible and he walked me back to my sit, he was holding my hand..

Nazo: I saw how she struggled to get here with her dress being a barrier, need to make sure she doesn't fall

He waited for me to sit down and then he knelt on one knee and fixed my dress at the bottom..

Him: You okay?

I nodded..

He got up and went to give Zaine his Bible..

Nazo: Forgive me but you know how it's like in the early days of your marriage, probably after 6 months I'll be asking why you wore a long dress now you making it my problem

The church laughed..

Nazo: I'm just joking.. My job will forever be to take care of her, making sure that she's always happy because my happiness comes from

seeing her smiling everyday

I looked down and covered my face with my hand while Gugu ran her hand on my shoulder..

Nazo: without wasting more time can we open our bibles to the book of Psalms 91 verse 1 & 2 for now

Gugu helped me with it, she had borrowed me one of the bibles at home.. Tomorrow I'll get my own..

Nazo: Psalms 91 verse 1 & 2

He looked at me.. I swear if he says I should read it, I'm walking out of the door he can't put me on the spot like that..

.

To be continued

And Nomvelo's dress was something of that nature..

SNAZO

The service was now coming to an end..

Me: Quit relying on what you think you know, trust the one who created your life. Psalms 91 puts it clear that God is your Defender, make him the center of your life at all times. He will never leave you nor forsake you, what you going through might seem as if it's bigger than you but it's not bigger than the one who created you. Trust your defender and lean on him at all times, God is not only God when things are going good in your life. God is God too when things are going bad. When you confused and don't know what to do leave it all to him, God's got this...

I closed my Bible as they clapped their hands. I walked down from the pulpit and closer to the were the congregation was sitting. I moved to were the holy spirit directed me..

Me: In this row there.. There's a Vanessa sitting

in this row

They all remained..

Me: A Vanessa that had an accident last year with her 3 friends, though it seemed like a minor accident but it killed all your friends and you were the only survivor. Everyday you keep on questioning God why? Why did you survive and why did your friends die. You don't understand how the accident happened, and you don't understand how a minor accident might be that lethal

She slowly stood up crying with her hand around her mouth shaking, I made my way to her..

Me: That accidental was meant to kill you too but God said no with your life, the devil meant to steal your life that day. Ever since that accident you been having something in your chest that prevents you from breathing at times

She nodded..

Me: The devil hasn't left you alone but he will today

I turned around..

Me: Can I have my wife come up here, can she quickly locate us I'll put my hand up.. You can see us on the big screen

Nomvelo seemed a bit scared at first, she didn't wanna participate in anything even the singing and dancing but now she's loosening up, she seems to be enjoying the service.

Me: Can you please put your hand on her chest

She did..

Me: Maybe put both of them because they very small

She put both her hands on her chest as I put my hand ontop of her hands, healer or not that part of a woman's body should always be respected.

Putting my hand there might land me with a sexual harras case..

Me: "Receive your healing today, may this pain leave your chest today. The cloud of death that's upon you I come against it in the name of Jesus christ! Even when you walk through the valley of the shadow of death, fear no evil for the Lord is with you always. Amen"

Immediately when we removed our hands from her she fell, I moved along to the next person..

—

NKULI

Grams: Thank you God!!! Thank you Jesus!

I have been standing at the doorway for the past 2min or so, she was watching Prophet's Zaine channel on Tv. I was shocked to see Nazo praying for people but what was more shocking was his "wife" that he kept on calling every now and then "Nomvelo"..

I mean Purgatory is the biggest religious channel on TV followed by Dawn's channel the Exorcism. I used to watch them at my place every Sunday before going to church..

I limped my way in and then sat down..

Me: What is Nazo doing?

Grams: I told you Nazo has changed from the old Nazo that you knew

Me: So this is why he left me? He wanted Nomvelo because she is more reserved and she might not be virgin innocent but she is innocent and naive

Grams: Nkuli don't start

Me: Nazo knows Prophet Zaine??

Grams: He knows a lot of people because Nazo's family they have a gift of healing, when his Grandmother passed on it was passed on to him

I clapped my hands once..

Me: Wow! I could've been all of this and probably more

I looked at her..

Me: He knows Dawn too?

Grams: Yes.. He got Nomvelo a job working with Dawn

Me: What?

I looked at the screen again, He took his jacket off and went to give it to Nomvelo. The camera showed Nomvelo and Gugu talking for a brief moment then Nomvelo smiled and looked at the big screen, I don't wanna lie she looked beautiful in that dress and matching doek. The camera moved and I noticed that they were sitting in the same row as Prophet Zaine and his wife Bonolo

Me: Mxm!

I took the remote and changed the channel..

Grams: Wenzani? (what are you doing)

Me: Nathi sifuna ukubukela.. The Kardashians are on (we also want to watch the Kardashians are on)

Grams: Khulula intliziyo yakho Nkuli (free your heart)

–

NOMSA

After church I met up with the real estate agent, during the week I couldn't meet up with her because she was busy. My life has been a bit better lately, things have been somewhat peaceful..

Her: I thought that we were not going to end up with any money considering the fact that a lot had to be fixed in that house

Me: I'm even surprised that you called I mean I

thought that it was done with that house, it took a lot of money to fix and honestly speaking when we were living there I didn't have such problems

Her: I'm glad that the people who bought it understood or else they would've sued us that we sold them a faulty house

Me: That's very true

She passed me the papers..

Her: All in all after everything at least you still gonna walk away with R250 000

It's not a lot of money but it's something, it would help me a lot. Though I'm not going to pocket it, I'm going to give it to Nomvelo together with the money that's in JJ's account. It's the right thing to do

Me: Thank you.. Thank you very much

Her: You welcome

–

NOMVELO

It was a very good service and I was speechless and very much astonished to see that side of Nazo's life. He literally healed sick people, and his sermon was very beautiful. I don't know much about religion but this God or his God truly exist and I am honored to have been chosen to share in this life with him. Though I'm still asking myself how God saw fit to choose me for him..

After church we didn't go straight home, before he could even take two steps down from the pulpit a lot of the church members were there crowding him mostly women. We in church so I probably have nothing to worry about. On our side too it was a bit suffocating, since Bonolo was sitting next to us most church members surrounded her and others came up to me and told me how blessed I am to have him, most

were already telling me about their problems and others were even asking me to pray for them I mean it was overwhelming because I'm not the one with the gift. I'm just the wife here, so really I didn't know what to do or how to react

It got better when Bonolo moved closer to us, Zaine had climbed up to the pulpit to join Nazo.. Bonolo literally held my hand..

Her: You're blessed.. Nazo is a very special being, what he did today will go down in history. Seeing so much people healed not only physical but spiritually and emotionally too, he has a way with words. He is Godly gifted

Me: Thank you very much

She then held Gugu's hand..

Bonolo: Your womb is blessed to have carried him

Gugu was so proud of her Son she couldn't stop

the tears, I was so proud of him too. I know that my life is going to change from here on and I don't mind, it seems like the life in God is better than the one I have been living...

Finally he came down and Gugu hugged him..

Gugu: I am so proud of you

Nazo wiped her tears..

Nazo: I know you're

He moved on to me..

Me: That was great

He kissed me on my forehead..

Him: Welcome to my world

Bonolo: Love birds can we go and have lunch, I'm sure my Granddaughter is tired and hungry

It's such an honour to meet Bonolo, she is a great woman and has written a lot of spiritual books. I haven't read any but I'll start

soon..

This is going to be my new life and I'm very satisfied with it, I wished I had known this life while I was still broken then alcohol wouldn't have been my comfort but then not all is lost I can still make changes..

.

To be continued

No edits

98

NOMVELO

I had an amazing day from being at church to being invited to Prophet Zaine's house for lunch, it was a beautiful experience we Literally shared the table with him and his amazing wife I am will forever cherish this experience.....

Nazo was very exhausted, when we got back home he just bathe and attempted to sleep but

with me busy annoying him he couldn't sleep right away. I looked at him as he slowly closed his eyes, he was laying on the bed on his back and I was sitting on top of him. I leaned over and kissed him, he smiled and squeezed my thighs. I was wearing nothing but one of his tshirts..

Me: You that tired?

He opened his eyes..

Him: Yes and I have to be up by 1am or 2am

Me: Why?

Him: I'm going to pray somewhere

Me: Where? Can I come along?

He gave me a weird look..

Him: It's not an ordinary praying session an angel will be involved

Me: You can see Angels?

Him: Yes

Me: Like we can go out now and you would see them in the sky?

He chuckled..

Him: No.. I've only seen two, two that hold a significance into my life

Me: Wow.. Can I see them too?

He gave me another weird look..

Him: Most people would call me crazy and you wanna see one

I leaned over and kissed him again..

Me: You anything but crazy

He kept quiet..

Me: So am I invited?

He nodded

Him: Ya

He closed his eyes again while I tried to kiss him..

Me: Ahhh....

My phone rang and I got off him to answer it, it was my Grandmother..

Me: Duchess

There was no answer..

Me: Hello?

Nkuli: Velo.. It's me

Me: Nkuli?

Her: Yes it's me

Me: My wor.. Are you okay? Where are you?

Her: I'm at home and I'm recovering

Me: What happened?

Her: Long story.. Think you come for a visit so we can talk

Me: I'll definitely do that

Her: How about tomorrow?

Me: Yes tomorrow after work I'll pass by

Her: Congratulations.. Koko told me and I saw you on TV at Purgatory

Me: Thank you

Her: See you then

Me: Bye

Her: I love you cuz

Me: I love you too

That last part was very weird..

—

NOMSA

I looked at my phone and then looked at the documents that were in front of me. I picked up my phone and then called Nomvelo, I know it's late but I felt like telling her now..

Her: Hello?

I didn't expect her to pick up..

Me: Hi.. Hi Velo it's Nomsa

Her: Ohh hey how are you doing?

Me: I'm doing well and you?

Her: I'm okay

Me: Sorry to call you this late but I have something important to discuss with you

Her: Okay I'm all ears

Me: The money for the house finally came through, though it's lesser than what we put up the house for because of fixing a few things but.. I want you to have it, together with the remaining 100 000 from his bank. Collectively it will be 350 000

Her: That's sweet but.. You can have it

Me: Huh?

Her: I think I need it more than I do, you have a big responsibility with Thuli and I know that you never committed yourself to the world of employment so maybe sit down and think of a business plan and start a business that will help you financially and your family

Me: I.. I don't know what to say

Her: Thank you

Me: Thank you.. Thank you very much

Her: We should meet up sometime

Me: That would be very nice

Her: I have to go.. Bye

Me: Bye

I put the phone down.. I really didn't expect that..

–

SNAZO

I woke up at 1am, the first thing I did was to

pray and though the initial plan was a mountain but now the plan had changed. I was meant to drive to an open field, a very sacred place where there won't be any disturbances. The whole healing has to take place before the sun comes up.. Nomvelo was still fast asleep, I still can't believe that she wants to take this journey with me..

I went and woke her up..

Me: Wake up sweetheart

Her: Noooooooooo

Waking her up is always a process..

Me: Come on we have to go

Her: I don't wanna wake up

Me: Velo come on you going to make me late

She pulled the duvet up..

Me: Okay that's it

I pulled the bed covers down and then picked her up, I put her over my shoulder..

Her: Stoooooop

I walked to the bathroom and put her down..

Me: 5min

I made the bed while she prepared herself, to my shock she adhered to the 5min time frame that I gave her though she still looked mad sleepy..

Me: Ready to go?

Her: I'm ready

I took the car keys..

Me: Good morning by the way sleepy head

I kissed her on her forehead. I thought that it was going to be difficult to have Nomvelo accept the person that I am today, but she seems to be following through very swiftly. I couldn't be more happier. We drove out at those

early hours of the morning to the sacred place, it was still very dark and cold. The drive was approximately 1hr30min and the holy spirit was the one leading me through...

When we arrived at the field it looked more like a dessert, just sand, rocks, and a bit of grass here and there. It was a very isolated place, the roads were a bit far and it was in the middle of nowhere..

Nomvelo: Where are we?

Me: Are you warm enough?

Her: Yes I am

From a far distance I spotted Uri and Helena was laying on the ground not moving an at all, she still had the arrow on her right side..

I glanced down at her, I didn't know where to start. Uri looked up and then his wings started flapping, he went up to stand guard incase we have unwanted guests. I wonder if Helena was

still alive, I hope she is still alive.

Nomvelo: I can't see anything

Me: I know.. You will see her but not in this state, the only angel that you won't be able to see is Uri

Her: Why?

Me: He is a warrior Angel, most warrior angels don't look pleasant though you've once seen him but you won't remember

Her: When was that?

Me: a long time ago

I knelt down on one knee next to Helena..

"Beloved.."

I didn't hear the voice from within as always, I heard coming from around here. It came with a blast of wind and a minor tremor, Nomvelo held on to my shoulder..

Nomvelo: Did you feel that?

Me: Yes

Her: Okay this was probably not a good idea

Me: I need to concentrate sweetheart

She got her hand off my shoulder and stepped back a bit..

"Beloved.."

Me: I'm here.. I'm listening

"You preach about faith most of the time, healing Helena is a test of your faith. There's no special prayer needed, your faith will be the one that's going to heal her. Hebrews 11 vers 3"

Me: "By faith we understand that the worlds were framed by the word of God, so that the things which are seen were not made of things which are visible" NKJV

I took a deep breath and placed my hand on the arrow, when I remove it I have to heal her right

away or else she won't make it..

An Angel is not an earthly being and for me to be trusted with such a big test proves that I can do all things through Christ who strengthens me, that is my affirmation at this instant and my faith needs to act on it..

I pulled out the arrow and placed my hand on her but nothing happened..

Me: "I can do all things through Christ who strengthens me"

I might've repeated that affirmation for more than 10 times and nothing happened, my brain was trying to be logic about this. Convincing me that I won't do it, I'm human I cannot heal what is not flesh but deep down I had faith that I can do it, I will do that..

Time passed while nothing was happening..

Velo: Babe

She walked closer..

Her: You have been kneeling here for some time now, what exactly are you meant to achieve?

No matter how much I said that affirmation nothing happened, Helena didn't wake up.

I got up feeling defeated, I was disappointed in myself and I was ready to give up..

Me: Come let's go

Velo: We done?

Me: Yes

I started walking away..

Velo: So you giving up?

I turned and looked at her..

Me: Excuse me?

Her: I haven't seen the angel so that means whatever you were meant to do you didn't do it and now you just going to give up

I glanced down at Helena..

Me: I was meant to heal an Angel, something that I have never done before. Something that is beyond me

She kept quiet..

Me: Come on let's go

Her: Snazo

Me: Not now Velo.. Let's go

Her: You a hypocrite

Me: Askies?

Her: If you were sent here then that means you can do it, you can't preach something that you don't believe in. If you walk away without fulfilling what you came here for, you might as well never preach again

I looked at Helena again and went back to her, I knelt down for the last time..

I put my both my hands on the wound and pressed harder..

Me: If I can't heal you then my gift is useless, I can't preach what I don't believe in. I believe in my gift, I believe in who I am and I believe that I can do all things through christ who strengthens me, I don't have faith I am faith!

Maybe a minute passed and then she opened her eyes, I removed my hands..

I can't believe that I did it, can't believe I healed an angel. She looked at me..

Her: I knew that you could do it

She got up as my hands were glowing, she looked at Nomvelo and then looked at me. She slightly nodded..

I went up Nomvelo..

Nomvelo: You did it.. Didn't you?

Me: I did it

Her: I knew that you could do it

I stood behind her and covered her eyes with my hands..

Me: Thank you

Her: What are you doing?

Me: I'm opening your spiritual eyes to seeing an Angel

–

NKULI

I saw a human figure that was wearing a black robe. I couldn't see his face but he was tall and he was standing by the door, it was very dark in the bedroom only the moon provided partial light..

Me: Who are you?

I felt darkness and fear as the figure approached me, I was in bed and I couldn't move nor scream..

It came closer and closer and..

I opened my eyes and looked around, I looked at the door and there was no one there, I was breathing heavy and sweating. What I dream, it felt very real..

—

NOMVELO

He removed his hands from my eyes and at first everything appeared blurry, I rubbed my eyes for a few seconds and what stood before us was something that I have never seen before. It was indeed an angel, a female with very big wings and taller than a normal human height. Her wings were pretty big.

I freaked and went to stand behind Nazo..

Him: She is a guardian angel.. She's very harmless

I moved a bit to look at her and then hid again..

Her: By tomorrow you won't have any memory of this, it will be bits and pieces

Me: It's a real Angel

Nazo: Really? I didn't realize

In my mind I kept on repeating the words "It's a fucken Angel"

Her: I can hear your thoughts and the language is very offensive

I wasn't preps for this.. Is this what Nazo sees? He's gift is really something far beyond human understanding..

.

To be continued

No edits

99

SNAZO

Nomvelo walked back to the car because she was freezing her warm clothes didn't quite kick in or she didn't wear warm enough, plus Helena's presence was too overwhelming for her. Helena looked at her as she opened the passenger's door..

Helena: The first time I had an encounter with her she was meant to be involved in a terrible car accident, that night I had to push back her car from starting

Me: Wait.. You have had an encounter with her? You've always known her?

Her: It was written long time ago that both your destinies had to collide to bring about one destiny, as soon as the world of darkness knew about that both your lives were always in danger. You had to be protected at all times. See, most things happened so that what it is today can come true. Fate is not always favourable some things weren't pleasant but

they had to happen. Your Brother had to be a vessel that brings Nomvelo to you, if it wasn't for him you wouldn't have known her and she would've killed herself right after she learned the truth about her Uncle and what he did. Nkuli was never tailored for you, none of those girls you were involved with before were tailored for you. Nkuli is a slave to money, she would've use this to her own advantage and her own selfish desires. Most of all, she was still not going to be faith but her... The most important reason that Nomvelo was chosen for you is because of her faithfulness, she has always known how to commit to only one person and despite how she grew up she always had a good heart. She has self respect, she's strong and she's just what you need to go forward. Never regret the mistakes you made, some of them needed to happen so that they can lead you to your destiny. You were chosen Nazo so that the scripture I Corinthians 1 verse 27 could come

into pass

Me: "But God has chosen the foolish things of the world to put to shame the wise, and God has chosen the weak things in the world to put to shame the things which are mighty"

Her: Yes

Me: So I was foolish?

Her: Not in so many words

Me: I should go

Her: Remember you and Nomvelo are not immune to being attacked by the enemy and Nomvelo she needs to start being spiritually and emotionally strong, she's going to get there but it won't be easy. She was here for you today when you almost gave up, you need to be there for her especially on this spiritual journey because it won't always be easy

Me: I know

Her: But we will always be there for you, as always

I started walking to the car..

Me: See you around Helena

Her: I always see you though you don't always see me

Me: I know and it still creeps me out

I am very proud of Nomvelo and what she did today, everyday she makes me fall more more harder for her. She had passed out on the seat, I looked at the time and it was 4:45 we have been here for quite a while..

—

NOMSA

I hardly slept last night I was thinking about Nomvelo giving me all the money, honestly speaking I thought she wouldn't want anything to do with me after everything that I've done to

her. It amazes me at how she has grown and at the same time it amazes me how my life is starting to change, light is shining through in what was my dark world. I owe it all to my Mother, sometimes I would hear her praying for me at 00:00am. When I started to church I learned to forgive myself back because the regrets that I had were holding me back too, now that I have forgiven myself and have prayed for God to touch the ones I've done wrong into forgiving me, I am glad that my self healing is worth it. I wiped my tears and glanced down at the book, I have jotted down a few business ideas. It would've been nice if Nomvelo could partner with me, I will run it through her...

—

NOMVELO

I was so sleepy when we got home all I wanted to do was to rest for a while. Nazo threw me on

the bed, he had actually put me on his back for the fun of it..

I yawned..

Him: Look at that.. That means a person won't be getting any morning glory this morning

Me: I just wanna rest a bit but I wanna send Zeash a message that I won't come to work today I'm really tired

Him: It's very nice to be you, you can just decide that you don't wanna show up at work and it's fine, if you worked for me I would've long fired you.. So you going to sleep all day?

Me: That was the plan until I remembered that someone mentioned something about a credit card yesterday at church

He raised his eyebrow..

Him: What credit card?

Me: Have you no shame?

Him: I don't know anything about a credit card, but there's something that I didn't mention

He went to drawers and took out some car keys and threw them on the bed..

Him: You can have my Polo

Me: Are you serious?

Him: I'm serious

I got off of the bed and went to hug him..

Me: Thank you soo much

Him: Now you can drive yourself to work

Me: Thank you very much babe

I kissed him..

He picked me up..

Him: And my credit card doesn't come for free

Me: Prostitution.. What kind of a preacher are you?

Him: One that just doesn't give away his credit card for free

Me: You going to exhaust me more

Him: I'll be very quick

–

NKULI

Grams: Good morning

Me: Morning

Her: Why are you up so early?

Me: I just had a bad dream that's all

She sat down..

Her: Wanna tell me about it?

Me: No.. I'd rather not.. It's okay

Her: What are you going to do today?

Me: Nomvelo is coming over we going to spend some time together

Her: Should I be worried?

Me: No you have nothing to worry about, we just going to talk and catch up that's all

I picked up the mug and drank my coffee..

–

NOMVELO

Okay this wasn't like the last time when we were intimate, today was completely a different scenario. The last time he was gentle and we engaged in passionate love making but today, he was ripping me apart..

I could feel him very deep inside of me and though I tried to concentrate much on the pleasure but it was a bit uncomfortable in a sense, being that deep was uncomfortable.

He was behind me and kneeling on the bed was better than kneeling on a rough surface, it was going to make everything more uncomfortable.

While my other hand was balancing on the bed, my other one tried to push him away but he held both of them and pinned them behind my back, making my upper body to come into contact with the bed, and my face was buried deep in the pillow and the pillow helped to trap my loud screaming. With my hands pinned down I couldn't escape even if I wanted too, he was really going hard so hard I could hear his loud breathing. Not in my life of being sexual active have I ever received it this hard, it wasn't a total horrific experience was just new. Basically this is his way of showing his dominant side and it's like the more I screamed his name, the more harder he went. When my screaming was seizing he would use his one hand to lock my hands were small and then with his other hand he would grab my hair not too rough though..

Me: Babe please I'm tired!!!

I wanted to blackmail him with tears but they

weren't there. He was moaning and very much enjoying himself, he wasn't lying about having a big appetite after all..

Me: I swear I'm not ever going to talk to you when we done!!

Him: The more reason then I should rip you more apart if it's going to be like that

Me: Nazo please it's burning real bad.. Babe please..

After this, I swear I'm not going to talk to him anymore..

.

To be continued

100

SNAZO

I only slept for a few hours and then at 12pm I went to work to check how things were going, we doing soo well that we now have an office in

town. First thing I did was to buy redbull, I needed a bit of kick to function for the time being that I'll be at the office..

Tumi: Why don't you just go back home and rest boss, we have everything under control

Tumi is our receptionist. She started a few months ago. When I'm not around Shine is the one who is in charge but he is mostly in the field with workers and supervising them, we have 5 guys now working for us each earning R 8000. I even feel like that's not enough considering the work that they do and how committed they are, I also pay them for overtime. Shine gets around 17k a month, if a contract pays more he gets more and I also bless my other employees with more. Me being the CEO and everything I get a bit more, well I get a lot more. Expanding our business to Mpumalanga is something that's going to start very soon, very soon as in like next month the latest. I was also thinking of

other businesses to venture in.

Starting from next month some of the money that we will be making will go into helping others, God didn't bless me to gain on my own but I should give back to the less fortunate. There more that the business will be getting, there more than we could give back. That's what Jesus would do if he was here..

Mpumi knocked..

Me: Come in

Her: If I remember correctly you said that starting from next year we will be giving back to the less fortunate

Me: That's true

Her: I would also like to offer a suggestion

Me: I'm listening

Her: Maybe we could supply high schools with sanitary pads, for girls who can't afford and

maybe also go to a few clinics around rural areas and ask them to give the girls around that area

Me: Sounds like a good idea

Her: You don't know how painful it is for a girl to be on her periods and not have a sanitary pad, some will go as far as not going to school

Me: I understand what you saying, you and my wife will definitely look into that

Her: Thank you very much

Me: You welcome.. How many contracts do we have?

Her: You can come and see

We both went to the reception..

Her: About 5 clients and it's big clients

I yawned while rubbing my eyes..

Her: You are truly blessed Boss, I have never

seen a business doing this well before. The Lord's favour is definitely upon you

Me: Thank you, Tumi and thank you for being a part of the family

The door opened and Shine walked in, he was holding his Daughter Mpumi..

Me: Ehhh look who came to visit us today

He put her on top of the counter and exhaled

Tumi: Who is this little cutie?

Me: Shine's Daughter Mpumi

I picked her up..

Tumi: Wow Shine you never told me that you have such an adorable Daughter

Shine: Kanti yindaba ye South Africa yonke na?
(The whole of SA must know)

Tumi: Haibo don't be rude I was just asking

Me: Still wondering how a bastard like him

could have such a cute Daughter

Tumi came the other way around..

Tumi: How old is she?

Shine: 8 months

I have picked it up I think a month back or so that Tumi likes Shine a lot, and Shine being Shine he doesn't notice..

Me: Where is Sbosh?

Shine: Yazi leskhekhe sing'jwayela kabi (That bitch is messing with me)

Tumi took Mpumi from me..

Tumi: Did you even come with her bottle?

Shine: Ang'keni straight (I'm not sure)

Tumi: What is she going to eat?

Shine: ngidlule ema shop ngathenga izinto nyana (I passed by at the shops and bought a few things)

Shine gave her his car keys...

Shine: You can check in the car

Okay that was unexpected, all of a sudden
Shine is a fan of English? Maybe I'm missing
something here. Maybe he also likes her..

Tumi: Let's go get check what we have in the
car

I turned to Shine..

Me: K'hambani? (what's going on)

Him: uSbosh bekangekho kubo iWeekend yonke
(She wasn't at her house for the whole weekend)

Me: What? Her Mom was is on a wheelchair
who was looking after Mpumi?

Him: Yinto eng'yenza ukuthi ng'hlanye leyo
ushiye uMpumi noMamakhe (That makes me
mad because she left the baby with her Mom)

I shook my head while whistling..

Shine: Aze alethe lama boyfriend nyana wakhe a useless engcosini yami, stru kuyonetha ama bullet (If she hell dares bring her useless boyfriends infront of my child, it will rain bullets)

Me: Stepfathers

Shine: Cabanga (Imagine)

Tumi came back and gave Shine a weird look

Shine: Yini? (what)

Tumi: You bought the whole store? Boss you should come and see this

We all went outside and his trunk was full.

Different brands of nappies, different brands of milk formula, bottles. You name it and it was there..

Shine: Eyy aningiyekeni bengazi ukuthi ng'thengeneni (leave me alone I didn't know what to buy)

I'm clueless about babies but Shine is worse.

–

NOMVELO

I heard a knock at the door it was faint until it started getting louder..

Nkuli: Velo ukhona (Velo are you around)

I took my phone and checked it, I had missed calls from Nkuli..

Nkuli: Velo!!!

I dragged myself out of bed in my still sleepy state to go and open for her, I first wrapped a towel around my naked body..

It was still burning and very sore, but at least I can walk. I unlocked and opened..

Her: Hau!!!

She made her way in..

Her: Did you see what time it is?

I ignored her..

Her: Open the windows it's a bit stuffy in here
kanti what's wrong?

Me: I'm not feeling well

I went and sat down on the bed, sitting down
was a mission..

Her: Ohhh eish now I see.. Askies shame you
should've taken a cold bath, just sit there for at
least 5min or so and then get yourself a Canex
T cream. That used to help me a lot

She went and opened the windows..

Me: Thank you for the tip Nkuli (sarcasm)

Her: What did you do? He usually uses that as a
form of punishment

Me: I didn't do anything

Her: Eish mara.. Yazi uNazo yena he forgets
that you just a baby, maybe he forgot ukuthi we
no longer fucking because I used to like it a bit
rough manje eish he is still trapped in the past

Nkuli was irritating me even more..

Me: let me go and pee

Her: It's going to make the situation worse

Me: Manje ng'hlale ngiz'chamele? (so I must just pee on myself)

Her: Haibo sisi! I'm not fighting you I'm just giving you tips! You don't know how he is like when it comes to sex so I'm helping you here as your big sister

I stood up and went to pee..

Her: Should I make the bed for you?

I stopped and looked at her..

Me: No!.. Yazi Nkuli today nje I'm not in the mood please

Her: Fine ke ngizohamba! (I'll leave)

Me: Thank you!

Her: You didn't even ask how I am after I got

kidnapped and I was protecting you!!

Me: What?

Her: Bye Velo

She walked out and I went to lock..

–

SNAZO

I was trying to keep up with everything that was happening but I was just too tired..

Shine: So ucabangani ngale ndaba? (what do you think about this matter)

(Silence)

Shine: Snazo!!

I opened my eyes..

Me: Ya?

Him: Zkhiphani ngawe? (what's wrong with you)

Me: Nex I'm just tired

Him: Then vaya uyogidla nyana (go and rest a bit)

Me: Ya eish I'll see you tomorrow

I took my car keys and walked out of the office to the reception, Tumi was still occupied with entertaining Mpumi..

Me: I'll see you guys tomorrow

Tumi: Okay Bye

I held Mpumi's small hand..

Me: Bye Nana

Tumi: She is such a sweetheart she hardly cries

I made my way to the door and I bumped into Sbosh..

Her: Snazo!! Siphi les'lima ebathi uShine?

(Where is that fool called Shine)

Me: I think you need to calm down, you going to scare the baby

Her: Anginandaba! (I don't care)

Sbosh is a very beautiful attractive girl, she is very loose and Shine was supposed to smash and pass but he fucked up and got her pregnant..

She pushed me out of the way..

Her: Yazini ng'cela usuke endleleni (please get out of my way)

Not forgetting that she's very crazy..

–

NKULI

I cannot even put it into words how livid I was, I really thought that I could live with this things of Nazo and Nomvelo being together but I can't! To even think that he touched her makes me very angry, angry to a point were I feel like killing both of them right now!

–

NOMVELO

Although Nkuli and I had an altercation earlier on but her advice worked a bit, Just a bit. I did take a cold bath and I felt a bit better and all that feeling of feeling tired and sleepy left me. I seriously don't know what she meant when she said that she was protecting me, what really happened that night. The door was wide open when Nazo made his way in, I was making the bed..

It did show that he was tired..

Him: At what time did you wake up?

I ignored him, he took out his wallet and then got his credit card out and handed it to me..

Me: I don't want it

Him: What do you want ke?

Me: For you to sleep in your brother's bedroom until further notice

He chuckled..

Him: Ya that's not happening

Me: Okay then I'll go and spend a few nights at my Grandmother's house

He gently grabbed my arm and made me to look at him..

Him: I'm sorry about this morning.. Look me in the eye and tell me that you didn't enjoy

Me: That's beside the point

Him: Then what is the point?

I looked at him..

Him: Okay Nomvelo ufunani ke? (what do you want)

Me: Nkuli was here?

Him: bekazile la? (he was here)

I nodded..

Him: I thought she got kidnapped

Me: How do you know?

Him: Never mind

Me: No Nazo how do you know that she was kidnapped?

He sighed..

Him: She called me

Me: When?

Him: Before the negotiations to tell me that she was kidnapped

Me: And you never told me?

Him: I didn't tell you because I didn't think it was serious, I still don't think it's serious

Me: So that's your excuse? I thought you said we shouldn't lie to each other

Him: I didn't lie.. I just didn't tell you

Me: And that's supposed to make me feel better?

Him: Let's just leave it because it's going to

make us fight and I'm very exhausted

Me: Ya let's leave it vele nje ngoba even this morning when we were having sex she was on your mind

Him: Ini? (what)

Me: When we were having sex this morning she was definitely on your mind because she even knew what I should've done when we were finished to help ease the soreness and the burning sensation

Him: Eyy kanti ukhuluma ngani? (what are you talking about)

I kept quiet and continued fixing the bed..

Him: Ngathi uzong'hlala ku Oxygen, uzong'cika straight(you going to annoy me)

He started walking away and I don't know what came over but I clicked my tongue..

Me: Nx!!

I don't know when he got hold of the small pillow and he just hit me with across my face..

Him: click your tongue at me again and see how this is going to end up

I kept quiet because he was very angry..

Him: Anzange ngithi siyeke lento kaNkuli?
(Didn't I say let's leave this thing with Nkuli)

He stepped closer and I stepped back..

Him: Ngizok'shaya Nomvelo uyezwa? (I will hit you)

I still remained quiet.. He threw the pillow on the bed and walked out to the house, while banging the door behind him..

.

To be continued

101

NAZO

"You made me a, you made me a believer,
believer

Pain!

You break me down, you build me up, believer,
believer

Pain!

Oh let the bullets fly, oh let them rain

My life, my love, my drive, it came from...

Pain!

You made me a, you made me a believer"

I was laying back on Niso's bed while listening
to one the songs that he made me fall in love
with because he used to play it almost everyday,
I was playing it on my phone... [Imagine
Dragons_Believer]

My eyes were closed and though I was dead tired I just couldn't fall asleep, a lot of things were running through my mind the major one being my fight with Nomvelo. I don't think that I've ever been this angry with her, she really angered me today with all that Nkuli nonsense. Nkuli pisses me off to the core, why can't she just be like Mantwa and move on..

"I was broken from a young age Taking my sulking to the masses Write down my poems for the few That looked at me, took to me, shook to me, feeling me"

The door flung open, I opened my eyes and it was Gugu. She was holding a broom with her, she wasn't around when I got in, I wonder where she went. She was very mad she started hitting me with the broom..

Me: What are you doing? Stop!

I got up and held the broom..

Me: Damn Gugu!!

Her: Uyahlanya wena? (are are you crazy)

I let go of the broom..

Me: Yini kanti? (what's wrong)

She hit me on my shoulder and I felt something cracking..

Me: Gugu yeka maan eish!! (stop it) think you dislocated my shoulder

Her: I will do more than that!!.. Yini ngawe Nazo? Sowunesandla wena ebafazini? (what's wrong with you, so now you beat women)

Me: Gugu angim'thintanga uNomvelo (I didn't touch Nomvelo)

Her: Ohw so what? She's crazy to be laying on the bed and crying?

Me: I didn't beat her, I have never raised my hand on a woman and I'm not going to start today

Her: Manje uhlanya uVelo? (so Velo is crazy)

Me: I didn't do anything! Nomvelo takes whatever shit Nkuli says and then she fights with me

Gugu: uNkuli futhi? (Nkuli again)

Me: Nomvelo must stop listening to her cousin or else akayoshada naye (she must go and marry her)

Gugu: I'm tired of this Nkuli serious! She walked out but then stopped and looked at me..

Her: Go fix it.. By tomorrow I wanna see you guys all touchy touchy and inlove as always

I sat down on the bed and put my hand on my shoulder..

Gugu: Ngeke nje sizodlalwa uNkuli! (I won't let Nkuli play us)

–

NOMVELO

"Tell me what you say now?

Tell me what you say

Come again?

If you cannot stay down

Then you do not have to pretend

Like there is no way out

I shoulda never let you in

Cause you got me face down

And don't take this personal

But you're the worst

You know what you've done to me

And although it hurts I know

I just can't keep runnin' away"

I was laying on the bed listening to The worst by Jhene aiko, never knew that fights could hurt this much. I have dealt with a lot in my life and

drama in my marriage is the last thing I want, literally right now my fight with Nazo triggered things that I thought I had buried. Those old scars started bleeding again. Nazo can be too much at times, he needs to really loosen up because I can't deal with his intimidating side. Niso was once physical with me and I don't wanna go through that again, I don't wanna be a victim of domestic violence. The door opened and he walked in, My heart skipped a bit. I stopped the song from playing as he sat on the armrest of the couch, the couch is a bit close to our bed. I didn't even look at him, I avoided eye contact at all costs..

Him: You told Gugu that I hit you? Ngik'shayile Velo? (Did I beat you)

Nazo has a very nice voice, it's just a bit deep and it becomes very intimidating when he's mad. Literally you will shake in your boots..

Him: You take whatever you and your cousin

talk about and then you bring it into our relationship! Am I supposed to be happy with that? I don't even know what you two talk about and I don't wanna know! But somehow I'm caught up in the middle

This was not going to end well and I just don't wanna fight anymore, it's too emotionally draining. I got out of bed and put on my flops and then took my phone and walked to the door, unfortunately he beat me to it and then locked it...

Me: I don't wanna fight Nazo

Him: Running away what is it going to solve?

I went sat on the armrest of the couch were he was sitting and tried by all means to block my tears from falling. I really didn't wanna fight and my tears fell anyway, I couldn't hold back. He came and crouched in front of me, he held my hand and kissed it..

Him: I love you soo much and I would never raise my hand on you no matter how much you piss me off, I might've lost my cool but I'll never hit you

He ran his thumb next to my eye and wiped my tears, he did the same thing on the other side..

Him: I know that uNkuli is your cousin, she's your family but she's also my ex. Sometimes Exes can be messy and I know her she rains revenge on anything and anyone who hurts her. I would appreciate it if your relationship with her ends at your Grandmother's house and over the phone, I don't want to see her here because I have no business with her. She is nothing but trouble

I understand what he was saying, Nkuli can be very bitter..

Him: Nkuli is my past and you my future, I don't even think of her until you bring her name up

and I definitely don't think about her when I'm making love to you. I don't want anything to do with her, and I don't want her. If I wanted Nkuli I would be marrying Nkuli

He squeezed my cheek..

Him: I'm marrying the most delicious and tasty chocolate muffin that I've ever tasted

There he goes making me blush..

Him: I love you MaButhelezi

Me: I love you too

He kissed my hand again..

Him: Know that I never wanna see you cry because it hurts me a lot, I'm not saying things are always going to be perfect but if we fight can it not include Nkuli?

I nodded..

Me: Okay

Him: Promise?

Me: I Promise

He got up and then balanced both his hand hands on my thighs, he then kissed me..

Me: Im still owed a credit card

Him: Thought you didn't want it anymore

Me: That was before

He took out his wallet and gave it to me, I opened it..

Him: R5 000 limit

Me: If I overspend?

Him: It's coming out from your paycheck

Me: Dawn would never do me like that

Him: Dawn is not the one signing your paycheck.. I am

Me: Huh?

Him: If you overspend it's coming out from your paycheck

He stood up straight..

Him: I'm going to bath and then rest a bit I'm tired

Me: Okay I'll prepare dinner

He stopped..

Me: What?

Him: Is Gugu helping?

Me: Nope..

He cleared his throat..

Him: Uhm.. I can't wait for dinner

I smiled at him..

Me: I'll make sure dinner is ready when you wake up

Him: I hope I won't wake up tomorrow morning, I'm just saying because I'm really exhausted

Me: I'll wake you up Babe don't worry

Him: I bet you will

I laughed as he went to the bathroom..

–

NKULI

We heard someone knocking at the door..

Grams: Come in

The door opened and Gugu walked in, she was holding a sjambok..

Gugu: Sawubona MaNgcobo (Greetings MaNgcobo)

Grams: Sawubona nawe (Greetings to you too)

Gugu: Ngiyaxolisa kakhulu MaNgcobo kodwa lokhu mele kwenzeke (I am very sorry but this has to be done)

She charged at me and started whooping me with the sjambok..

Grams: Hai Gugu!!

My Grandmother got in between us..

Gugu: Ngizok'fundisa abantu! (I'll teach you a lesson)

Me: Usangene yini? (are you insane)

Grams: Yini Gugu? (what's wrong Gugu)

Gugu: Yeka uNomvelo! (leave Nomvelo alone)

Me: uyagula serious!! (you are sick)

Gugu: uphinde nje ubeke unyawo lwakho lapha kwami uzobona (if you step your foot again at my house you will see)

She clicked her tongue and then walked away..

Me: I'll get you arrested!

Her: Hamba! Lokho angeke kwenze uNazo ak'thande! (Go ahead that won't make Nazo to love you)

Grams: Sowenzeni manje? (What did you do

now)

I clicked my tongue and walked to my bedroom...

–

TUMI

When Shine and his Baby Mama started going back and forth with shouting, I took Mpumi and went to Nazo's office because she was crying. All that shouting scared her. That girl was beautiful to be acting all crazy, I don't like to judge People but she looked like one of those wild girls. I tried to calm Mpumi down, I gave her a pacifier and she kept quiet though she had hiccups from all that crying.

Me: You alright baby.. Shhhhhh

Shine stood and the door and looked at us with his hands in his pockets..

Me: Is she gone?

He nodded, when Mpumi saw him she stretched her hands to him while crying and dropping her pacifier. Shine took her from me and then I picked up the pacifier.

She laid her head on her father's chest, Shine put his hand on her back and kissed her on her forehead..

Him: Shhhhh

When he ran his hand on her back she calmed down, I was really enjoying the moment..

He looked at me and looked at the Pacifier, I handed it to him..

Him: Ta ngwana (Thank you)

He walked away leaving me still caught up in that adorable moment, I can tell that he is a good father. He just makes my heart melt..

—

NOMVELO

Snazo was sitting on the bed and I was behind him busy massaging his shoulder, was a bit red and swollen..

Me: I'm sorry Babe.. Didn't think she was going to attack you

Him: It's not your fault.. She's always been this crazy

I laughed..

Me: She reminds me of Cookie Lyon, she doesn't take shit from no one

Him: she's always been like this

Me: Are you ready for this coming Sunday?

Him: Are you ready?

Me: I'm ready

Him: I can't wait

This coming Sunday we are going to exchange rings at church and the bishop is going to bless

our union in front of the whole church, and then the next Sunday Nazo is going to be officially ordained a preacher with me right next to her. I can't wait!

.

To be continued

No edits

102

NOMVELO

2 MONTHS LATER

Where do I even begin? Since that time when Nazo and I had that disturbing fight I thought that things were going to spiral out of control between us but honestly that was never the case. I have been so genuinely happy within this period of 2 months I don't even think it's normal for someone to just keep on experiencing

happiness and happiness on a daily basis. Our union was a success and a blessing, we exchanged rings in front of our close families and the the congregation. Nazo's mentor Bishop McCarthy was the one who blessed our union and our rings, It was a very beautiful moment. It wasn't a white wedding Nazo still stood on his words that he is going to give me a white wedding when he thinks that I'm ready, quite frankly I don't understand his reasoning but it makes sense to him. We had the union and then I officially changed my surname at home affairs from Ngcobo to being Buthelezi, we were officially married and we still owe our families and close friends a little ceremony with regards to that. Not only did our union happen but Nazo was ordained a Preacher too I mean how perfect can things get? Our lives were just too peaceful without the presence of anyone opposing us, not even Nkuli. Nazo has made a name for himself he has been invited to a lot of

church functions, he has been preaching and doing a lot of motivational speaking, he is frequent on the Purgatory channel that now People were acknowledging his presence. People would stop us at the mall or in town, he was really becoming a very important somebody...

So it's a new year and the plan was to go back to school but I applied late because I have been feeling sick lately and unfortunately I was not considered, seems like I'll have to apply again around June the college do take new applicants on the second semester. I could say that my sickness started about last month and it got worse when I started with the contraceptive pills. I have been feeling very nauseated, I am drained most of the time, I have no interest in a lot of things and I get dizzy every now and then. My breasts become tender and sensitive most of the time, it's just a mess and I don't know

what's wrong but I believe it's the after effects from the contraceptive pills. He knocked again..

Nazo: Nana you have been there for a while now, I'm starting to get worried

I was kneeling at the toilet with my head almost buried inside, I woke with feeling woozy again. I was trying so hard to vomit maybe I'll feel better but all I could do was just retch and spit. I got up and flushed the toilet, then I went and rinsed my mouth before walking out of the bathroom. I never knew contraceptive pills could be this hectic, It's been long now the effects should be seizing. I stood at the door of the bathroom and looked at him, he was fixing his cufflinks

It was a early Saturday morning and I was supposed to accompany him to Pretoria he was invited to do some motivational speaking alongside Prophet Badru but with my state of health I don't think I'll be able to go with him..

Him: Maybe I should stay

Me: No.. Please don't

I walked and sat on the bed next to my Bible, I had woken up to say my prayers and the sickness started right when I was supposed to be reading my morning scripture. I am content with my spiritual life currently, I am born again I've accepted Jesus as my Lord and Personal saviour I enjoy reading the Bible and some spiritual books. I do a lot of reading. I am even reading some book that Dawn gave me to learn more about the nature of demons, to make Exorcisms more easier for me..

Him: Didn't the Dr said that the side effects of the pills is just a temporary thing?

Me: He did

Him: It's been long now MaButhelezi, don't you think that we should go back?

Me: I'll be fine

He said next to me and I laid my head on his chest..

Him: Let's make a deal.. If you not fine by Monday morning we going back to the Dr, maybe the pills aren't for you

Me: Okay

His cologne was smelling nice that I didn't want to move. He kissed me on my forehead.

Me: You should go, wouldn't be nice if you arrive there late

Him: I'm good.. There's 3 people before me
Somehow his deep voice was soothing..

We heard a knock at the door..

Him: let me get that

He got up and went to open..

Gugu: Good thing you still here

She walked in.. Nazo closed the door..

Gugu: Did Nomvelo iron your shirt?

She fixed his collar..

Nazo: Yes

Gugu: I'm impressed.. This is good

Me: What can I say? You a good teacher

Nazo: I want you to check up on her, she's sick

Gugu: You still sick?

I nodded..

She came and felt my temperature..

Gugu: Hai are you sure it's the pills?

Me: I can't find another explanation for this.. It has to be the pills. The side effects are common and they will go

Nazo: But they not going

Gugu looked at Nazo..

Gugu: Aren't you late?

He looked at his watch..

Him: Ya I should get going

He took his things..

Gugu: Don't worry about Velo.. I'll take care of her

Nazo: Thank you.. I'll see you guys later

He put his hand on my chin and kissed me..

Him: Get some rest.. I'll call you

Me: Okay

Him: I love you

Me: I love you too

He kissed Gugu on the cheek..

Nazo: See you later

Gugu: Bye baby

He walked out..

Gugu folded her arms and looked at me..

Her: Okay when was the last time you had your period?

Me: Last month I think

Her: You think?

Me: I wouldn't even call it a period, it was just spotting and very mild cramps. Not like period pains, I really don't know maybe my cycle is changing

Her: When did you start using the contraceptives?

Me: I don't remember.. 2 weeks ago maybe?

Her: Where are they?

Me: They in the drawer

She went and got them..

Him: That's all of them?

Me: Yes

Her: Good

She took them and went to the bathroom, after a while I heard the toilet flushing..

Me: Gugu what are you doing?

Her: I'm getting rid of them

I got up from the bed..

Me: What? Why?

I walked to the bathroom..

Me: Why would you do that? That's not right you invading my space and my privacy

Her: Nywe Nywe my space and my privacy, Nomvelo your cycle is not changing.. You pregnant

I froze..

Her: Before you started taking contraceptives were you guys using any other form of contraception?

I shook my head no..

Her: You pregnant Baby and I think you have been for a while now

I walked back to the main room and slowly sat on bed..

Her: We can go to the Dr and confirm but I'm very sure that you pregnant

This was unexpected, I didn't know what to think..

–

TUMI

I took the documents and walked to the office, he was sitting back on the chair and looking at some document. I knocked..

He looked at me and then put the document down. I made my way in..

Me: Nazo's signature is needed on some few documents but since he's not here, you can do the honours

Him: athi sibone (let's see)

I handed him the documents..

Me: It's a few supplies

He looked at me..

Him: I can read, ungazong'phaphela (don't be too forward)

Shine's personality is confusing, sometimes he can be nice and then the next moment he is switching you off.. I let him read and then after he took the pen and signed. He handed me the documents again..

Me: Thank you

I walked away...

Him: Cava (look)

I stopped and looked at him...

Him: Grand sharp uzoyenzani after work? (what will you be doing after work)

Me: Why?

He shrugged his shoulders...

Me: I'll be at my place chilled

Him: Ngizobe ngiye kwenye iPub & grill (I'll be at some pub&grill)

Me: So what does have to do with me?

He chuckled and shook his head while rubbing his hands together..

Him: Neh ku grand.. (it's cool)

He went back to what he was doing..

(Silence)

Me: Did that statement have any significance?

Him: ekhoneni lakho (at your station)

Me: I-

Him: Manje (now)

Me: Of course

I walked out..

–

NKULI

I have been staying at my Grandmother's place for a while now, the rent was up at my place for 2 months now and my landlord has been sending me endless Smses. The last Sms he sent me was telling me that I'll be evicted. I had no money to pay for rent plus where I live is very expensive and since I had a fallout with my blesser things have been very hard for me. Definitely chasing after Nazo is not helping, it's not maintaining my lifestyle and definitely not paying my bills.

Grams: Nkuli

I looked at her..

Her: You know that I love you and I don't mind having you around

Me: but?

Her: Vele uzimisele ngani? (what are your intentions)

Me: With what?

Her: I don't think you have any plans of doing anything, you expensive and you want expensive things. I am old, I am a pensioner

Me: I am not working because jobs are scarce plus kanti isn't Nomvelo helping?

Her: uNomvelo is not an atm yala ekhaya (Nomvelo is not our ATM)

Me: uDanger is renting he has to help too

Her: Nkuli ngikubuza ngawe.. Wena ungitshela ngabanye abantu (I am asking about you and you telling me about other people)

I stood up..

Her: uyaphi manje? (where are you going)

Me: to get fresh air

–

NOMVELO

Gugu drove me to the Dr. I was very nervous, what if I am really pregnant? I just hope it's the pills or my cycle changing. I am not ready for a baby. The Dr asked me a lot of questions including when I last went on my periods, he asked me about my symptoms just a lot of questions that confused me..

Him: I will do two tests, one is a normal pregnancy test and then the other one I'll send your sample to the lab and you will get the results next week Tuesday or so

He got the pregnancy test..

Him: You can go to the toilet, pee in this cup and put the test in and then we will wait for the results

I took the test and the cup and went to the toilet, I did the test as instructed and then went back to the consulting room. He put on a latex glove and took the test from me, I sat down and waited for the results..

Him: Are you nervous?

I nodded..

Him: Unplanned?

Me: Yes

Him: Baby Daddy?

Me: He is not around

Him: But you two are still together?

Me: Yes

Him: That's nice.. At least you will have someone should you test positive

I wish he could stop talking, he was making me more nervous..

After a while he looked at the test..

Him: You wanna see?

Me: Yes

I cleared my throat..

He handed me the test..

Him: one line means you not pregnant, two lines means you pregnant

I took it and looked at it..

.

To be continued

Excuse any errors it's been a long day

103

NOMVELO

The ride home was a very quiet one, I didn't even tell Gugu what the results said I'm just gonna tell her when we get home plus the Dr allowed me to keep the pregnancy test.

When we got home that's when I showed her the pregnancy test, I was still in shock with the whole situation.. She has been nagging me about seeing it

Gugu: Two lines.. Hau Velo you pregnant kwamampela

Nothing was sinking in as yet..

She started tickling me on my tummy..

Her: Soon I'll have two small feet running around the house and breaking my things

She stopped tickling me..

Me: Can we not tell anyone about this please

Her: Not tell anyone? You're going to tell Nazo right?

Me: Yes I will tell him but other people I don't want them knowing just as yet

Her: I understand

Me: I probably shouldn't even consider applying anymore

She sat next to me..

Her: Now don't make me angry.. Ungaqali (don't start)

Me: How will I handle a baby and studying at the same time, let alone being a preacher's wife?

Her: I am here and I will look after the baby while you focus on your studies, you're going to go to school nothing is going to change. You still young, you need to achieve your dreams it's not like the olden days anymore and I'm sure Nazo is going to support you

I nodded..

Me: I'm scared.. I mean I don't know anything about pregnancy and now I have someone growing inside of me

Her: Pregnancy has it's ups and downs, but it's

a very beautiful experience. When the baby starts moving and kicking, it's a joyful feeling. It's a bit overwhelming but a joyful feeling, an unbreakable bond is going to be created between you and your baby and when she/he finally arrives it's going to be the best feeling ever and we going to be here for you every step of the way, never feel alone

Me: Thank you

Her: Let's go inside the house I wanna start baking

Me: I'll help

Her: You can sit on the couch and watch tv

Me: I'm not even showing yet

Her: You in your first trimester, you very much prone to a miscarriage so I really don't want you stressing or handling a lot of things and tiring house chores

Me: Gu-

Her: Hai phela angeke sishone le nale ngalento
(We won't keep on arguing about this)

I exhaled..

Her: This is my first Grandchild Nomvelo please
kill me for being a concerned Grandmother

My phone started ringing..

Me: I have to take this.. It's Nazo

Her: I'll be in the house

She walked out..

Me: Babe

Him: At least she's still alive

I chuckled..

Me: That's not funny

Him: How are you feeling?

Me: I'm a bit better now

Him: Are you resting?

Me: I'm fine

Him: Are you resting?

Me: I'm fine

Him: MaButhelezi are you resting?

Me: I'm fine

Him: Uyayidaz' inkani ngane kaNgcobo
uzobuyela kini (You very stubborn, I'll send you
back home)

I laughed..

Me: Aren't you supposed to be on the stage
now motivating?

Him: I'm going up in 5min

Me: Okay

Him: I'll see you later

Me: See you later

Him: Ngi tops ngawe yezwa? (I love you)

Me: Bye Babe (Laughing)

I hung up and took my Bible then went to the house, I have been reading Genesis 37 Joseph's story. Nazo recommended it to me and I must say that I am falling inlove with it so far..

–

TUMI

I am originally from Botswana, born and bred in Botswana. My little sister and I we moved to South Africa a few years ago right after the death of our Mother. We used to live in a family house, my Grandmother died first then my Mom followed and my Uncle put us out.

We had no choice but come this side and live with our Aunt. My Aunt is a very good person, she used to take care of us until she started getting sick and she couldn't work anymore that's when I had to step up and get a job. It's

not easy being a breadwinner and I don't mind taking care of my little sister and my Aunt the problem is that my Aunt is very costly because she has to see Doctors and specialists every now and then. It is not clear what's wrong with her hence why she's seeing a lot of Doctors hoping for a more clear diagnosis. My little sister Rethabile is 16 years old, or turning 16 rather in a few months time and she demands a lot. She is in a private school, School fees is R1100 a month now that she's doing grade 10 all the way up to grade 12, she wants me throw her a sweet 16 birthday party ontop of that rent and groceries are on me because we live in a 2 bedroom flat. I am not a person that talks a lot, I hate fighting and arguments so sometimes I just sacrifice a lot for the sake of peace because my little sister is a devil. The last time I refused to buy her a phone she told me she's going to go and sleep with different men so that they can buy her the phone. I just wish my Mom

was here or my Aunt wasn't sick so that they could help me out. We have different Fathers and they both not a part of our lives, so it's just me and her.. Shine tapped on my counter, I didn't even realize that I was lost deep in my thoughts. I looked at him as he offered me a tissue, I wiped my tears..

Me: Thank you

I like Shine a lot and that's not because he has a good paying job, we have spent a lot of time together in the workplace and feelings just started developing. Let's be honest it is difficult to find guys who are well off, I am not sure about Shine being faithful and committed in a relationship but I like him a lot. I wouldn't wanna be with a guy who is going to be a financial burden on me..

He looked at the time..

Him: Seng'qedile singavala (I'm done.. We can

close)

Me: Okay

On Saturdays we only open to do filing and we only open from 09:00-14:00

He wanted to walk away and go back to his office but his conscience didn't allow him..

Him: kwenzakalani? (What's wrong)

Me: It's nothing

Him: Cava ke.. Take this deal ye lunch ePub&Grill then uzong'shayela ukuthi uhlushwa yini (Take this lunch deal at the pub and grill and you can tell me what's troubling you)

Me: Why do you care?

Him: I don't

Me: Very well

Him: Ok ok ok bheka yeka ukuflopa, ngicela uzobloma nami lapha ePub&Grill (Can you

please come and chill with me at the pub&grill)

I looked at him..

Him: Ngiyak'cela Ngwanas (Please babe)

Me: Okay I'll come

He tapped on the counter while smiling..

Him: Get your things ready sphume kulendawo
(get your things so that we can be out of here)

He walked back to the office, I sorted out the files with a smile on my face..

–

SNAZO

Me: Someone said to me this other time "Rev everytime when I think about something bad it happens and it happens quicker, but when I think about something positive nothing happens. It's like I'm a magnet that attracts bad things only"

It was a crowd of about 150 people or so, everyone was just listening attentively..

Me: I am not standing here and talking to you in a religious perspective because people who are gathered here have different beliefs, I am standing here and speaking in general. If you sitting here and you don't believe in God then you have to be believe in something, a power that is beyond you. You cannot be here as a non-believer for the mere fact that you here now and wanna get something from this talk it means you believe, you cannot go through life without faith. Faith is what gets you through difficult situations, faith speak things into existence. Faith works with a divine power, faith works with spiritual law. The reason why negative things happen more quicker is because you put more thought and passion into it. If you constantly thinking about failure, you give that thought power and that thought will

manifest and failure is what you going to get. Remember "As a man thinketh in his heart, so is he" your life is shaped by your thoughts. If you give too much faith into failure then failure is what you always going to get, you creating a life that is full of failure and spiritual law is going to grant you failure after failure. Change how you think and see if your life won't change, putting more faith in positive thoughts won't rob you of anything. The Bible says "Do not cling to events of the past or dwell on what happened long ago" because there's no future there. Bringing your past into your future will do nothing but destroy you and hinder you from achieving what you've always wanted to achieve. I feel very strongly about affirmations, write an affirmation down say it over and over everyday until you believe it and your faith will bring it into pass. Now mind you, please don't write an affirmation that you also won't believe, don't affirm something like "I'm a millionaire" while

deep down you don't believe it, rather affirm "I have a good relationship with money and financial prosperity follows me at all times" if you affirm "I'm a millionaire" but don't even believe it then you going to get exactly what you expecting than what you have affirmed. You can't affirm something and then have doubts, your doubts are going to give you a different result because that's what you expect. One would say but money is evil, money is not evil. People who love money make it evil, remember it's your love for money that makes it evil because if you love money soo much then you won't even hesitate to shed blood so that you can get it. Money is the answer to everything but the love for money is the root of all evil. You don't have to affirm money, affirm anything that is a need to you. Some of us here need food for the soul. We need peace, love, kindness, forgiveness and so forth. Affirm whatever it is that will break the chains that are holding your

heart captive and your soul from breathing. If we had more time I would dwell much on affirmations but unfortunately we don't have time but I do hope we meet again. I am Rev Buthelezi and it was a blessing to to stand in front of you today, thank you.

They gave me a standing ovation while I went down..

–

NKULI

I knocked at my Grandmother's bedroom..

Her: Come in

She was reading her Bible..

Me: Can I talk to you?

She closed it..

I went and sat down next to her..

Me: First of all Koko I would like to apologize for

being disrespectful to you

She kept quiet..

Me: I wanna stop fighting with everyone, I wanna stop being an enemy of everyone in the family

She still kept quiet..

Me: I would like to start going to church with you and also I wanna make peace with Nomvelo

Her: Nkuli..

Me: Please Koko.. Yes I might've been against her and Nazo but not anymore, holding on to hate and anger it's only going to destroy me

Her: Nkuli I don't want trouble anymore, I don't want you giving Nomvelo any trouble

Me: I know that I'm not to be trusted but I'll prove to everyone that I mean no harm

Her: Sizobona ngawe (we will see)

Me: Can I make you a cup of tea?

Her: That would be lovely thank you

I stood up and went to the kitchen to make her tea, as I was busy making tea I felt a presence behind me. I felt like someone was standing behind me, I turned around and I was right. That figure I once saw was standing behind me, I tried to move but I couldn't. I tried to scream but it was as if like my voice was blocked. He walked closer and put his long finger on my forehead..

Him: Denbora da (it is time)

His long nail cut me a little on my forehead and that's all I could remember before going down..

–

To be continued

104

TUMI

At first things were awkward between me and Shilne we didn't know what to talk about because most lyrics our conversations revolve around work, we have never been together like this out of the office.. He was surprised that I was drinking cool drink instead of an alcoholic beverage..

Me: Can I ask you something?

Him: Sho?

Me: Are you this shy around women?

He chuckled..

Him: Eyy angikho shy (I'm not shy)

Me: I beg to differ

Him: Ok inkinga ukuthi this thing yama relationship akusiyizinto zam' (Relationships are not my things)

Me: have you been in a relationship before?

Him: bekungasiyinto eSerious (It wasn't

something serious)

Me: I don't understand

Him: I've always went for lama ntombazana nje angahlaliseki, nakhona nje bekuyizinto za muzukwana (I've always went for wild girls, and it was always a temporary thing)

Me: Izinto zamzukwana? (Temporary things)

Him: Uyazi maan (You know)

Me: Angazi (I don't know)

He scratched his head..

Him: Just good sex nje lapho nalapho

Me: Ohw more like friends with benefits?

Him: Ya zona lezo.. Committed nje aii, ama relationship ane stress sawo (relationships come with a lot of stress)

I sipped on my cool drink..

Me: I understand

Him: Wena? (what about you)

Me: My Exes have never been faithful, after my last boyfriend I just took a break from dating

Him: Serious?

Me: Serious

Him: Ke moss umuntu angazibekela amagama
(A person can hit on you)

I laughed..

Me: Eat your food

Him: How are you finding yours?

Me: So you can say more three words?

Him: Yabo?? Uzozibhadalela (you see.. You will pay for yourself)

I laughed again..

Him: Kanti ucabanga ukuthi ang'gelezanga?

Fede nje vele uyang'scanna usho ukuthi nayi

lebhari ebulawa utshwala (You think I didn't go

to school? I'm sure you look at me and think I'm a fool that's addicted to alcohol)

Me: Haaa! I didn't say that (Laughing)

Him: Ngeke umuntu azi (A person wouldn't know)

We continued eating..

(Silence)

Him: New earrings?

I touched them..

Me: Ya got them not so long ago.. How did you know?

Him: Ngoba you always match your earrings with a dress or a t-shirt that you wearing, manje lawa awangeni kule skipa os'shayile vandag (the ones you wearing don't match with the tshirt that you wearing)

That was fluttering..

Me: What else do you notice about me?

He looked at me..

Him: Izinto ezibhaya (it's a lot of things)

Me: Like?

Him: Ok..

He put the piece of wors back on the plate and took the saviette to wipe his fingers..

Him: Sometimes awufaki iMake-up so it can be easy for you to cry without messing up your face, nakunjalo it means khona okwenzekile (When it's like that it means that something happened)

I was really taken by what he was saying..

Him: You smile a lot nje hayi ngoba ufuna, but to pretend as if like uright ukusisusa nje emehlweni (You smile just to fool us and make us think that you okay)

His phone rang, he looked at it..

Him: Ngiyeza (I'm coming)

He stood up and picked it up from the table then walked out..

I was speechless, I didn't know what to say..

–

NKULI

I heard my Grandmother's voice calling out to me, I also felt her touch..

Her: Nkuli vuka! (wake up)

I slowly opened my eyes and she was sitting next to me..

Her: Are you okay? Ungithusile (you scared me)

I got up..

Me: What happened?

Her: I don't know I heard a sound then when I came to check, you were on the floor

She helped me to get up..

Her: Why are you so cold?

Me: I'm not sure

Her: Are you okay? Don't you wanna go to the hospital?

Me: No I'm good Grams

All of a sudden I sensed certain movements from outside, I looked at the door..

Me: Someone is going to open (whispering)

Indeed the door opened, Danger walked in. That was weird, how is it possible that I could hear footsteps from outside while I'm inside the house??

Danger: Sanibonani (greetings)

Grams: Danger is supposed to drive me to the mall

Me: Okay

Her: Nkuli are you sure that you okay?

I faked a smile..

Me: I'm fine Grams

Her: If something happens call me

Me: I will

She went to the bedroom..

Danger: Uyagula yini? (are you sick)

Me: Not exactly

I pulled the chair and sat down..

Him: You got eye contacts?

Me: eye contacts?

Him: Your eyes.. They look different

Me: Uhm.. Ya I think I did

My Grandmother came back..

Her: Ngiyabuya (I'm coming back)

Me: Okay

They walked out..

—

NOMVELO

I felt someone kissing me all over my face..

I smiled first before opening my eyes..

Me: You such a nuisance

Him: When I'm sleeping and you bother me it's okay but when I do it, I'm a nuisance

Me: Weren't you the one who said I need some rest

Him: Heard you been napping for hours

Me: That's not true

Him: Then what's true?

Me: I just needed the rest

Him: I'm glad that you had the rest

He kissed me again..

Me: How did it go?

Him: It went well

Me: I'm glad to hear that

He kissed me on the cheek..

Him: Gugu baked some scones.. I'll make coffee

Me: Not for me

Him: That's a first.. You saying no to coffee?

I cleared my throat..

Me: I need to tell you something

He looked at me..

Him: Sounds serious

Me: It is

Him: What is it?

Me: or maybe I should just show you

I got up from the couch and I had a serious dizzy spell, he held me..

Him: Easy.. Think you got up way too fast

Me: Ya maybe

Him: Are you okay?

Me: I'm okay

He let me go and then we walked out of the house to our room..

Me: Sit down

Him: MaButhelezi khuluma (Talk)

I put my hands on his shoulders and forced him to sit down..

Him: Ugcwele ukudlala yazi (you full of games)

I got the pregnancy and handed it to him..

He looked at it and then looked at me..

Me: It's a pregnancy test

He looked at it..

Me: Two lines

Him: Two lines what?

I didn't say anything..

Him: Wait.. You pregnant?

Me: I'm pregnant

He chuckled in disbelief..

Him: Okay I know you full of games so don't play me like that

Me: Gugu took me to the Dr and he did tests, he also sent samples to the lab I'll get the results next week

Him: So the reason why you been feeling sick is because you pregnant? I mean we pregnant?

I nodded..

Him: My baby is having a baby?

Me: We having a baby

He stood up and kissed me..

Me: You excited?

Him: shocked and excited at the same time I'm overwhelmed with different emotions

Me: I know I was too

He put his hand on my tummy..

Him: Can the baby even breath there? Seems like there's not enough space

Me: I'm not even sure how far long I am

Him: I didn't expect such good news

Me: I wanted to go back to school

Him: but?

Me: There's too much stress there I don't wanna stress the baby and end up with a miscarriage

Him: You be fine nothing is going to happen to the baby, you won't miscarry

Me: You seem sure about that

Him: I am.. I'm a healer remember so relax nothing is going to happen to our baby

He squeezed my cheek and then kissed me..

Him: I promise you, the baby has too much protection

I wrapped my arms around his neck..

Him: There's me a healer, then there's Dawn an Exorcist, then there's Zaine and also Badru. Don't forget I always have a warrior Angel hanging around and a guardian angel

Me: What about physical harm?

Him: There's Shine

We both laughed..

Me: Keep him away from my baby please

Him: I love you

Me: I love you too

–

NKULI

I heard different voices going around the room, I

then saw shadows just moving around very fast. I moved around in circles trying to understand what was happening, they were making me dizzy. I closed my eyes

Me: Stop

I closed my ears too..

Me: Stop!!!!!!

I did that for a while and then I opened my eyes, I didn't see the shadows anymore nor did I hear the voices..

I sat down on the couch and took the remote, the Purgatory channel was on. They were repeating Snazo's sermon. As soon as the camera landed on Nomvelo something deep inside of me moved, I can't believe that my Grandmother even thought that I was being sincere with my speech earlier. I was faking everything, there's no way in hell that I'll humble myself to that bitch and apologize, no way!!!

She should apologize to me..

–

No edits

105

NKULI

I couldn't fall asleep I kept checking the time and it was 2:30am. I am not a person who suffers from insomnia but lately I have been having problems with falling asleep, especially in the early hours of the morning. As I tossed and turned, that black figure with a black robe appeared again. I sat up straight

Him: Don't be scared

I was scared..

Him: I am not here to hurt you

Me: Who are you?

Him: I am Lucifer the fallen angel

That came to me as a shock and it also scared me, my heart started beating very fast..

Me: Leave me alone or I'll scream!

He approached me..

Me: My Grandmother prays and she goes to church

He stopped and didn't come any further..

Him: Trust me not everything is black and white

Me: What do you mean?

Him: Your Grandmother is a joke of a Christian

Me: What?

Him: She is a hypocrite.. She stands firm in the presence of God and praise him while she has a lot of hate deep inside her, that hate is for your Uncle's ex wife

I kept quiet..

Him: She's not even transparent to God about

that, it would weaken me if she could confess to him about this. Transpecy weakens me

Me: What do you want?

Him: You right it's not fair. What fate or destiny supports disgrace? How can Nomvelo marry her boyfriend's brother? It's sickening, what destiny is that? Why would God allow such a disgrace? Unless of course he is not as good as they make him out to be

I let him continue..

Him: I was not shown fairness in heaven, I was thrown down like trash by my own Brother, Archangel Michael. My righteousness was ripped from me and that's when I lost the pureness of an Angel. I deserved a second chance, If God could give these filth of human beings second chances over and over again why not me too? My own family turned against me and even today they still persue me! I have

no peace, they have turned me into what I am today. A serpent! I was thrown down to Earth and I made this world my own, it's always going to be a battle of Good and Bad. It's very crucial to pick the right side. My side is the truth, my side seeks revenge, my side you see things clear. My side has riches, power and everything that you can think off. I am the king of this world, it would be beneficial to pick my side because if you don't I will persecute you, you will never have peace.

I didn't know what to say..

Him: You very special, you can be a vessel for my queen. Nira and together we can get the revenge that we both want

Me: Nira?

Him: You and Nira share the same traits, Anger and Hate if you two become one in that body you will be unstoppable

Me: I don't know

Him: All you have to do is to say yet to your true form, you have been chosen and selected. You will enjoy the riches of life, say yes to being my queen say yes to Nira

Me: I can't even see you

Him: I need a body to express myself but unfortunately so far there's no body that's appropriate for me

This was just too much..

Me: I'm going to need time to think

Him: Time is what we don't have my Queen, I will find a body and we will be together again. Have you wondered why you can't sleep at this hour? That's because it's considered a witchful hour that's when demons, devil worshipers, and them work. Those who are on our opposing team they wake up and pray, they try to oppose us with everything that they have bloody beings!

Me: I don't know about this

Him: Think about it my Queen

He then disappeared..

—

DAWN

I was woken up by a heavy cloud of darkness, I opened my eyes and checked the time it was exactly 3am. The witchful hour..

My wife is not around, she is close to giving birth so she was admitted yesterday. Tomorrow she might go to labour or some time next week, Sway didn't want any complications so she checked herself in..

I got out of bed and went to the balcony, I wasn't wearing anything on my upper body and it was a bit cold. I saw an Angel flying flying my way, I stepped back a bit as it landed on my balcony. It was archangel Gabriel the

messenger, Gabriel holds revelations especially for religious leaders. When Gabriel himself makes your acquaintance it means that shit has heat the fan!..

Me: Gabriel

Him: Dawn

Me: What is it

Him: It's not good at all

Me: Talk to me

Him: Nira has been unleashed

Me: What?

Him: The Queen of hell Nira has been unleashed and they might've found her a vessel

Me: Who is the vessel?

Him: That's the problem.. We can't see they shielded her from us

Me: So what do we do? Just wait and hope for

an exorcism?

Him: We both know an Exorcism won't work on Nira, unlike other demons Nira doesn't forcefully possess her vessel she needs permission and for an exorcism to work her vessel must agree to it and give permission for her to leave

Me: Why now? Nira has been locked away for centuries she's an upper rank and upper level demon

Him: This is a personal war against one of our own

Me: Of course.. Nazo

Him: Nazo is saving many souls and he is standing in the way of the Lucifer

Me: But to unleash Nira?

Him: War is coming we must prepare for it, might not be easy to get to Nazo but it will be

easy to get to him through his wife. She has just started realizing her spiritual life and Lucifer might use that to cripple her faith

Me: I understand.. I totally understand

Him: We need to be prepared at all costs, I will go and let others know

As always, I knew that when Gabriel comes personally it means serious war..

–

SNAZO

I turned on my side, Nomvelo was peacefully sleeping. I was very wide awake, I woke up at around 01:00am and I couldn't sleep until now. I looked at her as she peacefully slept, the room was dark yes but a little light was provided by the moon through the curtains.

I got up and went outside to get fresh air, it was a bit cold...

Voice: Snazo

I turned around and an Angel was standing behind me, one that I've never seen before

Him: It is good to finally meet you

Me: Who are you?

Him: Archangel Gabriel

Me: The messenger

Him: Yes

Me: If you here where is Helena?

Him: I did hear a bit about your arrogance and now I see it, it's nothing to worry about unless of course it changes who you are or what you've become

Me: Something is wrong, I can feel it

Him: You right something is wrong

Me: What's happening?

Him: Nazo there's a lot that happens in the

spiritual realm, things that the human eye or human knowledge doesn't know of

Me: I'm still listening

Him: There's upper rank demons, demons that have been locked away for many centuries so that they have no contact with humans.

Demons that a mere exorcism won't usually work, Demons that have been locked away by God himself

Me: If so then how can they be defeated?

Him: Archangel Michael and a few upper rank warrior angels that fight alongside with Michael

Me: if the demons have been locked away then there's nothing to worry about right?

Him: I wouldn't say so. One of the seals that is meant to keep one demon locked away has been broken, Queen Nira of hell has been unleashed and broken free. I believe that they have found her a vessel

Me: I don't understand

A war is coming Nazo, and the war is very destructive and personal. The war is aimed at you, through the ones that you love and care about the most because their faith is not that strong as yet

Nomvelo walked out..

Velo: Babe?

Gabriel looked at her..

Him: Congratulations

Her: your phone is ringing none stop, what are you doing outside?

Gabriel: Her womb is blessed and we need to protect every offspring that it carries because she is going to carry a healer that's going to succeed you one day

I made my way to her..

Me: I couldn't sleep I needed some freash air

We went back into the room..

Me: Get back in bed

She hopped in bed again.. I took my phone..

I had missed calls from Dawn, I called him back..

Him: You must've really pissed off hell

I walked out again..

Me: They after my wife and my baby

Him: I know.. They trying to break the bloodline of healers, they trying to stop your generation from continuing with the gift because your gift serves to save a lot of People. Your bloodline is very important

Me: Dawn I don't need to mention how important my wife and my unborn child are

Him: I know.. We know and we going to fight, we going to win the war. I promise you that

We need to win this war that's coming..

.

To be continued

No edits

Just a lunch snack

106

NOMVELO

The following day Gugu and I prepared for church, by this time Nazo is already done but today I even woke up earlier than him. He was still sleeping which is not like him considering the fact that between the both of us, he is an early bird. I was worried about him I mean he hardly slept last night, I wonder what's going on..

Gugu: Nazo is late today, that's unlike him

Me: rooibos definitely cannot replace coffee in my life

Her: Did you guys have a fight?

Me: No..

Her: Then what's wrong?

Me: I really don't know, last night he even hardly slept. I can say that he watched me sleep, something is bothering him

The door opened and he walked in just as we were talking about him. He was wearing his sweatpants and his vest, it proved that he is not going to church..

Nazo: Good morning

Gugu and I looked at each other..

Gugu: Aren't you supposed to be already prepared for church?

Nazo: I'm not going

Gugu: Is everything okay?

Nazo: Everything is fine I just need this day to

pray and connect with heaven

Gugu: On a Sunday when we supposed to go to church?

Nazo: It's a peaceful day

He poured juice for himself..

Gugu: I'll go get my bag Velo so that we can leave

Me: Okay

She walked away. This is so unlike Nazo, he would never miss church for anything. I wanted to ask him what's wrong but it's clear that he doesn't wanna talk about it. I stood up and went to put my cup in the sink, it becomes frustrating when there's tension between us. I turned and looked at him..

Me: Did I do something wrong?

Him: Why would you say that?

Me: Because you not yourself

I said that on purpose just to see if he is going to tell the truth..

Me: Is it about the pregnancy? You feeling some type of way about it now?

Him: It-

Gugu walked in..

Gugu: We can go

I'll go and get my bag..

Gugu: You will find me in the car

I walked out to go get my bag and my Bible, Nazo stood at the doorway. I have never seen him this down before, he knows how to handle situations very well. Even with his Brother's death he handled that well, whatever it is that he is going through it must be serious..

Me: I'll see you after church and I hope that you will be in a better mood by then

He gave me a very weak smile...

Him: There's nothing that you did wrong and the pregnancy, it's the best thing that has ever happened to me

Me: Then what is it?

Him: I just don't wanna lose you and our baby

Me: Why would you lose us?

Him: My Brother died very unexpectedly, I thought that I was never going to make it. Then you came along and now we going to have a baby, I can't imagine my life without you

I walked up to him and put my hand on his cheek...

Me: Nothing is going to happen to us, now quit stressing because you also stressing us

He held my hand and then kissed..

Gugu: Velo asambe phela!! (Velo let's go)

Him: I'll walk you to the car

He walked us to the car and opened the door for me, I got in..

Him: Seatbelt on

Me: I know Babe

Him: Make sure that you strap it correctly

Me: Nazo I know how to put a seatbelt on

Him: Gugu be cautious on the road

Gugu: haibo wena ang'qali ukushayela namhlanje (This is not my first time driving)

Me: We will see you later

Him: Give me a kiss

I gave him a kiss..

Him: I love you

Me: I love you too

Gugu: Can we go now? Yazi nje Nazo you depressing today don't put us in that mood

He stepped back and Gugu started the car, I was really worried about him..

–

NKULI

Grams: I thought that you said you will come to church with me today

Me: I know but unfortunately I just started on my periods

Her: Are you feeling pain?

Me: A bit

Her: Do you even have pads?

Me: Maybe one or two

Her: Ngiyeza (I'm coming)

She went to the bedroom and I sat down, I was very sleepy and drained since I couldn't sleep last night..

She came back and gave me R250..

Her: You will toiletries and painkillers

I took it..

Me: Thank you

I used to spend real money on toiletries because I always went for expensive things, what is R250 even going to do??

Her: I will see you later

Me: Okay

She walked out..

I even wonder if going to church is beneficial for her considering the fact that she carries too much hate inside of her for another human being..

I stood up went to the fridge, there was nothing interesting in there. I closed the door and looked at the R250, getting used to this life is going to be very difficult..

—

SNAZO

Almost everyday I tell Nomvelo how much I love her and I realized right after my conversation with Gabriel in the early hours of this morning that I love her very much and I'm scared of losing her, both her and our baby. She is the best thing that has ever happened to me especially after losing my brother..

Helena: sulking won't make the situation better

I was sitting on the bed and looking at Nomvelo's picture..

Me: Is it true?

Helena: I'm afraid so

(Silence)

Me: I wanna conjure him

Her: Lucifer?

Me: Yes.. If he wants to put up a fight then he should do it with me, it's me that he wants so

he should stay away from my family

Her: We are all on your side and we not going to win this war if you not focused, you need to be focused for Nomvelo and your unborn baby

I chuckled in form of mocking her statement.

Me: Exactly what are you not telling me Helena?

I looked at her..

Me: Yes we going to win this war but at what expense? How much will be caused by then before we actually win the war?

Her: Nira is an upper rank demon, together with Lucifer they are very cunning and tricky we just need to be attentive about everything and always be a few steps ahead of them

Me: I want us to win this war with my wife and my baby still safe

Her: That can only be achieved if you focus, we going to need you to focus don't let fear cripple

you

I put the picture on the bed next to me..

Me: When is the war starting?

Her: As soon as Nira possesses the vessel

Me: Then we will be waiting for them

Her: You have our support never forget that

–

NKULI

I bathe and then went to the mall with the R250, it's going to be a very depressing shopping. I forfeited going to Shoprite and Spar. Spar is degrading for me and Shoprite is way too low class. Even though I didn't have enough money on me I went to clicks..

I looked at the sanitary pads, I will have to go with the cheapest ones. I usually wear tampons but since I change it constantly I won't afford to buy two packs. I reached for a brand that I

wasn't very much familiar with, they were a bit cheaper than the rest. I looked at them very depressed, it's sad how my life has just suddenly degraded..

Voice: Can I pay for them?

I turned and looked at him, I didn't expect to see such an attractive human being..

Him: You can choose any that you want and I'll pay for them

I looked around.. Where did he even rock up from?

Me: Uhm...

Him: Am I making you uncomfortable? I can walk around until you make a decision

Me: No it's okay I.. I'm just not used to this, it's my first time having a guy pay for something so intimate

He chuckled..

Him: You welcome

I took a pack of tampons..

Him: Are those even going to last you?

It's like he read my mind that I needed more..

Me: I hope so

Him: You can take as much as you want in fact get everything that you came here for and I'll pay

I'm used to old guys blessing me, this gentleman is younger than the blessers that I usually go for and his age group is a bit of a problem. They like to act loaded while they financially struggling. I took my time and got some of the things that I've wanted..

Him: Is that all?

Me: Yes

Him: Okay I just needed a beard oil, we can go and pay

I swallowed my words when we got to the till, he took out a black card. When he was done paying we walked out and he handed me the plastic..

Me: Thank you

Him: Are you in a hurry?

Me: Why?

Him: You obviously held back on the shopping so how about breakfast?

Me: I can't believe this.. You paid for me so that you can ask me out?

Him: There's no harm in trying

I looked at him..

Me: How can I trust you? What if you kidnap me?

Him: We can eat around here if you don't trust me

We started walking..

Him: My name is Kali

Me: Nkuli

Him: Nice to meet you Nkuli

Me: Me too.. Are you from South Africa?

Him: Originally from Zambia but I spent most of my time in the states, I was studying there

Me: That's good.. So what do you do for a living?

Him: I have businesses around here and in the states too

Me: That's good

Him: What about you?

Me: I am.. Let's just say I'm in between jobs at the moment

Him: in between jobs?

Me: Yes

Him: Okay so where do you wanna eat?

Is this happening? He is handsome and rich too?
What is wrong with him? Something has to be
wrong with him

–

NAZO

I took a bath and then I drove out to the field,
same field where I saved Helena. That's where I
feel much closer to heaven...

"Beloved.."

I listened attentively..

"You cannot expect to win this war when there's
a bit of doubt deep inside of you. If you believe
in me, you believe in me wholeheartedly"

Me: How did Nira escape? How was she freed if
she's an upper level demon?

"You saved Helena, believe that you can defeat
an upper level demon too"

Me: Nomvelo is not too strong, she has just

started connecting to her spiritual life. If something happens it will set her back

"Beloved I am not only God when things are going well, I am also God when things are not going well. Most of my children seem to forget that, when things spiral out of control they trust in their own strength rather than trusting in me"

Me: I am aware of that

"Go home, free from worry and fear"

I took a deep breath..

"Behold I have given you authority to tread on serpents and scorpions, and over all the power of the enemy and nothing will injure you"

I needed to hear that again, I needed to be reminded of that again. I knew coming here was going to uplift my faith and my spirit.. I went back to the car and drove home, when I turned on the radio to listen to the sermon at Purgatory, They were actually singing a song that spoke to

what I was going through..

"I trust in God, I know he cares for me. On mountain bleak or on the stormy sea, there is no sorrow deep down in my soul. My heavenly Father watches over me"

The song was an affirmation on it's own, to let go of what going through and trust in God

–

To be continued

107

NKULI

I had a great time and a delicious meal with Kali, though Nandos seemed to be a bit below our standards but we made the most of it. He is a very funny man, sweet, and smiles a lot. I found myself blushing and smiling most of the time because of how charming he was, he really took my breath away. When we were done he drove

me home, he was driving a VW Tiguan that was white in colour. It's quite an expensive car on it's own so I wasn't complaining..

Him: You too trusting

Me: Why is that?

Him: You allowed me to drive you home, what if I had kidnapped you?

I laughed..

Me: You don't seem like the type

Him: So kidnappers come with tags?

Me: Well...

I stopped smiling because my cheeks were now hurting..

Me: Thank you for the breakfast and buy me toiletries

Him: We could have more of breakfast if I could get your number

Me: Unfortunately I don't have a phone

Him: My loss then

Me: Thank you very much

Him: You welcome

I opened the door and got out, he watched me as I got in the yard. I closed the gate and looked at him, he waved goodbye. I waved goodbye too..

He started playing music very loud as he took off..

"Uh, pussy ass nigga stop hating Lil Tunechi got that fire And these ho's love me like Satan, maaaaan! Fuck with me and get bodied And all she eat is dick She's on a strict diet, that's my baby With no makeup she a ten"

He didn't strike me as a person that is into rap, I stood at the gate for a while I watched his car disappear, I have never felt like this about a guy

before well other than Nazo. Kali seems too perfect, young, handsome and rich? What is his flaw exactly??

–

SNAZO

I have decided that I'm going to stop obsessing about this whole thing because it's only going to stress my wife and she doesn't need stress at this moment, we going to cross that bridge when we get there but I'm always going to be vigilant. I decided to cook for them, Gugu left without cooking so I hooked up Shine and I'm going to prepare something for them. I hope they won't pass by somewhere and eat. Shine came with his Daughter and a few beers to occupy him up until we eat later on..

Shine: Poonkie..

Mpumi looked at him..

Shine: Suka lapho uGugu uyashayana (Get away from there Gugu will beat you up)

I looked at her and she was pulling my Mom's casserole dish that she puts on the cupboard at the corner..

Me: Yooh Nana uzosibangela uGugu (You going to make Gugu shout at us)

I went to her and picked her up, she started fighting me while crying..

Shine: Mpumi bheka (Mpumi look)

Shine took her. He gave her the pacifier..

Shine: Zizobuya kuwe no Nomvelo (It's going to go down between you and Nomvelo)

Me: Eyy awuzwanga ngami ukuthi ngisibekile (you didn't hear me from me that I got her pregnant)

Shine: Yi secret kanti?

Me: She doesn't know anyone knowing

Shine: Ngoba uzobonakala soon (She will be showing soon)

Me: Awuzwanga ngam' (You didn't hear from me)

His phone rang, he looked at it..

Him: Ithi.. Let me attend this call

Didn't expect that line in English from him..

I took Mpumi as he went outside to attend the call..

Shine: Njunju..

I looked at Mpumi..

Me: Looks like you going to have a step Mother soon

She tried reaching for my cap, I took it off and put it on her. She smiled while dropping her pacifier. I picked it up and went to wash it then handed it back to her..

–
NOMVELO

The service was great as always, Zaine sermon was very good at some point I didn't want it to end.. After church Zaine came to me while Gugu went to talk to Bonolo, we were still given that VIP treatment even without Snazo..

Zaine: Congratulations

Me: He told you?

Him: Yes

Me: I bet Dawn knows now and Others

He chuckled..

Him: He's happy and proud

Me: Ya I just didn't want people knowing as yet

Him: We not just random People

Me: I know.. I'm sorry

Him: It's okay.. I get what you mean.. Where is

he?

Me: He is in his feelings

Him: He can be in his feelings?

Me: Seems like it

We both laughed..

I heard someone calling out to me..

Voice: Mrs Buthelezi

I turned and it was some random lady..

Her: Prophet

She bowed a little, Zaine put his hand on my shoulder..

Him: Don't leave without saying Goodbye

Me: I won't

He walked away..

Her: I.. It's such an honour to finally be able to talk to you

She shook my hand and I just smiled..

Me: What can I do for you?

Her: Uhm I need to talk to you about something..
Something important

Me: Okay?

Her: Can I have your number? We can maybe
meet up and talk?

Me: Uhm.. I don't know about that

He she looked at Gugu..

Her: That's Gugu right? Rev Buthelezi's Mother?

Me: Yes

Her: She is blessed for her womb to have
carried such an important and amazing person,
Rev Buthelezi is gifted and he is powerful she
must be proud of him

Me: She is

Her: Can't say the same about Niso

My smile vanished..

Me: Sorry?

Her: if she is Nazo's Mother that means she is Niso's Mother too, they brothers after all aren't they?

Me: Who did you say you were again?

Her: I never introduced myself.. Nomvelo, as I've said we need to talk. It's about Niso

Me: What do you want?

She unzipped her bag and took out a piece of paper with a pen, she wrote her number and handed it to me..

Her: Let's keep it between us for now, Nazo and Gugu shouldn't know about this as yet

She smiled..

Her: Don't forget to call me.. I'll send your love to Niso, that's if you still love him

She smiled and then walked away. I looked at the numbers and they didn't have any name, just her numbers...

Gugu: Velo..

She put her hand around me and I freaked out..

Gugu: It's just me

She looked at me..

Gugu: Are you okay?

I faked a smile..

Me: I'm okay.. I'm good

Her: Are you sure?

Me: Yes I am

Her: Okay go say Goodbye to the Radebe's so that we can go

I folded the piece of paper..

—

NKULI

I couldn't get Kali out of my mind. His smile, his lips, his voice.. He was just too perfect.

The kitchen door opened and my Grandmother walked in...

Her: Shuuuu ukushisa okungaka (It's very hot)

She closed the door on her way in..

Her: Nkuli

Me: Koko

Her: Unjani? (how are you feeling)

Me: I'm.. I'm feeling better

Her: uyile eMall? (did you go to the mall)

Me: Ngiyile (I did go)

Her: Let me go and rest a bit, ngikhathele (I'm tired)

Me: Okay

Her: We won't cook today.. We going to have lunch later on kubo Snazo

Me: We going to have lunch at Snazo's place?

Her: Ya.. Kdala ngagcina uVelo (It's been a while since I last saw Velo)

Me: Why doesn't she come here?

Her: Asiphekanga (We haven't cooked)

Me: Ai koko angazi (I don't know)

Her: Nkuli I'm tired of this thing between you and Nomvelo, you two were close you the only Sisters that you have

I kept quiet..

Her: Lento yenu iyaphela namhlanje (this pettiness between you two ends today)

–

NOMVELO

When we got home I went to the room first to

take off my heels and wear comfortable shoes. I unfolded the paper and looked at the number, what that lady said highly disturbed me. Who is she? How does she know Niso? What did she mean by she will extend my love to him? What is happening? I would say she's a scam but Nazo doesn't really mention Niso's name, if his preaching and touches on him he would say "My Brother" he has never mentioned his name..

I was soo lost in my thoughts that a baby language brought me back to reality. I looked at the door and it was Nazo, he was holding a baby...

Me: Hey

He just looked at me as he made his way in.

Me: Whose baby is that?

Him: Shine's baby

Me: Shine has a baby?

Him: Yes

Me: Wow.. I feel sorry for the baby Mama

He got the paper from me and looked at it..

Him: What's happening here?

I took it back..

Me: It's..

"Let's keep it between us for now"

Those words echoed next my ear..

Me: Just some lady at church she gave me her
number, prayer request

Him: She wants you to pray for her?

Me: Yes.. Something like that

The baby stretched her arms to me, I got her

Me: She's soo adorable

He put her nappy on the bed..

Him: Then you can change her

Me: Whoa! What?

Him: It's Just pee Velo, she hasn't changed her nappy in a while

Me: Let's not get carried away, she is not my responsibility and I don't know how to change a nappy

Him: We going to have a baby soon, you need to learn.. I'll be inside

Me: Wait..

He walked out..

I looked at her and she looked at me then smiled..

How the hell am I going to change a nappy?

.

To be continued

Another one later

108

NOMVELO

I had a lot of questions with regards to what that woman said, a lot of things don't make sense. How does she know Niso? I could say that she's a scam and what not but to mention Niso's name that makes the situation a bit difficult to just let go. I was at the kitchen gathering my thoughts, I had excused myself from the table. When I noticed that I might've been gone for a while I made my way back only to have Nazo standing at the doorway starring at me. He has been creeping up on me a lot today and it somehow irritates me..

Him: You should stop lying because you not even good at it.. What's happening with you today?

If I don't tell him he's going to push the situation and it's just going to upset me more..

Me: Do you think that there might be a possibility of Niso still being alive?

He frowned..

Him: Where is that coming from?

Me: I never attended his funeral so it's always been a battle with me

Him: Niso is gone.. I saw him in the coffin, he is gone

Me: Okay

I attempted to walk away but he gently pulled me back by putting his arm around my waist.

Him: Not so fast

He looked at me in the eye, my eyes wondered around..

Him: There's more isn't it?

Me: No

Him: Then why can't you look me in the eye

Me: Let it go please

Him: No-

Me: Gosh Nazo let just give me some space to breath!!! (shouting)

He gave me a deadly look, he hates it when I raise my voice at him. I didn't know what to do, I can't really take back what just happened. We heard a knock at the door, it came at the right time. I dragged my feet to go and open with his presence still heavy on me. I opened the door and it was my Grandmother..

Me: Duchess!

I was soo happy to see her..

She walked in and I hugged her, but she wasn't alone..

Grams: Kwaze kwakuhle ukukubona (It's good to see you)

Me: Good to see you too

I looked at Nkuli..

Me: Nkuli

Her: Velo

Grams: Snazo kunjani? (Snazo how are you)

Snazo's eyes were glued on Nkuli..

Grams: Kwenzakalani? (What's going on)

Me: Long story.. Come this side guys

I led them to the living room, Shine didn't stay for long. He left while we were still setting up the table..

Grams: MaGugus (Gugu)

Gugu: MaNgcobo

Nkuli: Gugu

Gugu: Ngaze ngavelelwa (I'm being tested)

Nkuli looked at my Grandmother..

Nkuli: Told you that this was a bad idea.. I'm

leaving

Grams: Nkuli awuyi ndawo (You not going anywhere)

Gugu: Myekeni ahambe (Let her go)

Grams: Nkuli is Family

Gugu: Usho usathane uqobo? (you mean the devil)

Nkuli: That's it I'm going

Grams: If you don't want Nkuli here, nami ngizohamba (I'll also leave)

They were going on and on busy clashing with each other, it was tiring for me to sit there and listen to them..

I stood and walked away..

Me: I am pregnant and I don't need this right now!

Gugu: Angisho ngiyabona? (You see now)

I went to the room and locked myself inside.

–

TUMI

I was busy chatting on WhatsApp with Shine, he was saying a lot of crazy things that made me laugh and blush at the same time..

Aunty: Hmmm I wonder who that is

Me: No one

Her: You can't be smiling and laughing at nothing

She sat down..

Me: It's just a friend

Her: What a friend

Rethabile finally got out of the bedroom to go to the kitchen and dish up.. I heard her opening the pot and then closing it again, she came to the lounge..

Her: Rice&mince again?

Aunty: What's wrong with it?

Retha: We ate it last week Sunday and the week before last

Aunty: Be grateful and eat, not everyone is able to get a meal everyday. Your Sister is working hard to provide for us, the least that you can do is be grateful

Retha: Braai pack is not even that expensive

Aunty: Then why don't you buy it?

Retha: If I was working I would buy it

She walked back to the bedroom, I sighed..

Aunty: Don't take it to heart, I'm sorry

Shine called just in time..

Me: I'm coming

I went to answer outside..

Me: Hello

Him: And then? That last message?

He laughed..

Him: Uyahlanya (you crazy)

I couldn't hold back, I just burst into tears..

Him: Eh ng'bhodisa bani vandag? (who am I killing today)

I clo my eyes and exhaled..

Him: ringa nam' (Talk to me)

Me: It's nothing

Him: Yabo izinto ozenzayo? (You see what you doing)

Me: Let's just talk about something else

Him: Ringa ngizolalela wena (Talk I'll listen to you)

Me: Where is Mpumi?

Him: Eish ungabuzi (don't even ask)

Me: What's wrong?

Him: Ngimenza umuntu ngimthengela
iChocolate izinto azenzayo manje (I made her
someone and I bought her a chocolate, things
that she's doing now)

Me: What is she doing?

Him: Ima (Wait)

He video called me and then turned the phone
to her, she was constantly flushing the toilet..

Him: uBusy nje (she's busy)

Me: There way she's leaning on it, just make
sure she doesn't go in

He laughed..

Him: Aii ng'khathele awufuni ukuza? (don't you
wanna come)

Me: Are you serious?

Him: Ya phela yim' naye (it's just me and her)

Me: Where is your Mom?

Him: She went to see her Father, uzobuya ksasa
I think

Me: And your Sister?

Him: Ahh uNtokozo ushaya lezinto zama
cheese girl ama sleep over kubo mkhozi wakhe
(Ntokozo is at her friend's house)

Me: Okay

Him: So Okay meaning what? Yebo sik'lande?
(should we fetch you)

Me: Ahh I don't know

Him: Alright sharp ke.. Ku grand I'll see you
tomorrow at work

Me: Bye

Him: Bye

—

NOMVELO

I opened for Nazo and he walked in, I went and sat on the bed. He turned his cap the other way round and put his hands deep in his pockets, he then leaned over against the door not saying a word..

Me: Sorry that I shouted at you

He didn't say anything, he just looked at me..

(Silence)

Me: Some lady at church came up to me and she gave me her number, said I should call so that we can meet up. She said she wanted to talk to me, about Niso

Now he started to be interested in the conversation..

Me: He said I shouldn't tell you or Gugu.. That's why I didn't say anything

Him: Have you seen her before?

Me: No.. She said she's going to extend my l..

Tears fell..

Me: She said she's going to extend my love to Niso, that's only if I still love him

He walked up to me..

Him: Come here

I stood up and he laid my head on his chest, he covered me with his strong arms and gave me a tight hug..

Him: I don't know what she's playing at but Niso is gone, it could be someone that maybe knows us somehow but Niso is gone

Me: I don't need this right now.. I don't wanna go back there again

Him: I'm sorry.. I'll deal with this.. I promise

I just wish that they could let him rest in peace..

Nazo: Come.. Maybe you should rest a little

I got in bed and he did too, he played with my

hair while I tried to get some sleep while kissing me on my forehead..

–

NKULI

I was so pissed, who the hell does Gugu think that she is? That bloody bitch thinks that she owns the world it's time that someone teaches her lesson. I thought that I was over Nazo and Nomvelo being Together but after seeing them today, and finding out that she's pregnant just made me more angry. I was about to burst, I was really angry

I paced up and down in my bedroom just feeling the anger burning me inside, something hit my mind and I just stopped.

Me: Fine! Let's do it! I agree!

–

NAZO

I looked at her and she was fast asleep, I slowly got out of bed and checked around for that piece of paper until I found it. I called the number while walking out..

Voice: Hello?

Me: Who is this?

Voice: You called me first

Me: My name is Snazo.. What do you want with my wife?

Voice: So much for keeping it a secret

Me: What do you want?

Voice: I can't discuss this on the phone, can we meet up?

Me: It's either you tell me now or you leave my wife alone

She exhaled..

Me: How do you know my Brother?

Her: Your Brother and I we have a child together.. Her name is Nosibusiso

Me: What?

Her: My name is Connie your Brother and I we used to hit it off and unfortunately when we called it quits I was already pregnant, I just wanted Nosi to know her Father's side of the family since she will never know her Father. She's a bit older now so I wanted to take her to his grave sometime, that's why I said I'll extend Nomvelo's love to him

Me: Listen here! I don't know what you trying to play at if Niso had a child he would've told me!

Her: He also didn't know

Me: Stay away from us!

Her: Nazo please

I hung up..

.

To be continued

No edits

110

GUGU

One thing that I have never done was to let myself go, having two kids didn't make me give up on looking good and that's just me not wanting to end up alone for the rest of my life. I mean Nomvelo and Nazo they'll be moving out soon, and though I'm going to have a grandchild I'll only get part time visitations. One thing that I haven't been honest about is that Richard and I we somewhat trying to rekindle the old flame, after all I wasn't just a booty call the only thing that stood between us was his wife not wanting to let go. Richard had talked about divorcing her but changed his mind when he learned that she had cervical cancer. She passed on about last year, it was a long battle because she's had it

for a while until she finally gave in last year. They caught it early and did surgery when they finally thought that it's gone, it came back again. I am not going all in because he's wife is now dead, I never stopped loving him even though the odds were are against us. Richard is a very attractive and handsome man even at his old age, he always been obsessed with ink reason why he has a number of tattoos. He is a very successful man he has his own clothing line that specifically design jeans, sneakers, and tshirts. It has become quite popular over the years and now he is making good money from it, his brand is also recognized in the UK well after all he is originally from the UK but his wife is south african, maybe part of the reason why he decided to settle here..

We met at the cemetery, it'll be his first time seeing Niso's grave. I saw his Jaguar driving in from a distance, I approached it just so he

doesn't get lost. He parked under some tree and then got out, he was wearing a Jean, a tshirt and sneakers. He looked good I won't lie...

Me: You didn't get lost?

Him: No I didn't

He kissed me on the cheek and then hugged me..

Him: How are you?

Me: I'm good and you?

Him: I'm good

He put his arm around my shoulders and I we walked to Niso's grave..

Me: And there he is

He took off his glasses and glanced down at his grave..

Him: So this is my Son's resting place?

Me: Yes it is.. Feels like a long time since I've

been here

He got closer and then crouched next to it..

Him: When are we erecting a tombstone?

Me: We were supposed to have done it but Nazo is busy most of the time

Him: I saw him last on Tv preaching

Me: He does get featured on the Purgatory channel

Him: He is still refusing to see me?

I exhaled..

Me: Sort off

He got up..

Him: Well I won't quit trying, plus his siblings want to meet him too

Me: Sarah?

Him: Yes.. Jerome is in the UK but he will come to visit soon and I really wanted them to meet

Me: Nazo is being stubborn about everything

Him: I wonder where he gets that from

Me: I am not stubborn

Him: Of course you not.. What am I saying?

One thing that Richard and Nazo have in common is that they both have this charm, can't really describe it but they can make your heart melt. I've seen how Nazo is with Nomvelo..

Him: I should bring Sarah here with her kids some time

Me: How is she holding up after the divorce?

Him: She's getting there

Jerome is the first born, Sarah is the second born, then Nazo follows and Niso is the last one..

Him: Do you think that things would've been different if I was around?

Me: I don't know but, A person chooses their own path. I mean look at Nazo you weren't around but he turned out great, with Niso he just was always stubborn

He put on his glasses again...

He held my hand..

Him: Let's go

Me: I know a way on how you can get close to Nazo

Him: Let's hear it

Me: His wife was in some design school but things didn't go well for her, she wanted to go back but she couldn't find space

We leaned against his car as he fixed his glasses..

Him: It's fine I'll give her a job at my store

Me: You will?

Him: Anything to get close to my Son, It's a good thing she has some knowledge about design she will work closely with Sarah since she's the head of design

Me: I forgot that Sarah also did this design thing

Him: Let me walk you to your car

He walked me to my car while spanking my Ass..

Him: It's not a "design thing" it's my empire

Me: Don't you think this spanking thing is getting too old?

Him: As long as you still got that fine piece of ass it won't

I chuckled..

Me: You better not say such or do such in front of my Son or he will punch you in the face

Him: He is my Son too, I contributed

Me: You just contributed the sperm that made him

He took off his glasses..

Him: And the looks

I laughed...

Me: Ohw Wow Richard you will never change

Him: Get in the car so we can go eat lunch, and maybe

He put his hand on my hip..

Him: I can have dessert too

I smiled while shaking my head..

He kissed me..

Him: Drive safe I'll meet you at the restaurant

—

NOMVELO

I called Nazo to let him know about the

Exorcism thing and it turned into an argument, so much so that he decided to come...

Him: Forget it Nomvelo.. You not putting my baby in danger

Me: How will I be strong spiritually if I decide to be a coward about this?

Him: This is not a game! You might come face to face with Lucifer and he can claim the baby

Me: So what am I supposed to do? Sit at home and do nothing? Be a housewife that was never my dream!

Him: Awuyeke uk'daza inkani! (Stop being stubborn)

I sighed..

Me: Sometimes you just irritate me

He squeezed my cheeks..

Him: Askies?

I kept quiet..

Him: This is tiring all we do is fight lately

I still kept quiet..

Me: Maybe we need some space, maybe we just too much into each other's space that we end up irritating each other

Him: We? I irritate you, you don't irritate me

(Silence)

Him: Okay maybe I'll just go to Mpumalamga for a few months and work on expanding my business there how about that? Give you all the space that you need

Me: I didn't say you should go away

Him: Then what are you saying?

I exhaled..

He went and locked the door..

Me: What are you doing?

Him: Maybe I haven't been giving you the D enough and that's why you this frustrated all the time

Me: Nazo this is Dawn's office, we can't have sex at my workplace

He came and turned me around while my hands fell on the table..

He lifted my dress up and then lowered my underwear, he pulled one of the chairs and put my one leg on it. He spanked me a few times and then he moved his hand until his fingers stumbled on my bean. With his other hand he pulled me back with my weave and kissed me on my neck, maybe just maybe I did need this. He rubbed my bean and then moved and inserted his two fingers inside of him, it was a bit painful that I held his hand. He held my weave a bit tighter and whispered in my ear..

Him: Don't..

I let go of his hand as he started to finger fuck me, as he continued doing that I started feeling pleasure kick in. I have been turned on before but not like this, I could feel that I was wet. He stopped doing that and then he lowered his pants and breifs, then he rubbed himself against my already wet hole it felt very nice and I couldn't help myself but moan

He put it and then took it out, he did that a few times unti he finally went deep..

–

NKULI

I was starting to get bored, Kali was busy on the phone talking to clients and doing some paperwork it was boring. I yawned..

Him: Sorry I'll be done soon

I wondered around in his office busy opening drawers and what not while he handled a few things. I opened some drawer and found a big

book that looked very old, I took it out..

Me: Codex Gigas

I tried opening it but it was locked, I turned and looked at Kali...

Me: What is this?

Him: Finally!

Me: Finally what?

Him: It's me Nkuli.. Lucifer!

I dropped it..

Me: What?

Him: I found a body so that you could be able to see me

I couldn't believe this..

Him: Don't worry.. Kali was a willing participant after all I made him this rich

I went and took my bag..

Me: I'm leaving

I walked to the door and it closed, I tried opening but it didn't open..

Him: Stop it!

Me: I want to leave

He walked up to me and I started getting scared. He balanced his hand on the wall next to me and looked at me..

Him: When all of this is over, I promise you and Kali will live happily ever after. Nira and I we will leave your bodies

I kept quiet..

Him: You going to have everything that you want, plus you have already said yes remember?

He leaned over and gave me a kiss.

Him: I'll get my keys, maybe will do lunch since it's late now

He walked to the table..

–

TUMI

Shine put a brown bag on my counter..

Him: Lunch in my office

He took the bag and walked to his office, I followed him..

Me: What is that?

Him: Oxtail ne rice nyana

I sat on the small couch as he brought the meal to me..

Me: Thank you plus I love oxtail

He sat next to me..

Him: Awusho kanti why ung'chomela? (Why you playing hard to get)

Me: What do you mean?

Him: I'm trying to get with you mara wena uyang'khiya (I'm trying to get with you but you playing hard to get)

I looked at him..

Him: I like you a lot, mina nawe nje masiyi two simnandi ende futhi nje kuzo zonke leyi khekhe engahlangana nazo wena you deserve ukungena ekhaya ubulise umamami (when we together it's always nice plus out of all the bitches I've been with you deserve to step foot at my house and greet my Mom)

I cleared my throat..

Him: Plus since I got full custody for uMpumi you the only woman I trust around my Daughter

Me: Shine what exactly are you saying?

He took my food and put it away...

He put his hand around my neck and pulled me closer for a kiss, well I didn't expect that. He

just went bold on me..

–

NOMVELO

I was now laying back on the table and he was in between my legs. He wasn't rough we need to consider the fact that I'm pregnant and we don't know if rough sex is safe..

He was rubbing my bean too and I was very wet, not only that but I was also very close to coming. It was soo nice..

I felt my legs vibrating and he pulled back..

Me: What are you doing?

Him: I have to go

He dressed up..

Me: Have to go?

Him: Yes

Me: You can't go like that

Him: I'll be fine

He walked up to the door..

Me: Wait..

I got down from the table and prevented him from opening..

Him: Move

Me: Why you being like this?

Him: Eish maan suka (Move)

I wrapped my arms around his waist..

Him: I'm sorry about earlier

He looked at me..

Me: I'm truly sorry

He pushed my weave back..

Him: I no longer irritate you?

Me: I'm sorry

Him: You going to stop talking to me like you

crazy?

Me: I promise

Him: If you ever act crazy again you not getting my dick anymore, and if you cheat I'll kill you without thinking twice.. Are we clear?

Me: Crystal

Him: And one I..

Me: Babe please...

He picked me up and went to place me on the table again..

.

To be continued

No edits

111

NOMVELO

Later on at home Nazo and I prepared dinner together, I found a few recipes online that I

wanted to try out..

Me: Fresh cream

He passed me the fresh cream..

Me: Thank you.. I got a call from the Dr, said I should come tomorrow for the results

Him: We'll go together

He came and hugged me from behind with his hands on my tummy..

Him: How is pregnancy treating you?

Me: I still can't get used to morning sicknesses

Him: Is there something that you can take for that?

Me: I'll ask the Dr tomorrow

Him: Next week I won't be around for at least 3 days

Me: Where you headed?

Him: Zaine, Badru and I we embarking on a 3

days fasting camp

I turned and faced him..

Me: Sleeoi in the bushes and what not? That type of camping?

Him: Yeah something like that

The door opened and Gugu walked in..

Gugu: Good evening

We greeted her back.. She looked like she was in a very good mood...

Her: See this is what I wanna see everyday, I wanna see you guys happy and in love

Me: You seem happy

Her: You can say that, and I have news for you

Nazo: What news?

Gugu: I found you a job at some very popular store you will be working along side the head of design and helping out with designing a few

clothes especially since now they expanding

Me: Are you serious? I'd love that

Her: Just compile your Cv and your portfolio

Me: Wow I.. Thank you

Her: You welcome baby

Nazo: which store is this? And how did you manage to get Nomvelo the job?

Gugu cleared her throat..

Gugu: O'Nails

Nazo: of course

Gugu: Don't ruin this for Nomvelo

Nazo: I didn't say anything

Me: What's going on?

Nazo: My Father owns that store

Me: Really?

Nazo: Yes Richard Nails

Me: uhm wow..

Nazo: Yeah while we were struggling to make ends meet he was living the life, Niso and I we were forced into the life of crime just so we can be able to get that next R100 to put food on the table while he was on a private jet traveling

Gugu: That's not true Nazo

Nazo: Which part?

Gugu: Richard wanted to provide for you guys but I refused to accept his money because I was angry. Angry at the fact that I was inlove with him and he promised me the world that he was going to leave his wife and we would be together, but that never happened. I made you guys to hate him, told you guys he didn't want anything to do with you which was not true

Nazo: Is that the truth or you just defending him because you that desperate?

Gugu: desp.. Don't talk to me like that

Nazo: Or what?

Gugu: I don't care if you are a popular preacher and also married, but in my house you will respect me

He chuckled..

Nazo: I might as well move out because clearly my opinion doesn't matter

Gugu walked up to the door and opened it..

Gugu: I'm not stopping you

Nazo: In that case we will pack up and leave

Me: Babe No..

Gugu: You will pack up and leave.. Nomvelo and my grandbaby are not going anywhere

Nazo: She's my wife

Gugu: "She's my wife" if Niso was still around you wouldn't even be married to Nomvelo, so when you get time pretty boy go thank my baby

in the grave

That was a low blow from Gugu..

Nazo chuckled in disbelief..

Nazo: Typical

Gugu exhaled with her eyes closed..

Gugu: Baby I didn't mean that

Nazo took his phone and car keys then made his way to the door..

Gugu: Nazo please

Nazo: Ng'cela ukudlula (can I please pass)

Gugu: I'm sorry I didn't mean that

Nazo: Can you please move out of the way so that I can go and thank your dead son?

Gugu: Na-

Nazo slightly pushed her off and he walked out, Then closed the door behind him. I stood there not knowing what to say, Gugu walked up to

me..

Her: I'm sorry.. I didn't mean that

Me: It's okay

She started getting emotional..

Her: I don't know why I would say something like that

Me: We all say things that we don't mean when we angry, just give him time he will come around

Her: I'll go and lie down

Me: Would you like me to make you some tea?

She put her hand on my cheek..

Her: No baby thank you

She walked away to her bedroom, I hope I never get on Gugu's bad side..

—

TUMI

Shine held my hand because he could see that I was nervous, I don't know why I agreed to this. I should've never agreed to going home with him, I mean I am not even sure what we are as yet and here I am going home with him. He opened the door and we walked in, there was a woman standing at the stove busy cooking with Mpumi on her back. I had no doubt that it was Shine's mother..

Shine: Mamezala

She turned and looked at us, she was surprised to see me..

Shine's house could be a 6 roomed house, the kitchen was to die for. The white wall cupboards, a white double door fridge, stove and what not. Everything was white even the tiles on the floor were pure white, not forgetting that it was very clean also. As soon as Mpumi saw Shine she started crying, Shine walked up to them..

Shine's Mother was very beautiful, you know you look at Shine and you think that he comes from a broken home but it didn't look that way. He got Mpumi from his Mother's back..

Shine: Yini kanti manje? (what's wrong)

Her: The Dr said that she's tooting

Shine: Bamunikeni? (what did they give her)

Her: Just a few meds

She looked at me through her glasses, I got more nervous..

Shine: Ohhh Mamezala meet Tumi, Tumi this is my Mother. You can call her Mamezala

He said that while putting his hand on her shoulder..

Her: How are you?

Me: I'm well thanks and you?

Her: I'm well too

She came and gave me a handshake, she seems like a very calm person but very intimidating too..

Shine: Uva uNtokozo? (Where is Ntokozo)

Her: In the lounge

We walked to the lounge..

Shine: Ntonto

Ntonto: My ever so annoying Brother that I love dearly

The Sister lowered her phone and looked at us, she was sitting on the couch and she had her feet on the couch's footrest..

Shine's Sister and Mother they beautiful, and they both sound very fluent in English. It's just very amazing I mean, I didn't expect Shine to have such a stable family. We sat down on the other couch..

Shine: That's my lazy sister.. Ntokozo

Ntonto: I am soo not lazy

Shine: This is Tumi

Me: Nice to meet you

Her: Same here

Mpumi was very clingy, I tried taking her from Shine but she didn't want...

Shine: Kanti yini namanhlanje? (what's wrong today)

Ntonto: She has been like this the whole day

Shine: Ithi ngibone (let me see)

He tried opening her mouth but she didn't want..

Shine: Aii Mpumi

Shine's Mother came in while holding a bottle of purity and a spoon..

Her: She has to eat so that she can take her meds.. Come my pumpkin

Mpumi refused again..

Her: Dumi maybe you can do it

Dumi? So he's real name is Dumi..

Me: I'll hold the bottle for you

Mamezala gave me the purity..

I opened it and Shine dipped the spoon trying to feed her but she didn't want, she put up a serious fight and spat everything out then she started crying..

Shine looked at her..

Him: K'hambani vele vandag kanti? (what's wrong with you today)

She was sitting on his lap and crying..

Shine: Ithi soshawa umoya nyana (let's go get fresh air)

He looked at me and I also stood up and then we walked outside..

–

SNAZO

Usually when I'm pissed I'd drive straight to Gazibo and get a few beers that was my life back then, so tonight I just drove to the hospital to check up on Dawn and his wife. I found him sitting at the waiting area, I sat next to him without saying a thing..

Him: What are you doing here?

Me: Just came to check up on you

He looked at me..

Me: I had a fight with my Mom

(Silence)

Me: How is Sway doing?

Him: Still nothing

I kept quiet..

Him: Sway and I we lost our first baby, with all these delays I'm scared we might lose this one

too

Me: Can I go and see her?

Him: Yeah.. Let's go

We stood up and he led the way to the ward.

She was laying on the bed with pillows supporting her back, she had something like a belt around her tummy..

Me: You look tired

She gave me a weary smile..

Me: Can't be tired now when there's still a lot to do

Her: She doesn't wanna come

Me: She will come

Her: What If something is wrong?

Me: Don't think like that.. Nothing is wrong, if something was wrong I would feel it. Your fear is the one that's delaying her from coming

She looked at Dawn..

Dawn: Excuse me

He walked out..

Sway: This is affecting him more than it's affecting me

Me: She will come, we working with faith and nothing more remember?

Her: Why are you here so late when you also have a pregnant wife at home?

I pulled up the chair and sat down...

Me: Well I figured out that you might need a midwife

She laughed..

Her: And you going to be the midwife?

Me: Why not?

Her: We don't even know when she's going to come

Me: Sizomlinda aze afike .. Sizomlinda aze afike
(we going to wait for her until she comes)

Her: Thank you for coming... It was starting to
get a bit depressing here

Me: Then you should've called me sooner

Her: Don't you think that you comforting the
wrong person?

Me: Dawn doesn't need any comforting he is an
Exorcist

She laughed..

Me: I don't wanna trip with an Exorcist

Her: If she comes, she's going to be very happy

Me: When she comes

Her: I rephrase.. When she comes

–

NKULI

Grams: Manje uzobuya Nini? (When will you

come back)

Me: It's just for one night

Her: Nkuli you were kidnapped not so long ago and now you spending a night la ngingazi khona? (you spending a night where I don't know)

Me: Koko I'm just spending a night at a friend's house, I need fresh air especially with everything that's been going on around her

Her: I'm worried about you

Me: I know you're and I promise you that I'll be safe

I'll have to spend the night at Kali's place because exactly at 00:00am my spirit and Nira's spirit has to be one. I'm completely ready for the whole initiation though I'm a bit scared but I can't wait for the benefits and the terror that's going to rain on other People

—

TUMI

We walked to the shop and bought some snacks, when we walked back home Mpumi was already asleep. I was a bit sad that she wasn't okay and I didn't get to play with her, she only wanted Shine. Shine went and put her on his Mom's bed then I helped his Mom set up the table. Ntonto was still stuck on the couch busy with her phone..

Her: Don't let him play you, I can tell that you a nice girl so I hope soon we will be planning a wedding

That statement caught me off guard..

Her: For how long have you two been dating?

She looked at me through the glasses again, which was a bit intimidating. She seems a bit old school and also a bit modern, she was wearing leggings with a tshirt, she had a doek on and her nails were done.. She even had a bit

of makeup on..

She took off her glasses and put them aside, she had a wedding ring on..

Her: I know he seems very ghetto, but he is a good person. He started sinking into the life of crime when he's father died, his father's death affected him a lot

Me: I'm sorry to hear that

Her: It's okay.. He is dealing with it better now

Her voice is so soft and sweet, I wonder if she even yells..

Her: Let me get the food so that we can eat, thank you for joining us

Me: Thank you for welcoming me into your home for dinner

She walked to the kitchen..

Me: I can come and help you

She gave me a shallow smile..

Her: That's very sweet of you, you can come

I went to the kitchen to help her..

.

To be continued

112

NOMVELO

Despite Nazo and Gugu's fallout I was still very excited about the job at the Boutique, It's everything that I have been dreaming about. I don't really have my aspirations on being a housewife, I wanna get up and get my own. It's going to be difficult being a working Mother and a Preacher's wife but I'm sure that I'll manage because I have the support of my loved ones. That's why I don't want us to move out just at yet unless it's a must, according to me I would've loved for both our families to be

constantly involved in our child's life before we could up and leave for good. I looked at the time and it was 23:00, Nazo wasn't here I had called him and his phone took me straight to voicemail. I was laying on the bed and watching a few videos on YouTube about fashion design just to refresh on a few things, tomorrow I must get a set so that I can start sketching..

I heard the key turning, I paused the video and waited for him to make his way in. He did not expect to still find me chilling..

Him: I thought that you would sleeping

Me: I'm watching a few videos on YouTube, fashion design videos

He leaned against the door with his hands in his pockets, he likes burying his hands deep inside his pockets and wear his hat the other way round. That's his signature look and it melts my heart. You know what I love about Nazo the

most is that he respects me, he has never put me in a position were I had to compete with another woman nor fight for him, I don't know how he does it but he hasn't given me any reason as to not trust him or to feel insecure..

Him: So you going ahead with it?

I put my phone away..

Me: You know that I love you and I always support you, but this is a very big opportunity for me. This is my dream, plus I am no longer working for Dawn so.. I really don't wanna be a housewife

Him: Do you even know why He offered you the job? He is trying to get to me through you

Me: Babe please..

He rubbed his eyes..

Me: Where did you go?

Him: I went to check up on Sway and Dawn

Me: Zeash told me about their traumatic experience of losing their first baby

He came to me...

Him: Zeash gossips a lot

Me: Has she given birth yet?

Him: No.. Not yet and it's driving Dawn crazy

Me: I can imagine.. I don't want that to be us

He held my hand..

Him: It won't be us, I'll make sure that you deliver a healthy baby boy

Me: What if it's a girl?

Him: I'm betting on a boy

Me: Well we see

Him: Let me go bath so that we can call it at night

Me: Should I make you something to eat?

Him: No thank you.. I'm good

–

SWAY

I slowly opened my eyes and Dawn was sitting on the chair across the room, he was concentrating on his phone that he didn't notice I was awake. I looked at the monitor and the baby's heartbeat was still strong, they had strapped something around my tummy to monitor her heartbeat. I don't have a family other than Dawn. My parents passed on when I was young leaving me to the care of my Brother who also passed on and then I was left with Dawn. Dawn and my Brother's wife though me and her don't communicate that much. I really wanna have this baby, there was a lot of complications surrounding my first pregnancy and I gave birth to a still born, I hope this time around my baby is going to make it. Dawn was very shattered, I mean we really want a baby.

We want to start our own family...

Me: Dawn

He looked at me...

Me: You should go home

He got up and made his way to me..

Him: How are you feeling?

Me: Still nothing

I strongly want Dawn to go home I feel like this place is very depressing for him.

Him: Then I'm not going anywhere

Me: I'm scared too you know

He held my hand..

Him: I know that you are

(Silence)

Him: I feel very helpless.. I feel like being an Exorcist is not enough

Me: Don't say that

Him: I fight and Exorcise demons, that's were my worth lies. Right now I can't even save my only child

Me: Your gift is very special and there's no evil surrounding my pregnancy, maybe I'm just stressing too much that my body just doesn't wanna give in. Nazo was here if something was wrong he would've seen it or sensed it, we just need to have a little bit of faith. She's going to come

He smiled at me..

Him: I love you soo much

Me: I love you too

—

NKULI

Kali's townhouse was beautiful, and it was in a very sophisticated and high class neighborhood.

This guy has really done well for himself..

It was exactly 23:55 now, everything that needed to be prepared was prepared. The incarnation was going to take place in one of his bedrooms that he turned into a satanic room, there were portraits of someone or something on the wall, it had a face of a goat. There were horns on some small table and a few other things that were disturbing. I had on a black cloth, it is meant to represent the darkness that is coming. I laid down on another black cloth, there were black stones all around me..

Him: Trust me

He was holding an ancient book, a book of witchcraft spells. He cut a piece of my hair and put it in a holy grail, he pricked my finger and poured in the blood. He took the grail and put it next to the two black candles. This one is not the one that you think off, we have inverted our

own holy grail for evil purposes.

He tore a page from the book and then lit it up, he put it in the grail that had a piece of my hair and blood. He came back to me and put his hands a bit above my body..

Him: Close your eyes

I closed my eyes..

Him: Erreginak Nira goitik gora igotzen du eta gorputz horren lepoa hartzen du, zerbitzari leiala baita.(Queen Nira rise above and take ownership of this body, for she is a faithful servant)

It was quiet for a while and then the window opened, a cold chill came in and it put out the candles. I got scared, I got really scared..

I looked at Kali and my body was lifted up from the floor by an unseen force, as I went up in the air I could feel a cold touch..

Kali: Denbora da! Denbora da (It is time.. It is time)

I felt something taking charge of my body, I felt that I had someone or something residing deep inside of me. I fell back on the floor. I closed my eyes for a few minutes and then opened them again, I got up from the floor and looked around. I was still in charge of my body but I felt different, I was full of hate and anger. I felt very confident and very cold hearted too..

Kali: I cannot believe this! You are much stronger than I thought. I thought that you were going to be Nira's vessel, I thought she was going to rule you and be your master in your own body but it's the other way around. You are ruling her, this has never happened before. Nira is a very powerful demon that God himself locked away, and here you are you are ruling her deep inside of you. He walked over and held my hand..

Him: Nkuli you are very special

Me: We have some work to do

Him: Of course

He went and got the knife and then I walked to the mirror. The mirror is not an ordinary mirror, it's more like a crystal ball it shows us what we supposed to see. A lot of witches in the olden days used this very mirror..

Me: Erakutsi zerbait (Show me something)

The mirror showed me Nazo and Nomvelo sleeping, she was sleeping on her chest as if like nothing would harm her. I felt resentment, hate, and jealousy towards what I was seeing. Concentrating further more, on this picture perfect moment I heard the baby's heartbeat..

Me: No!!!!!!!!!!!!

Kali: Your love for him never died, your love for him is now turning toxic

Me: They can never be happy.. Never!

I stabbed her through the mirror with the knife that I was holding, I stabbed her exactly where I heard the baby's heartbeat..

Me: No!!! No!! No!!! No!! (Shouting)

I stepped back while breathing heavy, the mirror changed and showed me Dawn and Sway...

Kali: She doesn't know it yet but she's carrying the next powerful Exorcist, she is going to succeed her Father

Me: The bloodline has been changed, it's going to be a female Exorcist

Kali: She was supposed to be born but the delay is to protect her from this great evil, whilst Nomvelo is carrying a healer

Me: The bloodline has been changed again. A female Exorcist, and Nazo's first born is supposed to be a healer?

With the help of Nira, she helped me to see and know things that were very important.

Kali: These two babies they have to die or else our kingdom won't rule

I stabbed Sway on the tummy..

Kali: Calm down

I turned and looked at him..

Me: Our kingdom is hanging in the balance of failure and you telling me to calm down?

I turned and looked at the mirror again..

Me: Show me Bonolo Radebe

Kali: Don't go there.. Don't get ahead of yourself

Me: I said show me Zaine's wife!!

Kali: Nkuli wait

The mirror showed me Zaine's wife, when I tried to stab her I was knocked out and I fell across the room, I hit my head so bad that I had a

blackout, the only thing I remember before passing out was Kali screaming..

"Damn you Zaine Radebe"

—

NOMVELO

I was woken up by a very sharp pain in my tummy, it felt like I was being stabbed constantly. I rose up from the pillow and put my hand on my tummy..

Me: Ahhhhhh!! (Screaming)

My scream woke Nazo up..

Him: What's wrong?

Me: We.. We.. Ahhhhhh (Screaming)

He got out of bed and went to switch on the light, he came back to me and looked at me.

Him: Talk to me what's wrong?

Me: The baby.. We need to go to the hospital

He put his hand on my tummy..

Me: Ahhhhhh (Screaming)

He quickly went to get my night gown since my PJ pants were short..

He took his phone and called someone..

Me: Ahhh what is happening?? (Crying)

Nazo: Gugu it's me.. We need to take Velo to the hospital, something is wrong.. Now Gugu!

He then threw the phone on the bed..

My: My baby.. (Crying)

Him: Let's get you to the hospital

—

SWAY

Dawn: And just when I was about to drive there, Malcolm had gotten some information on the client. It was just sleep apnea

I laughed..

Me: That's a lie isn't it?

Him: I'm telling you

He yawned..

Me: Are you sure that you don't wanna go home?

He kissed my hand..

Him: I would rather be here with you.. So let me tell you how it all en-

I felt some excruciating pain in my tummy..

Me: Awww!!

Dawn: What's wrong?

Me: I don't know b.. Ahhh!

I put my hand on my tummy as the monitor went off, the baby's heartbeat seemed unstable..

Dawn: Sway what is it?

I shook my head..

Me: I don't know.. I feel some serious pain

He looked around..

Him: Shit where is the Dr?

The Dr rushed in followed by his staff..

Me: What took you so long? Didn't you hear the monitor going off?

Me: I can't lose this baby too..

The Dr ran his stethoscope around my tummy..

Dawn: What is happening?

Dr: Please get him out of here

Me: I'm not going anywhere!

Nurse: Sir please..

Me: I said I'm not going anywhere!!!! (yelling)

Dr: Okay we need to do a C-section right away, OPR 1 please

Me: What is happening?

They unhooked all the machines and wheeled

my bed out of the ward, the pain was intensifying..

.

To be continued

No edits

113

SNAZO

[Excuse any Erros]

I looked at the time and it was around 4am, Gugu made her way to were I was sitting.

Though we fought but I was relieved that she was here, I wouldn't be able to do this alone..

Her: Here is your coffee

Me: Thank you

We had no choice but to take her to our nearest hospital since she was in a lot of pain that she ended up passing out in the car..

Gugu: They going to be fine, Nomvelo is very strong and I know that the baby will take from her

Me: There's something that I don't understand

Her: What is it?

Me: When I put my hand on her tummy I felt something or rather sensed something, something evil that was surrounding her

Her: How is that possible?

Me: Exactly what I'm asking myself, how can evil enter at our house with a warrior Angel around. I'm a healer so protection from a warrior Angel is always around, something is not right. Dawn called me also and told me that something is with Sway, she was also in pain

Gugu: That's weird.. Something is definitely wrong

I spotted Helena around...

Me: I'll be right back.. I need some fresh air

The Doctors haven't told us anything, they been with her ever since...

Helena and I went to an excluded area so that we can talk..

Me: What is going on?

Her: Nira is here.. She made a grand entrance with Sway and Nomvelo

Me: She found a vessel?

Her: Yes, but the vessel is the one overpowering Nira

Me: Who is the vessel?

She kept quiet..

Me: Helena!

Her: Nomvelo's cousin.. Nkuli

I took a few steps back while wiping my mouth..

Me: What?

Her: She was an easy target and now she's going to rain terror, she wants revenge. She couldn't take the "Betrayal" well

I couldn't believe what I was hearing..

Her: Nazo this is going to be a difficult one, Nomvelo won't want to cut her family off Nkuli is going to use that all costs

Me: She had access to my place?

Nkuli: She didn't have too, she used the mirror. The mirror that was used in ancient witchcraft

Me: Why would Nkuli do this? Why not go for me directly

Her: It's not only Nkuli who wants revenge, Lucifer wants to stop your gift from being passed on to your nex generation by killing your unborn baby

Me: Does he have a vessel?

Her: Yes.. Kali

Me: Kali?

Her: The multimillionaire

Me: I'll be dammed!

I walked away..

Her: Nazo don't even think about it.. Going after Lucifer in this state won't solve anything you will just end up with a murder case of killing an innocent man. Kali is not Lucifer, Kali is a vessel

Me: If heaven is not going to help me, I'll do it myself

Her: This is why your wife is here in the first place, you disconnecting from us Nazo. Your anger is overshadowing you from us you can't fight what is of spirit physically, fighting Kali physically won't stop him from doing what he wants to do it will just give him courage to do more. This is what they want, for you to be emotionally broken

Me: Helena this is serious! I'm about to lose my family what am I supposed to do pray about it? While we doing that they will be on the next step!

Her: Snazo calm down, go back to what you believe in. If you wanna save your baby and your wife then do this the right way. We all here for you and we gonna win this war only if you stay focused

—

DAWN

Zaine found me pacing up and down in the corridor, no one has said anything to me. Sway has been there for a while now and I have been forbidden to go in seeing that I was under a lot of stress..

Zaine: Hey man

We bumped shoulders..

Him: Are you good? How is she?

Me: They not saying anything as yet

Zaine: Nazo called me, the same thing is happening to his wife too

Dawn: He told me that too

Zaine: You know what this is right? It's a spiritual attack meaning Nira is roaming the Earth

Me: She is here and she is going to bring destruction

The door opened and the Dr came out with one of the Nurses..

He came to us and looked at us, I don't think I have ever been this scared before in my life

Him: Mr Baker.. Would you like to meet your Daughter

Everything just froze..

Him: Both the baby and the Mother are going to be okay, both the girls did okay

I looked at Dawn..

Him: I'll be here

I followed the Dr back to the Operating room.

Dr: You could've met them in the ward but I figured you can't wait

The Nurse came and handed me my Daughter..

Her: Here you go

I looked at her and she was tiny but very adorable..

Dr: She is one healthy and strong baby boy

I was very emotional I mean I have been waiting for this day for a long time now..

I looked across the room and I saw Helena, she smiled at me and I just bowed my head a little and she disappeared...

Dr: Let's move them back to their ward so that the Mother can rest

Finally my Daughter is here..

–

NOMVELO

We listened very attentively..

Dr: One strong heartbeat

Nazo and Gugu were relieved..

Nazo: So what about the pain that she was feeling?

Dr: We did tests and I kept her here on the monitor for a while and medically there's nothing wrong with her, when she was brought in there was no evidence of bleeding even now she's not bleeding and the baby is fine

Gugu: That's very good.. That's good news

Nazo: How are you feeling?

Me: Just tired and sleepy.. I wanna go home and sleep

Gugu: Can we take her home with us?

Dr: Yes

Nazo: You not feeling any pain?

Me: No.. I feel fine

Dr: Just take it easy, she's still in her first trimester and she's very vulnerable. She doesn't need stress

Nazo: We'll make sure that she doesn't stress

Dr: She can go home

Gugu: Thank you Dr

I was very relieved when I heard that my baby is okay, that pain I felt I thought that the baby wasn't going to make it. I thank God that he lowered his hand and saved my baby

My faith and trust in him keeps on getting

stronger and stronger..

–

NKULI

I still felt a bit Oozy from that fall, my head was aching. Kali was getting ready for work and I was getting ready to go home again.

Kali: How are you feeling?

Me: I'll survive

Him: You need to be careful Zaine is emotionally and spiritually strong, he doesn't let anything break him. If something happens he fasts and prays harder. You were lucky with Dawn and Nazo, with everything that's been happening they had a crack, a crack that allowed us to attack. Though be careful with Nazo, when he strikes back spiritually he rains warrior Angels and the last thing we want is him summoning the Archangel Michael, my Brother

Me: We are not winning, Nomvelo's baby is okay and Dawn's baby was delivered safely. I don't even think that we going to win this war

Him: Don't even think about winning the war, think about winning the battle. Nazo is the one tempering with my kingdom, he gives hope, faith. Do you know how many people turned their lives around ever since he started being a preacher? All those I had a stamp of ownership on changed their minds with committing suicide, they now have hope and they believe. Something that I didn't want them to do!!! I'm losing many souls because of him and not forgetting him healing the sick

Me: This whole thing is upsetting

Him: Calm down we will get there, even though they will be more alert this time around but we masters of tricks so we will win the battle after all

–

SWAY

I tried to move but I was in pain and I was drowsy..

Me: Dawn..

He came to me..

Him: Hey take it easy

Me: What happened? Is the baby okay?

Him: You did very well.. She is okay she made it

Me: Can I see her? I wanna see her

Him: Let me help you to sit up straight first

He helped me to sit up with pillows supporting my back, and then he got her.

He gently handed her to me..

Dawn: She sleeps a lot

I looked at her and I was overwhelmed, after all

the stress and the delays she is here.

Me: She is so adorable

Dawn: The Nurse said she's gonna come and show you how to breastfeed, should I call her? Or you wanna rest more?

Me: No I just wanna hold her for a while

Him: Okay I will go and get the Nurse

He kissed me on my forehead and then walked out. I looked at my baby I couldn't stop the tears, she is my Angel that came at the right time..

.

To be continued

Not edits

Lunch snack

114

NOMVELO

Nazo: Another bite

Me: Babe we full

Him: Just one last bite

Me: I'm serious there's no space for anything anymore

He put the food away. He has been very cautious with me ever since we got back from the hospital, he would watch me as I sleep, feed me constantly ask if I'm okay. I found it very heart warming to know that me and the baby matter that much to him, but it was a bit annoying how he couldn't even give me space to breath..

Me: We're fine

He held my hand..

Him: I don't know what I would've done if I lost you guys

Me: We stronger than that

My phone rang, it was close to him so he got it

for me. He looked at it for a while..

Me: Babe?

He gave it to me, It was Nkuli..

Me: Nkuli

Her: Hey Velo how are you?

Me: I'm well and you

Her: I'm good too

I didn't expect to get a call from her, especially with everything that's been happening..

Her: I was calling to see if you okay because honestly I'm just tired of fighting with you

Me: Ohw

Her: I miss our relationship, we were very close and there's so much that I wanna tell you but I can't because of how things are between us

This was a bit off, Nkuli humbling herself?

Her: I'm sorry Velo for everything and right now I

have a new man in my life I wanna tell you about but I can't bec-

Me: Wait.. You have a new man?

Her: Yes I do

Me: Wow I..

Her: If we can meet up I'll tell you all about him

Me: Yeah.. We should

Her: You'll call me then and let me know or you can come here

Me: Okay we will talk

Her: Bye

Me: Bye

I looked at Nazo...

Me: Wow Nkuli says she has a new man

Him: She does?

Me: Yes she does.. Seems like she has finally

moved on from you

Him: You trust me right?

Me: Yes I do

Him: I need a favour from you

Me: What favour?

Him: Please I don't want you to visit your house when there's no one around but Nkuli only

I didn't understand what he wanted to say exactly..

Him: Or ask her to come here if she wanna see you

Me: Gugu doesn't want her here though

Him: Nomvelo I know you stubborn but please just for once trust me, never meet uNkuli alone in an isolated place. If she wants to see you she will come here or you two will meet in a public place siyezwana? (do we understand each other)

Me: Yes

Him: I will talk to Gugu

Me: Okay

Him: Let me bath.. I need to go to the hospital..
Sway gave birth to a baby girl

Me: Can I come along?

Him: Ain't y

you supposed to be resting?

Me: Please.. I'm tired of resting

He looked at me for a while..

Him: Okay you can come along

Me: Thank you

–

TUMI

I really enjoy spending time with Shine, he makes me happy and makes me forget about

what I'm going through at home. When I'm with him, he makes me block out all the negativity and just focus on the moment. I am not really sure about the nature of our relationship but it seems as if like we are something, something exclusive..

There's a lot of things that Shine get misjudged on, and I'm sure sex is one of them. I don't wanna lie I thought his sex game was just gonna be boring too but I swallowed my words on the first round. I don't know how and I don't know why I decided to drop the ball and opened my legs for him, or maybe his touch is a bit paralyzing and his kisses spike up my sexual hormones. Hormones that I thought were dead. At first it was painful considering the fact that it has been a while since I last got some, I even considered myself a secondary virgin and the condom made things worse. I just wanted him to stop but he convinced me otherwise up until

pleasure kicked in. I don't know how having lunch in the office on the small couch turned into me being lunch..

–

NKULI

I walked up to my Grandmother she was watching TV..

Me: Koko

She looked at me..

I sat down across her..

Me: This might sound a bit off but...

She still looked at me waiting for me to proceed..

Me: I was thinking that we can plan a holiday, you, me and Nomvelo. A holiday so that we can fix what's happening between us because honestly everything that's happening be happening. Nomvelo and I we all that we going

to have when you gone, she might be married yes but we the ones left to make sure that we continue the Ngcobo legacy..

Her: That's what you said Before Nkuli, how can I trust you now? The last time uze wathi uzohamba nami esontweni (The last time you said you going to go to church with me)

Me: I know Koko but this time I'm serious, I even called uNomvelo

She got the remote..

Her: Asazi.. Sizobona ngawe (We don't know we will hear from you)

The only way that we going to win the battle is if I win Nomvelo over..

–

TUMI

We had two rounds and I was glad from my side that no client came in, what am I saying

though because we put on the "Closed" sign.

He kissed me again..

Me: We need to go back to work

He kissed me again while squeezing my breasts and I stopped him..

Him: Ok Sharp ke

He stepped away from me as I stated dressing up. Hormones were high I don't want him thinking that I'm like those loose girls that he had been with before. This was very embarrassing for me and I was regretting a little, I gave it up too fast..

After dressing up I quickly went back to my working station. I kept myself busy just as to avoid him..

–

SNAZO

We got to the hospital and Sway looked a bit

tired, Dawn was walking around the ward while holding the baby..

Me: Do you ever put her down?

He chuckled, Velo and I made our way in..

Dawn: What are you guys doing here?

Me: I don't know we came to push time because we that bored?

Nomvelo moved closer..

Velo: She is soo adorable

Dawn: Wanna hold her?

Velo: Yes please

She took him from Dawn..

Velo: Look at her, is so cute and her skin is very soft

Me: Congratulations

Dawn: Thank you

Sway: Nazo

I walked up to her..

Me: I thought that you were sleeping

Her: I sleep and then I wake up, I forgot that I can't toss and turn without hurting myself

Me: You going to be okay

Her: I hope so

(Silence)

Her: Is that your wife?

Me: Yes

Her: She is pretty

Me: Thank you

Her: No thank you for being my midwife that left me stranded

I laughed..

Me: At the end of the day she came

Her: That's all that matters

Dawn and Sway came closer..

Velo: You have a beautiful Daughter

Sway: Thank you

Sway looked at me..

Her: That's rude.. You not even going to introduce us

Me: Well you guys are hitting it off pretty well I didn't think an introduction was necessary

We all laughed..

This was a beautiful moment, why can't life be this beautiful at all times???

–

NKULI

I looked at them through the mirror having that "Beautiful moment" I had brought a small mirror from the collection that Kali had so that I can

see what's going on..

Beautiful moment it was indeed, but they should never think that it's over. I'm gonna rain terror soon..

.

To be continued

No edits

I don't know what we going to do with sexual scenes because I disabled my inbox since people been inboxing me that I should keep my inserts clean from sexual scenes as they trying to purify themselves with this story.. They see the story more of a church than a mere entertainment..

Next insert later..

Please note the insert is short on purpose..

115

NOMVELO

A FEW MONTHS LATER

Me: I think that it will work if I can shorten it at the front

Her: I think so too

Me: I'll be back

I walked over to get the pillow and pins..

Me: Okay I'll just pin it a bit just to see what I'm working with

Her: No problem

I threw the pillow down and kneeling on it was a mission, I kept on trying to get down but I couldn't. My tummy didn't allow me, I was exactly 7 months pregnant now..

Me: Sorry I'll get it right

Her: Don't worry about doing that I get your

concept and were you going with it

I exhaled..

Her: I know how it feels

Me: I can't wait for him to come.. I'm already tired

She laughed..

Her: I still can't believe that I have met you

Well Nazo has been making waves lately and round about now I can't even go out to get lunch without someone noticing me, I never thought that he could become this popular.

His sermons on YouTube he gets no less than 500 000 views globally, the highest he has hit was 2mill views. He is featured every now and then on the Purgatory channel, he has been very busy for the past few months I hardly even spend time with him...

Sarah walked up to us..

Sarah: Everything okay?

Me: Everything is okay I just can't kneel

Sarah: I'll help with that

Me: Thank you

Sarah: Your salad and juice are in the office

Me: Thank you I'll go and eat

I looked at our client..

Me: I'm really sorry about everything

Her: It's okay you don't have to apologize though I'm saddened you refusing to take a picture with me

Me: Look at me.. I look horrible (Laughing)

Client: That is not true.. You look beautiful

Me: You just being nice

Sarah: What am I supposed to do here ?

Me: You can-

I tried bending but she quickly exclaimed..

Sarah: Okay okay okay!! You can just tell me

I ended up taking the job at the Boutique, I have been working here ever since. Sarah and Richard are so sweet, I have a healthy relationship with both of them..

Me: Let me go eat my salad

Gugu makes sure that I eat cereal at 8am before I leave, when I get to work I eat a salad and drink juice at 10am. At 13:00 I eat lunch, at 16:00 before knocking off I eat something. I am not complaining with how they feeding me but the problem is that it doesn't help me with my weight.. Snazo's family has been soo supportive that even when he's not around I do miss him but not that much, they always there for me.

With regards to my family Nkuli and I our relationship has been more telephonically, My Grandmother comes over to visit me and

Danger passes by too but Nkuli she has never came even when Gugu gave her permission. As I was busy eating my salad Richard walked in. He took off his glasses.

Richard is exactly like Nazo, he is very charming, funny, and very forward..

Him: Who told you that you fat?

Me: No one

Him: You eat salads a lot

Me: I do eat food just that everytime when you come I'm eating a salad

He nodded while curving his lip..

Him: I get it now.. I understand

I laughed..

Me: So Nazo is going to fetch me today after work

Ever since I started working at O'Nails, Nazo

has never been here before, I always drive myself and today it happens that my car had gone for service and Gugu only drove me to work but later she will be busy so Snazo has to fetch me. Speaking of Nazo I haven't seen him for a month now, he hasn't been around he went on a fasting camp with Zaine, Dawn, And Badru they only coming back today. I missed him a lot because especially since there was no phone calls, nothing. They totally shut out the whole world. They have never taken such a fasting, a whole entire month? I hope they still alive..

Him: Gugu told me

Me: How do you feel about that?

Him: I don't know how to feel about that, I am hoping for the best

Me: Me too

Him: Have you guys started working on the nursery?

Me: No we haven't.. We don't have enough space and I don't want us to change Niso's room into one because then it'll be a distance

Him: How about you guys move in with me? Or I can get you guys a house

Me: We can get our own house thank you

Him: Ohhh soo much shade I can't even see

He put on his glasses as I laughed..

Me: We can't get a house because we not sure if we going to move

Him: Then how about moving in with me?

Me: Nazo might never agree

Him: The sad truth

He hit the table a little..

Him: Let me go I have a lot to do but I'll be here before you leave

Me: Okay we will see you then

He waved goodbye and left...

–

SNAZO

I was happy to be back home, the fasting went well I won't lie but I was glad to be back. We were living on nothing but light things such as fruits, juice, fish and what not. It was hard at first but as time went on it got a bit better, we had the presence of Helena, we were very connected to Heaven. It was an amazing experience I won't lie..

When I opened the door it was as if like Gugu heard me, I was welcomed by a very nice smell..

Her: And there he is

She had an apron on as she made her way to me..

Her: I am so glad that you home

She hugged me..

Her: I've missed you

She broke the hug and looked at me..

Her: At least you didn't lose a lot of weight

I chuckled..

Me: I'm good

Her: How did it go?

Me: It went well

I went and opened the fridge, I saw a cake..

Me: What are we celebrating?

Her: You've forgotten?

Me: Forgotten what?

Her: Nomvelo is 7 months pregnant now

Me: We gonna celebrate that too?

Her: We gonna have a delicious dinner that's all

Me: How is she?

Her: She is doing well she has been missing you

Me: I've been missing her too

Her: Uhm can I run something by you

Me: What is it?

Her: Can you pick up Nomvelo from work? I can't fetch her I'm going somewhere

Me: What happened to her car?

Her: It's being serviced

I looked at her..

Her: It's not a set up, khona la ngiyakhona (I'm going somewhere)

Me: Okay I'll go and fetch her

(Silence)

Me: How is the whole situation with Nkuli?

Her: Akakezi (She hasn't been here)

I had told Gugu everything about Nkuli..

Her: There was a time I saw her mara she stood

at the gate she couldn't walk in

Me: That's good

Her: Kodwa Nazo shouldn't you tell her the truth?

Me: No.. She's 7 months pregnant now, she's on her last trimester I don't wanna stress her she might give birth to a premature. Let's just keep it like this with Nkuli for now just until she can give birth, I mean we were able to keep it thus far

Her: Okay.. I understand

Me: Thank you

–

TUMI

Things were looking good between me and Shine, we were officially dating and spending more time with each other. I am comfortable with our relationship, I am happy with him and everything is just peaceful. I like spending time

with Mpumi, I do visit his house every now and then. Mamezala is a very kind person, when I first met her I was very intimidated but now we good..

Me: Mpumi

She looked at me..

I shook my head..

Me: No

She shook her head too..

Her: No

Me: No

She moved to another department which was the vegetable stand. Since she can stand up by balancing with things and taking those few steps she is very naughty..

Today was my day off, So I decided to sleep over just so I can spend a day with Mpumi..

Mamezala walked in..

Her: Are you ladies ready?

Me: Yes we are

I picked Mpumi up..

Mamezala: Let's go then

We were going out to the mall to do some shopping..

Mamezala: I forgot my car keys.. I'm coming

She went back as Mpumi and I stood at the gate, a few eyes were on us. Some girls who were standing not far from us were busy gossiping about me, you can just tell when someone is gossiping about you. They were even still on their PJs at this time..

—

SWAY

I enjoyed everything about being a Mother,

breastfeeding and watching her sleep were my two best moments. Every minute I just wanted to spend it with her. Dawn's Mother was around she has been here ever since Dawn left for the camp fasting, I love my Mother in law a lot but she can be too much at times. A week with her is enough, she is too fussy and always on your throat. She's okay to visit for a week or two..

Me: And what do we have here, let's see

The door opened and Dawn made his way in

Me: Look who is here.. Daddy is here

Dawn put his bag down and came to us..

Him: Hello pumpkin

He took her from me..

Me: Be careful she's full

I put small towel on his shoulder..

Me: Just for incase

Him: Just for incase

He pulled me closer and kissed me..

Him: I've missed you guys

Me: We've missed you too

Mrs B: My Son is back

I rolled my eyes..

Me: Here we go

Dawn laughed..

Her: How are you sweetheart?

Dawn: I'm good Ma

She tried to hug her but Angel was standing in the way.. I got Angel from him so that they can hug..

Mrs B: I'm glad you back, and you back safe

Dawn: Me too Ma.. It's good that you been here the whole time

Mrs B: Ohh don't mention it.. The girls needed me

I rolled my eyes again..

Mrs B: Come.. Let mommy make you something to eat

And just like that, Angel and I no longer mattered..

–

NOMVELO

I had accidentally cut myself on my finger and I was bleeding, I went to the sink to put my finger under running water. I looked at the cut it wasn't deep but it was a bit painful. I took the paper towel and squeezed it around my finger..

Me: Come on..

The bleeding has to stop because I can't touch people's clothes with blood. I made my way out and went to Sarah..

Me: Sarah

Her: Yes?

Me: Can I get a gauze or a band aid, I accidentally cut myself

Her: Is it that bad?

Me: Ya sort off.. I can't stop bleeding

Her: Okay let me see

She held my hand and removed the paper towel..

Her: Where did you cut yourself?

Me: Her..

I looked at my finger and the cut was gone..

Me: That's weird

Her: Are you feeling a bit tired maybe?

Me: No I..

I looked at her..

Me: Maybe I'm a bit tired I don't know

Her: You should rest a bit, take it easy with my Nephew please mommy

She put her hand on my tummy..

I faked a smile..

Me: I will

That was weird..

—

DAWN

Sway: Here

I looked at the video..

Sway: Everyday at exactly 2am she cries hysterical, at first I thought it was nothing but now.. I don't know

I looked at the video again and I could see that there was an evil entity right next to her crib but it couldn't touch her or anything because she was protecting herself in a way. Her cries would

push it away..

Sway: So what do you think?

Me: I can't see anything

Her: Are you sure?

Me: Yes

Mom: I told you it's normal for babies to wake up at night and cry.. You reading too much into this

Me: And you would know that right?

Mom: You always overreacting

Me: Allow me to raise my baby there way I want please

When they start, they never stop. I moved away from them with Angel laying on my shoulder. I put my hand on her back, that was surprising how is she able to do that?

.

To be continued

Meet Angel Baker

116

SNAZO

I spent my day resting before I could go and pick up Nomvelo from work, Ever since she started working at the boutique I have been avoiding driving her to work because I didn't wanna have any awkward encounters with Richard. As much as I gave up the hate and the anger that I had for him, that don't mean things are going to be a bad of roses between us. What on earth are we even going to talk about? Time for him to pull up his boxers and be a father to me has long passed, I am about to be a Father myself and I don't see me and Richard being anything.

I put on my wrist watch after a well needed shower that I took, I was on my way to fetch her

when a soft knock disturbed me. The person knocked directly at my room instead of the main house, I walked up to the door to open. It was Mantwa, it's been a while since I last saw her..

Me: Mantwa?

Her: Hey

I let her in, it was an awkward moment. I was in my jeans, sneakers, and I was still yet to put on a tshirt or a muscle vest..

Her: It's good to see you

Me: Good to see you too

Her: I don't even get a hug or something?

I hugged her..

Me: So what brings you here?

Her: First and foremost congratulations, you a big shot now

She slightly punched me on my shoulder and I chuckled..

Me: Thank you

Her: I've always known that you were destined for great things

Me: Ya I'm still surprised at the direction that my life took

Her: Anyway.. I'm here to invite you to my wedding

She gave me the invitation..

Me: You getting married?

Her: Yeap.. This Saturday

Me: Wow I.. Who is the lucky guy?

Her: Dr Patel.. He is Indian

That came off as a surprise..

Me: I really don't know what to say

Her: Congratulations maybe?

I hugged her again..

Me: Congratulations

Her: You will let Gugu know

Me: I will

Her: Is she around? Because the security door is locked

Me: No she's not around.. I'll let her know

Her: Thank you

(Silence)

Her: Bring along your wife

Me: I will hope she will get a dress at such short notice

Her: Ohw kana she's pregnant

I looked at her..

Her: Saw her on TV and I follow her on Instagram and Twitter

Me: Ohw you do?

Her: Yes she posts motivational messages and a few good pics

Me: I didn't know that

Her: I haven't seen you on Insta and Twitter?

Me: Ya I'm not on any

Her: Why?

Me: I won't have time for such plus social networking for me can be the other way round, too much unne scandals

Her: That's sad

Me: But I am on WhatsApp.. That's gotta count for something

She laughed..

Her: That doesn't count for anything

I looked at the time..

Her: Going somewhere?

Me: Yes.. I'm fetching my wife from work

Her: Okay then let me go

Me: Thank you for inviting me

Her: No problem and please bring along the beautiful wife

Me: I will

Her: She's lucky.. I wish some of us were that lucky too

Now the conversation ha just gotten weird..

Me: Well you marrying a Dr, so between you and her I don't know who is more lucky

She laughed again..

Her: See you on Saturday

Me: Saturday it is

She walked out..

—

TUMI

We packed away the groceries with Mpumi being her naughty self as always..

Mamezala: I'm glad you here Tumi, you made everything easier for me

Me: You welcome

As we were busy packing away the groceries the door flung open, Shine's baby Mama flew in. She didn't walk right in, she flew in she was worse than a tornado. She wasn't alone, she was accompanied by some lady..

She looked at me as if like she wanted to kill me, the other lady stood behind her..

Sbosh: Ngizolanda umntwana wam' (I'm here for fetch my child)

She was in a fighting mood and she was very loud, which in turn scared Mpumi..

I went and picked her up as she was crying..

Mamezala: How dare you? How dare you walk into my house like that without respect?

Bursting in here like it's a sheeben?

Sbosh: How d.. How d.. Yazini buyela a Nigeria or e Zimbabwe nje lapho ubuya khona (go back to Nigeria or Zimbabwe wherever it is that you come from)

She looked at the other lady..

Sbosh: Awu thathe uMpumi (Take Mpumi)

The friend walked over to me..

Her: Sicela umntwana (give me the baby)

I didn't know how to react veva I am not a person who likes fighting..

Mamezala: Get out!! Get out!!

Friend: Letha umntwana (Give me the baby)

She forcefully took Mpumi from me and Mpumi was crying hysterical..

I tried to take her back but the baby Mama pulled out a knife..

Her: Ngizok'gwaza ungaqali.. Ungaqali (I'll stab you.. Don't even start)

Friend: Eyyy asambe (let's go)

They left with Mpumi still crying like there's no tomorrow..

–

NKULI

Kali and I we were having lunch at his office and the lunch was depressing because we had just found out that the babies have tapped into their powers. I didn't understand, and it didn't make sense. I stood up and walked over to the window, to check the view

Me: It looks like we failing

Him: We not failing

He got up and came to me..

Him: This is a big revelation and now our plans have changed, we don't have to kill the baby but we can turn him evil. With his gift do you know what he can do for us? And the little exorcist if we turn her evil she can turn her evil she can kill angels for us and the little healer

He put his hands on my shoulders..

Him: His gift can do the opposite, instead of healing he can infect. Just imagine Son against the Father and Daughter against her Father

I turned and looked at him..

Me: You make it sound so simple

Him: It is.. All you have to do is get closer to your cousin, she's 7 months pregnant the baby can still survive even though it's a premature

Me: I can't even get to her place

Him: You won't have too.. How about we make Grandmother dearest sick, that way you and her

will always be close. You will be side by side while crying for your Grandmother to get better

Me: Nazo is a healer, do you forget?

He put his hands on my throat...

Him: I broke you out because you the best, don't make me regret

He tightened his grip..

Him: We need to get that baby from her stomach and raise it as our own, how you do that I don't care! But I want that baby are we clear?

I nodded..

Me: Crystal

He leaned over and kissed me..

—

MANTWA

Everything was set for the wedding, not a lot

was left. I still can't believe that this weekend I'll be getting married. I was lost deep in my thoughts as my cousin and I went for cake tasting, I couldn't stop thinking about Nazo.

Cousin: So what do you think about the velvet cake?

(Silence)

She shook me and I looked at her..

Her: Velvet?

I glanced down at the piece of cake..

Me: Ohh ya.. The velvet cake

Her: Are you alright?

I put the folk down..

Me: I went to give Nazo his invitation

Her: You did what?

Me: I invited him to the wedding

Her: You know how Aunty feels about him

Me: I really don't care about how Mom feels

She shook her head..

I exhaled..

Me: I don't know what's going on but.. I think that from my side the feelings that I had for him are still there, when he was first realizing his gift I was there for him. Now he is a big shot and.. I'm supposed to be the one next to him, I was there for him

Her: Mantwa.. Patel is a very good man and he loves you with all his heart, please don't ruin your happiness for someone who is happy with someone else.. Please cuz

I really didn't know what was happening with me..

—

NOMVELO

Richard was being his crazy self, busy pulling

out a few jokes and making us laugh.

We saw one of the assistants making her way to us, she was followed by Nazo. All the laughter siezed as I didn't know what was going to transpire between Nazo and his Dad

Assistant: Sorry to disturb but someone is here for you

Despite the awkwardness I was very happy to see him, he has been gone for a while now and I've missed him soo much..

I went and hugged him..

Me: Welcome back.. I've missed you

Him: I've missed you too

He kissed me on the cheek as we broke the hug..

Me: At least you came back in one piece

He chuckled. Now it was up to me to do introduce them to each other..

Me: Uhm.. This is Richard he, he is the one who runs the place and that's his Daughter Sarah the head designer. I work closely with her

Snazo looked at them as my heart started to beat abnormally, he extended his hand to Richard for a handshake..

Snazo: Nice to meet you

Richard shook his head and nodded, He did the same with Sarah..

Sarah: It's good to finally meet you

Nazo: Likewise

He then looked at me..

Him: Are you ready to go?

Me: Yes I am..

I went and took my bag then I hugged Sarah..

Me: See you tomorrow

Sarah: Bye Babe

I hugged Richard too as he slightly hit me on my forehead..

Him: See you tomorrow little elephant

Me: There you go again

We laughed..

Me: Bye

Richard: Bye

Snazo held my hand and we walked out..

.

To be continued

No edits

117

TUMI

One thing that I didn't want was to be stabbed to death by an uncivilised hood rat, I still can't believe that she pulled out a knife in front of her own Daughter. What kind of a Mother would do

that? I know that Shine is hood I just didn't think he would go for such a psychopath. I packed my things back into my small bag, I wanted to be out of here..

Shine burst in without even knocking, he looked pissed..

Him: Awung'tshele iWaar lento engiyizwayo?
(Tell me is it true what I'm hearing)

Me: Please take me home

Him: So iWaar? (so it is true)

Me: Just take me home

He walked up to the wardrobe and opened it, he searched through for a while and then he took out a gun, he checked the bullets and then headed straight to the door..

Me: Shine wait!

I rushed to the door and slightly pushed him back..

Me: Don't even think about it

Him: Awusuke (Move)

Me: I am not going to let you walk out and go kill your Baby Mama, what she did was wrong I know but She is Mpumi's Mother.. Please

Him: Tumi

Me: You will have to go through me first

He looked at me and then he cocked the gun..

Him: Ngik'shayela okok'gcina.. Awusuke (I'm telling you for the last time.. Move)

I could see that he was serious, The best thing I could do right now is to move before he hurts me.. I moved..

Me: I'll be gone when you get back

He removed the key and locked me in..

–

NOMVELO

Nazo was massaging my feet, it felt really good..

Me: I'm so glad that you back

Him: Because of the foot massage?

Me: No.. Not because of that, I've missed you a lot

Him: I've missed you too

(Silence)

Him: We going to a wedding this coming weekend

Me: Whose wedding?

Him: My Ex

Me: Your ex?

Him: Ya think it's her way of showing me that she has moved on and she's happy

Me: Why did you guys break up? What did you do?

Him: What did I do? What makes you think that I

did something?

I looked at him..

Him: It wasn't working and I ended it, she then tried to hurt herself

Me: Hurt herself how?

Him: She tried committing suicide

My eyes widened..

Me: She almost committed suicide for you?

He looked at me while wingling his eyebrow..

Him: Have you looked at me?

Me: Whooooa Mara (laughing)

My phone started ringing, I took it and checked it. It was Nkuli..

Me: Hello?

She didn't say anything, she was just sniffing

Me: Nkuli?

Her: Hey Velo.. Uhm

Me: Did something happen between you and Kali?

Her: No.. I.. I shouldn't even be telling you this because you pregnant and I don't wanna stress you

Me: What is it?

Her: It's Grams

Me: What about her?

She didn't say anything..

Me: Nkuli

Her: Danger and I we just.. She's.. It's stroke Velo

Me: Stroke?

Her: We at the hospital

Me: I am on my way

I hung up..

Nazo: What's wrong?

Me: It's my Grandmother.. She's at the hospital,
Nkuli is saying it's stroke

Him: What?

Me: We have to go to the hospital

Him: Let me get my keys

Me: You can heal her right?

Him: We'll see

Me: Please

He put his hand on my cheek..

Him: Okay we'll see when we get to the hospital

I hope Nazo will be able to heal her, I can't lose
her too..

—

ZAINE

I was lost in my thoughts, thinking deeply about

what Helena has just said to me. I was starring out of the window still trying to digest everything. I was in my office..

Me: There's no other way?

Her: Unfortunately no.. Zaine I understand..

Me: You don't understand anything.. Why?

Her: I think you know why

Me: There has to be another way

Her: There's no other way

Me: How can you stand there and act like what you saying is right? And I'm supposed to play along?

Her: I came to you because you spiritually mature and you will understand better, Nazo has to get out of town and you have semorns he will relieve you. You need to go with him

Me: I am not doing it Helena

Her: Yes you're going to do it, you can't change anything.

Me: Nazo is your Charge how can you do this to him?

Her: I take orders from above and this is one of them, you may fail to understand the purpose behind this but you will and he will. Everyone will, at the end they will see God's glory and mercy

She walked up to me...

Her: We are going to win this war but that plan is not part of the war, it never was

Me: Helena

Her: When the time comes, Nazo has to skip town and you will make sure he gets on that flight

Me: We are going to win the war against Nira and Lucifer

I then got more closer to her..

Me: And then after, I will come after you and your kind

Her: I was your gurdian Angel for many years have I ever disappointed you?.. Just because you don't understand the purpose behind what's meant to happen, it doesn't mean that you should disobey. We are not evil Zaine

I kept quiet..

Her: It will happen Zaine, whether you like it or not

–

GUGU

I got back home and I thought that Nazo and Nomvelo would be around, but they weren't..

I was on the phone with Richard..

Me: At least you got a chance to meet him, give him time he will come around. Nazo is not like

Niso, if it was Niso he was going to give you a hard time

Him: You did a good job with him, he is a grown ass man

I laughed..

Me: He might be a grown ass man but he is my baby, the only one that I have now

Him: How about you guys come over for Dinner tomorrow?

Me: You will have to call him and ask him

Him: I don't have his numbers

Me: I'll forward them

I heard a knock at the door..

Me: Someone is at the door

Him: I'll call you later

Me: Okay bye

Him: I love you

Me: I love you too

I put my phone down as the person knocked again, I went to open...

Some lady stood at my doorstep, I didn't recognise her..

Me: Hi

Her: Hello

Me: Can I help you?

Her: Uhm yes..

She turned to her side..

Her: Come baby.. Come don't be shy

An adorable baby girl showed up from the side, she picked her up..

Her: My name is Connie.. Niso and I we have a baby together, her name is Nosibusiso

I looked at the baby girl..

—

NOMVELO

I made my way in, and Nkuli was waiting for me exactly at the spot where she said she would be waiting for me. I hugged her..

Me: What happened?

I was crying.. And she was crying too..

She wiped my tears..

Me: I got home and she was on the floor

Her: How is she? Is she going to be okay? What are the Doctors saying?

She hugged me again and my baby started kicking, it was like he was playing boxing in my tummy..

Me: Awww..

Nkuli broke the hug..

Her: Are you okay?

Me: He has never kicked like this before

Her: Come and sit down

She helped me to sit down..

Nazo made his way to us, Nkuli's facial expression changed.. As Nazo got closer she stepped back from me, and my baby stopped kicking..

Nazo: What are the Doctors saying?

Me: I'm not sure

Nkuli cleared her throat..

Nazo: Are you alright Nkuli?

Nkuli stepped back again..

Nazo: Feeling a bit hot aren't we?

Nkuli: This is a family matter please give us some space

Nazo approached her and Nkuli moved back..

Nazo: I'm married to Nomvelo so it makes it part of the family

Nkuli: No.. Nomvelo is part of your family she's a Buthelezi and you nothing to us.. Please leave, give us some space to deal with what's happening as a family

Nazo looked at me..

Him: I'll be in the car

Nkuli: Thank you

He walked out..

Nkuli: Let's go.. I'll take you to Gran and Danger
She helped me to stand up but each time when she touched me my baby would react and she would let go..

.

To be continued

Nosibusiso

118

GUGU

I offered her something to drink while my eyes were still glued on the little girl, she was very cute and adorable I don't wanna lie. We gathered around my small dinning table as I prepared my heart to be open to whatever that she was going to dish out for me..

Her: I know that you will judge me because of what I'm going to say and I won't blame you, mainly because Niso is your Son and any Mother would feel a certain way after hearing the story.

She sipped on her juice as the baby clung on to her thigh as if like the environment was too much for her..

Her: I was a lecturer at the same college were Niso was attending, I was his Lecturer

I laid back on the chair in disappointment, because I knew what she was about to say

Her: Niso and I..

She cleared her throat so that she could be able to get the words out of her mouth..

Her: We had an affair.. It wasn't something serious just having some fun

This lady was clearly older than my baby, very old. It amazes me at how everything is unfolding, there's a lot of things that I didn't know about my Son. Yes Niso was Naughty here and there but what I'm hearing now, I never knew that my Son was doing such things behind closed doors..

Her: I was married to a soldier, my husband was hardly around and life got a bit lonely for me, then Niso came along. He was so sweet, a bit arrogant, He was good company and an affair started

She picked up her baby and placed her on her lap..

Her: When we finally called it quits I had fallen

pregnant, and I kept it a secret because when I checked him on social media he was happily in love with someone else. I thought that I could dump it all to my husband but then.. Nosibusiso is different, she is her Father's Daughter

I looked at the baby again..

Her: When Nosi was born it was clear that she was mixed race and my husband had already suspected that I have been having an affair, so he filed for divorce and in the process I lost my job too. I had to move back in with my Parents who found the whole thing a shame and embarrassing.. All I ever wanted was for Nosi to know her Father's family and have a better life, better than the one that I could give her. I don't want her growing up always being reminded that she was a result of an affair, I don't want my Ex husband to come after her seeking for revenge

She closed her eyes and fought back her tears..

Her: Please... There's a lot that I'm going through

I didn't know what to say, this was too much for me to take in..

Her: We can do any test that you want I swear that I'm not lying, Nosi is Niso's Daughter

We had a moment of silence, I didn't know what to say. I had mixed feelings..

She wiped her tears and searched through her bag..

Her: Uhm.. I'll leave you my number, you can just contact me when you ready

–

NKULI

I had excused myself and went outside to talk to Kali over the phone and ask him what's the next move since I had Nomvelo in my territory unguarded by her husband. I think Nazo chose

to have a big head about this seeing that we were in a place full of people, and also considering the fact that Uri was around too who would rain terror on us if any harm could come to Nomvelo. I was surprised at the reaction of her baby, my Nephew reacted like that because he sensed evil and when he did that, that's when Uri stood guard. If we going to win this battle, then we need to be smart about this..

Kali: The baby can only be suppressed by his Mother's emotions if Nomvelo could shift her emotions and be angry then that will tame the baby for a while

Me: How are we going to do that?

Him: I will give you a spell that will work on her by form of a touch, your touch will transfer a lot of anger to her plus she's not that strong spiritually

Me: But where will her anger be directed too?

Him: Leave that to me.. I will send you a certain video and the spell, recite the spell and then check the video

Me: Okay

Him: Don't fuck this up, this is our only chance

Me: What about Uri?

Him: We are not initiating a fight so we will blindside him

Me: Okay

Him: I trust that you will do the right thing

Me: I will I promise

I waited for him to send me the video and the spell, the video was that of Nazo in a restaurant with some woman. I wonder how Kali got the video but nevertheless I hope it will work in making Velo very angry

I recited the spell at least 3 times:

"Bihotz garbia eta arima, Utzi iluntasuna eta haserrea kentzen" (A heart that is pure and a soul that is clean, let it be engulfed by darkness and anger)

Another text followed from Kali:

"Improvise on the video, make me proud"

I made my way back into the ward where Nomvelo was seated on the small bench and holding our Grandmother's hand, our Grandmother was not responsive for now. The portion that Kali gave me was very strong. I put it in her tea and made her drink it, then it worked. It worked instantly.

Me: How is she?

Her: Maybe we should call Nazo to come, so that he can heal her

Me: Of course

I put my hand on her shoulder as Uri stepped closer, I said the spell again but I said it from deep within as part of my anger was transferred to her. Then I quickly got my hand from her, before Uri was able to catch on what was happening..

Me: Before you go and get him.. I would like to show you something

I got my phone and played her the video, though there was no sound I hope that the body language and the fact that he met with another woman in a restaurant will anger her.

Her: What is this?

Me: Nazo has not been truthful

Her: What?

Me: The "Fasting" that he went too was a total lie, he was spotted in a restaurant with this woman. Do you perhaps knew about this?

Her: Ofcourse not!

Her chest moved up and down pretty fast..

Me: I'm sorry cuz.. Your husband is not who you think he is

Her: There has to be a logical explanation

Me: Velo look at me

She looked at me..

Her: Nazo is having an affair

She gave me back my phone..

Me: The Buthelezi Brothers... They have been nothing but trouble, Nazo has broken many hearts including mine and now he is about to do the same thing to you. All his Exes, he has left us broken. Look at me, we almost became enemies because of him and now he does that to you? He is a bastard!!

She shook her head..

Her: I can't believe this

Me: Niso was your only true love, Nazo only married you because he knew that you were going to be good for his public image and he was trying to spite me in the process

Tears build up in her eyes..

Me: I know Cuz, just come back home. Go get your things and come back home, we already going through a lot as a family and you don't need this. You seriously don't need this

She just broke down into tears..

Me: Come here

She got up and I hugged her, the baby didn't react..

Me: I'm here for you

Her: I'm confused.. What is happening? Why would he do this to me?

Me: Shhhh it's going to be okay.. Danger and I

we will accompany you to get your things, come back home. Come back to your family, your real family

–

TUMI

Shine finally came back he was carrying Mpumi who was sleeping, I went up to them.

Me: Is she okay?

Him: uGrand (She is okay)

He put her down..

Me: I hope that..

He looked drained..

Him: ai manje Tumi please (Not now)

I hate fights and arguments so I decided to let it go, He sat on the bed and pulled me closer to him. I sat ontop of him, while facing him..

Him: Askies.. Angazi ukuthi uSbosh

bekangenwe yini (Sorry.. I don't know what was wrong with Sbosh)

Me: It's okay

He brushed my hair back and then kissed me, I could smell a bit of whiskey mixed with the smell of a cigarette. It wasn't disgusting, it was a turn on, a total turn on..

We continued kissing with his hands making it's way inside my tshirt, he spoke over my lips..

Him: Ng'cela uhambe ksasa (Please leave tomorrow)

I didn't say anything I pushed him back and he laid on the bed. I leaned over to continue kissing him while he was grabbing and squeezing my butt for dear life, it was turning into an intense moment..

–

NOMVELO

I walked out of the hospital with so much anger deep inside of me, I didn't know that I could get this angry I mean I have been angry before but not like this. Nkuli followed me. Nazo had sent me a text that he is standing at the entrance and for sure, he was standing a bit far from the entrance though busy with his phone..

Nkuli: Calm down Velo

He put his phone away when he saw us approaching..

Him: How did it go?

I slapped him across the face, he looked at me dumbfounded. I slapped him again, and the 3rd time he held my hand very tight. Those two claps got him fired up..

He looked at me waiting for an explanation, he was breathing very heavy like he was going to burst..

Me: You are a bastard!!

He squinted his eyes...

Me: Marrying you was the biggest mistake of my life!! You are nothing but a-

He shook me a bit..

Him: Ey!!!

He gave me that intimidating look..

Him: Ungenwe yini? (What has gotten into you)

Me: Let go of me

Him: Nom-

Me: I said let go of me!!

I spat on his face and he pushed me back I took a few steps back almost falling, Nkuli caught me right in time. I looked at him not believing what he had just done..

He wiped his face and he was so mad that I thought smoke was going to come out from his ears..

He wanted to say something, I don't know what stopped him. He exhaled and then walked away..

–

TUMI

We moved Mpumi from the bed to the small couch just to get more space on the bed, I was completely naked now and so was he. I was still ontop of him, he was busy caressing me while his already hard and thick black shaft poked my tummy. I gave him a hand job and he let out a soft moan with his eyes closed, that put him in a bit of a vulnerable situation and it made him more hard. He slightly opened his eyes and then put his two fingers in my mouth for me to suck them, I sucked them and then he lowered them and lifted me up a bit to insert them deep inside of me. I gasped. It was a bit uncomfortable at first but he rose up his head a bit to suck one of my nipples while increasing the pace of his

fingers deep inside of me. It was a bit of a pain mixed with great pleasure, He rose up and sat up straight. He squeezed my body to his and we continued kissing, he went on to suck my nipples again while my hand was at the back of his head. Not waiting any longer he put his hands on my waist and lifted me up and bit, he snaked his way deep inside of me..

Me: Condom?

Him: I'll put it in later, I just wanna feel you kancane nje

As I slid down with my hands on his shoulder, he bit his lower lip and I tried not to be loud as he stretched me. Was a bit uncomfortable feeling him that much deep inside..

He helped me to go up and down on him, we started off slow and increased the pace. When I felt like I couldn't hold back I kissed him so that I don't wake Mpumi up. The more he moved me

up and down faster than how we initially started there more he took away my breath and left me gasping for air..

.

To be continued

119

SNAZO

I drove out straight to a nearby open field, were most kids use it to play soccer on weekends. It's a place that I go too most of the time when I wanna think. I was leaning against the car and lost in my thoughts, I was trying to figure out what happened to Nomvelo. I know that my wife is crazy but, she has never been this crazy. It was starting to get dark, I've been here for quite some time now. Helena appeared, just the person that I needed to see so that she can give me all the answers that I need to clear this confusion..

Me: I'm losing my wife

She didn't say anything..

Me: I know that Nkuli has everything to do with it.. My question is how? How did she get to her?

Her: Nomvelo might appear strong and she is but what you don't know is that.. Your wife lies awake most nights crying and asking herself why most of the things that happened, happened to her. She blames God for most of her pain, especially how her Mother died. She is in a ball of confusion, she doesn't understand why bad things happened to her even though her life is better now, and that emotionally broke her. It's worse when she starts thinking about her previous relationship with your Brother, her heart bleeds and that made her vulnerable. She is grieving and she shut God out, she shut us all out hence why it was easy for Nira to get to her. It's not your fault, it's nobody's fault. Nomvelo needs to make peace

with a few things in her life, she has soo many questions and yet no answers

Me: So what do I do?

Her: You do nothing

Me: Excuse Me?

Her: Nazo I know how it seemed and we wanted to make it seem like that but.. This test is not for you or your wife, this test is for Nkuli

Me: You need to help me understand

Her: When Nkuli found out about You and Nomvelo it wasn't easy for her, she was full of anger. This test is for her, it is for her to choose which side she wants to be on

Me: And you used my wife as a pawn??

Her: Not entirely

Me: Nomvelo is pregnant! Nkuli is possessed! You wanna save Nkuli using my wife? Is Nkuli even going to snap out of it?

Her: We hope she does

Me: You hope? We working with "Hope"

Her: No.. We working with faith

I sent out a bitter chuckle..

Me: Let me get this straight.. We supposed to have faith that Nkuli is going to snap out of it? She is in too deep!! Is Nomvelo going to be okay? Is my baby going to be okay?

Her: I'm not supposed to reveal a lot

Me: You not supp-

I cleared my throat..

Me: You need to understand me, call this whole thing off!!

Her: Sna-

Me: I don't think we understand each other.. I said call this whole thing off!!!

She kept quiet and looked at me..

"Beloved.."

That's another voice that I didn't wanna hear..

Me: I'm not doing this right now!

Helena: You very stubborn Nazo, you so stubborn you remind me of Mos-

Me: Don't say anything.. Don't say even two words to me!!

Helena never ceases to amaze me..

–

TUMI

Shine did put on a condom at some point, the last thing I needed was to fall pregnant.

After our sexual and steamy moment I went to the house to make us something to eat, I'm even surprised that Mpumi slept peacefully throughout my moment with her father. It's moments like this that make you fall madly inlove all over again, my relationship with Shine

is the best thing that has happened to me in a very long time..

I think from my side its also time that he met my Aunt and my rude sister, speaking of my Sister she sent me a WhatsApp message giving me her whole entire budget of her super sweet 16 party, and the numbers were scary "R30 000". I exhaled and put my phone down, there's no way that I'm going to afford this..

–

NOMVELO

Nkuli had forwarded me the video I showed Gugu because she was all up in my space while I was packing..

Her: Nomvelo you misunderstanding everything

Me: I don't think so

Her: This is the same lady who approached

You at church the other day and she came here

today. She was Niso's lecturer apparently they had an affair and she fell pregnant so she was here with the child

I started laughing but my laugh wasn't sincere..

Me: Typical of the Buthelezi boys

Her: Angizwa? (Pardon)

I kept quiet..

Her: Yazi I have never seen you this angry, and worse angazi nokuthi ukwateleni (I don't even know why you angry)

Me: I didn't expect you to understand

Her: Ungang'deleli Nomvelo (Don't disrespect me)

Me: Or what? You going to hit me with a broom?

She laughed while pointing at me..

Her: Usathane uyangilinga (The devil is testing me) Lord help me I don't wanna catch a case

Nazo walked in..

Gugu: I'm glad that you decided to show up, can you explain to me what's going on?

He leaned against the door frame and looked at me..

Gugu: Nomvelo can you stop packing?

Nazo: Myeke ahambe Gugu (let her go)

Gugu: Ini? (What)

He sighed..

Nazo: Myeke ahambe.. Kdala washada noNkuli
(Let her go.. She's long been married to Nkuli)

Gugu: uNkuli futhi? (Nkuli again)

She tried to walk out but Nazo stopped her..

Nazo: Nkuli is dangerous now remember?

Gugu: Anginendaba! (I don't care) I will beat the demon out of her!

I looked at her...

Me: Did you just call my cousin a demon?

Gugu looked at Nazo..

Nazo: She's not herself.. Nkuli did something to her, she's no longer our Nomvelo

Gugu: Manje simeleni pho? (What are we waiting for)

Nazo: We not going to do anything

Gugu: Haibo!

Nazo: My Nomvelo will beat the spell and come back to me if I still mean anything to her

Something deep inside of me moved, I felt some warmth in my heart..

Gugu: I accepted you not as Umakoti wam' but as my Daughter, I might have never given birth to you but you're my Daughter

This feeling was getting intense.. Then I heard Nkuli's voice, somehow..

"Remember I talk to you down from leaping off that balcony when you were grieving for Niso, you are alive today because of me. I love you little sister"

I took my bag and headed to the door, they were both blocking the door...

Gugu: Yaa Nomvelo waze wayophula intliziyo yam' (You just broke my heart)

She walked out..

Me: Ng'cela ukudlula (Can I please pass)

He put his hand on my cheek..

Him: Ngiyak'thanda uyezwa? (I love you)

Me: Please move

He got closer and tried to kiss me but I turned my face. He put his hand on my tummy..

Him: Take care of yourself and my baby

I yanked his hand off and he moved then I

walked out, I walked out pretty fast with tears in my eyes...

–

NOMSA

Me: Here you go

Danger: Thank you

I pulled up the chair opposite him and sat down..

Me: Hau uMangcobo akaphekanga? (Mangcobo didn't cook)

With the money that Nomvelo gave me I started my own food joint and surprisingly it's doing very well..

Danger: uMangcobo is in hospital

Me: What happened?

Him: Stroke

Me: Stroke? Such a strong woman

Him: Nami ng'thukile (I'm shocked)

Me: Yho how is Velo taking it?

Him: Not good.. I left her and Nkuli at the hospital

Me: That's shocking

Him: It is

Danger comes by once in a while to check up on me and eat, I can say that we good friends..

.

To be continued

120

NKULI

[EXCUSE ANY ERRORS]

Last night before Nomvelo went to sleep I made her drink a certain portion and I lied to her that it's a herb that will help her relax since she seemed stressed with everything that's happening. The next morning I woke up earlier

and prepared the portion for her again, The portion is mixed with blood so the baby could feed of it. We want to turn the baby evil now, it'll be good to tame him now for evil purposes while he is still a baby..

As I was busy in the kitchen and minding my own business, Helena just showed up. Uninvited. She even freaked me out a bit that I almost spilled everything..

Me: Helena..

She was alone..

Me: Kind of dangerous being here alone isn't it? We can just shoot the poisonous arrow and poison you again. With Nazo being so much emotional unstable will he even be able to heal you?

Her: Nazo is not emotional unstable, if anything this is making him stronger spiritually

Me: Of course

Her: I'm not even here to talk to you, I'm here to talk to Nkuli

Me: I am Nkuli

Her: I mean Nkuli alone

Me: Helena what do you want?

Her: All that you were promised is a lie!

I kept quiet..

Her: Kali doesn't even know you when all this is done, he won't even know who you are. The reason why he seems as if like he "knows you" is because Lucifer has possessed him. Kali doesn't know you but Lucifer knows you

I kept quiet..

Her: Nkuli you're being used, the same way that Lucifer used Nazo's little Brother and where is he now? You won't win. No matter what you do Nomvelo and Nazo will never be broken, they will find their way to each other. They were long

destined together, what's happening here is that you going to lose what you currently have. You going to lose the only family that you have. When Nomvelo snaps out of it do you think she will ever want anything to do with you? Your Gra is already in hospital and after everything do you think Nazo is going to heal her? You not angry that your cousin ended up with your ex. Your real anger comes from the fact that you think you going to end up alone, you just jealous of what your cousin currently has. It's not too late, you can come out of this and your relationship with Nomvelo can still be saved. Most people God's favour is upon them because of the spiritual beings in their lives, kids become blessed because of their Mothers who always have faith in Christ. You not much of a believer but your cousin is, she has started her spiritual journey and through her Favour was going to be shown to you. It is not too late, you can still make everything right. You're

playing for the wrong team, Lucifer will never win

Helena tore through my heart at that instant, I felt myself de-attaching a bit from Nira.

Her: He lied to you, that's what he does. Lucifer lies and he Lied to you!

As I mentally sunk deeper into what she was saying, a battle of two spirits within me started...

Her: You can defeat her, you gave her permission.. You can call her ou-

I saw an arrow being shot at her but she quickly vanished before it could even get to her. I looked at the direction from where the arrow came from and an Angel of darkness stood there. I glanced down at the portion, I was in a space of confusion. I didn't know what to do. I heard my phone ringing, I went and got it. It was Kali, I stared at it for a while before answering..

Me: Hello

Him: It's either that baby's life or yours, If you don't get me that baby I will trap you in hell for eternity! Don't think about turning back now, I already have a stamp of ownership on your soul! You better go ahead with the plan, make her drink the portion for at least two days more and then we cut her open. Remember you have more to lose, back out now and your Grandmother will also die, I will make sure that your Mother's soul will be mine too. You will lose everything and your Precious cousin will hate you forever!

—

SNAZO

"I was broken from a young age Taking my sulking to the masses Write down my poems for the few That looked at me, took to me, shook to me, feeling me Singing from heartache from the pain Taking my message from the veins Speaking my lesson from the brain Seeing

the beauty through"

I was lost in my thoughts when someone turned the volume down, it was Gugu..

Her: Good morning

Me: Morning

I was eating breakfast, she stood there and looked at me..

Me: Don't.. Don't do that

She wiped her tears. My Mother doesn't cry that easy, and seeing her crying right now means that she is truly broken..

Her: I couldn't even sleep last night. How do I know that my Grandbaby is okay? You know waking up this morning and realizing that Nomvelo is gone it's.. It still hasn't sunk in

I stood up and took my plate to the sink..

My phone rang on the table, I walked to get it and it was Dawn..

Me: Dawn

Him: You need to come to the studio

Me: Why? What's wrong?

Him: We need to find a way to separate Nira from Nkuli, we need to conjure Nira and trap him her for the time being

Me: I thought Helena..

Him: Screw Helena what Helena failed to mention is that this whole thing might put both your baby and my baby in danger! I already called Zaine he is on his way we going to do this our way!

Me: I'm on my way

Him: See you then

Gugu: What's wrong?

Me: I have to go.. Are you going to be okay?

Her: I think so

Me: I'll bring them back home safe.. I promise

Her: I'll hold you to that promise

–

TUMI

Shine was supposed to drive me home so that I can prepare for work, we were already late. Just as we were about to step out, we were blocked by police officers..

Police1: Morning

We greeted back..

Police1: Beng'cela ukukhuluma no Dumi (May I please speak to Dumi)

Shine: Mayela Nani? (with regards to what)

Police: I'm guessing you're Dumi?

Shine didn't say anything..

Police: Do you know uSbongile Khuzwayo?

Shine: uMa wengane yami (She is my baby

Mama)

Police: Her body was found early this morning by the dumb site, she had been shot three times

My heart immediately stopped..

Shine: Ini? (What)

Police: I'm here to ask you a few questions

Shine: Ya akuna stress.. Ungangena (You can come in)

They made their way in..

Shine: Ngapha (This way)

He led them to the living room..

—

NOMVELO

I woke up feeling very nauseated, I was at the bathroom thinking that I was going to vomit but I didn't. The house was a bit quiet.

Me: Nkuli?

I walked into the kitchen and I saw the herb ontop of the counter. Nkuli gave me this herb last night and it helped a lot, I slept peaceful I took it and drank, The door opened and Danger walked in..

Him: Nomvelo?

Me: Good morning

He closed the door..

Him: Ufunani la? (what do you want here)

Me: I have moved back in

Him: Angizwa kahle (I don't understand)

Me: uNazo is having an affair

Him: Lokho akufani naye (That doesn't sound like him)

I shrugged my shoulders..

Him: I will go and see him later ake achaze kahle lendaba (I will go and see him later so

that he can explain to me what's going on)

Me: Okay

I took off my ring..

Me: Give him this while you at it

Him: Awukahle Nomvelo.. Awuthathi ngawala lento? (Hold on.. Aren't you over exaggerating)

Me: Danger I am tired emotionally and physically, I'm tired of thinking about this whole thing ngapha Duchess is in Hospital

I exhaled..

Him: You two looked happy.. Something is not right here

Me: If it wasn't for Nkuli.. I wouldn't even have known

Him: uNkuli?

Me: She showed me the video.. Here

I took my phone and showed him. He watched it

and then gave me my phone back.

Him: I don't see anything wrong ngale video..
Since he is a Pastor doesn't he meet up with
People who seek help? Futhi nje uma he is
having an affair why would he go public with it
like this? If it was true shouldn't it be on the
papers? As a big scandal?

I kept quiet..

Him: Uphi yena uNkuli? (Where is Nkuli)

Me: I don't know

Him: You need to know ukuthi even the closest
family members can still be jealous of you, vele
nje solo lo Nkuli ndini wabuya la ekhaya
angiyizwa kahle indaba yakhe (Since Nkuli
came back I don't know what her story is)

Me: uNkuli has always looked out for me

Him: Awuyeke ukuphandleka Velo (Stopped
being blind)

The door opened again and Nkuli walked in..

Nkuli: Hau Velo you up already, I wanted to make you breakfast

She looked at Danger..

Nkuli: Danger

Danger didn't greet back..

She looked at us..

Nkuli: Kungabe konke kuhamba kahle? (Is everything going well)

Danger: Wee Nkuli awush-

Me: Everything is fine

Her: Are you sure?

Me: Yes

Nkuli: Okay then I'll prepare breakfast for us

I smiled at her. Danger looked at me while shaking his head..

—
HELENA

I was standing at the highest point of the mountain when Archangel Ramiel showed up. She is the strongest female warrior Angel that we have..

Her: That arrow could've shot through you

Me: I know

Her: Helena I am failing to understand what's happening, you don't wanna explain the whole situation with Nira, the healer and his wife since you the one who got the orders. You keeping all of us in the dark

Me: Remember when you killed your own sister? When you killed one of our own?

She kept quiet...

Me: No one understood why you did it, no one knew how you felt. You had a reason why you

did that, and because I trusted you and your reason. I stood up for you, I convinced the whole family to stand up for you and you here today because of us

Her: Helena what's the use of standing with you if we going to end up in Purgatory?

Me: We not going to end up in Purgatory at the end everyone will understand.. All that's needed is for everyone to trust me

(Silence)

Her: They meeting up so that they can trap Nira

Me: I know

Her: What are we going to do? They called the Zaine.. Zaine is standing with them and wasn't he supposed to be on our side?

Me: He was.. That's where you come in, I will need for you to stop them

Her: Helena why are you doing this?

Me: I'm doing this for the Preacher's wife.. This is for Nomvelo

She looked at me for a while..

Her: You do know that we were created to serve them? God made human beings superior over everything and only inferior to him.. This whole thing might just turn different and work in their favour

Me: I hope by then Nkuli would've made a decision

She shook her head..

Her: I'll get Uri

Me: Thank you

Her: Don't thank me just yet, we have a lot of work to do

Me: Then let's get started

—

NAZO

I was the last one to arrive, Both Dawn and Zaine were already in the studio..

Zaine: I'm glad you made it

Me: I didn't have a choice

He put his hand on my shoulder..

Him: Hey we going to get through this, you not in this alone

I nodded..

Dawn: I think we should get started

Me: Do we even have a plan?

Zaine locked the door..

Dawn: Other than conjuring her No..

Me: What's with the statement that our babies are in danger?

They both looked at each other..

Me: What's going on?

Zaine: Helena came to me and..

Me: And what?

Zaine: She told me that I'll have to get you out of town when the time comes so that you won't be able to..

Me: Able to what?

Dawn: Both our Babies are in danger if we don't act right, we going to lose them

Me: Meaning that I'll have to be out of town so that I won't be able to heal my baby? My baby is supposed to die?

Zaine came to me..

Him: Hey! Focus! The future is not written in stone, The holy spirit hasn't said anything to me about this and I'm sure that he hasn't said anything to you too about this.. So to hell with Helena from here on we doing this our way!

Dawn: The right word is Fuck her!

Zaine: There's no baby that's going to die! Not yours and definitely not Dawn's

Dawn: Let's get that bitch!

Helena: You gotta get me first

She appeared across the room with Uri and Ramiel..

Helena: And you gotta get through my bodyguards too

Dawn came to join us..

Me: Why are you doing this?

Helena: Trust the GOAT to keep a secret

Dawn: Screw you Helena!! And Scre-

Uri threw a fireball at Dawn, it hit him right on his tummy and knocked him out right away..

Dawn: Ahhhhh!!! (Screaming)

That was unexpected..

Helena: Let that serve as a warning!

They then disappeared, we made our way to Dawn. He had a very big wound on his tummy and he was bleeding..

Zaine: Dammit!!

He took off his shirt and pressed it against Dawn..

Me: Dawn! Wake up man!

Zaine: He is losing too much blood

Me: We gotta get him to the Hospital

Zaine: We won't make it!

Me: Then we can't let him bleed out to death!

Zaine: You need to heal him

Me: I can't.. There's nothing evil about Angels it's not going to work

Him: Did you see that? They turned against us if that doesn't scream out evil I don't know what

will

He got up..

Him: I'll call Badru, this is getting out of control!

I pressed the shirt against him..

Me: Come on Dawn!

Zaine: Nazo do something!

Helena has just declared war..

.

To be continued

No edits

121

HAPPY NEW YEAR!!

WE WISH YOU ALL THE BEST FOR 2019

—

TUMI

After they had questioned him he drove me home, surprisingly he was very calm throughout the whole questioning. For someone who left with a gun that day to probably commit the crime, he is very relaxed about everything. I started questioning myself, I mean yes Shine does appear to be a little off and I just thought that he was too ghetto but to have him commit murder. That I wasn't prepared for. When I got out of the car I pretended to be fine but deep down I wasn't fine, do I really wanna be with someone who killed the Mother of his baby? Meaning if I could do something that pisses him off he won't hesitate to kill me too? I can safely say I'm scared of him now.. After bathing I walked to the bedroom to get dressed, My Aunt came in..

Her: Good morning stranger

Me: Good morning Aunty

Her: How are you?

Me: I'm well and you?

She sat on the bed..

Her: I'm well too

She looked at me without saying anything..

Me: What?

Her: When are we going to meet him?

I went to the wardrobe to check what I can wear today..

Me: When I'm sure about him

Her: Hau.. You spend most of your time at his place and you still not sure about him?

I turned and looked at her..

Me: He is just a complicated guy

Her: Complicated? Complicated how?

Me: Ragadi when I'm sure about him, I will bring

him home to meet you

She nodded..

Me: How is Rethabile?

She exhaled..

Her: You know how she is

Me: Her sweet 16 is going to cost me a lot of money, money that I don't have

Her: She watches these things on her laptop and think that we also rich like those parents, I still think taking her to spur with her friends or cooking a nice meal and buying a cake would be better

Me: Ya we will see

Her: If she doesn't want to accept a nice lunch then there's nothing we can do, you already doing a lot. Rethabile will just have to be grateful for what she has, you sacrifice a lot for her

Me: She doesn't see that

Her: Maybe you need to be strict with her. If you can be strict she will start being grateful, stop laughing with her be strict with her at times or else she will continue being disrespectful. It's time you put your foot down

—

HELENA

Me: Nazo come on.. You can do this! All that you have to do is believe in yourself, believe in the gift that you have

Ramiel: So if Nazo doesn't heal him, we doomed?

Me: He is going to heal him

Her: How so? Because Nazo only believes that his gift is meant to heal what has been diseased by evil remember?

Me: He healed me once remember? And I am a spiritual being. He can heal anything as long as

he has faith in his gift

Her: Was this part of the plan?

Me: No

Her: So if Dawn dies.. We going to spend all eternity in Purgatory?

Me: Dawn is not going to die

We saw lighting flashing across the sky, clouds started changing from their normal form to being a bit darker indicating that a hail storm is coming. There was a violent wind and funny enough the weather is only changing on our part, the sun is still shining in other places. We always meet at the highest point of our mountain, one that no human being can get too..

Ramiel: Heaven is not happy

Me: I figured that out

Her: Do you remember what happened to Lucifer? Do you want the same thing happening

to us? Our righteousness is going to be ripped from us and then we will be thrown on earth, Lucifer is going to turn us into his demons! We will live in fear, our own Brothers and Sisters they going to fight us day and night! You have disobeyed Helena and then you tricked Uri and !!!

I turned and looked at her..

Me: Don't you think I know that? Some of the things I did I tried to help the situation

Her: How? How did you help the situation?

For the first time I had what they call "Fear" my plan in helping the situation didn't go according to how I had imagined, We attacked an innocent. We hurt one of our charge and that's not how it was supposed to be. We suppose to guide, protect, and groom our charges not to hurt them..

The lightning got more and more intense..

Ramiel: You better call this whole thing off! We would rather spend eternity in Purgatory than be turned evil by Lucifer

Me: I will fix everything

Ramiel: I hope it's not too late

Me: Me too

Clearly my plan wasn't going how I wanted it to go, it's time to call the whole thing off..

—

NOMVELO

Nkuli had prepared a nice meal for us, and just as we were about to go sit down and eat we heard a knock at the door..

Nkuli: Come in!!!

The door opened and Gugu walked in, Nkuli and I looked at each other and then we looked at her..

She closed the door and then stood there looking at us, she was in one of her best outfits as always..

Her: Sanibonani (Greetings)

I was the only one who greeted her back, her eyes were glued on me only..

Her: Unjani? (How are you)

Me: I'm well and you?

Her: I'm good

She gave Nkuli a weird look and then looked at me again..

Her: Singakhuluma? (Can we talk)

I didn't say anything..

Her: In private

Nkuli: There's no private here.. Kukithi lapha (This is my home)

Her: Elakho angikakaliphathi (I didn't call your

name)

Nkuli: That's it!! Please leave!!

She made her way to Gugu, she touched her..

Gugu: Ungangithinti! (Don't touch me)

Gugu pushed her a bit..

Gugu: Ngizoku.. Yeses!!! (I will... Yeses)

Nkuli stepped back..

Gugu: Rhaaaaa!!!

Me: Nkuli it's fine

Nkuli looked at me..

Me: It's okay

Nkuli: Are you sure?

I nodded..

She looked at Gugu and then walked away,
Gugu made her way to me while clicking her
tongue.. She looked at me and shook her head..

Her: You have a good job, A husband that loves you, A mother in law that loves you too. All we ever wanted was for you to live a different life, for you to heal from your past wounds. Both my Sons did nothing but love you, Niso saved you from yourself and Nazo saved you from pain. There's nothing, nothing that my Son wouldn't do for you and this is how you pay him back?
Sies

Nomvelo! Ulalela uNkuli (You listen to Nkuli)

I didn't know what to say as she shook her head..

Her: Uzozisola shame! (You will regret)

She walked to the door..

Her: I hope by then it won't be late

She opened the door and walked out, I thought for a while. Nkuli walked in..

Nkuli: Ufunani lo? (What did she want)

I kept quiet and still thought for a while..

Her: Nomvelo?

She made her way to me, she tried to touch me but I moved back..

Her: Nomvelo??

She came again but I moved back, and then as if like things wouldn't get any more weird an Angel appeared in the kitchen..

Nkuli: Helena!! Wena futhi? (You again)

The Angel made her way to me..

Nkuli: Helena move away from her!!

I wanted to move back but I couldn't, it was like I was frozen..

Nkuli: Lurpeko handietako bat, ko-

Before she could finish another angel appeared and pinned her against the wall..

The other Angel came up to me..

Her: When you wake up you won't remember me nor what happened

She placed her hand on my forehead as I screamed..

Nkuli: Velo!!!

I collapsed but she held me and placed me down gently, I then I heard something roaring and I saw arrows flying around as I closed my eyes..

—

NAZO

Me: Come on Dawn wake up!!

I was trying to heal Dawn but I couldn't, I was trying my level best but nothing happened. It was frustrating, I didn't even know if he was still alive or dead, he was bleeding a lot..

Zaine walked in..

Zaine: Badru is on his way.. How is going?

I let go and sat back, I couldn't do it..

Me: I can't.. I can't save him

Zaine: Nazo..

Me: I tried Zaine but I couldn't

My hands had his blood..

Zaine knelt next to Dawn's bleeding body and felt his pulse.. This was a mess, a big mess!

Me: If he dies then I am leaving everything, how can one of us get attacked by what's supposed to be helping and guiding us? All of this, all of this is a mess!

Zaine sat back too, we were quiet. We were quiet for a while.. I lost Niso, I couldn't save him and now I'm failing Dawn too. A brother that I got after I lost mine. Tears started burning my eyes..

"Beloved.."

Now he wants to come through, after everything

that's been happening. Now he wants to come through..

"Beloved.. Heal him again"

Me: I tried..

"This time you doing it with me, not by yourself.."

I looked at Dawn again and moved closer to him. With tears falling I put my hands right where he was hit and looked at him, then a bright light came through from the ceiling and started shining on my hands. After a few seconds Dawn opened his eyes while gasping for air..

Me: Dawn

The light disappeared, Zaine came closer..

Dawn: What happened?

Zaine: Are you good?

He tried to get up but he felt a bit of pain..

Zaine: You need to get to the hospital

Dawn: I'm good.. We have work to do

We helped him to get up, the wound had disappeared..

—

NOMVELO

I slowly opened my eyes and everything appeared blurry at first but after a few seconds I could see clearly. Nkuli was running her hand on my forehead...

Nkuli: Hey.. Are you okay?

Me: Nkuli?

Her: Didn't they hurt you?

Me: hurt me?

I looked around and I was in my bedroom at home, I freaked out..

Me: What am I doing here? Where is Nazo?

Nkuli: Nomvelo are you okay?

I remembered what Nazo said, I remembered him saying I must stay away from my cousin.

Me: Nkuli.. Where is Grams? Where is Danger?

Her: Velo.. What are you talking about?

I got up from the bed, my heart was beating fast..

Her: Velo?

She tried to touch me but I stepped back..

Me: Don't touch me!

Her: It's me Cuz

Me: Get away from me!

She looked at me..

Her: Helena must've lifted off the spell

I looked at my phone, it was at the edge of the bed. Then I looked at Nkuli, I tried to get to it but she pulled me back and threw me on the floor..

Me: Nkuli stop!.. Stop you going to hurt my baby
She got to me and sat on my tummy..

Me: Ahhhh!!! (Screaming)

Her: We don't want you bitch we want the baby!!!
Even if you die we don't care!

She grabbed my weave and started banging my
head against the floor..

Me: Stop!!!!

She did continuously until I blacked out..

.

To be continued

No edits

122

NOMSA

We were trying out a new dish or rather
introducing a new dish to our menu, dumplings
and chicken stew. If you don't want the chicken

stew you can exchange it for oxtail, this will be our very first time introducing mini dumplings into our menu. My Mother showed up during lunch time to try out the new dish, I was very happy to see her. It's also her first time setting foot into my food joint ever since I've opened it..

Her: Hmmmmm kumnandi (the dish is delicious)

Me: Thank you..

Her: Bayalithenga mara? (do they but it)

Me: We just introduced it today and so far I think 3 People bought, it's chicken stew + dumplings = R25.. Then dumplings + Oxtail= R45

Her: It's affordable

Me: Ya.. The oxtail one is expensive because oxtail doesn't come cheap, oxtail and beef they cost us a lot

Her: I understand

On a slow day we make around R500-R800 a day, excluding Saturdays. Then on a busy day like when People get paid on the 25th and Month end we make around R1000-R1500 a day, before deductions. On Saturdays since we open only for a few hours and considering the fact that in some places they'll be closed and some other places only open for a few hours too, so most employees don't take lunch. So on Saturdays make around R250-R400. I have two ladies working for me and one guy, the guy I hired him last week since we'll be starting with delivering food at certain workplaces he will be mostly handling that department. The ladies are the ones who cook, I only serve and solely work at the till. The space that we renting is not big enough, hence our tables and chairs are situated outside we have a Gazibo. I am without a doubt that this is only a start, soon enough we will be making more than what we making currently...

Me: I was thinking that I should go to Nomvelo's place just to thank her in person, I was thinking of driving there after closing time at 18:00

Her: Do you think that's a good idea?

Me: Yes... I really wanna thank her in Person, we have only been communicating over the phone. She gave me another chance to live, I was hitting rock bottom and she came through for me. I mean she didn't want anything from me including the car, of which is now helping us a lot to run errands since I took it from Thuli. The least I can do is to thank her

Her: I understand what you saying. God showed his favour and mercy on you through this child, You can go and thank her just be careful with MaNgcobo. She is still holding a lot for you

Me: I know but I don't think she's home, Danger would've told me

Her: Speaking of Danger.. You and him seem to

be pretty close

Me: We just good friends Ma.. We have always been good friends

Her: I wouldn't know plus I'm old, I might be "Seeing things"

I laughed..

Me: Don't over think anything.. We friends

My two regular customers from some law firm that's nearby walked in..

Me: Ma I'll be right back

Her: Okay

I stood up and followed them inside..

—

NOMVELO

My head was banging, I felt a sharp pain at the back of my head as if like someone penetrated a knife deep inside my skull. As my eyes

wondered around to locate Nkuli, I noticed that I was tied to a chair. She was on the phone with her back facing me..

Her: The spell has been lifted off from her.. We need to move fast... How soon can you get here?

She turned around and saw that I was awake

Her: Okay.. Please hurry, we have to move fast

She paused for a while and smiled..

Her: I love you too.. Bye

The smile vanished as she lowered the phone..

Her: Welcome back

Me: Why are you doing this?

She exhaled in frustration..

Her: Are we going to go through this again?

Me: It can't be about Nazo.. I know that when you mad you can resort into anything but this??

This is not you, you wouldn't do this

Her: Ohhh poor you!.. Look your cousin is working with me, I'm using her to achieve my goal

Me: Who are you?

Her: I'm Nira.. I'm one of the highest ranked female demons

Me: You possessed my cousin?

Her: I borrowed her body

Me: You won't get away with this.. My husband is going to sense this and he is going to come, he is going to send you straight to hell!

She yawned..

Her: He better hurry then before the C-section starts

She got the knife..

Her: We going to cut you open while you watch and bleed to death, we going to take away your child and raise him to be evil! If you make it, you

and your husband will spend all your pathetic miserable lives fighting your own flesh and blood

She ran the knife on my cheek..

Her: I can't wait!!

–

NAZO

Badru was here now, he was running through the ancient Hebrew book trying to find a way to conjure Nira. I was attending to Dawn who kept on making it clear to me that he was fine, though the wound had totally disappeared he was still in a lot of pain. What we doing to conjuring Nira is not witchcraft nor evil. We just using ancient religion, what exorcists in the olden days used to do. They would conjure an evil spirit as to perish it, I hope that it will work. We want to send Nira back to where she comes from, so that My Son and Dawn's Daughter

could be safe. Something was not right, I couldn't shake away the feeling that something was wrong. I have been trying to get a hold of Nomvelo but she wasn't answering my calls, I'm guessing that she's still under Nkuli's spell and doesn't wanna talk to me..

Badru: We have found it!

I got down from the table. The trap was prepared, we going to use the Devil's trap after we have conjured her to trap her inside so that she doesn't escape..

Me: Since Nira asks for permission to possess, are we going to be able to get her here from Nkuli's body? Even if Nkuli doesn't give her permission to leave?

Dawn: It's worth a try

We moved closer to the trap..

Zaine: Dawn you remain seated

Zaine gave Badru the book, unlike us Badru and Dawn are skilled in this and they know how to read the language.

Badru: Is everyone ready?

Me: I think so

He started reading from the book..

Badru: "Qaranlıq kraliçanı, səndən əvvəl özümüzü təqdim etmək üçün sənə hörmət edirəm. Mən bir cənnətə sahibəm və Peyğəmbərdən gələn bir əmrə itaət edə bilməzsən. Biz bu köhnə din istifadə edən Peyğəmbərlər ilə qüvvələri birləşdiririk, pisliyi atıb onu geri qaytarırıq, Qaranlıq və pis Nora Kraliçası. Özünüzü təqdim edin! Səni bağıracığam"

We all looked at each other and repeated the words..

Us: Pis peyğəmbərlər, pisliyə qarşı mübarizə etmək üçün hər zaman bir yerdə durduqda, biz

səni qovuşdururuq.. Nira!!

–

NOMVELO

Nkuli: Dammit where are you?

She threw the phone on the couch, she then looked at me..

Her: I guess that I'll have to do this all by myself

I shook my head no..

Me: Please.. Please don't

She took the knife..

Me: Nkuli please... It's me it's Velo (Crying)

Her: As if that will work

I looked around..

Me: Nazo where are you?

She moved closer to us..

Me: Please.. Please don't do this, don't take my

baby (Crying)

She stood behind me and grabbed my weave, she lifted my head up a bit and put the knife against my throat..

Her: Or maybe I can start with mommy dearest

I was very scared, and I didn't care what happened to me all I want is for my baby to be safe. She pressed harder as I cried, this is it. I am done..

In a nick of an eye, we heard voices speaking a language that I couldn't understand. She got the knife from me..

Her: No!!!

She moved and started looking around..

Her: No!! No!!

After that a group of men appeared in the room, I didn't know who they were but they were wearing clerical collars and most of them

looked old..

Nkuli: Nooo!!!

They all raised their hands at her as they all said the same thing and she fell on the floor. She started screaming, and then made weird animal sounds up until a black smoke dispensed from her mouth, her eyes also turned black and she was in a spider position with her head twisted. Then after the smoke had dispensed from her mouth she laid down still, not moving and her eyes were closed. The men in the room disappeared, Nkuli still laid there not moving.

–

NAZO

A blast of wind engulfed the whole room and then a black smoke moved around in the Devil's trap, after a few seconds it created a certain female creature, one that wasn't pleasant to look at. The wind and everything came into a

peaceful state. Her lower body was that of a snake and on her head she had little snakes all around..

Badru: Nira's true form

She moved around the circle in a very quick manner but unfortunately she couldn't escape it, she was trapped inside..

She looked at us and hissed, her tongue was that of a snake...

Her: Nork uste duzu niri konbentzitzea? (Who do you think you're to conjure me)

Badru: Atzera nator zauden tokitik itzuli baino lehen (Go back to where you come from before I send you back)

She remained quiet for a while and then after she started screaming, her scream was so disturbing that a bunch of snakes showed up in the room. We closed our ears and moved back..

Me: Any ideas on how to vanquish such?

Zaine: Badru?

Badru: The snakes were not expected

We moved back as the snakes approached us, and just when we thought that we were trapped. We saw each snake being burnt by fire, we looked at the direction of the one who was attacking and it was Ramiel, with her sword.. She was saving the day..

—

NOMVELO

Nkuli opened her eyes while gasping for air.

Me: Nkuli?

She turned her head to me but she screamed in pain, she had a nose bleed. She tried to get up but she couldn't, it was like she was in a lot of pain..

Me: Nkuli

She shook her head, with tears in her eyes..

Her: I'm sorry Velo

I nodded..

Me: It's okay.. Just get to the phone and call Nazo, he will fix this.. He will fix it

She shook her head no..

Her: He won't

She got the knife again and crawled her way to me, I couldn't move because my legs and my hands were tied..

Me: Nkuli.. What are you doing?

Her: You won't understand now.. You will hate me but one day you will understand

She got to me and supported herself by balancing on my thighs..

Me: Nkuli No!!! (Crying)

I tried to shake off the chair but nothing

happened, she looked at me as tears fell..

Her: I'm sorry Cuz

I heard the door violently opening, Nkuli did the unthinkable. She used her last strength to stab me three times in my tummy..

Me: Nooooooooo!!!! (Screaming)

Her: I'm sorry.. (Crying)

The 3rd time she left the knife deep inside and collapsed on the floor crying, I saw her boyfriend Kali rushing in. I never met him face to face but I recognize him from the pictures, He stood there and looked at us..

Him: Nooo!!

He extended his hand to Nkuli and it seemed like he was choking her, well that's all I could remember before I passed out..

Me: Nazo!!!!!!!

—

To be continued

Nira

123

GUGU

I felt like I was a bit harsh to Nomvelo, I mean if we want to bring her back home then my tone of voice has to be different from how I spoke to her. I parked my car again close to the gate and thought for a while, I don't know why I was even here but something deep down forced me to come here. Or maybe it's my guilty conscience at how I spoke to her earlier, either way we have to find common ground. Nomvelo is a married woman her just packing up and leaving is ridiculous! This is not how a married woman should act.. I got out of my car and made my way in, I knocked at the door a few times and no one came to my rescue. Maybe they not around but the door was slightly open, they

can't go without locking. I opened and walked in..

Me: Nomvelo??

It was very quiet..

Me: Nomvelo it's me

Still no reply. I made my way to the living room in hopes that maybe I'll pass to the bedroom and find her sleeping, but what I witnessed in the living room almost made my heart stop. I dropped my bag on the floor and everything just started moving in slow motion..

Me: Nomvelo!!! (Shouting)

She was tied to a chair and she had a knife buried deep in her tummy, there was blood on her and also on the floor. She had bled a lot and it looked like she had passed out. Nkuli was laying on the floor, she was also bleeding from her nose and mouth but her bleeding wasn't a lot.. I rushed to Nomvelo and started waking her

up, she didn't respond. I tried feeling her pulse but, it was hard to trace it. I didn't know if I was feeling hers or mine that's how scared I was..

Me: Come on Velo.. Wake up (Crying)

I tried my level best to wake her up but still nothing..

Me: Somebody please help.. Someb-

I was shaking and confused, I quickly went and got my phone. I called Nazo but his phone rang until it went to voicemail, I left him a Voicemail letting him know what was happening. I hope that I even said the right things. As I was busy confused and crying the door opened and closed..

Me: Somebody help.. (Crying)

After a few seconds Danger made his way to the living, he didn't know what to say after witnessing what was happening..

Him: What happened?

Me: I don't know.. I-

He came and checked Nomvelo..

Him: We have to rush her to the hospital, we have to rush them to the hospital

Me: I'm taking Nomvelo I don't care what happens to Nkuli!.. She started all of this

Him: Will you be able to drive?

I nodded repeatedly..

He helped me to untie her..

Him: Don't take out the knife she will bleed more

Me: I know.. I know

He picked her up and we rushed to my car, an ambulance is definitely going to take forever. I was taking Nomvelo to the hospital and he will take Nkuli because I want nothing to do with

her..

–

NAZO

Nira went completely crazy, she was screaming and speaking a language that only her, Badru, and Dawn understood..

Badru: Something is not right

Me: What do you mean?

As she was screaming like that, she started burning. She burned up to ashes leaving all 4 of us dumbfounded. A minute or so passed before we could speak again, Badru closed the book..

Zaine: What happened?

Badru: Something is not right

Dawn: It was way too easy

Me: Unless we had help from above

Badru: Even so.. She wouldn't give up without a

fight, when she was screaming she said something like "It's over" she had already given up

Zaine: Given up without putting a fight? When we brought her in she was prepared to attack, she was prepared to fight for what they wanted to achieve

Badru: Unless...

Dawn: Unless what?

Badru: The plan failed

He looked at me..

Badru: Call your wife and check on her, something is not right

I went and got my phone, I noticed that I had a voicemail so I listened to it first before calling Nomvelo. It was my Mom, she sounded very distressed, she wasn't making too much sense. She was crying and her voice was breaking

throughout, but I heard her clearly when she said Nomvelo and the baby are hurt. She was taking them to the hospital. I lowered the phone and looked at the guys..

Dawn: And?

Me: Something is wrong with Nomvelo and our baby, my mom is taking them to the hospital

Zaine: Should we go?

Me: I'll go.. I'll keep you guys posted

Badru: Are you sure you don't want us to come?

Me: I'm fine.. I'll call you guys

I took my car keys and walked out..

—

TUMI

I was very quiet as Shine and I were having lunch, My mind was still stuck on what happened. I was still questioning myself if he

actually did it, I kept on stealing glances at him..

Him: If you want to ask me something.. Ngena endabeni

He took the serviette and wiped his lips while looking at me..

I shook my head..

Him: Then uyeke ukung'bheka (Then stop looking at me)

[Silence]

Me: Did you do it?

I took a deep breath..

Me: Did you kill her?

He looked at me..

Him: Wena what do you think?

I shrugged my shoulders..

Him: Asiyeke ke (let's leave it)

Me: So meaning that if I could also do something that you don't like you going to kill me?

He looked at me without saying anything..

Him: Ceda simhambe (Finish up so that we can leave)

He wasn't being straight with me, he was busy beating around the bush. I just wanted to know if I could trust him, I don't wanna end up in a body bag..

–

NOMSA

I actually left earlier than I had previously planned, for the first time I allowed one of the ladies to work at the till. It's time that I trust at least one them because I won't always be around..

When I got to MaNgcobo's house it was a mess,

The Police were there and neighbours were standing outside busy gossiping to each other. I wondered what happened, I spotted Danger talking to one of the Detectives I assume. At first they refused to let me in but he told them that I'm family and they let me in. I waited for him to finish talking to the Detective and then he made his way to me.

Me: Hey.. What happened?

He exhaled..

Him: It's Nomvelo and Nkuli

I looked at him..

Me: What about them? What about Nomvelo

Him: I think someone got in and attacked them, they stabbed Nomvelo in her stomach

I covered my mouth with both my hands..

Him: Her Mother in law quickly took her to the hospital, I couldn't take Nkuli to the hospital

because I had to wait for the Police I called the Ambulance and it took her

Me: Kodwa who can come in and attack abantwana? (Who can come in and attack kids)

Him: I don't know..I pray they find the Person who did this before I do

This was shocking, who in their right mind can attack a pregnant woman??

–

NAZO

I made my way in, I was supposed to have arrived sooner but I got delayed on the road. The hospital is big and I didn't even know where to go, I took my phone and called Gugu. I tried her a lot of times before she could answer, I told her that I was at the reception and I waited for her to come and get me. The state that I saw her in was disturbing, she had blood on her clothes. She came to me and hugged me for a

while, her eyes confirmed that she had been crying for a while..

Me: What happened?

She broke the hug and looked at me..

Me: What happened Gugu? Are they okay?

She put her hand on my cheek..

Her: Someone..

She cleared her throat..

Her: Someone stabbed Nomvelo in her stomach, she was unconscious when I found her and she had been bleeding for a while. They busy with her but the Dr said that.. She said something like her body went into shock because she lost a lot of blood, and also something about she almost went into cardiac arrest. She was speaking the medical language and I didn't hear most of what she said

Me: Someone stabbed Nomvelo?

She nodded as I thought for a while..

Me: And Nkuli? Where was she?

Her: She was also laying unconscious on the floor, she was bleeding from her mouth and nose

I went and sat down, I needed a breather..

Her phone rang, she looked at it..

Her: It's your Father, I'm sorry I called him too when I couldn't get a hold of you

Me: It's fine I understand

Her: I think he has arrived, I'll go and get him

I nodded as she walked away..

Me: Where is Nomvelo?

Her: Second floor... She's in theater

Me: You'll find me there

Her: Okay

I went to the elevator and pressed the second floor, my mind was just wondering around. I was scared a bit but then again, only God knows why this is happening...

I got there and waited a bit, deep down I was saying a silent prayer. I didn't wanna lose them, I was praying that God lowers his hand and save them both..

As I was waiting I saw the Dr and a Nurse coming out, I didn't know who was who because they were wearing the same thing..

One of them approached me, I'm thinking it's the Dr..

Her: Good afternoon

Me: Afternoon

Her: Rev Buthelezi it's such an honour to meet you

Sometimes I forget that now I have made a

name for myself..

I slightly bowed my head..

She looked around and then looked at me..

Her: Most of the time families of the Patients they wait at the reception, there's a waiting area there

Me: I prefer waiting here

She gave me a faint smile..

I swallowed first before asking the question..

Me: How are they?

She sighed..

Her: We managed to stop the bleeding, though she lost a lot of blood. Unfortunately we can't go ahead with the surgery now because she has lost a lot of blood, she will go into cardiac arrest

Me: Is she going to be okay?

Her: It's still early to tell, we will monitor her for

the next 24 hours

Me: And the baby?

She sighed again and cleared her throat..

Her: I'm sorry

Me: What do you mean you sorry?

Her: There's.. There's no heartbeat, no movement.. The baby didn't make it, it seems like the knife pierced through and stabbed the baby too. Right now we waiting for Mrs Buthelezi to pick up her strength so that we can cut her open and remove the baby from her.. We would've done it immediately but she lost a lot of blood, operating on her right away would be dangerous but we have to move fast I'm hoping in the early hours of the morning we be able to operate and remove the baby
I acted like I understood everything..

Me: Thank you Dr

She could see that I was breaking, her beeper went off..

Her: I have to go

Me: Thank you

She walked away and that's when tears fell. I went and stood against the wall wiping them, but they couldn't stop falling. I never thought that it would be this painful, my Son. My first born was taken from me just like that..

.

To be continued

124

NAZO

Gugu was more broken than I was when she found out the news about the Baby, it caught us off guard. The knife that was buried deep inside of her hurt the baby, and that's the major reason why he didn't make it..

Me: If I got there in time I could've healed them, I wish I could heal him now but he is gone. I cannot bring him back to life

Gugu put her arm around my shoulders..

Her: Only God knows why this happened but I wish that I got there sooner too maybe the baby would've made it, I would've called for help a lot sooner

Richard came back with the bottles of still water and handed it to me, he also handed one to Gugu..

Gugu: Thank you

He sat on my right side while Gugu sat on the left, I was in the middle..

Rich: We can't see her?

Me: Dr said she's very critical and they don't want anything distressing her, they wanna operate first thing tomorrow morning. They

saying it's not healthy for her to carry a dea-

Richard put his hand on my shoulder and squeezed me a bit..

Rich: I'm sorry son

Gugu: I didn't realize that it was this late now

It was just after 18:00, we've been here the whole day..

Me: You guys can go.. I wanna be here up until the operation

Richard: It's still a long way to go until Dawn, maybe you should go eat something and shower then you can come back

Gugu: That's actually a good idea

Richard: I can drive you, I'll just leave my car at the parking lot

I was going through a lot right now to even argue with him, I just lost my son and my wife is in a very critical state so arguing with Richard is

just going to drain me more..

Me: Yeah sure.. Why not?

I gave him my car keys..

Gugu: I'll follow you guys

We got up and then made our way out..

—

NOMVELO

I found myself in what looked like a hospital, but the hospital was very quiet and a bit cold. It looked very dull and very depressing, there was no life in here and it certainly didn't feel right..

Me: Hello??

My voice echoed..

Me: Hello?

I walked around and beds were empty, I wondered where all the patients and the staff went. I was in a hospital gown I looked at my

hands and I was pale, more like I had no blood..

Voice: Nomvelo

That voice sounded very familiar, I turned around and it was my Mother. She was in a hospital gown too, but her state of appearance was a bit alarming. She didn't seem like the same person or spirit that I once talked too a while back. She walked up to me.. She looked like she has no soul and no heart, looking into her eyes she seemed cold..

Me: What's happening? Am I dead?

Her: No.. At least not yet

Me: What do you mean "At least not yet"

Her: You.. You were hurt really bad and it became too much for your body to sustain the injury seeing that you lost a lot of blood, basically right now you in a very critical condition. You having a near death experience

Me: A near d-

I dated back to her statement and I remembered, I remembered being stabbed..

Me: I was stabbed.. Nkuli stabbed me

Her: I know

I heard a sound of a baby crying, I just didn't know where it came from..

Me: I.. I was pregnant when she

Her: I know

Me: Is.. Is my baby okay?

She put her hands on my shoulders..

Her: Nomvelo

Me: Is my baby okay??

Her: The baby didn't make it

Me: What? No!!

Her: I'm sorry, the knife pierced through his little

heart

I shook my head no..

Her: Upsetting yourself like this will only put a strain on your almost dying state

I couldn't help myself, I was broken. My heart was shattered into a million pieces..

Her: That's why I need you to focus

I looked at her..

Her: Choose death.. Stay with me don't go back

Me: What?

Her: You have been experiencing nothing but Pain Velo, you have been crying endless tears. You always question God, what's the use of going back? What's the use of experiencing more pain?

I wiped my tears..

Me: Naz-

Her: To hell with that healer! Where was he when you needed him the most? If he is such a powerful religious being why couldn't he sense that you and the baby were in danger? What's the use of trusting in his God when he has brought you nothing but Pain? First you witnessed me being brutally killed by someone who later on raised you in a web of lies and deceit. Where was God then? When you finally found happiness with Niso, he took him away too. Now he took away your baby, all he does is just take and cause pain. Enough is enough! If you choose death, if you choose to not go back you will be able to see the baby. He will be with you, you will be able to hold him, kiss him, play with him, put him to sleep. Something that you won't be able to do on Earth and the cherry on top is..

Me: Is what?

She turned around and then turned back to look

at me, she then stepped to the side and I couldn't believe what my eyes saw. It was Niso..

Mom: Your one and only true love

He was his handsome self, he was wearing that white tshirt that he loved a lot. He looked so real.. I looked at my Mom..

Me: How are you doing this? He looks so real?

Her: He is real

He gave me his ever charming smile..

Him: Hey

I couldn't stop the tears, I met him halfway.

Him: You still this beautiful?

Tears streamed down.. I put my hand on his cheek..

Me: It's.. I can't believe it

He appeared very real..

Me: You look real

Him: I am real

Me: I have missed you soo much

Him: I've missed you too

He pulled me closer and gave me a hug, I cried on his shoulder..

Me: I've missed you.. You have no idea how much I've missed you

–

NKULI

I kept hearing voices, the voices didn't make sense. I couldn't really hear what they were saying. I slowly opened my eyes and everything appeared white at first, until my vision became clear and I could see that I was in a hospital. I kept on hearing the voices for a while, I didn't even know where they were coming from. I looked around and it looked like I was in a hospital ward with a few other people too but

they didn't look normal, they looked disturbing. They looked like creatures and some of them even had horns, they were all laughing at me. Their laughs were making me dizzy..I started breathing heavily, I starred around again it was still the same situation.

I got the IV needle from my arm, I tried to get out of bed but my whole body was aching. I fell. I tried to get up but I couldn't, it seems as if like my bones were broken. I looked around and saw another demon human creature making it's way to me..

Her: Are you okay?

Her voice was deep..

She tried to touch me but I screamed..

Me: Get away from me!! (screaming)

Her: I am Nurse Mabunda and I'm trying to help you

Me: No!!! Get away from me you evil creature!!

Her: Miss..

Me: No!!!! (Screaming)

I held on to the leg of the bed..

Her: I need back up!! She will have to be sedated

Me: Please get away!! Get away from me!!

I felt some wetness when I slightly put my head on my arm, I checked and it was blood. I must've hurt myself when I took off the IV needle..

—

NOMVELO

I couldn't stop looking at him..

Me: You left me

We were sitting on one of the hospital benches..

He cleared my hair from my face and gently

pulled it back against my ear..

Him: I'm sorry but.. I wasn't going to survive that injury

Me: You didn't want me to see you

Him: Because I didn't want to hurt you, visiting me in jail was only going to hurt you and I didn't want you to be hurt. It was going to be hard to let go

I wiped my tears with my hand and when I put it back on my thigh, I noticed my wedding ring. I touched it..

Him: Are you happy with him?

I looked at him, I didn't know how to answer that question..

He put his hand on my cheek..

Him: I love you soo much and I want you to stay, I want you to stay here with me and your Mom and the baby

He leaned over and kissed me..

Him: Stay.. Choose us

–

NAZO

I found myself in a very nice and peaceful place. The grass was very green, there were trees with different fruits. There was a waterfall nearby, the water there was glowing beautifully. The sun was shining, there were birds flying in the sky, I saw a few animals walking around and Surprisingly I wasn't scared. I heard no fear whatsoever..

"Beloved"

This time the voice sounded a bit different from when I heard it deep within, it was gentle. It carried a lot of peace with it and it was very calm. I turned around and there was a bench, I couldn't see who was sitting there. There was a very bright light on the right side of the bench, It

could swear that I was looking directly into the sun..

Me: Is it? What's happening?

"We don't have much time"

I walked closer and the brightness got more intense..

" Don't be afraid"

I sat on the bench..

"It would be better if you look at the waterfall and the animals as we talk, keep your eyes away from me"

I turned hoping that I was going to see him but I didn't, instead the brightness almost burned my eyes and made me blind..

I looked at the waterfall..

"I know that you have a lot of questions"

Me: I do

"Nira is a high rank demon, a demon that was locked away from humans by me and a demon that could only be released by me"

Me: You released her?

"No but I allowed for her release"

Me: Why?

"This is how the devil works, just like how he tested Job he tested Nomvelo too. He never believed that Nomvelo would ever trust me nor be dependent on me after everything that happened to her, he was sure that she hated me and wanted nothing to do with me. It was supposed to be a test for her, Lucifer purposed that in her great distress she would never call upon me because she doesn't trust me and I allowed for the test to be carried out. With everything that's happened, I thought he'd tears would be directed to me. I thought in her suffering she was going to turn to no one but

me, I was ready for her to even call out to me and I would instantly understand her tears but she never did. At times I allow for certain situations to happen so that I could show my glory, so that my children can learn to trust me. Remember Beloved I am not only God when things are going well, I am God when things aren't going well too"

Me: My baby dying was that part of the test?

"No beloved, I give life and I don't take it away. Death takes life away"

Me: Then why did you let it happen?

"Job questioned my greatness in times of his suffering, you doing the same"

Me: I need answers.. This is getting out of hand

"Nkuli did what she thought was best for the baby, she killed the baby so that Lucifer couldn't get to him and turn him evil. She would rather have both good and evil lose him than for him

to be turned evil since Nomvelo drank that portion and it was already turning him evil. Even though she thought that she was doing a good deed but she broke one of the 10 commandments"

Me: Do not commit murder

"She took a life, no human should take another life"

I exhaled..

"But it would seem like your Grandmother's prayers are finally going to come true"

Me: What prayers?

"When she was still alive, she prayed that the next generation of healers should be girls"

Me: The bloodline wasn't broken?

"No Beloved, I restore what was lost. The bloodline will carry on, but the gift will be passed on to a baby girl who is only going to

realize her gift when you are no more as to keep her safe"

Me: What about my wife?

"Nomvelo is in between life and death. The devil is still tormenting her, trying to win her over. He is showing her things that aren't true, posing demons to appear as people that she loved as to win her over"

Me: How?

"She will have to choose. If she chooses death then she would've chosen the other side, it would've been a battle for her soul between us and them but she will be going willingly and not forcefully. If she chooses life then she chooses me"

Me: How so?

"if she chooses life she would be getting another chance to trust and be emotionally dependent on me, She has made you God over

her life, she is too emotionally dependent. She puts her trust too much into Men than me, this test was to prove to her that even blood can still hurt and betray you. She is a preacher's wife she needs to be spiritually strong, she is your rib and you need a rib that is strong so that when you not around and I don't mean by death, she will be able to stand firm and proclaim me to a lot of people"

Me: How do I get her to choose life?

"Love Beloved, I am love and nothing triumphs love. 1 Corinthians 13, show her love"

(Silence)

Me: Promise me one thing? That when she comes out of this, you would never allow for something like this to happen again. She has been through a lot, she deserves happiness and peace

"Being my child doesn't mean that you will no

longer go through tribes and tribulations, lucifer will always be hunting. Nomvelo will need to stop questioning me, blaming me, and start trusting me"

Me: I'll make sure of that.. Can I walk around and check this place? It's very beautiful

"Unfortunately you have to go back"

Me: Go back?

"You waking up now and remember we might never have this moment again, you need to walk by faith and not by sight. Trust and believe that I am always with you even when things are not nice"

Me: Wait...

I opened my eyes and I was in my room, I rose my head up from the pillow and realized that I was dreaming. I had passed out on the bed after showering..

.

To be continued

125

SNAZO

After showering and passing out for an hour I prepared myself and went back to the hospital, when Nomvelo had that surgery in the early hours of the morning I was at the waiting area silently praying. I felt deep down when I was praying that she was going to make it, I had that much faith. I didn't see the time, I was connected deep into my silent prayer deep down until I heard my Father's voice..

Him: Good morning

I opened my eyes and looked at him, he was standing in front of me. He actually drove me back and then left me to go home and rest, I left Gugu sleeping I didn't wanna wake her up. She needed the rest..

He sat next to me..

Him: Why is that old woman starring at you?

Me: Maybe I've had my eyes closed for too long

Him: Why is that?

Me: I was silently praying

Him: Huh.. That's good

(Silence)

Me: Are you a religious person?

Him: I try to be

Me: What does that mean?

Him: I believe that there's a God somewhere out there but.. This church thing and praying, it's not for me

Me: I see

I looked at the woman again, she wasn't even stealing glances at me she was straight up looking at me..

Me: Which reminds me I have to heal Nomvelo's Grandmother

Him: What about Nomvelo?

Me: Nomvelo is going through something that I cannot heal, she has to make a decision

Him: I don't understand

Me: It's a bit of a complicated situation

I yawned..

Him: You need to rest

Me: I need to make sure that my wife is okay first

The Dr came to us..

Her: Good morning

We greeted her back, I stood up..

Her: I didn't think that you would be around so early

Me: How it go?

Her: We managed to remove the baby and control the bleeding, your wife is out of danger all we have to do now is to have faith that she will recover

Rich: That's good news

Her: The baby..

She cleared her throat..

Her: It was a baby boy, the knife pierced through his little heart and that was the cause of death..
I'm sorry

I sighed..

Me: If it's not enough trouble I would like to see him

Her: Ofcourse.. Right this way

We followed her as she led the way, it wasn't a relief that Nomvelo was out of danger because she is torn between two worlds now. I need to find a way to bring her back

Her: Here he is

He was wrapped in a sheet, he looked so tiny.

Rich: He is very tiny

Dr: He is indeed

Rich: His coffin is going to be very small

Me: We not going to have a funeral.. We not going to Bury him

Rich: What do you mean?

Me: We going to have him cremated, Nomvelo will need closure and I don't think a grave will do

—

NKULI

They had chained me into a bed like some kind of animal, what was happening to me wasn't going to be fixed by their pathetic western medicine. What's happening to me is spiritual,

it's torture from not letting Lucifer and Nira to get the baby..

Me: Please!!! I am not crazy!!

Black shadows were moving around in a very fast manner, I had no doubt that it was Lucifer's agents! Bloody demons..

Me: Please I don't need this kind of help, I need spiritual help. What's happening to me it's something that's spiritual, it's something deep!

One of the demons stopped, it was a very tall demon I never knew hell had such. It was holding a whip, and it started whipping me. The whip had razors attached to it and everytime he whipped me, I felt the razors cutting through the hospital gown and deep into my flesh. When he removed the whip and raised it up, it came out with a piece of my flesh and I was bleeding.

This was the most painful thing that I have ever experienced in my whole entire life, all the

promises that Lucifer made to me were not real. He lied, he tricked me and now he is betraying me. The Nurse came in rushing and she looked at me..

Me: I'm dying please help

Her: What's happening?

Me: Look at the blood!! Please make it stop
(Crying)

Her: Make what stop? I don't see anything.
There's no blood

Me: Please... Please make it stop (Crying)

I was in hell no lie..

–

SNAZO

I was finally allowed to see Nomvelo, My Dad went back to the waiting, wanted to give me giving me a moment with her.. She was peacefully and quietly laying on the bed, her

eyes were closed and she was very still. I stood at the door and looked at her before making my way in, I thought that at any moment she would open her eyes but she never did. I pulled the small chair and sat right at the side of her bed, they isolated her so that she could recover well. I held her hand, it was a bit cold. I looked at her again, words were failing me. The past few days we have moved from being happy and addicted to each other to fighting and her hating me. I deeply missed the times that we used to spend together doing all those retarded things that made her laugh, I miss lying in bed with her and waking up next to her. I miss her smile, her laughter and her voice. I miss hearing the words "I love you too" I just miss those moments that we used to share together.

I kissed her hand..

Me: Please come back to me, I'm not here as a Reverend or a healer. I am here as your

husband and I am asking you to come back to me. It can't end like this, it's not right. I know wherever you're you know that it's not right too. I miss you a lot , the past few days have been hell without you no matter what happens please come back. Choose me, choose us, choose to live because we still have a long way to go. A better journey is awaiting us we still need to create more memories and have more kids.

I pushed the tears back..

Me: I love you Nomvelo, Yes I can live without you but I don't want too. You meant for me, you came into my life and gave me a second chance at love. We have something special, our love is special. Remember when I was away and things weren't a bed of roses between us, when you sent me that video what did you say? I remember you said "Come back home, come back to me" and I did, now I'm asking you the same thing "3 back home, Come back to me"

We will go through everything together. I love you Nana..

–

SHINE

I was trying to get through my breakfast as quickly as I could so that I could go to work, we start early these days because there is a lot to do. Our company is growing and I am full hands on since Nazo is always busy with something.. My Mom walked in just as I was putting the bowl in the sink..

My Mother is originally from Zimbabwe, how her and my Dad met is a long story that I was never really interested in, I just accepted the summary of it..

Her: Good morning

She is the only person that I'm forced to speak English with, she understands isiZulu but she doesn't like to speak it. Maybe it's because of

her accent..

Me: Mamezala

Her: You going to work?

Me: Yes I am

Her: How is Tumi? And how is everything going?

Me: Ahhh uGrand (she's alright)

She fixed her glasses..

Her: Dumi you are not that person anymore

Me: Huh?

Her: You not that kind of person anymore and if you continue handling things like that you going to lose Tumi, and she is very nice girl. She is well reserved, she loves Mpumi and she loves you. Stop being shady on the side you and Nazo are no longer those people and he has been a very good influence on you. You have a good job and your life is better so don't ruin what you have now because you let anger take over, a

stupid mistake can ruin your whole entire life

When she starts preaching, she never stops.

Her: Yo-

We heard Mpumi crying, she sighed..

Her: We still talk about this later.. Enjoy your day

Me: You too

I must come back very late when she's sleeping or avoid going inside the house.

—

NOMVELO

"Come back home, come back to me" and I did, now I'm asking you the same thing "3 back home, Come back to me" We will go through everything together. I love you Nana"

Those words echoed, I heard everything that he said but I couldn't see him. I only heard his voice. I looked at the ring on my finger and it

reminded me of what Nazo and I have

Niso: It is time

I turned and looked at him, I saw the black tunnel behind him..

Him: We should go

"Come back home, come back to me" and I did, now I'm asking you the same thing "3 back home, Come back to me" We will go through everything together. I love you Nana"

I touched my ring again..

Niso: My love

I looked at him..

Him: We need to go

I wasn't sure if I wanted to do this, If I wanted to go with him and my Mother..

Mom: Your baby is waiting for you on the other side.. We have already wasted too much time

She showed up from behind me..

Mom: You will have rest from all the troubles of the world, no one will hurt you ever again when you with us

She put her hand on my cheek..

Her: Trust us, we only want what's best for you..
We love you

I smiled..

Mom: Are you ready to go? Are you ready to put everything behind you?

Me: Yes.. Yes I'm ready

Niso extended his hand to me, I extended mine to him..

Niso: I came back for you my love

I retracted my hand back..

Mom: What's wrong?

I started shaking my head..

Me: You not him

Niso: Velo it's me

Me: No it's not

He gave me a confused facial expression..

I took a few steps back..

Me: Niso refused for me to see him when he was in jail

Him: I know because I didn't want yo-

Me: When I was at my worst and I attempted to jump off from that ledge he never showed up

Mom: Velo stop this nonsense

Me: Niso would never come back, not even in death because he loved me too much and he would know that it would hurt me and make me to hold on, all he ever wanted was for me to be happy even when he was no longer around. Part of that was to let me go so that I could find someone else who would love me just as much

and make me happy

Mom: Nomvelo!!

Me: You not my Mother

Her: Don't be ridiculous

Me: My Mom would want me to live. On our last meeting she was full of love and you cold, throughout the whole conversation she gave me a smile and you never gave me one. She blessed my union with Nazo from the grave because she wanted me to be happy. You not my Mother

They looked at each other..

Me: My baby is resting in peace wherever he is, he is not in hell!

They looked at me again..

Mom: Ohw well think we going to have to do this the hard way

Me: I love my husband and I choose him, I

choose to live because of him. He gives me life and a reason to wanna continue living, I choose him!

They changed into their true forms, they were demons and with them they had chains. They wanted to come closer to me but they couldn't, the tunnel sucked them in and it closed. For a moment there was peace, I sayt down trying to catch my breath when I heard a certain voice..

"It's time to go home Beloved, this will hurt a bit)

I was lifted off from the ground and dispensed out of the window, the window wasn't even open so I broke through it

Me: Ahhhhhhh (Screaming)

–

Apologies for the late insert, I got a bit busy

No edits

See you on Monday

126

NOMVELO

Me: I'm fine

I have been saying that for the past 30min if not more. I was irritated at how the medical personnels made me feel, they made me feel like a volunteer study for their med educational purposes. My blood was constantly withdrawn, my body was being prepped and poked for to make sure that every limb was cooperative to their satisfaction. I was being asked ridiculous questions, such as "What is your name".. "Do you know where you are right now" though their doing their job but it was annoying. They couldn't understand how I just woke up with no repercussions from my unfortunate incident, everything was well except for the pain that arose from where they operated me

Everytime when I tried to move, breath deep

within, or talk loud. The pain wouldn't allow me. I was even surprised to learn that I had been operated twice. First one was to stop the bleeding, second one was to remove my baby, who suffered more during the time of the stabbing. I knew exactly who stabbed me, I still didn't understand the analogy of Nkuli stabbing me, Yes it sounded and seemed like she was possessed but.. Everything was just confusing, no part of what she did made sense

Nazo was holding my hand and he wanted to be sure that I was okay..

Dr: Okay we have sent a sample of your blood to the lab, seems like everything is working fine

Nazo: Thank you Dr

Me: When will I be discharged?

Dr: We still need to keep you in here for observation and see first if everything is indeed well with you

Nazo: Will you move her to another ward?

Dr: Yes.. We have to use this ward for someone else

Nazo: She can't be kept here? I mean for the time being until she gets discharged?

Dr: No she can't.. Look on the bright side, sharing a ward with other patients will be good. She will have people to talk too and they'll be fascinated to share a ward with a Preacher's wife

Public hospitals are a damn shame!

Dr: I will have to be excused, I have to attend to other patients and cases

Nazo: Thank you very much

Dr: You welcome

She walked out..

Nazo: Are you sure that you okay?

Me: If anyone asks me that question again I swear I will die

He chuckled..

(Silence)

Me: Something pulled me out

He looked at me..

Me: I remember standing in front of two creatures and there was a very deep and dark tunnel behind them. I think it was hell or something, a tunnel of death. I heard voices, People crying and screaming in agony

Him: What happened next?

Me: They wanted to pull me into the channel, they had chains. They wanted to bind me or capture my soul but something or a greater force quickly pulled me out, something saved me

Nazo: What else do you remember?

I shook my head..

Me: everything else is blurry, I don't remember much other than that

He kissed my hand..

Him: You have been given a second chance in life, God-

Before he could finish I freed my hand from his grip..

Him: You alright?

Me: I'm okay.. I'm just a bit exhausted

He rubbed his hands together..

Him: I asked for our baby to be cremated, might be against what I believe in but I want you to get closure unlike with Niso. The Urn will be in our room or wherever you wanna put it, the more you see it everyday the more you will accept that he is gone

I didn't say anything..

Him: I'm sorry Nomvelo.. If I had sen-

Me: What has been ha out there? I hope Richard will allow me to come back to work

He gave me a weird look..

Him: I think he will.. You wanna go back to work?

Me: Work will help me and keep my mind busy from thinking a lot

He nodded..

Him: I see

—

NKULI

Danger came through I was so happy to see him. I was still tied to the bed like a dog, they didn't sedate me since I didn't have much power because of my collapsing and aching body it was easy for them to restrain me again. I wish I had made different choices, I wish anger didn't get a better of me. Then none of this would be

happening. I have always undermined how the devil works, if you give him power over your life he will encourage self destruction and then move to the next best thing that he can manipulate.

Danger looked at me..

Me: Please get me out of here.. I don't know what they told you but I'm not sick

He looked at the Dr and the Dr gave him some paper clipped to a board

Danger: Where do I sign?

Dr: You initial there and there

Danger: Okay

Me: What's happening?

Dr: Sign there

I looked at them as they ignored me..

Danger: Is that all?

Dr: Yes that's all

The Dr held the board against his Danger..

Dr: I promise you that she will be safe in the institution, she won't hurt anyone there

Danger: Thank you... Thank you for everything

Dr: You welcome

Danger walked to the door...

Me: Danger no!!!! Please.. Please don't leave me here.. I don't wanna be here (Crying) please....

—

SHINE

We had a big client and Nazo was caught up in personal problems so I had to handle this on my own. I didn't know of any best partner in this than my girlfriend Tumi, she's smart, she knows her job and I know that she can represent the company very well...

I didn't know how this meeting was going to go because we haven't been seeing eye to eye lately, now I took into consideration what my Mother said but I am what I am and when it involves my kid, I will always protect her.

There's nothing more painful than seeing a child suffering because of their irresponsible parent. Tumi loves Mpumi and she respects herself a lot, what I like more is that she is very reserved and not much of a fan of alcohol. I was looking at apartments, our meeting with the client will be in an hour's time. For now I kept myself busy with looking for apartments. I know the whole marriage concept, but I would like for us to stay together first and see if it will work before thinking about marriage. I wouldn't want to get divorced after 3 months of getting married..

–

NOMVELO

I never knew that one can deeply connect to an unborn soul like how I have connected to my baby, when I heard the news that he wasn't no more I felt like another piece of me was taken away. Now I will run my hand on my tummy and I will always be reminded that he is no longer there, the scar that I have will be a reminder of what could've been. I blame myself and a part of me blames Nazo too, if he was there he could've healed him. Everything seems to be taken away from me, no matter how much I try God seems to always take from me hence why I am skeptical of his existence. How can he be this cold? Having my Mother killed in such a cruel way wasn't enough? Having the same person who killed her raise me with blood money wasn't enough? Having Niso being taken away from me wasn't enough? Now my son? When he took my son, he took my soul too. I don't know how I'm going to make it without him. I was alone in my ward, Nazo had gone to

the mall to get me food and run some errands. This gave me enough time to weep, I don't even know why I was pulled out because I don't think I can live with everything that's happened to me. I've been through a lot and I had lost all hope in God.

I heard a knock at the door and it was Danger, he walked in..

Him: Hey kiddo

Me: Hey

He came closer and looked at me..

Him: Are you crying?

Me: No.. I'm fine

He pulled the chair and sat down..

Him: I'm sorry

No matter how much I tried but my tears fell.

Me: Do you think that if Mom was around my

life would've been different? Maybe what's happening to me right now would have never happened? I wouldn't have met Nazo and Niso

Him: What makes you say that?

Me: I can't Danger.. There's no happiness that exists for me with both Brothers, first it was Niso he made bad choices in life and got himself killed, now it's Nazo. Even with him I'm still crying the same tears

He held my hand..

Me: I'm tired.. I'm emotionally and mentally drained I can't do this anymore

Him: Don't do this to yourself. I believe that things do happen for a reason, when I lost your Mom and I went to jail for something that I didn't do I thought that my life had ended. I didn't want to go on anymore

Me: How did you survive?

Him: You.. I found a reason to live again, I had to have what people will call an "Impossible faith" and I did. Here we are today, not in a million years did I ever think that I would be given a chance to be a Father to you but I did.. So even with you, You need to find a reason to live. A reason to keep going when all seems dark and you feel like there's no way out

–

NAZO

Gugu: How is she?

Me: She.. She's broken Gugu

She sat down opposite me..

Me: She's trying to act fine but I can see that she's broken

Her: I understand.. I mean losing a child is not easy

Me: We should be leaving to Mpumalanga soon

I don't know if she will also handle the change of environment with everything that she's been through

Her: Nomvelo is strong.. She will get through this too

We heard a knock at the door..

Me: I'll get it

I went to open and it was Connie, she was holding Nosibusiso..

Me: Uhm.. Hi

Her: Hi

She wiped her tears..

Her: Can I come in?

I opened the door wider and she walked in..

Gugu: What's happening?

She put Nosi down together with her things..

Her: I'm sorry but I can't

Gugu: What do you mean?

Her: My Husband wants to fix things with me and I can't take Nosi with me, I'm sorry. I never asked for our affair to go this affair.. I'm really sorry

She walked up to the door, Nosi cried as she saw her Mother leaving..

Gugu: Even from the grave Niso is still giving us problems..

.

To be continued

Apologies from tomorrow inserts will drop a bit earlier..

No edits

127

TUMI

ONE MONTH LATER

I walked around looking at everything, it was a beautiful 3 bedroom bond house just next to his hood. I liked it, I liked it very much. I mean 3 bedrooms, one can be the master bedroom, one can be Mpumi's room then another one can be a guest room for visitors.

Shine: So?

I looked around nodding..

Me: It's a nice house

Him: Nice?

Me: It's a beautiful house, perfect for a small family

Him: Manje iDeposit siyayifaka?

I looked at him..

Me: I don't know I mean.. Don't you think it's a bit too soon?

Him: Ayikho iToo soon la

I kept quiet..

He squeezed my cheek..

Him: Kanti yini? (Whats wrong)

Me: Nothing.. It's just that at home I am a breadwinner and I hate to leave my Aunt alone with my Little Sister

Him: Ahhh mara bayazi angisho ukuthi vele bowungeke uhlale nabo iskhathi eside (They know that you can't live with them forever)

I gave him a faint smile..

Him: ringa nabo and then unzong'tshela ukuthi bathini (Talk to them and then tell me what they going to say)

I sighed...

Me: Okay

He squeezed my cheek again..

Him: Okay??

I blushed..

Me: Okay.. I'll talk to them

Him: "Okay.. I'll talk to them"

He imitated my voice..

Me: stop it! (laughing)

Him: Woza la (come here)

He pulled me closer and kissed me..

—

NOMVELO

I was deep in my sleep when I heard someone crying, I tried to ignore but the cry got louder and louder. I lowered the duvet and opened my eyes, I was a bit irritated because I needed this sleep. I raised my head from the pillow and it was heavy, very heavy. I looked at her and she was standing close to the door busy crying, I don't know why Gugu put me up to this. She asked me to babysit Nosi for her while she ran

some errands. I slowly got out of bed and I felt like hell! Last night I went hard on the whiskey. I am more of a wine kinda girl, with ciders here and there but this time around I needed something strong, and I thought of nothing better than whiskey. Things have been very difficult for me, I've been very depressed and I turned to something that I've always found comfort in....

Nazo had the nerve to heal my Grandmother but couldn't heal our baby? He also kept it from me that Nkuli was possessed. If he had told me earlier I'm sure things would've been different, I would've stayed away from her then maybe our baby was going to make it. For him to just keep quiet about this means that he didn't trust me, I am his wife I thought that we weren't going to keep secrets from each other anymore.. I walked to the bathroom and rinsed my mouth, then I went to get my bottle. Nothing much was

left in there, I sat on the couch while looking at it.

Nosi still kept on with the noise, I also can't believe that Niso kept such a secret. I really don't know what's wrong with this Buthelezi Brothers..

I put my hand on my head, and closed my eyes. My head was banging and Nosi wasn't making things easier..

Me: Nosi stop!!!!

She kept on and on, I opened the bottle and gulped down the whiskey..

–

NKULI

I was in hell, things were hell for me. I am still tortured by the demons, being locked up in here wasn't making things any better. It wasn't like before though, the demons would leave me at

times but then when they come back. They come back with full force..

I walked to the Tv room, that's where we spend most of our time from 10:00-13:00, then at 13:00 we eat lunch and take our meds. We will watch again from 18:00-20:00.

I am not crazy and I definitely don't fit in here, all these people in here are really mental cases except for me. I have only made one friend Nqobile, Nqobile is schizophrenic but it's controlled by medication so she isn't that much of a threat to others... For the first time since I've been here, they had tuned into Dawn's channel. Dawn the Exorcist, I watched today's episode with serious concentration..

All along when I was watching, I memorized the numbers that were displayed on the screen. They take out contact numbers, the Email address etc so that when you have a case you can contact them and talk to them. Since we

only have access to a phone, calling would be more convenient.....

Nqobile threw herself next to me..

Me: Ouch!

I noticed that she had a lipstick on..

Me: Where did you get that?

Her: That's my business

(Silence)

Her: I wanna charm our male Nurse

I looked at the male Nurse..

Me: He will be charmed alright

Her: I hope so

Me: I wanna make a phone call

Her: Really? To who?

Me: To someone

Her: You never make phone calls

Me: Ya I know but this one is important

She followed me as I went to the small table.

There's another male Nurse that stands next to the phone

Me: I would like to make a phone call

Him: 15min

I picked up the phone and dialed the number it rang twice before someone picked up. It was a voice of a woman..

Her: Dawn Baker's office good morning

I kept quiet..

Her: Good morning

Me: H.. Hi..

Her: Hi.. How can we help you?

Me: I.. I would like to speak to Mr Dawn Baker please

Her: Regarding?

Me: regarding something serious.. Can I please talk to him

Her: Mam'..

Me: Please... Tell him it's Nkuli, I'm sure he will know who I am

Her: I..

Me: Please

Her: Okay hold on

Me: Thank you

—

SNAZO

Zaine was invited to preach out of town. Since Dawn and Badru were busy, he asked me to accompany him. He will start preaching exactly at 11:30am, for the time being we decided to go and have breakfast.

Things weren't nice at home between me and

my wife, we haven't been sharing the same bed for a week now. I'm sleeping in Niso's room to avoid fights, lately she has been doing nothing but take out all her anger and frustrations on me. Ever since she found out that I healed her Grandmother, she used that against me. Asking why I wasn't able to heal our baby...

Zaine: How are things going at home?

I shrugged my shoulders while exhaling..

Him: Nomvelo still "Hates" You?

Me: Pretty much.. I'm trying to see things from her perspective but...

Him: Maybe what happened also ignited the pain that she went through before you, and now she's taking everything out on you

Me: I am not even looking forward to going home because all we do is fight, it's very tiring. I can't just sit with My Mom and Nosi alone and forget about Nomvelo, she went back to

drinking. Even though she's hiding it I constantly have to check if she's okay you know if she hasn't overdosed or hurt herself. It's frustrating, and currently I don't even feel like going home. I prayed about it all i get is "be patient Nomvelo will see my existence through you" I thought I understood women but...

Him: Have you heard of something called "Tough love" I don't mean raise your hand on her but Nomvelo knows that she's your weaknesses, she knows that you love her very much so she will always use what she's going through to justify what she's doing and make it right. She will blackmail you everyday as an excuse for her to sink into drinking because she knows you will feel guilty and just let her be. Put your foot down, show her tough love and you will see

I thought about what he was said for a minute..

Me: Then in that case excuse me

Him: Where you going?

Me: I'll be right back just give me 5 or 10min

–

TUMI

I was making my Aunt something to eat and I kept on stealing glances at her. Our kitchen is open, I have a full view of the living room.

I wanted to discuss with her what Shine proposed but I was scared..

I took the plate to her..

Her: Thank you

I sat opposite her as she started eating.

(Silence)

Her: Tumi if you wanna say something, just say it

Me: Huh?

Her: You keep on starring at me and it's making

me feel very uncomfortable

Me: There is something that I wanna discuss with you

Her: Okay

Me: I.. My boyfriend is thinking of buying a house for us

She gave me a shocked expression..

Her: We haven't even met him, didn't you say that you not sure about him?

Me: I know.. But.. (Pause)

Her: How do you feel about it then?

Me: I don't know I think it's too sudden, but at the same time I love him and our relationship is good but it was never my intention to live with a guy while we not married. Even if Lobola negotiations could be initiated I feel it would be useless, you know after Rethabile and I lost Mom everything changed.

What we knew as Relatives they turned on us, they put us out. If it wasn't for you I don't know where we would be

Her: I know.. I love you, I love you and your sister a lot. If he makes you happy then you should go for it, see where it leads and if things don't go as how you planned you can still come back home, this will be your home even though you the one paying rent

I chuckled..

Her: You deserve to be happy and deserve to be loved, but I think we should meet him and his family first before you guys move in together

I nodded..

Me: Yes of course.. I didn't wanna leave you and Rethabile alone, it doesn't feel right

Her: Child I've been living all by myself even before you and your sister came, don't worry about Rethabile. Even when you here you can't

discipline her, even when you go it will still be the same. She's a teen she's going through a phase, hopefully when she gets older she will change

Me: I hope so

Her: I hope so too

–

NOMVELO

I parked the car then turned and looked at Nosi. She was strapped at the back...

Me: I'll be right back

I got out and locked her inside. I don't know what Gugu was thinking leaving her with me.

I made my way straight to tops, I had driven to our local mall to get a few things well to be honest liquor was my first priority. There's something about liquor stores, when you enter there's this unsettling vibe you get both from

the guard at the door all the way to the cashiers. I got a bottle of wine and a bottle of whiskey then I made my way to the teller.

She gave me a weird look, I took out my card and handed it to her. She swiped and then let me put in the pin, I couldn't wait to get out of there..

Her: Ummm.. Your card declined

Me: That's impossible.. Please try again

She tried again but still..

Me: I don't understand, I swear that I had at least R3000 left in my card..

I had exhausted all my money, I spent it recklessly while I was still working and now I was financially dependent on Nazo. I took my card and walked out, I did the walk of shame while calling Nazo.. His phone sent me to voice mail...

Me: My card declined, I don't know what's going but can you please fix it.. Bye

.

To be continued

[SEASON FINALE]

-

128

NOMSA

I was serving two of my customers when Danger walked in, I put the plates on the table..

Me: Enjoy your food

Them: Thank you

Me: Would you like something else?

Lady: No thank you we are fine

Me: You will call me when you need something

Lady: Thank you (smiling)

I took the tray and made my way to him..

Him: Sawubona (Greetings)

He greeted me back..

Me: Hau.. Aren't you supposed to be at work? Is it lunch already?

Him: No it's not lunch yet. I don't have any clients so I thought that I should check up on you and how business is going

Me: That's nice.. Thank you

I looked around..

Me: There's free chairs, we can sit

We walked to the chairs and sat down..

Me: How are things at home?

Him: Things are better, MaNgcobo is back she's doing well and Nomvelo got discharged she's recovering well

Me: That's good.. I must go and see her

sometime, every time when I wanna go and see her something happens

Him: Well you should go and see her then before something happens

We both laughed..

Me: Where are my manners? Would you like something to drink?

He looked at his watch..

Him: I can squeeze in a glass or two

Me: Okay I'll get a coke

I walked to the shop to get the coke..

—

NOMVELO

I was pissed when I got home, after that embarrassment I went inside the bank to enquire and apparently my account has been frozen. How can Nazo do this to me?.. Gugu

was back now, I put Nosi down..

Gugu: Hello Nana.. Umntwana Ka gog'wakhe bantu

She walked up to Gugu and Gugu picked her up.. I sat down..

Gugu: Beniyekuphi? (where were you guys)

Me: Besiye eMall (We went to the mall)

Gugu: Wow that's nice.. You guys did shopping?

Me: I wish

Gugu: Hau kwenzenjani? (what happened)

Me: Nazo froze my account

Her: I wonder why

Me: I feel a bit of sarcasm in your tone

Her: Do you blame him kodwa? Nomvelo you lock yourself in the room and drink the whole day every day! Nazo goes to church alone all the time because you hungover to even go to

church

Me: Ohw so now we judging?

Her: I'm not judging. I'm sorry for what you went through but drinking everyday, won't bring him back. You still gonna wake up and he will be gone. You not just anyone, you a preacher's wife! You supposed to be with him by his side all the time. If my Grandson was here and let's say something happens what was going to happen? You were going to drink? You can't even take care of Nosi nje just for a few hours wha-

Me: So you saying that I would've made a bad Mother?

Her: I'm saying fix yourself! For crying out loud! you and your husband aren't even sharing the same bed anymore, doesn't that bother you? Coming home everyday is a drag for him because all you do is fight him. Everyone is

going through something Nomvelo, you not the only one. Some other people don't have anyone but you have us. My son loves you, we wanna be there for you but you shutting us out. Hai maan this is too much now, you abusing my son emotionally and I don't like it anymore

Me: Wow!!

I stood up..

Me: Now your true colours are coming out

Her: My what?

Me: All this time you were pretending, so what? All of a sudden I'm not perfect for your precious son? Your son that you speak so highly of couldn't even save his own Son!

Her: Wena wenzeni? (What did you do) You were busy running up and down with your Cousin that we warned you about!

Me: How would I have known that she was

possessed?

Her: Haisuka! Even before that you were listening to her more than your own husband! uNkuli was your husband! I'm glad this happened, this is a true wake up call for you and stop blaming everyone

I couldn't believe that Gugu was saying all of these things to me.. Nosi started crying from all the shouting..

I walked up to the door and then walked out, I banged it behind me..

Gugu: uhambe uyophula iminyango yakini yezwa? (Go break your Grandmother's doors)

–

NKULI

Nurse: I opened

She forced the tongue depressor inside my mouth and ran it through making sure that I

swallowed all the pills almost making me to vomit..

Nurse: Good!.. Next!!

I rolled my eyes and moved. As I was walking back I saw the light going on and off, I then saw a shadow I knew what was going to happen. I then heard some groaning..

Me: No please.. Please leave me alone!!

Nurse: I need some back up here!

What they do is sedate me and strap me in bed while the demons torture me...

Me: Please!!!

It was quiet for a while, I looked around. Suddenly I felt something grabbing my leg, I fell and it dragged me across the corridor..

Me: Please stop!! (shouting)

The floor was slippery I couldn't grab on to anything..

Me: Stop please (Crying)

I saw the Nurses making their way to me, It was the two Male Nurses and one female Nurse. The demon let me go and then they held me down. The male Nurse pressed his knee against my chest, I struggled to breath.

As they were about to inject me, we heard a voice..

Voice: Let her go

They stopped.. The male Nurse removed his knee against my chest..

They stepped away from me as I got up, I only realised then that it was Dawn.. I went up to him and hugged him..

Me: Thank you.. Thank you for coming (Crying)

I didn't know that he was was going to come, but I'm glad he did..

—

NAZO

The service was very good, I thought that I could preach but Zaine. Let's just say he's still going to remain a GOAT, I walked away from them while he was busy exchanging handshakes. I checked my phone and I got a disturbing message from Nomvelo..

"WHY DON'T YOU JUST MARRY YOUR MOM, BECAUSE OBVIOUSLY I'M NOT GOOD ENOUGH FOR YOU!!"

I called her..

Her: What?

I walked away to a more quiet place..

Me: Excuse you?

Her: Why do I matter now? I have been trying to call you and what not but you didn't get back to me!!

Me: Are you serious?

Her: You know what Nazo.. Obviously I'm a burden and an embarrassment to you so I'll do you a favour and just leave! I'm sure your Mom will be happy!!

Me: You know what? do it! Leave!

Her: Ohw so it's like that now?

Me: Leave Nomvelo I don't care anymore, I'm really tired!! And know that I won't even come begging, just leave okay? Hamba!

I hung up and then switched off my phone.

Voice: Shouldn't be this mad especially after such a service

I looked at who was talking and it was Ramiel.. I even forgot that she is my new guardian angel since Helena is in Purgatory.

After what happened Helena was sent to Purgatory for being disobedient, she might spend all eternity there..

I started walking back to the church..

Ramiel: Nazo I know that you used to Helena and you two were very close, I hope that you and I could be close too. Please trust me

I stopped and turned around, while looking at her..

Me: Why did you say that?

Her: Huh?

Me: What you just said, why did you say that?

Her: I don't understand

Me: You sound like you have emotions, aren't you supposed to be emotionless?

Her: I.. That's a story for another day

(Silence)

Her: They calling for you

I looked at her for the last time and then made my way to Zaine..

–

NOMVELO

Tears streamed down as I packed my things, I can't even explain how I was feeling deep inside. I even felt my breath seizing a bit, I stopped packing and sat on the bed while crying. I wanted it all to go away, I wanted the pain to go away..

–

NOMSA

Danger: Thank you for the cool drink

Me: You welcome

(Silence)

Me: Are you sure that you don't want anything to eat?

Him: No ngi sharp

Me: Okay

Him: Tell me something..

I looked at him..

Him: Why did you end up with JJ vele?

Me: Angizwa? (Pardon)

Him: You have always been a good woman, JJ tainted you with his evil heart and evil deeds. But you were never a bad person, how did you end up with him? Not forgetting that he was treating you like trash

I exhaled..

Me: I don't wanna get to that now, maybe some other time

Him: I understand.. Sorry for bringing it up

Me: It's okay.. Just that it takes me back to things that I don't wanna remember

He nodded..

Him: I'm sorry

–
NOMVELO

I parked my car next to the fence at home, I don't even know how I got here. I got out and rushed in, I opened the door..

Me: Duchess!!! (shouting)

I made my way to the lounge..

Her: Velo.. Yini? (What's wrong)

I let go of my keys and they fell, she stood up from the couch..

Her: What's wrong?

Me: It's.. Nazo doesn't want me anymore..

Kuphelile Duchess (It's over Duchess)

She came and hugged me..

Me: I hate uNkuli Duchess!! She ruined my life
(Crying)

Her: shhhhhhhhhh, thula phela sizokhuluma

(calm down so that we can talk)

I was beyond the word "Broken"

.

To be continued

129

NOMVELO

I was laying in bed and my Grandmother was laying behind me while holding me. It hurt, it hurt really bad. I didn't know what to do, I was at my breaking point. I couldn't breath, I felt like my soul was leaving me, my heart was bleeding with endless needles piercing through it. I was clouded with confusion, how can one go through soo much pain? Is it normal? Is this what life is supposed to be? I tried to give God a chance but it seems like he doesn't hear my cries, he doesn't see how broken I am...

Grams: Yazi Velo when such things happen, it's

better to cry to God. Only he will understand your pain and what you going through, we human beings we only going to judge what our eyes see because we don't know what you really going through. I wish that you could've turned to your husband, you two share the same pain. He lost his son too. Just because he doesn't show it, it doesn't mean that he is not hurting. Yes he is spiritual and everything but he is a human being, every human being hurts

I wiped my tears..

Her: Remember now that you not his girlfriend, you his wife. You can't just pack up and leave. It doesn't work like that

I got up and wiped my tears..

Her: Do you love your husband?

Me: I do

Her: Then if you can't get better for yourself, get better for him. He loves you and he needs you,

Nazo is meant to lead and he won't be able to do that without you. God chose you for him, not any other girl but you. Don't let the devil defeat you, pick yourself up and use prayer as your weapon. Finding comfort in alcohol is only going to lead to self destruction, you going to be the Mother of the church. There's going to be a lot of young people that are going to look up to you, how will you tell them about God when you yourself don't believe? I'm sorry that Nkuli did what she did but take this as a lesson, now you know better than to just trust People. You need to decide Velo, you can't keep on doing this to Nazo. You need to decide if you wanna be his wife or you don't

We heard a knock at the door..

Her: I'm coming.. When I come back we going pray

She got out of bed and then walked out..

I got my phone and went on Google and started searching "AA meetings in Johannesburg"

–

NAZO

I decided to have Facebook and Twitter, but I don't usually post personal things other than daily motivational messages and Bible verses. My Facebook page currently has 750 000 followers and my Twitter account has 300 000 followers thus far, it's refreshing to preach the gospel in such platforms because the message can get to everyone. I have had requests from different people asking if I can come by in Botswana, Zambia, Kenya and all other places. I never thought that one day I could be this influential..

Unfortunately I was trending on Twitter for a notorious behaviour, rephrase that Nomvelo was the one who initiated the whole thing. A

picture of her at a bottle store standing at the counter tightly clinging on to a bottle of whiskey was circulating all over, tweets such as:

Dark Angel

@darkangel

"So he can heal people but he can't heal his wife's alcohol addiction, ya neh we see things"

..

Zimmy

@Zimkhitha

"Yoooh mara our Preacher Bae, can Nomvelo just give him to some of us"

..

Sanele bhanda

@Bafanas

"Angithi ngiyabona? Continue following these preachers who can't even save their own

families but they busy saving others"

..

It was a mess, most of them were defending and most were attacking, indeed the internet can be the Devil's playground at times..

Nosi started pulling my tshirt while crying, I put my phone on the counter and picked her up. Gugu is in the process of legally adopting her..

Me: What's wrong?

I went to the fridge and took out her juice and gave it to her, I then went and got my phone to call Shine. It's been a while..

Him: Ehh wuwe lo muntu? (Is it really you)

Me: Akekho omunye (Yes it's me)

Him: Fede? (How are you)

Me: Ang'rasi.. Uva? (I'm not saying anything.. Where are you)

Him: Ndonga thina abanye siyaspana (Some of us are working)

Me: konje (I forgot)

Him: Wena Uva? (where are you)

Me: ngisedladleni, ngizoza ngizo shaya I round (I'll stop by)

Him: Ola poi

Me: Ngizok'cava jumpas (I'll see you later)

I looked at her: You wanna go and see Uncle Shine? Let's go and see him

–

NKULI

We went and walked around in the yard, I was surprised the Nurses even allowed for Dawn to take me outside. The sun was shining very bright, haven't been exposed to it for a while now. It blinded me a bit..

Him: Haven't been out?

I nodded..

I felt lighter ever since Dawn came, it was like a heavy burden had been lifted off my shoulders..

Me: I feel lighter

Him: Your friends didn't follow us

Me: How many?

Him: There's a lot of evil spirits that are tormenting you, it's like he opened the pandora box on you

I closed my eyes and then opened them..

Me: I've always heard about Good and Evil, but I never took it too serious. Especially evil, I never thought that evil could hit a person like this. I am restless, I see things, I hear things. I hurt myself and my soul is weary I wanted to die, I felt like dying

Him: You didn't just kill any baby, you killed a

healer

Me: I thought I was doing the right thing, I didn't want evil to have the baby

Him: I understand.. No sin is too big, your sins can be pardoned only if you repent

Me: So you will help me?

He stopped and looked at me..

Him: Yes

I hugged him..

Me: Thank you

Him: But we will have to find a way to get you out of here, I can't perform an exorcism here religious practices are forbidden

As long as he helps me, that's all that I wanted..

–

NOMVELO

Grams: Amen

Me: Amen

Grams: You didn't say anything

Me: I didn't know what to say

We got up..

Her: You will get there.. Just remember that
“Greater is He who is in you than He who is in
the world.”.. I'll go and make us something to
eat

I took my phone and checked Twitter, I had a lot
of notifications.. I checked and I was trending, I
read a few tweets and they were horrible. I
never knew thad people can be this mean. I
threw my phone on the bed all frustrated..

Me: Ohhh my God what have I done?

Nazo's reputation has been tainted because of
me.. On my previous search I found numbers
and called them to ask about their AA meetings,
they told me that they will email me all the

necessary information that I needed..

–

NAZO

We got the office, and walked in..

Tumi: Whoa!! Look who came by

Me: Hey.. How are you?

Tumi: I'm good and you?

Me: I'm good

Tumi: And who is this little princess that you have with you?

Me: Her name is Nosi, she's my Niece

Tumi: Hi Nosi

She left her station and came to pick Nosi up

Her: She is so adorable

Me: She is

Her: Hi Nosi.. Hi girl..

Shine came out of the office..

Him: Ehhh zkhiphani (what's going on)

He came and we fist bumped..

Him: Nja yami

He looked at Nosi..

Him: Then sphethe bani la? (who is this)

Me: Nosi my niece

Him: Your niece?

Me: Ya waka Niso (Niso's daughter)

He chuckled..

Him: Ehhh kanjani manje? (how)

Me: Story for another day

Shine put his arm around Tumi's shoulders..

Shine: Uyazwana ney'ncosi neh (you love kids)

Tumi: very much

He kissed her on her cheek..

Him: Ungabi neStress uMpumi nje soon
sizomlamisa (Tumi will soon have a sibling)

Me: and then?

Tumi blushed..

Me: Ehh kanjalo vele? (Just like that)

Shine cleared his throat..

Me: Nini manje? (When)

Shine: Phuma lapho.. Asiringe ngale
eyakho..konje simbone kuphi? (Leave that..
Let's talk about Nomvelo)

Tumi: Twitter (soft voice)

Shine: Manje kushaphi? Phela jiki jiki
sekuyisdakwa (What's happening.. Now she's a
drunk)

Nosi extended her arms to me, I got her..

Me: Eish

Shine: Makunjalo asilandeni amalobolo (If it's

like that let's fetch the Lobola money)

I exhaled..

Me: Ayi mina ang'sazi (I don't know anymore)

Shine: Uva manje? (Where is she)

Me: Ung'jindile.. Ubuyele kubo (she left me.. She went back home)

Shine: Ayikho enye makulandwe amalobolo kubo bahlale nesdakwa Sabo (there's no other way.. They can take their drunk and give us our money back for Lobola)

I don't know what's with Nomvelo and I don't know if she's going to ever change, but honestly speaking I'm tired and done.

—

NKULI

Dr: I hear you Mr Baker but.. I can't release her, she's clinically insane. She's a threat to herself and the society

Dawn: I understand but you don't know what's happening with her

Dr: Mr Baker I respect what you do, please respect what I do too

Dawn: I don't mean to sound somehow but.. What's happening to her is spiritual, western medicine is not helping

The Dr chuckled..

Dr: She has just started with her medication and therapy

Me: It's been almost a month now.. They not helping

Dr: You better than how you came here

Dawn: We will keep on going back and forth about this, so what should we do to get her out? You can't force her in here

Dr: We going to need the family member that's signed her in

Dawn looked at me..

Me: Danger.. Nomvelo's father. I doubt he will agree especially after what I did to Nomvelo

.

To be continued

No edits

SEASON FINALE

—

130

NOMVELO

Later on that day I was still going through the trend and reading all the horrible things that people were saying about me, about us. I don't even know why I was putting myself through such. I got out of bed and knelt down, I closed my eyes and tried to say something but I couldn't. My throat raised no words, and my heart was still bleeding. How do you get

through something like this? I am carrying so much inside of me that I can't seem to find common ground with God. I can't talk to him, I don't know what to say to him. I am emotionally dead inside..

I heard the kitchen door closing, then I heard my Grandmother talking to someone. I got up from the floor and went to the kitchen, it was Dawn..

Me: Dawn

Him: Hey Nomvelo

I went and hugged him..

Me: Wow uhm what are you doing here? It's good to see you

Dawn: Good to see you too and I'm sorry about what happened

I broke the hug..

Grams: Would you like something to drink?

Dawn: No thank you, I am not going to stay for

long

He looked a bit serious..

Him: I went to see Nkuli today

That was a shock..

Me: You did?

Him: Yes.. Nkuli is not crazy, she has a lot of evil spirits tormenting her. Sometimes signing a deal with the devil isn't easy

(Silence)

Grams: Not to sound rude but.. You still haven't said why you here

Dawn: I'm looking for Nomvelo's father. He is the one who signed the form for Nkuli to be locked up so he should be the one to sign her release form too, they need his permission to release her

Me: What?

Grams: You want My Grandchild to be released from where she is perfectly safe? And can't hurt anyone

Him: Unfortunately I need to help her

Me: Are you serious? After all that she has done?

Him: Don't take this the wrong way Nomvelo but.. This is who I am, I am an exorcist I help people. I exorcise demons

Me: Does Nazo know about this?

Him: No but I'll talk to him

I couldn't believe what I was hearing..

Me: Excuse me

I went back to the bedroom and threw myself on the bed trying to process what I heard..

–

NAZO

After spending the day at the office we drove to

Richard's house, Gugu had sent me a message that Richard would like us to come over for dinner. Things between Richard and I weren't perfect, but I commend him for trying I really wanna get to know the person that he is.. We arrived at his place earlier than the dinner time, Gugu was full hands on busy preparing dinner. His house was very beautiful and it was big for him to live alone. Nosi was very happy to see Gugu, she's getting used to her. Slowly but surely...

Gugu: Hello baby

I put her down and she ran to Gugu, she took off the oven gloves and picked her up..

Gugu: Hey baby

She then looked at me..

Gugu: How are you holding up?

I leaned against the counter..

Me: I'm good

Richard showed up, he was holding a glass of whiskey..

Richard: You guys are early, not that I'm complaining.. How is everything?

Me: Everything is fine

Gugu: Well Nosi and I we will finish up cooking. Dinner will be ready soon

Richard signaled that we should go to the living room..

Gugu: Should I get you something to drink?

Me: No thank you.. I'm fine

We walked out and went to the balcony. He's view was very nice, all those big trees and a big ass pool..

Richard: How are you holding up?

Me: I'll get there

Richard: How is Nomvelo?

Me: I'm really not sure

Him: Your mom mentioned that you two aren't really seeing eye to eye

Me: Things are very tense, I'm even tired but.. I saw her WhatsApp status update, tomorrow she's going to start attending AA meetings

Him: That's good.. You should go with her

Me: I don't think so

He lit up a cigarette..

Him: I hope you don't mind

Me: It's cool

Him: I might not understand what's happening between you two but I understand love, when you love someone you don't give up on that person. Look at me and your Mom, we lost so many years but here we are today trying to get back what we lost. I don't want you and

Nomvelo to live in regrets one day, that you guys should've fixed things. If she's really broken then you need to be there for her, don't give without trying again. Don't give up on her especially when she needs you the most

He pat me on the shoulder and then we went back to starrng at the trees

—

TUMI

I talked to Shine about our families meeting, so before we could have that he asked to meet my Aunt and my Sister first. I know that he will get along well with my Aunt, I wasn't sure how it was going to be with my little sister..

Me: Rethabile please wash the dishes for me

She kept quiet..

Me: Rethabile!!

I was tired from work and then when I got home

I had to cook because my little sister who is a spoiled brat doesn't want to help around, all she does is just be on her phone or watch TV..

Me: Wash the dishes for me

Her: I'm tired Tumi

Me: What about me? I am tired too!

Her: I'm not the one who invited my boyfriend over for dinner

I heard a knock at the door, I exhaled in frustration then I went to open. It was Shine and Mpumi..

Shine: Hope we not late

Me: No it's okay, you guys are right on time

I took Mpumi from him..

Me: Hello sweetheart

He walked in and closed the door..

Me: I'm not done cooking

Him: Unga worry (Don't worry)

He followed me while I walked up to Rethabile..

Me: Rethabile our guests are here

She ignored me..

Me: Rethabile

She put her phone away and looked at us..

I faked a smile..

Me: This is my Sister Rethabile, and Rethabile
this is my boyfriend Shine and his cute
Daughter Mpumi

Shine: Kunjani? (How are you)

She stood up and walked straight to the
bedroom without saying anything, I was very
embarrassed..

Me: I'm sorry, sometimes her attitude is just..

Shine: No ku Grand, Akuna stress

He put Mpumi's bag down and took her from

me..

Him: Before ushisa ukudla (Before you burn the food)

Me: My Aunt is out you will meet her later

Him: Sharp

I walked back to the pots, I was so embarrassed by Rethabile's behaviour. I do everything for her and she can't even do something so simple for me, respecting me in front of my boyfriend..

–

NAZO

My half Sister Sarah and her Husband Marvin joined us for dinner, it was good seeing her again. She seems like a very nice person..

Richard: This is nice

Gugu: It's really nice

Sarah: Thank you for inviting us

Richard: You welcome

Sarah turned to me..

Sarah: I thought that Nomvelo was going to be joining us, I was really looking forward to seeing her again I miss her a lot at work

Me: Uhm ya Nomvelo is not well

Gugu: She is struggling to deal with the loss of her baby

Sarah: I'm truly sorry for your loss, I can only imagine what you two are going through

Me: It's okay and thank you

Richard: This food is nice

Sarah: It's very nice.. Thank you Gugu

Gugu: You welcome

I observed everyone as they were eating and talking about random things, it was a great

moment. This is my family..

–

TUMI

I took the food to them, My Aunt had come back just in time. She was taken by Mpumi that she didn't wanna put her down..

Me: Here we go

I put the plates on the small table..

Aunty: Thank you Tumi

Shine: Ta (thank you)

I took Mpumi from my Aunt so that she can eat.. Rethabile was still locked up in the bedroom, she will miss this moment because soon I'll be gone..

Aunt: Thank you for making my Niece happy

Shine: She also makes me happy

I sat next to Shine..

Aunty: I'm glad you got her to leave this place,
it's time she lives her life and be happy she can't
always babysit us

Shine: That's true

He turned to me..

Him: uyezwa? (do you hear)

Me: Just eat your food

He took his plate from the table and started
eating..

Me: I'll dish up some pumpkin and mash
potatoes for Mpumi

I stood up with her and we went to the kitchen,
leaving my Aunt and Shine to talk.

I'm glad my Aunt likes him and she has given us
her blessings..

–

NOMVELO

The following day I woke up early and prepared myself, the meeting was going to start at 9am, another one was going to be at 18:00. I prefer the morning one. I was very nervous, I don't know what is expected of me from this meetings I mean it's not easy for me to talk about my pain without shedding a tear. I got lost a bit but I finally found the place, it wasn't that full as yet. There was some lady standing at the door welcoming everyone, she shook my hand as I walked in.. I had actually checked her page on Facebook and it's getting good reviews, she seems to know what she's doing..

Her: Good morning

Me: Morning

Her: Haven't seen this face before

Me: I'm actually new

Her: Ohw that's nice, I welcome you to our AA meetings.. What's your name?

She doesn't know me? I mean now the whole world knows me I was trending on social media yesterday..

Me: Nomvelo.. Nomvelo Buthelezi

Her: Welcome Nomvelo and please feel free...
We all family here, no one will judge you

Me: Thank you

I went and sat down as everyone gave me weird looks, I probably shouldn't have come here. This was harder than I thought..

We waited for others before the meeting could start, and when it was about the 8 of us she came back..

Her: Good morning and I thank everyone for coming. Remember we are family, feel free to talk no one will judge you

She said that while looking at me..

Her: My Name is Senzeni and I am the one who

leads these meetings, we meet 3 days a week. Morning session from 9:00am-11:00 then again at 18:00-20:00 for those who knock off late.. I think we can get started, Sis'Zodwa we will start with you today..

The lady stood up and greeted us..

As the queue went on and it was getting closer and closer to me, the air started to suffocate me even though everyone in the room had the same problem as mine. I felt like my clothes didn't hide my nakedness enough, a part of my brain convinced me that they could see my shame underneath even though I was wearing clothes. When my turn finally came, all eyes were on me

I didn't want to stand up but I was forced too after all it's tradition, when the next person is done talking the next person has to stand up and say something too. The weakness in my soul dragged down my physical being from

standing up but I had too, I had to find the strength to face all these people and share my shame. It was very quiet only their eyes raised a lot of questions without their mouths even uttering a word, I also felt like I was being judged before I even got a chance to tell my story..

Me: My name is.. My name is Nomvelo

A few minutes passed and they said nothing.

I would've been more comfortable with a bit of encouragement something like "Hello Mvelo" isn't that what they supposed to say? Or the movies exaggerate as always?

Me: I am..

I looked at my hands trembling, this was hard for me..

Senzeni: Take your time Sisi

Senzeni was like Moses of these People leading

them to the promised land or Mother Theresa giving them inner peace. I took a deep breath and my eyes wondered around, I then saw him standing at the door. He had his arms folded and was leaning against the doorframe looking at me. How did he know I was here? Why is he here? Is he here to make me feel more ashamed? Is he here to judge me? I am already down I don't need him putting me more and more down

Senzeni: Take another deep breath and relax we are here for you, we're not going anywhere

She could've made a good psychologist..

I did as I was told, I took another deep breath but it didn't make the situation any better.

Instead, it made me more and more paranoid..

Me: My name is.. I am.. I.. Am Nomv..

Didn't I say that already? I don't think I wanna be here anymore if I say another word I'm going to

drop dead and die right here in front of everyone. It's going to be the end of me.. A lot was going through my mind but the best thing to do right now was to walk out, walk away from this suffocating situation and save myself the embarrassment..

I didn't even apologize nor looked at anyone I walked out of there faster than I could let my breath out. Finally! A breath of fresh air, I could feel the breeze against my skin that's all that I needed a breath of fresh air..

Him: Nomvelo!

I stopped, his voice carried soo much authority. I was struggling to breath, his presence has always been unsettling. I turned around and looked at him, he made his way to me. Stop right there! Don't get too close, it's almost as if like he heard me. He stopped a bit far from me with his hands buried deep inside his pockets a habit of his, He looked different without his

clerical collar. I had a lot buried inside, there's a lot I wanna say but be steady Velo after all he is the sanctified one..

He didn't say anything his look did more of the talking than his lips..

Me: It's very hard.. It has been hard

He was torturing me with his silence, at least say something dammit! Tell me that my pain is an excuse for my unholy deeds. He is probably waiting to tell me that I'm going to hell ain't that what they tell people at church? Ain't that what they preach? Ain't that what they tell sinners and the broken, instead of comforting them? They tell them that the lake of fire is awaiting them were they going to spend all eternity..

Me: I know that I'm going to hell

I shrugged my shoulders in defeat..

Me: I know that I'm not worthy to be in your presence right now

He might have a lot to say but the human in him probably doesn't allow him too, so he does have a human heart after all?

Me: You know what? Just stay away from me

I turned and walked away while unzipping my bag, I buried my hand deep inside trying to find my car keys in that pile of unnecessary things.

Him: I'm human too

Did he have to speak? Couldn't he keep quiet and let me leave in peace? I didn't wanna feel the ground trembling under my feet at the sound of his voice..

Him: You not the only one who lost him, I lost him too. Have you thought about how I feel?

Those words made my knees weak..

Him: He was my son too, I might be a Preacher and everything but... I am human, a Father who lost his Son. You not hurting alone, I'm hurting

too

My eyes were filled with tears, my lower lip was trembling..

Me: Why? Why did it have to be him? Why?
(Crying)

He walked up to me..

Me: I.. I have no strength left in me Nazo.. It feels like my heart had been ripped from my chest

He pulled me to him and held me closer..

Me: Why did God allow this to happen?

I grabbed his shirt..

Me: It hurts.. It hurts a lot, please make it stop
(Crying)

He didn't say anything he just held me tight, as I cried on his chest..

Me: Nazo make it stop.. Make it go away please

(Crying)

.

To be continued

SEASON FINALE

—

131

NOMVELO

I slowly woke up to Nazo's voice, I heard him talking. I rose up from the pillow and he was sitting on the couch, looked like he was playing a game with Nosi..

Nazo: No.. You press here, if you don't press here then he won't talk... Now you press here

I observed the moment as Nosi seemed like she was enjoying the game, each time when she pressed the right key she would chuckle and clap her hands. She was sitting on Nazo's lap and he seemed to be enjoying too spending

time with her..

After a very long time, he noticed that I was up..

Him: Hey..

Me: Hi..

He put Nosi on the couch and stood up, he kissed her on her forehead..

Him: I'm coming baby

He made his way to me, he sat on the bed next to me..

Me: I will go back to the meeting at 18:00

Him: Maybe you can go back tomorrow morning

Me: I wanna go back tonight

Him: I can come with you if you want

Me: I'd appreciate that

We starred deep into each other's eyes and I realized that, while I was trapped in my pain I

almost lost someone who meant the world to me.. I was too caught up in the pains that pierced through my heart and held my soul captive, I focused more on questions to things that only God knows. They "why" why my son? Why me? Why soo much pain? Only the one who created my life knows, it was written before I even existed...

Me: I'm sorry

He put his hand on my cheek..

Him: You were hurting and I should've tried to be there for you and maybe you wouldn't have turned into alcohol for comfort

I shook my head..

Me: It wouldn't have made a difference, I pushed you away. I humiliated you, things that People were say-

Him: People talk.. Tomorrow they'll be talking about someone else, it's just how it is

Me: At that moment it didn't cross my mind that we no longer just ordinary people that we were before you answered to your calling

Him: We'll get there

He leaned over..

Him: I love you soo much

Me: I love you too

We kissed, the kiss dated back and brought back the flame that once existed between us. The sparks that make my soul to light up, and the strings of my heart being played by the love that we share. I am so blessed to have Nazo in my life and I know that he is always going to be there for me.. It's been a while since we were last intimate and the moment was taking over leading to what we have both been yearning for, but unfortunately we had to apply the breaks because there was a little human being in the room with us..

Nosi: Yazo!!!!

We broke the kiss, she was standing on his side of the bed. He picked her up put her in the middle. I can see that Nosi is very fond of Nazo, I wish Niso could've met his Daughter first before his untimely death..

Me: Hey... Hey Nosi

She didn't care about me she only cared about the tablet that she was holding..

Nazo: She's now addicted to the games

Me: Let me see.. What are you playing?

Her: No!!!

She move the tablet and clicked her tongue. Me: Wow she is indeed her Father's Daughter

Nazo laughed..

—

DANGER

I had received a call from someone named "Dawn" he asked to meet up with me, said it's about Nkuli. I was initially going to say no because I don't even know the fellow, but when he mentioned Nkuli's name I assumed that it was important. I looked around and I spotted him, he had told me what he would be wearing and his hair was neatly tied to the back.. I made my way to the table that he was sitting at.. He stood up and extended his hand for a handshake, I extended mine too..

Him: Danger?

Me: Yes

Him: Nice to meet you.. I'm Dawn

We shook hands and then we sat down, he was drinking water..

Him: Would you like to order something?

Me: Maybe a beer

He called the waiter..

Me: Do you have castle lite beer or Windhoek?

Waiter: We have Windhoek and Heineken

Me: Windhoek please

Waiter: Would you like something else?

Me: No I'm good

He turned to Dawn..

Dawn: I'm still fine thank you

He walked away..

Me: Not a fan of beer?

Him: Not when I'm working

(Silence)

Me: You mentioned something about Nkuli

Him: Yes.. Uhm.. I went to see her

Me: You know her?

Him: Not entirely.. She called me

Me: I don't think I understand were you coming from

Him: I am an exorcist, that means I cast out demons. Demons that have possessed people

Me: That's.. That sounds interesting but I still don't know how it fits to everything

Him: Nkuli has evil spirits tormenting her

Me: Meaning she's possessed?

Him: No.. She's more like cursed, she has the mark of a prey for demons. Something Lucifer rewarded her with for betraying him

Me: I.. So why am I here?

Him: I want to help her, no rephrase that. I'm going to help her but I can't do it at the institution, you need to sign the forms for her release

Me: Nkuli almost killed my Daughter, she's lucky Nomvelo didn't lay charges. She's better off

where she is

Him: I understand your feelings towards this situation and as a Father myself if something similar to Nomvelo happened to her, I would go all out to protect her. Unfortunately Sir what I am or who I am rather, I don't get to choose who I want to help and who I don't want to help. It doesn't work like that

Me: I respect what you do but Nkuli can't be release

Him: I am a neutral party in this situation, and trust me I do not condone nor support what Nkuli did. It does sound better, the idea of her being locked up but.. Nkuli is a human being who thought she was doing the best, she wants to get better so that she can rectify her mistake. She understands the nature and the severity of what she did therefore she is asking for a chance to correct everything

Me: Why did she do it?

Him: The reasons behind are complicated

Me: For me to sign the forms.. I need to know why she did, and I wanna hear it from her

Me: Of course.. We can choose a day that works for both of us and we can go

The waiter brought the beer..

Me: Thank you

Waiter: Sorry that it took long, we were having a bit of a problem at the bar

Me: It's okay

Waiter: Is there anything else?

Me: No.. That would be all, thank you

He walked away..

—

NOMVELO

We had bought a few clothes, no make that we bought a lot of things for the baby we went all out to prepare for his arrival. I liked the small blue&white blanket, it had teddy bears and it was actually a twin pack. There's another white one. I looked at the small vests and pants, he is never going to get a chance to wear them. You know I have seen on Tv and read stories of women who miscarried or gave birth to still borns. I saw how broken they were when they told those stories but deep inside of me I never really understood, I never understood why they would be that broken when they have never even spent some time with the babies until it happened to me. The bond is not created when the baby is born, the bond is created everyday as you go through your pregnancy. I miss his little kicks, everytime when he moved around and all the food that we liked or he liked. Though the morning sickness weren't so pleasant but we had an amazing bond, I would

talk to him every now and then, he was always with me. I couldn't wait for him to get here, I couldn't wait to hold him in my arms, He was going to be my complete happiness. With everything that I've been through, his birth was going to sooth my heart, I was going to have a reason to live and a reason to smile everyday no matter how bad my day was. But.. I was robbed of my happiness by someone that I trusted the most, someone that I considered a sister..

I felt Nazo's touch, his hand moved around my arm.. I put the blanket back..

Complete silence engulfed the room, I think we didn't know what to say to each other to make the situation less depressing..

Him: I lie awake most nights wondering how he was going to be like, would he take from me or would he take from you. I was happy that I was going to be a Father, I had a chance to be what

Richard failed to be. When I heard that he was gone, my whole world stopped for a second deep down I was angry with myself that I couldn't get there on time to save both of you. Had I-

Me: It's all my fault.. Everyone warned me about Nkuli but I refused to listen. Seeing that she was once there for me when I was at the verge of killing myself I went on to trust her with my life, she was my sister someone who was always there for me. She killed him, she didn't even think twice she shoved that knife deep inside and..

I was getting emotional..

Me: I felt him trying to move, I wanted him to hold on a bit longer but it became too much. Nkuli killed my Son in the most gruesome way, she took a piece of me when she killed him. I don't know how to move on, I don't know how to get on with my life knowing that he is not inside

of me anymore and all I have are scars to remind me of the whole ordeal. I wish it was me, I wish my life was taken and he made it (Crying)
He hugged me..

Me: I can't do this without him.. I feel like I'm going to lose it, I wish God could lift this pain and sorrow from me (Crying)

–

TUMI

I enjoy spending time with Shine and his family than I do with mine, don't get me wrong I love my family but the tension at the flat can be very draining at times..

Me: I'm sorry about Rethabile's attitude

Him: Awusho.. Unje vele kuwe? (Tell me.. She's always like this with you)

I nodded..

Him: And you think it's okay?

Me: She's just 16.. She will get better when she grows up

He chuckled...

Him: She won't get better.. Uzoba worse

Me: I just think my mother's death affected her the most, she's still trying to deal with it

Him: Kodwa lokho akusho ukuthi k'mele adelele so (That doesn't mean she should be this disrespectful)

I put my arms around his waist and exhaled, I laid my head on his chest..

Me: Don't worry about her

Him: I'm not worried, ngifuna nje akwazi ukukuhlonipha (I want her to respect you)

Me: I don't really care about it anymore, she is what she is

Him: If she's on the list of meeting my Mom, umtshela ke ukuthi uk'delela ak'shiye lapha

kubo (tell her to leave that attitude and disrespect at home)

I haven't thought of that, would she go as far as disrespecting other people??

.

To be continued

No edits

SEASON FINALE

—

132

NOMVELO

This time around the meeting was a bit better, maybe that's because I stopped looking at who was judging me and who wasn't, after all we were all there for the same thing.. Nazo being there made the whole situation a bit easier, it

made me feel relaxed and I needed for him to know how much and how deep this has hurt me. I know it was too much for him because he didn't know how to help me, I didn't need him to help me I just want him to be there for me. I know he can't be there 24/7 because he has other commitments, but whenever he can I want him to be there. I want us to talk about it more often that way it will help lessen the burden..

When the meeting came to an end we drove back home, but we first stopped by at my Grandmother's place to get my things. She was really excited to hear that Nazo and I were getting back together, when Nazo was taking my things to the car she sat me down so that she could give me a lecture..

Her: I'm glad that you came to your senses and decided to go back home, to your husband

Me: Me too

Her: I know that I'm old Velo and probably don't know how things work with your generation, but in my times what you doing now you wouldn't be doing. When you married and had moved in with your in laws, you couldn't just pack up and leave when things didn't go your way. It didn't work like that. I'm not saying stay in a marriage that is not good for you but, you need to grow up. No one forced you to be his wife, you agreed on your own so when you act like this it's not right... I would understand if he was cheating on you or if you were in an abusive relationship but you not, no matter how much he loves you Velo but he is a man and he easily gets tired. They get impatient very quickly and he will be setting his eyes on the next best thing. I know you have this thing that he is a preacher, he is spiritual etc but at the end of the day he is a man and years later down the line when you get a wake up call, another woman would've taken your place and you will live your life in

regrets. I'm just trying to make you see differently, and if you won't take my advice then it's fine after all what do I know? I'm just old. Though don't forget that there's a possibility that Nkuli might get out and she will regain her life, don't give her power to ruin yours and your marriage. You will never find a family that's going to love you like they do, Especially Gugu you know how difficult she is and for her to love you like this.. It means you special indeed

Nazo walked back in..

Grams: It's late you guys should be on your way home, it's not right for Nomvelo to be in the streets at this time, what if your Uncles stop by uninvited. I don't want unwanted meetings

I got up from the chair..

Me: I'll call you

I walked up to her and hugged her..

Me: Thank you

Her: Go home, I don't want you here unless you
visiting

We broke the hug..

Me: I love you Duchess

Her: I love you too

I made my way to Nazo..

Her: You two be safe on the streets now

Me: It's the same street Duchess and a few
houses from here

Her: It doesn't matter

Nazo laughed..

Nazo: Bye MaNgcobo

Grams: Bye Nazo.. Greet Gugu

Nazo: I will

She walked us out..

—

TUMI

Dinner at Shine's place was nerve wrecking, I was nervous and scared that Rethabile might go all out to embarrass me tonight, after all she has been in a mood ever since we left home..

Me: Rethabile please behave

Retha: I would if I didn't have to be dragged here!

Aunt: Rethabile!!

Retha: What? This has nothing to do with me!

The door opened, it was Shine who opened..

Me: Hey

Shine: Ninjani? (how are you)

Me: We good

Shine: Please..

He opened the door wider and we walked in..

Aunt: Thank you for having us

Shine: ngibonga ukufika kwenu (Thank you for making it)

Mamezala showed up from the living room..

Her: Good evening

Me: Evening

Aunt: Evening

She made our way to us..

Me: Aunty this is Shine's Mother, we call her Mamezala. Mamezala this is my Aunt, she is more like a mother to me and my Sister

Mamezala: It's very nice to meet you

Aunt: Nice to meet you too

They hugged..

Me: And uhm..

I cleared my throat..

Me: This is my little Sister, Rethabile

Mamezala: Nice to meet you too

Mamezala extended her hand to her..

Rethabile:...

Aunt: Retha

Rethabile reluctantly extended hers too..

Mamezala: Okay we can.. We can all go to the dining table in the living room I have prepared dinner for you

Aunt: Thank you very much for having us

My Aunt and Mamezala walked in first,
Rethabile followed then Shine looked at me..

Shine: Ang'funi uk'cikeka (I don't want to get irritated)

Me: Kodwa akashongo nex njena? (She didn't say anything though)

He raised his eyebrows..

Him: Askies?

I kept quiet..

Him: Iza ngik'bekele iStory.. Ujwayele ukudelela nina mara la ekhaya akekho umuntu odelela umamami siyezwana? (Let me tell you something.. Here in this house, no one disrespects my Mother are we clear)

I swallowed..

Me: You making a big deal out of nothing

Him: Tum-

Me: Everyone is waiting for us..

I made my way to the living room..

—

NOMVELO

Nazo went and put my luggage in the room while I made my way inside the house, Gugu was in the kitchen..

Gugu: You almost missed Dinn-

She turned around and I think she expected to see Nazo..

Her: Ohw Velo.. I thought it was Nazo

She wiped her hands with the swab..

Me: He's busy putting my luggage in the room

Her: Hau.. Kusho ukuthi ubuyile futhi? (That means you back again)

I nodded..

Her: Are you staying this time around or? Phela wena you a part time makoti la ekhaya

I didn't say anything for a few seconds, deep inside I wanted to tell her off but then I remembered my Grandmother's words

Me: I am staying

She looked at me with doubt..

Her: That's good because I am not going to apologize for what I said the other day, I meant

everything

Me: I understand and.. I should be the one apologizing. I'm sorry for acting immature, this time around I'll commit to my marriage I promise

Her: Isn't it too early to be making such a Promise?

She was really getting under my skin and it was irritating, the best I could do was to remain quiet..

Her: Where are you guys coming from by the way?

Me: AA meeting.. I started today

Her: That's good.. How did you find it?

Me: Its okay.. I'll adjust as time goes on

Her: I'm glad you attending because I have something to tell you

I looked at her..

Her: Richard asked me to marry him

I didn't know what to say..

Me: Wow that's.. That's good news

Her: So..

She extended her hand to me, I got closer extended mine to hers. She then walked me to the lounge.. Nosi was standing against the couch and playing a game..

Her: I love Nosi but I don't think taking her with me is the best option. You and Nazo are still young you will make good Parents, plus Nosi is very fond of Nazo and I don't wanna break that bond between them

Me: Wha.. What are you saying?

Her: I'm saying that you and Nazo are the Parents that Nosi needs, I mean Richard and I we old. We going to spend most of our lives traveling the world and enjoying what's left of

the years that we have together

Me: I..

This was unexpected

Her: This is the gift that Niso has given you to remember him with, I will inform the social workers about my decision only if you agree. You guys are still young, and I'm sure that you will make a great young Mom

Gugu really caught me off guard. Nosi threw the tablet on the floor in frustration..

Her: Shit!!!! (Shouting)

My eyes widened..

Gugu: That's your queue

She pushed me a little, I wonder where she learned that word..

I picked up the tablet and switched it off, thank goodness the screen didn't crack.

I looked at her..

Me: See you broke it

She looked at me..

Me: You broke it.. It doesn't wanna switch on now

She looked at it and said things that didn't make sense, she was saying a lot of gibberish..

Me: No you broke it

I stood up straight as she pulled my tshirt and started crying..

Me: Nosi

She continued crying..

Me: You don't have any right to cry because you broke it

She forced her head in between my legs still crying..

Me: Nosi.. Stop

She cried louder..

Me: No..

Nazo: What's going on?

When she heard Nazo's voice she got her head from between my legs and ran to him while crying..

Her: Yazo!!!

He picked her up..

Nazo: What's wrong?

She started talking a lot of gibberish again while wiping her tears with her small hands..

Nazo walked over and sat on the armrest of the couch..

Him: Stop crying and tell Yazo what happened?

She didn't say anything, she just laid her head on his chest and continued crying. Nazo looked at me...I shrugged my shoulders..

–

TUMI

Dinner was going well but Rethabile was still in her moods. We were busy talking about random things and I wasn't participating in the conversation because my eyes were stuck on Rethabile, she was on her phone the whole time. She didn't even touch her food, it was very embarrassing that I had to say something..

Me: Retha..

I cleared my throat..

Me: Retha.. Stop playing with your phone and eat your food

Her: I'm not hungry

The atmosphere changed..

Aunt: Table manners Retha

Her facial expression changed, she was getting irritated..

Aunt: Re-

Retha: ohh my word leave me alone! I didn't even wanna come here in the first place

Me: Rethabile stop it!!

Retha: This is not about me.. We not here for Me! So leave me alone

Mamezala: Young lady I don't all-

Retha: Shut up!!!!!!

That's when Shine lost it, he got up and went to were Retha was sitting..

Shine: Stand up!

He was all fired up I saw Rethabile getting a bit scared.. Rethabile protested, Shine grabbed her arm and forced her to stand up. He then pulled her to the kitchen..

Me: Shine what are you doing?

Rethabile: Let go of me you hurting me!

I got up and rushed to them..

Me: Shine..

Retha: Tumi!!

Shine opened the door and literally threw her out and then locked, Retha started banging on the door while crying..

Her: Tumi!!! Tumi!! (Shouting)

Me: Shine you can't do that!

I tried to get the keys but he pushed me back and them from the door..

Retha: Tumi!!.. Tumi!! (Crying)

I tried to get the keys from him but he pushed me back again..

Him: Tumi..

Me: No you can't do that.. Give me the keys!
That's my little sister

Him: Uzobuya Maka ready ukhlonipha (She will

come back when she's ready to respect)

Retha: Tumi please open!! (Crying)

I tried getting them back and he still pushed me..

Him: Tumi ngiyakukhuza njalo (Tumi I am warning you)

He clicked his tongue and made his way back to the living room, my heart was on my knees. I was so scared for my sister, worse she doesn't even know this place.. How can Shine be so cold??

.

To be continued

133

NOMVELO

Me: Pout..

She didn't know what the hell that was so I

showed her, then she just started doing her own things busy sniffing like a dog. It was hilarious and yet very adorable. Last night Nazo had a night of his own, he had a whole night prayer. We prayed together at 20:00 then at 23:00 he drove out to the field where he feels very much connected to the holy spirit and heaven as a whole then he came back this morning, I didn't hear him though because I slept in the house with Nosi. We slept in Niso's room. It was actually good praying with Nazo, words were expelled easily from my mouth. It gets a bit difficult when I do it alone, I just say a few words and then I get emotional. Nazo said I shouldn't be discouraged when that happens, my broken heart and spirit is actually connecting with the most high. Even when words fail me, deep down he knows exactly what I wanted to say. Since I haven't been at work for a while, I will be the one babysitting Nosi and cleaning since Gugu is now

introducing her own style of clothing at the store she won't be around most of the time. I am really proud of her because I really like the modern traditional dresses that she wears, though she has no background of fashion design she seems to be doing well working with a few people and presenting her ideas then they turn them into exactly what she wants.

I will go back to work but not now, I wanna take some time off and do my wifey duties and I also wanna spend more time with Nosi.

Me: Do that again

She did it again and I took a video, then I sent it to Nazo. I really don't know how Nazo does it, he doesn't sleep the whole night. Comes back in the morning, sleeps for at least 2 hours and then goes straight to work. I mean if it was me I'd still be sleeping. I picked Nosi up and then we went to the kitchen, I put her on the high chair. Being short is really working for her

seeing that she can still sit nicely on her high chair.. I made her an instant soft porridge..

Me: There you go

I took the spoon and tried to feed her but she wanted to feed herself, Nosi is very stubborn just like her Father. It's like Niso gave her all his stubbornness..

Me: Okay then let's see how you do it

She fed herself, wasn't perfect but it also wasn't bad. My phone beeped, I checked and it was a WhatsApp message from Nazo..

*****WhatsApp*****

Him: What is she doing? ()

Me: Lol that is how we pout nowadays ()

Him: It's cute.. I like it ()

Me: It's very cute

Him: Let me get back to work.. I'll see you guys

later

Me: What a bummer ()

Him: Someone has to pay the bills woman

Me: You can come and babysit and I'll pay the bills

Him: Lol yeah right

Me: Okay see you later

Him: I love you

Me: Me too

Him: What is "Me too"

Me: I love you too

Just when I had put my phone down I heard a knock at the door, I looked at Nosi..

Me: I wonder who it is

I made my way to the door to open and it was

Mantwa, I thought it was my Grandmother or
Danger..

Me: Mantwa

Her: Hi.. Hey Velo

Me: Uhm.. Can I help you?

Her: Well I.. I'm looking for Gugu

Me: She's not here

Her: Nazo?

Me: He is not here

Her: Ohw.. No problem, I'll come back later

Me: What is it about?

Her: Nothing much.. Just wanted to show them
photos of my wedding that they failed to attend

I chuckled..

Her: I didn't know that I cracked a joke

Me: You didn't crack a joke.. Your a joke!

Her: Excuse me?

Me: Why is it important that every aspect of your life should be known by my husband?

Her: Ohw it's not like that.. There's no need to be insecure

Me: Insecure?

Her: I really don't wanna do this but.. Lately what has been written about you is not good and in the process your alcoholism is really ruining his reputation. Nazo is a very res-

Me: Do you drink alcohol?

Her: Certainly not.. See I'm a Christian and I don't drink, if I'm going through something I pray about it as a Preacher's wife you should know that. Prayer is supposed to be your best weapon and revenge against the devil

Me: Says the same person who almost committed suicide where was your Christianity

at that time?

That caught her off guard..

Me: Look I am not going to do this with you Miss Christian because all your Christian didn't work for you, he still left you and married an "Alcoholic" seriously get it through your heard, Nazo doesn't want you.. Plus shouldn't you be on your honeymoon or something? Doing things that newlyweds do?

She really didn't have anything to say, I heard something falling and Nosi started crying.

Me: I'm sorry.. I would rather entertain my Daughter than what's happening here

I closed the door on her face, I turned around and Nosi had dropped her dish. I hate when People use religion to make themselves look better, The reason why most people hate religion is because of being constantly judged. Churches shouldn't be a place for Christians to

gloat but it should be a hospital for the broken, it should be where people run to when all doesn't make sense. But unfortunately that's not the case, where people should find comfort is where they get hurt the most. I most definitely don't believe that Christianity stands for that type of behaviour and character.. I pray I don't become that type of Christian, she surely was going to make a horrible preacher's wife

—

TUMI

I was about to leave for work when I stumbled on Rethabile laying on the couch, I thought that she long left for school but.. I guess I was wrong..

Me: Retha?

She sat up straight, she was crying..

I feel very bad about what Shine did last night, locking my Sister outside for an hour in a hood

that she didn't even know. What if something bad happened to her? I really feel some type of way about what he did hence I think he noticed that I was upset because he didn't call nor said anything ever since that incident.. I sat next to her..

Me: I'm sorry about last night.. I know that he is a crazy guy I just didn't think he would be that crazy as to do something like that

She wiped her tears..

Me: I'm truly sorry

[Silence]

Her: What he did last night reminded me of the nights that we used to spend outside when our Uncle and his wife kicked us out, we would be running up and down on the streets at night not knowing where to go. Though I was young but I remember those cold nights, I remember one night in particular when it was raining and he

had sent us to buy him some beers. You put me on your back and all those men at the tavern were looking at us as if like we were preys, you got so scared that we went back home and he was angry that we didn't buy the beers he sent us to buy. He pushed you and you hit the wall with me on your back, I really thought he was going to kill us that night

I exhaled.. Those are memories that I don't like to date back too because there's nothing much that's there, other than pain and sorrow.. I swallowed

Her: Since from then every challenge that we encountered I would always say "If only Mom was here" so when he threw me out last night.. If Aunty didn't move to South Africa I don't know what was going to happen to us

She closed her eyes..

I put my arm around her shoulders..

Me: I'm sorry and I'll make sure that something like that won't happen again

Her: I don't know if I'll go back to that life when you move out, Aunty is sick and she can die anytime.. What's going to become of me because clearly your boyfriend doesn't like me
I pulled her closer to me for her hug..

Me: It's always been you and me, I'll never let anyone get in between us

I saw my Aunt standing there, looking at us and shaking her head..

–

NOMVELO

I called Nazo..

Him: Is everything okay?

Me: Everything is fine

Him: Do you miss me that much?

Me: Not really.. I hope I didn't disturb you

Him: Not at all.. I'm just starrng out of the window and watching birds flying around, it's not like I have work to do

Me: Don't be like that.. I will call you later then

Him: You already called

Me: But I don't-

Him: Khuluma MaButhelezi (Talk)

Me: Your ex was here

Him: That's not possible my ex is in a mental instution

Me: The other one

Him: I don't remember another one, other than that one

Me: Mantwa

Him: Ohh that one.. What did she want?

Me: Nothing other than she just wanted to ride

your dick

Him: She's welcome.. Plus I haven't been regular in that department

Me: Ohw pleeeeeease I'm sure I ride it better

Him: Yaa I don't think I remember

Me: Well I will remind you tonight if you don't have any appointments with the Angels

Him: Now we talking

Me: anyway she was here to show you her wedding pictures

Him: She came all the way to show me that?

Me: She's done been after your dick it's irritating, she's even stalking me on social media but don't worry I sorted her out

Him: You did?

Me: Yeap I did

Him: You? The biggest cry baby in the world

sorted her out?

Me: Don't start with me that's not funny

He laughed..

Him: Look Nana I need to get back to work

Me: Okay see you later

Him: What is Nosi doing?

Me: She's watching Tv and talking alone

Him: I'll see you guys later

Me: Before you hang up I need to discuss something with you

Him: It can't wait?

Me: Not really.. I... I need some female products

Him: Female products?

Me: Toiletries and what not

Him: I'll stop by at the bank and ask how long it will take for them to unfreeze your account if

it's not done immediately I will withdraw some cash for you

Me: Ohw

Him: Ohw?

Me: I thought that you would need a list maybe

Him: Do I need a reason to ask for a list?

Me: No you don't

Him: Okay check your fuel too

Me: I'll do soo

Him: See you later

Me: later then

I lowered my phone and it was good to see that he is starting to trust me again, and I won't disappoint him again..

–

NKULI

Dawn came with Danger, I was surprised to see Danger. I thought he would want nothing to do with me..

Me: Thank you for coming.. I appreciate it a lot

Danger: How are you feeling?

Me: It's hard but I'm hanging in there

Danger: You look better than the last time I saw you, strapped on that bed

Me: Thank you

Danger: Those scratches on your face, the broken finger nails.. What happened? You did this to yourself?

I didn't say anything..

Him: Dawn talked to me, he talked to me about getting you out of here

I looked at him..

Him: I can't do it.. Nor until you tell me what

happened, why did you do that to your cousin?
Nomvelo could've died from too much bleeding
I looked at Dawn and he nodded..

Me: I don't even know where to start.. I'm trying
to find an explanation one that will seem sane
He kept quiet..

Me: When evil is being talked about we turn a
deaf ear because we just think it's bogus or not
that deep enough. Trust me, I have seen evil at
first hand and it's not something that one would
wanna mess with. When I was angry at
Nomvelo and Nazo, I opened my heart to great
evil. One that damaged me. Danger I regretted
what I did, I didn't mean to hurt Velo and I'm not
going to act innocent in all of this because I
brought it on myself. All I need is a second
chance, a second chance at life and to fix the
mess that I have created

He looked at me for a while..

Him: Even if I do sign but.. You won't be able to come back home, Your Grandmother wants nothing to do with you. The whole family doesn't want anything to do with you

Dawn: I understand.. She will be staying with me and my family up until she's rid of everything

Danger: Does Nazo know about this? What about Velo?

Dawn: Velo knows.. Nazo I'm still going to talk to him because he has to be a part of Nkuli's healing

Nazo is not going to agree, how can Dawn even think about something like that???

.

To be continued

SEASON FINALE

—

NOMVELO

Nosi ended up falling asleep I don't blame her she woke up very early in the morning

I was glad that she was asleep, that will give me time to do laundry and maybe clean a bit. I am not domesticated but I do have a bit of knowledge about it, Plus I have observed Gugu doing some chores at one point before Nazo and I got married. Laundry is going to be easy because of the washing machine, cleaning I can't really say.. As I was busy getting Nazo's clothes I had an unexpected visitor, it was Nomsa. I put the basket down and went to hug her, I was really happy to see her..

Me: What are you doing here?

Her: I came to see you, it's been a while

We broke the hug..

Me: It has been a while indeed

Her: Wow you look.. You look beautiful as always

Me: Thank you.. You look good too

Her: At this age.. I try

Me: Let's go inside and have something to drink
I closed the door and we went inside the house..

Her: Never thought that one I would find you in leggings, an oversize tshirt and a doek. Doing house chores, I mean even on a normal lazy day you still looked good

I chuckled..

Me: Ya I know.. I am concentrating on my marriage, being a wife and a good Makoti. I really would feel uncomfortable when Nazo and I leave then we get a helper and she does his laundry, cook for him, and clean after him. It's

just not right that's how they steal your man..
Tea, juice, or cool drink?

Her: Tea would be nice

Me: Plus I don't want Gugu thinking that her Son made a mistake by marrying me, she said some things that weren't very pleasant I want them to see that I'm really trying

Her: That's good, I'm impressed

[SILENCE]

Her: I'm sorry about what happened, Danger told me.. How are you holding up?

I sighed..

Me: I don't know.. Maybe that's the reason why I'm keeping busy because I don't wanna think about it

Her: I actually stopped by the day that it happened, not precisely when it happened but after it happened when cops were there and

everything. You were already taken to the hospital

Her: I still don't understand why Nkuli would do something like this

Me: Me too

Her: She was very fond of you, she didn't want anything with you and then she goes and does something like this..I have no words

Me: So how.. How are things going with you? How is the restaurant?

I didn't wanna talk about what happened, I try to avoid talking about it because it's not something that's easy to date back too..

Her: Things are very good at the restaurant you must come by some time and check it out

Me: I'll definitely do that.. Let me put a few clothes in the machine while we catch up over a cup of tea

Her: uhm not to be forward or anything but..
How much do you know about doing laundry?

Me: I know a.. I.. You put the whites first and
then when you done you put the other colours in

Her: That's true but.. Can I see his whites?

Me: Uhm.. Yeah sure

We went out to the outside room..

Me: I will start with his white shirts

She got one out from the basket and looked at
it..

Her: Ya Velo this shirt is very white.. Gugu used
to do this before you?

Me: Pretty much

Her: Ya she knows her story

Me: She was a maid back in her days

Her: look.. Why don't you put the white shirts in
a basin, soak them with water and a bit of your

washing soap. After a few minutes use a sunlight green bar soap to wash them again and rinse thoroughly

Me: You think?

Her: White is a very delicate colour so be careful, even when you iron make sure that your iron doesn't have a smudge on it and that it does stick. The last thing that you want is to burn his clothes, and they look expensive

I exhaled..

Me: This is harder than I thought

Her: It's not and don't be hard on yourself.. You will get a hang of it

Me: I don't wanna contribute a vagina only in this marriage but I really wanna be a good wife

I sat on the bed frustrated..

Her: Don't give up now.. Tell you what, it's my day off today and I wanted to spend the whole

day with you. So we can start off with the laundry, clean a bit and then see where we end up

Me: You don't have too

She sat next to me..

Her: You will be doing most of the work, I'll just help you here and there

Me: Are you sure?

Her: Yes I'm sure

She got up..

Her: We don't have much time so let's we might wanna start now

Me: Okay.. Thank you very much

Her: Come on.. There's still a lot to do

Me: We should get to it before Nosi wakes up

Her: Who is Nosi?

Me: Long story.. I'll tell you some other time

–

TUMI

Nazo is very handsome and me checking him out doesn't mean that I wanna be in a relationship with him, I think that he will be too much for me. You know that you get those guys who are very good looking but you just wouldn't date them, to me he is one of them...

I really don't know how Nomvelo does it, I mean just being in his presence is very intimidating. My heart was beating abnormally, my mouth was dry and my hands couldn't stop trembling. Despite his looks, he is not just anyone and I think that's why this situation is very difficult for me..

Him: I think you need to change it here..

Me: I will..

Him: I'm also going to need the invoices from our suppliers

I cleared my throat..

Me: Sorry.. I'll get them for you

Him: Thank you very much.. Can I have the other files too so that I can take a look at them

Me: No problem

All the while that he was talking, he was glued on the documents that were in front of him, now that he was done with them he kept eye contact..

Me: I'll get the files for.. For you

He smiled a little...

Him: I'd appreciate that very much

As I was about to walk out, Shine made his way in..

Shine: Umuntu eskhundleni sakhe (Someone is back to his position)

Nazo: You know I'm a part time CEO

Shine looked at me before he could say anything I walked out. I was still very angry at how he treated my Sister, I know that she's not the best person but what he did wasn't nice at all.. I got all the files and went through them one by one to make sure that everything was filed correctly, there were two signatures on each paper and no careless mistakes. The last thing I want is to have a lengthy conversation with Nazo in his office

Shine made his way to me..

Him: Ngiyazi ukuthi ukwatile, mara mina from my side ngeke ng'xolise (I know that you angry and from my side I won't apologize)

Me: Typical of you.. Plus I wasn't expecting any apology from you

Him: Angazi ukuthi ukwateleni.. Bowufuna ngimuyeke adelele ekhaya? (I don't even know why you angry.. You wanted me to leave her

while she was that disrespectful)

I sighed in frustration..

Me: I don't like fighting and arguing Shine so please.. I don't wanna do this with you right now

Him: This is why lo mntwana ayenza so, akek-
(This is why your sister acts in the way that she acts, ther-)

Me: Please.. I'm trying to get some work done

He didn't say anything, He just walked up to the door and went out. I banged one of the files on the table and closed my eyes, I really hate it when there's tension between us..

Nazo: Everything okay?

I opened my eyes and looked at him, he was standing at the door of his office while rolling his sleeves up. You wouldn't miss that yellow gold wedding band on his finger, it was shining brighter than the sun..

Him: How are the files coming along?

I grabbed all of them and made my way to his office, I put them on his table..

Him: Thank you

He went and sat on his chair while leaving a trail of his cologne..

Me: Is there anything else that I can do for you?

Him: No thank you

He took one of the files..

Me: I'll be at my station

I walked out..

Him: Tumi??

I went back in..

He opened the file and went through it..

Him: couples do fight a lot.. It's healthy

Me: I'm not sure what you talking about

Him: Then you can go back on your station

Me: Yes Sir

I made my way out..

–

NKULI

Danger did sign for me to be released and Dawn wasn't lying when he said he will take me home with him but first, we stopped by at some restaurant...

Me: I wanna thank you again for helping me

Him: It's what I do

[SILENCE]

Me: I also appreciate you giving me a roof under my head but I really don't want to cause any problems between you and your wife

Him: You won't

Me: Not to sound ungrateful but.. Why did you

agree to help me?

He looked at me..

Me: Nazo is your friend and right now this might cause some issues between you two

Him: God and Lucifer they not alike. Quite frankly if it was up to me I wouldn't help you, I would let you rot in that institution but.. God had mercy on your soul, you are not a bad person you were just in a bad situation. May this be a lesson to you

Me: You talked about Nazo having to be a part of my getting better?

Him: He is a healer, he has to heal your broken soul so that what Lucifer found in you, he cannot find it again

Me: Thank you again.. I appreciate it

–

NAZO

I was now standing at the window and staring out, I have been battling with one constant vision lately. A vision of me helping Nkuli, healing her from the heaviness that is in her heart. When she was being tortured by the demons, they pressed hard upon her soul and as time goes on she will find it hard to live with what happened and that will drive her to true insanity that she might not recover from.. The human part of me is still battling with different emotions deep inside of me, this is the same girl who killed my baby and almost killed my wife. She almost robbed me of everything that means a lot to me.. This is going to be another set back for Nomvelo, she's doing pretty well but then again Nkuli wants a chance to ask for forgiveness.. If I refuse then I would've given in to Lucifer, this is what he would want..

—

NKULI

Halfway through our meal I started to feel uneasy. I looked around and the atmosphere was changing. Dawn had went out to make a quick phone call, it was just after he had stepped out that all of this started. I looked around again and there was a lot of heavy spirits present in the restaurant, they were all around and moving in a fast pace that I got dizzy. I quickly stood up and made my way to bathroom because I was feeling very nauseated. I locked and sat on the bed toilet trying to breath in and out, I was very scared.

Me: Lord please.. I'm begging you, let this not happen to me anymore

The door flung open, a blast of wind made it's way inside then I was lifted high up to the air. I felt something clawing me, and it was also groaning. More like there was an animal in the bathroom with me..

I tried to scream but it strangled me, then it sent

me flying across the room. I fell and as if that wasn't enough, I was lifted up again my tshirt and bra ripped from me. I felt a sharp nail digging it's way from my chest then my stomach, more like it was writing something on my body..

.

To be continued

Excuse any errors

135

DAWN

I had gone outside for just a few minutes to check up on my wife and Daughter, when I got back the restaurant was in a panick. Some other customers were leaving and a few workers were crowded at the ladies toilets just at the door, I looked over at our table and it was empty. I walked over to see what was going on and one of the female staff walked out of the

bathroom holding Nkuli who struggled to walk a little, they had given her one of the tshirts and she had blood on her legs..

Me: What happened?

Her: Just get me out of here please

She was shivering and looked a bit scared, I took off my jacket and put it over her. I looked at the workers..

Me: Thank you very much.. I'll take it from here

Her: She needs to go to the hospital she's bleeding

Nkuli looked at me..

Nkuli: I can't.. If they see all these marks they will send me back to the institution

Me: I know.. Let's go

I helped her to walk and we made our way to the the car with a few people taking videos, the world that we live in today..

–

TUMI

During my lunch break I called my Aunt since she wanted me to bring her something later when I go back home. Nazo had gone out, said he was going to pass by the bank and Shine wasn't around. Ever since he left he hasn't come back.. I called her on the landline phone...

Her: Hello?

Me: It's me Aunty

Her: Hi Tumi.. Is everything okay?

Me: Everything is fine just wanted to...

I cleared my throat..

Me: I..

I started crying..

Her: What's wrong?

Me: Everything Aunty.. I don't know what to do

with Shine and Retha because they both mean a lot to me and I don't want to choose between them this is very difficult for me

She exhaled..

Me: It's very hard for me

Her: I would give you advice but then again..
You won't take it as always

I kept quiet..

Her: Tumi if you keep on doing this with Rethabile, I don't wanna lie to you. You will never be happy

Me: This morning she told me that..

Her: I heard what she said.. You and I know that she's using that as emotional blackmail. If you keep this up sweetheart, you going to lose that man and I don't know where you going to get another one who will love you as much as Shine does. Let's face it starting over again is going to

be difficult, relationships nowadays they aren't what they used to be and you not getting any younger

Me: What do you think I should do

Her: You really want my advice?

Me: Yes

Her: Put your foot down! Don't let Retha walk all over you. What Shine did that night, it might seem cruel but ever since that night have you heard her talking back or giving you attitude? Other than just crying the whole time?

Me: What if something happened Aunty?

Her: Something like what? She was in the yard.. I don't think Shine would've done that if he didn't think that she was going to be safe

Me: Maybe she should just go to a boarding school

Her: Now that's a good idea.. Plus you know I'm

sick, I won't be able to constantly deal with her attitude when you gone

Me: Thank you Aunty..

Her: You welcome

Me: Let me go I'll see you later

Her: Okay don't stress that much

Me: Okay bye

Her: Bye

–

NOMVELO

The laundry was on the washing line, the house was clean. What was left now was the ironing and cooking. With cooking, I found some page on Facebook they post recipes and really nice looking dishes. It's not complicated dishes, just your normal meals that you can prepare at home I don't think I can be defeated.. I was very tired, I threw myself on the couch and let out a

breath of exhaustion.

Nosi: Lelo!!!!!! (shouting)

I closed my eyes as the voice was nearing..

Nosi: Lelo!!.. Peepe..

Me: I'm not gonna get a breather

She pulled my leggings..

Her: Peepe Lelo!!!!!!

Gugu is potty training her or was, I don't know how she was doing it because she didn't buy her that small toilet thing that toddlers use.

Now I have to hold her at the toilet while she goes about her business. I picked her up and we went to the toilet, she peed and then I wiped her.. When we were done with that we washed our hands and then went to the kitchen so that I could make her something to eat, Nomsa walked in with the basket followed by Danger..

Nomsa: These ones are dry.. I got them for you

Me: Thank you very much

Her: I don't think I will help you with the cooking, the laundry is a lot and ironing might take a while. Plus I need to be gone at 18:00, no one should find me here

Me: Ohw yes the cooking I got it.. Let me make Nosi something to eat very quickly and then we can start with the ironing

She looked at Danger...

Her: Guess you'll come and get me later

Danger: No problem

Her: So where do we do the ironing?

Me: Niso's room.. The last door

Her: Let me go put the laundry there then

Me: Okay

She walked away and I looked at Danger..

Me: Ain't you supposed to be at work?

Him: Believe it or not, people find taxis more cheaper than an Uber but next month I will be working for some company. At least I will be transporting more than twice a day

Me: What company?

Him: Some agency.. I pick up people from the airport to their hotel

Me: That's better

Him: Ya it is..

Me: So Daddy Dearest what's happening?

Him: What's happening with what?

Me: You and Nomsa? I am sensing that something is happening

Him: Nomsa and I we always had a good and sincere relationship, we close friends even when JJ was still alive

Me: I see

Him: Yes any more questions?

Me: Nope nothing.. Although if something could happen between you two that's more than a friendship, I am totally f..

Nomsa came back..

Her: Time is not on our side.. We should start with the ironing

Me: Yes of course.. Let me make Nosi something to eat

Danger: I will see you ladies later

Me: Later it is

He walked out..

Her: Let me take her while you prepare something for her

Me: Okay

She tried taking Nosi from me but she didn't want..

Me: That's a first.. She's not usually this shy around strangers

Her: Maybe she's getting used to you

Me: Ya maybe

–

TUMI

Shine finally got back from wherever he was and he passed me as if like I didn't exist, Nazo was still not around he did say though that he might not come back.. I collected myself and went to the office, I knocked and he looked at me then went back to what he was doing..

Me: Hey

He kept quiet..

I went and sat down opposite him..

Me: I.. I'm going to find Retha a boarding school

Him: Manje? (so)

Me: I.. Shine.. I really don't like the tension between us and I think I have a right to be mad, she is my Sister after all. The only family that I have currently should anything happen to my Aunt. I know that Retha is a difficult person to get along with but as her big sister it is my duty to protect her at all times, I'm sorry if you find that somehow

Him: Azange ngithi jikela usis'wakho (I never said turn against her) kodwa lento yakhe yokungahloniphi ang'hambelani nayo nje.. (This thing of hers being disrespectful I am not for it)

Me: I know and I'm sorry that she disrespected your Mom

Him: Kanti akunani.. Since ukhulume nge boarding school, khona mina engiyaziyo nje ezoba right for yena (It's okay.. Since you mentioned a boarding school, there's one that I know)

Me: There is?

Him: Yebo.. Uyambona uNtokozo? (you remember my sister Ntokozo)

Me: Ya?

Him: She was exactly like your sister agcwele ukudelela (she was very disrespectful)

Me: And a boarding school straightened her?

Him: Yeap

Me: Wow... Uhm you should give me the name

Him: Or we can go check it out tomorrow

Me: I think that would be nice

He stood up and then went and closed the door..

Him: If there's nothing else..

He made his way to me and I stood up, He picked me up and placed me ontop of the table..

Me: Nazo might come back

Him: That's why there door locks

Me: This is soo wrong

He started unbuttoning my shirt..

–

NOMVELO

My phone rang, it was Sway. Sway and I we starting to be good friends when I was deep in my pain and posting not so good things on social media, she would inbox me and then after we exchanged numbers and started calling each other. Well it was more of her calling me. I like Sway because she's been through this road, maybe not exactly what happened but she also lost her first baby so we relate a lot to each other..

Me: Swayeza!!!!

Her: Velo!!!

Me: How are you?

Her: I'm good and you?

Me: I'm good

Her: Was just checking up on you

Me: How sweet?? I'm well and how are you?

Her: I'm alright

Me: Enjoying Motherhood?

Her: Very much.. Enjoying your wifey duties? I saw on Facebook

I laughed..

Me: I'm getting there

Her: We should plan a mini trip.. You, Me, Nosi, and Angie

Me: That would be nice

Her: You should come by so we can talk then

Me: I will.. Thank you for calling again

Her: You welcome

Me: Love you babe

Her: Love you too.. Bye

Me: Bye

I put my phone down..

Nosi: Lelo!!!!!!

Here we go again..

–

SWAY

I put Angie down, she was fast asleep. I looked at her for a while just making sure until I heard Dawn's voice calling out downstairs. I went out of Angie's room and made my way downstairs, she was with some lady and she was in a very disturbing state. She was shivering and it looked like she was bleeding. I quickly made my way to them and helped her out, in the state that she was in we couldn't really go upstairs so we put her on the couch..

Me: What happened?

Him: It's a long story

Me: She has to go to the hospital

Him: Ya we can't take her there

Me: Why?

Him: Because..

Me: Because?

He kept quiet..

Me: Dawn!

Him: It's Nkuli.. Nomvelo's cousin

Me: What?

I stepped away..

Him: Honey I know wha-

Me: Why did you bring her here?

Him: She needs my help

Me: She needs your.. Dawn does Nazo know

about this?

Him: Not yet

Me: Are you serious? Nomvelo is my friend! I can't do this to her, plus it's a danger bringing her here while we have a baby in the house
Dawn she's dangerous

He came to me..

Him: Sway you have to trust me

Me: Dawn I want her out of my house.. Today!
Or Angie and I are going to leave

I made my way upstairs..

Me: Today!!

.

To be continued

136

SNAZO

On my way home I received a call from Dawn

and he discussed something with me,
something about helping Nkuli..

Him: Sway doesn't wanna understand so Nkuli
is going to sleep at the cottage, tomorrow
morning at my studio I'll do the cleansing and
you will have to be there

I kept quiet..

Him: I know that you have been having visions
about helping her and so have I, my human
nature doesn't wanna do it because I have seen
how it almost broke you and your wife.

Nomvelo was a mess, you guys almost broke
up but at the same time this is who we are. The
only way that Nkuli can forgive herself is if she
sees that you have forgiven her, it might take a
bit longer with Nomvelo but one day she will
forgive her

I thought for a while..

Me: I will come

Him: Thank you.. I'll see you then

I believe that Forgiveness is saying "God this and that happened. Now I am setting my heart free from the hurt and the anger, I ask you to take the wheel on this situation" Yes Nkuli hurt me more than anyone has ever hurt me before but holding to what she did will only burden me and imprison my heart, she will move on and I'll be held back. What she did I believe that she has been punished enough, being tormented by demons that much is not a walk in a park..

—

TUMI

I checked the boarding school again and I wasn't really sure about it, it seems very hardcore and there's bad reviews about it. Parents fear for their Children's safety, there was one article that I stumbled upon were a teacher hit a student and accidentally broke her

arm. Another article which led to parents signing a petition that the school must close was one incident where a student was beat to death, this made me feel somehow..

Shine got close on my pillow and kissed me on my neck..

Me: Shine.. I am not really sure about this school, did you see what they saying about it?

Him: kdala they were difficult, bebasiqinisa isandla. Manje kungconywa (long time ago they were difficult but now they a bit better)

Me: A student died..

Him: That's why bangasenzisi udlambe (That's why they no longer use corporal punishment)

Me: I seriously don't know

Him: Bheka Tumi.. Noma ungamvikela kangakani kodwa angeke umvikele impilo yakhe.

Rethabile mele azi ukuthi ukunzima la ngaphandle, masowungekho uzoyenza njani? (Look Tumi.. You cannot protect her forever. Rethabile needs to know that life is difficult, how she going to survive when you no longer around)

He had a point, I want Rethabile to be independent and be able to stand on her own two feet should something happen to me..

Me: Okay let's do this.. We can enroll her for a year and see, if it doesn't work out then I'm taking her out

Him: Deal

Shine's Mom and Mpumi weren't around, they had gone to visit some relatives so Shine was all alone. They be back after the weekend and I'll leave when they get back, now I'm just keeping him company..

He got ontop of me and I looked at him..

Me: Let's do it

Him: Do what?

Me: Get our own place

He smiled at me and kissed me. We had sex at work, when we knocked off and got home we found ourselves in bed again. This time around we were using condoms just to be safe. I was a bit sore, condoms are uncomfortable at times but we had bought a lubricant which makes things better. He rubbed himself at the entrance of my cookie up until he was rock hard and I was wet, we continued kissing and I extended my hand to get the condom. We broke the kiss and I helped him to put it on and then he put a bit of some lubricant. I don't know why but it's always painful when he enters me, no matter how many times we have had sex in one day. He made his way in and I flinched in pain, it gets a bit better when he is fully in..

–

NKULI

I heard a knock at the door..

Me: Come in

The door opened and Dawn walked in holding a few things, I was still feeling a bit dizzy and in pain. Think I bled a lot from what was drawn on my skin, I didn't think that the bruises were that deep. At least I wasn't tortured, ever since I stepped foot in Dawn's place I haven't felt the presence of any demon..

Dawn: I have brought you a few things, some food, towels, pain killers, antiseptic, ointment and gauzes to clean your wounds

Me: Thank you.. Thank you for everything

[SILENCE]

Me: Your wife seemed pretty upset

Him: Her and Nomvelo are pretty close now so..

Me: Ohh I understand.. I wish that Nomvelo and I could go back to how things were before

Him: I doubt you will.. She might forgive you but she will never trust you again

Another moment of silence passed..

Him: Do you still feel the same way about Nazo?

I shook my no..

Me: Somehow I have released him from my heart, wish I did so a bit sooner then I wasn't going to end up in this mess

Dawn: Maybe you should eat something, drink pain killers and then get some rest.. Tomorrow it's going to be a long day, Nazo has agreed

I looked at him..

Me: Deep down Nazo has always had a good heart

He stood up..

Him: eat something

Me: Thank you again

Him: You welcome

–

NOMVELO

I had just finished bathing and all I wanted to do was to sleep, I was very tired. I had cleaned the house, did laundry, cooked, and then babysat Nosi. Being a woman is not an easy job..

Me: Nosi wait..

I had wrapped a towel around my naked body, and now I was dressing up Nosi in her Pjs. She is a lot of work she doesn't wanna hold still..

Me: Nosi I'm really tired I don't have time to go back and forth with you

I heard a knock at the door and I went to open, It was Gugu..

Gugu: Sanibonani (Greetings)

I let her in..

Her: Unjani? (How are you)

Me: Tired.. Very tired

Her: Nosi was troubling you?

She went and got her..

Me: Yes and cleaning

Her: I was wondering when I walked in, the house was very clean.. Thank you

Me: You welcome

Her: You cooked too?

Me: Yes

Her: The chicken seems deli-

She paused..

Her: Wait you did the laundry too?

Me: Yes

Her: All by yourself?

Me: Yes

Her: Wow I.. I am very impressed

Me: Thank you

Her: Tomorrow morning I'm taking you out shopping, everything is on me

Me: You don't have to indirectly pay me, it's my duty to do all the things that I did today

Her: Who said I'm repaying you?

I looked at her..

Her: I'm just proud of you.. You becoming the wife that I imagined for my Son and you taking back charge of your life

Me: Thank you

Her: Let me get Nosi to bed and we will see you tomorrow morning

Me: Good night

When they headed to the door, Nosi looked at me and cried..

Her: Lelo!!!!

Gugu: Hau so fast she's used to you?

She started fighting with Gugu busy trying to pull her earrings..

Gugu: Nosi stop!!!

Me: I'll put her to sleep and bring her to you when she's sleeping

Gugu: Are you sure?

Me: Yes

I went and got Nosi from her..

Gugu: Sekaqala uyak'thanda (She's starting to become fond of you)

I laid her head on my shoulder and rocked her to sleep..

Gugu opened the door and walked out..

–
SWAY

I was laying on the bed with Angie busy playing with her, she has the most beautiful smile...

Me: Who is mommy's big girl????

I was busy tickling her and she was laughing..

Me: Yes you are.. Yes you are..

Dawn walked in.. I held my peace. He made his way to us and picked up Angie from the bed. He sat at the edge of the bed and sat her on his lap..

Dawn: No demon will possess you or my Daughter, I would never put you guys in danger

Me: Is she gone or should we start packing?

Him: You overreacting

Me: Am I? Didn't your fiancé get possessed by a demon that you brought home? Didn't it kill her?

He looked at me while shaking his head..

Me: I'm sorry.. I didn't mean that

He got up and walked away..

Me: Dawn I'm.. I'm sorry

—

NOMVELO

When she had fallen asleep I took her inside and gently laid her on the bed, she only wears nappies when she sleeps at night..

I went back to Gugu..

Me: She's fast asleep

Her: Thank you, and I must say that your chicken is very delicious

Me: Thank you very much

Her: How did you do it?

Me: Just my own recipe

Her: Your own recipe?

Me: Yes my own recipe.. I'm going to sleep,
Good night

Her: Good night baby

I made my way out, I wanted to sleep and wake up a bit late tomorrow. I don't even know how I will do that since Gugu wants to take us out..
When I got to the room, Nazo had arrived..

Him: I was wondering where you were

Me: I was putting Nosi to sleep

I closed the door..

Him: You guys seem to enjoy spending time with each other

Me: You can say that

He yawned..

Him: Tired?

Me: I cleaned, cooked, did laundry and looked

after Nosi all by myself

Him: All by yourself?

Me: Yes all by myself

Him: That's.. I don't even know what to say, I was wondering why the washing basket was empty

Me: Ya I did a lot today

Him: You sure did

Me: I just wanna sleep I'm tired

Him: See these chores are getting in a way of having my time with you

Me: I'm still new in this.. Hopefully I'll be better as time goes on

Him: Or we can hire a helper

Me: No.. I'll be fine

He walked up to me and just as he was about to kiss me I yawned, he forfeited..

Me: I'm sorry.. I'm just really tired

Him: Okay then you can just lay back and I'll do everything

Me: That sounds like a good idea

He picked me up and placed me on the bed, he came ontop of me and halfway through us kissing I just passed out. That's how tired I was..

–

DAWN

The next morning I woke up and prepared myself, since we had a long day ahead of us. Before I left I checked up on Angie and she was peacefully sleeping, I went and checked up on Sway too. She was sleeping. I slept in the guest room since things weren't really good between us, I can't wait to be done with helping Nkuli so that the tension can go between me and my wife.. As I made my way downstairs I got a call from Nazo..

Me: Nazo?

Him: I'm on my way to your house

Me: Thought we were going to meet at the studio

Him: I wanna talk to Nkuli first

Me: Alright we'll wait

Him: I'm not that far

Me: Cool.. See you then

Him: Sharp

I made my way out to the cottage to see if Nkuli was ready, I knocked a few times and there was no answer. I opened and made my way

In..

Me: Nkuli??

It was quiet. I proceeded and then I found an envelope on the bed addressed to "Nomvelo". I took it and looked at it..

Me: Nkuli??

Listening closely I heard water running in the bathroom and I made my way there, I knocked a few times. I saw water coming out from under the door, I opened the door and made my way in. It was flooded.. I looked at the bathtub and Nkuli had drowned herself, her hand was hanging on the side of the bathtub with blood dropping. The water water was mixed with blood..

.

To be continued

No edits

137

SNAZO

Upon my arriving at Dawn's place, I was met by a few cars. It was Police cars, an Ambulance, Forensics, and Pathologists. I parked a few

distance away and made my way to his house on foot, I went to the cottage since almost everyone was gathered there. Sway was standing at a far distance with another cop. Dawn was sitting not far from the door, he looked a bit devastated..

Me: Hey Man

He got up and we did a handshake and bumped shoulders..

Me: What's.. What's happening?

Before he could say anything, they wheeled out a body bag from the cottage, I stepped away to let them pass. Dawn sighed..

Him: It's Nkuli.. She.. She committed suicide

Me: What?

He got an envelope from his pocket and handed it to me..

Him: It's addressed to Nomvelo, if I give it to the

Detectives they will confiscate it. It's addressed to Nomvelo so only her she can open it

I put it in my pocket. I can't believe Nkuli would do this, we were very close to helping her..

Me: Why would she do this?

Him: I don't know.. Things are a bit bad considering the video that's circulating too

Me: What video?

Voice: Mr Baker.. I would like to have a word with you

I turned around and some lady was standing behind me..

Her: I am Detective Bronx and I am in charge of the case

Me: A case? I thought it was suicide

Her: Can we talk somewhere in Private?

Dawn: It's okay.. You can talk

She was reluctant at first but then she came around..

Her: What is your relation to the deceased?

Dawn: None.. She's..

He exhaled..

Dawn: She was one of my charges

Bronx: Do you often bring your "Charges" at home?

Dawn: No I don't.. She was the first

Bronx: Why her in particular?

Dawn: She called me from the institution and asked for my help

Bronx: How did you get her out?

Dawn: I asked her Step Uncle to do so

Bronx: So if I'm correct, you got her from a perfectly safe place and brought her here where she supposedly killed herself?

[SILENCE]

Dawn: Detective I didn't kill her

Bronx: Ohh I know and I wasn't insinuating that you did, though the coroner will issue a medical report on the exact cause of death. What I don't understand is, why take her from a safe place were she was getting proper help and brought her here to her demise? Where you somewhat trying to get more views for your show and make money out of a deranged girl?

That was unnecessary..

Dawn: No.. That's not what I stand for

Me: If I may speak-

She turned and looked at me..

Her: I'm so sorry but where you here when this happened?

Me: No..

Her: Do you live here?

Me: No

Her: Then No.. You may not speak Rev
Buthelezi

She looked at Dawn..

Her: I'm going to take you down to the police
station

Dawn: Am I under arrest?

Her: For further questioning

Dawn looked at me..

Me: It's fine go.. I'll call the GOAT and we'll meet
you there

Her: Yes please call the GOAT! what is he going
to do? Pray for the bars to drop and make this
go away? Zaine Radebe is not above the law,
what your friend needs is a bloody good damn
lawyer!

Me: I thought you said he didn't kill her

Her: Even if he didn't.. We can still charge him for negligence. neglecting the needs of the patient just to get his next paper

Dawn: Nazo it's fine.. Just meet me down at the police station

She pushed him a bit..

Her: Let's go!! The press will have a glorious day, your face will be splashed all over the papers.. I can't wait!

She escorted him to the car and that got Sway's attention..

Sway: Excuse me what are you doing?

Bronx: Mam' I'm going to need you to step away and let me do my job

Sway: No.. Where are you taking my husband?

Sway tried to intervene but Bronx pushed her and she fell..

Dawn: Excuse you?

Bronx took out the cuffs and tackled Dawn to the ground unexpectedly, while he was down she handcuffed him..

I made my way to Sway and helped her up..

Sway: Can she do that?

Bronx got Dawn up and looked at us..

Her: Yes I can

She winked at me and then they walked away..

Me: She's a devil worshiper

Her: What?

Me: She has a tattoo of an upside down cross and under the cross it's written "Antichrist"

Her: How did she get in?

Me: She can get in everywhere, she's not a demon.. She's a devil worshiper

Her: What about the Angels?

Me: She is of flesh.. She needs an exorcism and

holy water to burn the evil spirit inside of her..
This is going to be tricky

Her: What are we going to do?

Me: I'll call Nomvelo to come over and stay with you while we sort this thing out

Her: Please bring my husband back home

I nodded..

Me: Please do me a favour

I took out the envelope and handed it to her..

Me: Give this to Nomvelo.. It's from Nkuli she left it for her before she..

She took it from me..

Her: I'll give it to her

Me: Thank you

I hugged her..

Me: Everything is going to be okay.. I promise

Her: Just bring my husband back home

–

NOMVELO

I found a few hundreds under my phone on the couch with a note that read:

"Enjoy your day.. I love you", I was still a bit tired and I wanted to get more sleep but then I have to do shopping with Gugu. I walked over to the wardrobe to check what I can wear and my phone beeped, I went and got it. It was a text message from Snazo:

"Dawn was taken down to the police station, Sway is alone and confused. She needs you"

I called Nazo but the line was busy, I called Sway. At first she didn't pick up, I tried her again and she picked up..

Her: Velo

Me: Hey Sway.. I got a text from Naxo, he says

that Dawn has been taken down to the police station.. What happened?

Her: Nkuli happened

Me: What do you mean Nkuli happened?

Her: I can't really talk about it on the phone, it's complicated

Me: I'm on my way

Her: Okay

Me: I'll be there in no time

Her: Okay I'll wait for you

I hung up and quickly dressed up. I took my hand bag and put a few things then I made my way to the house..

Me: Gugu!!

Her: Singapha

I went to her bedroom.. She was dressing up Nosi..

Her: You ready, I haven't even bathe

Nosi extended her arms to me..

Me: I'm sorry.. I can't go shopping with you anymore

Her: Why? Is everything okay?

Nosi was almost at the verge of crying for me to pick her up..

Nosi: Lelo!!!

Me: Dawn was taken down to the police station, Sway is alone.. I have to go and be with her

Gugu: What happened?

Me: I really don't know but she said Nkuli happened

Gugu: Nkuli again? Now she's troubling another couple?

Me: I really don't know what her problem is.. I'll take Nosi with me

Gugu: You don't have too.. You can have a day off from her

Me: It's okay.. I'll take her with

Gugu: Okay then, I'll pack her bag

I went and finished up dressing her while Gugu packed her bag

–

TUMI

I took Retha out for breakfast so that I can discuss the Boarding school thing with her..

I let her enjoy her food as I looked at her, A part of me didn't want to do this but a part of me had too. You know Shine said some really important things, Retha can't always be dependent on me. Life is unpredictable, tomorrow something might happen to me and what is she going to do??

Me: Retha we need to talk

She stopped eating, it's like she was waiting for this..

Me: You know that I love you..

Her: But..

Me: To be honest life is difficult Retha, tomorrow I might die what's going to happen?

Her: I am going to school to have a better future.. I am not sure what this conversation is really about

Me: You need to be emotionally independent too sweetheart

Her: Tumi you confusing me

Me: How do you feel about going to a boarding school?

Her: You sending me away?

Me: I am sending you away so you can learn how to be independent, I'll be moving out soon and Aunty is too sick to be looking after you. I

want you at a boarding school until you get your matric so that you can go to varsity

Her: Your boyfriend doesn't want me?

Me: That's not it.. Shine doesn't like your attitude that's all and his disciplinary tactics are a bit harsh I don't wanna be stuck in the middle all the time

She kept quiet..

Me: Monday we will go and check out the boarding school.. I'm afraid you don't have much of a choice

–

NAZO

I got to the police station first, Zaine said he was on his way. I had called Badru too..

Journalists were camping at the gate, when my car drove in they followed me. I got out and they were on my throat with different questions..

"Rev Buthelezi is it true that you, Prophet Zaine, and Dawn Baker are into conspiracy theories"

I ignored..

"Is this some kind of Illuminati disguised with religion? Was this girl sacrificed for riches"

I wanted to say a lot but keeping quiet is the best thing to do..

"Is it true that your healing powers come from the Devil?"

It was a mess I don't even know why they allowed them into the yard, they were only prevented from entering the building..

I made my way to the counter..

Me: Good morning

Some constable attended me..

Him: Good morning Sir

Me: I am here for Dawn Baker.. He was brought

in not so long ago

Him: He is in the interrogation room

Me: Okay... Thank you

I went and sat down with a few eyes glued on me..

–

DAWN

Bronx: Are you sure that you don't need a lawyer?

Me: No thank you.. I have nothing to hide

Bronx: So Mr Baker, what was the story with the girl?

Me: I don't understand

Her: You don't bring your charges at home..
Why her?

Me: She had nowhere to go

Her: What made you believe that she was possessed? How do you know when someone

is possessed?

Me: I just know

She took out a box of cigarettes..

Her: I hope you don't mind

Me: Not at all

Her: Good.. The last thing I want is the ground opening up and I go straight to hell, for smoking I didn't say anything..

Her: Mr Baker your kind has brainwashed and hurt a lot of people. Mental unstable patients are led to believe that they possessed while they not, a mental illness is not always possession. Weaning off a mental unstable patient from their medication is dangerous, they a danger to themselves. You killed that poor girl Baker, even if you didn't do it physically but you initiated it and I'll make sure that you go down I still remained quiet..

Me: For how long have you been a devil worshiper?

She looked at me..

Her: Pardon?

Me: For how long?

Her: Excuse me.. I'm not a devil worshiper I am an atheist

Me: An atheist doesn't believe in Heaven or hell.. Most atheist believe in science and that tattoo you have hidden under your uniform of "Antichrist" says a lot

She looked at the camera..

Me: This is not about a girl committing suicide, this is a personal attack. I can clearly distinguish between possession and a mental illness detective.. Can you?

.

To be continued

138

NOMVELO

A FEW DAYS LATER

This was the most embarrassing situation that I found myself in, the Baker family is going through a lot and for us to be here disturbing their peace was not right. It was a Friday morning, a day before Nkuli's funeral. My Uncles saw fit that they should go and collect Nkuli's spirit from where she had died so that she can be brought home, and tomorrow be laid to rest. This has to be done before her body arrives at home later today. I chose to tag along even though one of my Uncles kept on provoking me about being a Christian and not believing in what they going to do of which I didn't even say, I just offered to drive them and he kept on pestering me with that. The only reason why I wanted to be here was to make sure that they don't tire Sway, She is not coping

with Dawn being locked up. They welcomed us in, Dawn's Mother was the one who availed herself to talk to us.. She led us to the living room and we all sat down, a moment of silence passed..

Mrs B: Would you like something to drink?

I looked at my Uncles and they were quiet..

Me: No thank you, we.. We not here to stay

Her: What can I help you with then?

Sway made her way downstairs while holding Angie, I got up and met her halfway.

Me: Excuse me

She looked exhausted, I'm sure she hasn't slept ever since they took Dawn away. She was physically tired and emotionally drained..

Me: Hey

Her: Hey

We moved away from the elders..

Me: How are you holding up?

I took Angie from her..

She sighed..

Her: What can I say

Me: He's going to come back home

We have been praying, we wake up everyday at 00:00am and pray. On my side it's not that easy anymore since I've been at my Grandmother's place to help them prepare for the Funeral..

Sway: Have you had time to read Nkuli's letter?

Me: No.. Not yet

Her: Ohw

Me: I know that the letter is supposed to help Dawn's case but the letter alone is not going to be enough. They can easily say he forced her to write it or he forged it, and I haven't been able to

find a document at home to match her writing so that we can prove she is the one who wrote the letter

Her: I totally understand

Me: I will read it.. When I have read it I will let you know

Her: I'd appreciate that

The only thing that's going to free Dawn is the Medical report and the letter that Nkuli wrote to me. The medical report will state the cause of death and also it will prove that most wounds that she had were self inflicted. The medical report has been drafted but the coroner hasn't submitted it for reasons known only to him, and the police aren't even persuading him to submit it, we really don't know what's going on..

We heard Mrs Baker raising her voice, we made our way to them..

Mrs B: You ought to be ashamed of yourselves!

My Son is in jail right now because of this girl that he tried to help! Our family is torn apart and you wanna come here and do this.. Have you no shame?

Uncle: We understand that our beliefs are not the same but... We have to do this, so that our Daughter can rest in peace. If we don't take her spirit she will trouble you and your family. We want to lay her to rest, we are owed that much especially given the circumstances surrounding her death

Mrs B: Your Daughter's spirit resides here no more, it was trapped in hell the moment that she decided to take her own life, that's where you supposed to get her. In hell!!

Uncle: There is no reason to be harsh Mam' we have come here in peace and not to exchange words. Both families are going through a lot and on our side this is our culture and tradition, her spirit has to be set free so that she can be

with her ancestors

Mrs B: I think it's time that-

Sway: I will take you to where she.. It was in the cottage outside

They all looked at her..

Sway: I will take you there

Uncle: Thank you

Sway led the way and we followed..

–

NAZO

Me: Gratitude opens a door for more blessings and opportunities to come your way. Being grateful for even the little things such as a glass of water, the bread that you despise so much because you only have margarine to eat it with that shouldn't prevent you from being grateful. When you start being grateful you will see how blessed and fortunate you're, you will see that

your life is worth living no matter how difficult it seems.. Maybe you find it difficult appreciating the life that you right now become soo much has happened, trust me there's a lot of people who wish to have the life that you soo much hate. Complaining everyday won't do anything other than blocking the good that you supposed to have, negative energy prevents good things from coming your way. Whilst a positive mind and a grateful heart, brings about a joyful life..

I looked at the hall that was almost full..

Me: Start being grateful for the little things that you have, and they will make way for bigger things

I closed my Bible as they gave me a round of applause. I have been in Mpumalanga for a week now, Nomvelo was supposed to be here with me but she couldn't because of Nkuli's funeral. I didn't expect to get such a crowd, Ever since I started with the revival people have been

attending. I hold two services, one in the morning and one at night for those who can't attend in the morning because of work and school.. I so much wanted to be at home supporting those who are close to me and going through a lot, especially Dawn who is going through the most. Unfortunately there's nothing we can do for him, other than waiting for the Coroner to submit the medical report..

—

DAWN

I saw Khumalo limping his way to me. Khumalo was sentenced to life in prison for killing his wife and his wife's lover after finding them in bed together. He shot the wife 3 times and the lover at least 8 times. He has been locked up for almost 10 years now and he has been a good impact around here, reason why he forfeited a maximum prison. He is not eligible for Parole and that didn't stop him from being a

good person, I mean if it was someone else he would've caused havock around here because he has nothing to lose. Khumalo started a choir and a church in here, most prisoners were able to be paroled because of him and keeping them in place. Though he is doing a good deed but not everyone is happy with him. Since most prisoners are opting for a better life, a lot operations and small businesses are being affected. Those who were dealing drugs left to join his choir and his church as to change their ways and get Parole. I believe that he is a good Person who was caught up in a messy situation and he let anger took over, hence why he is here today.. He sat down, and I closed the book that I was reading. That's what I've been doing since I've been here, read books to keep busy.. It is important to mind your own business around here and stay out of trouble..

Him: Have you seen Slovo?

Mr Khumalo has a problem with his leg, it has a wound that doesn't want to heal. The leg is even starting to rot now and he is not getting the medical help that he needs..

I looked around..

Me: I haven't seen him today

Slovo runs errands for Khumalo since Khumalo can't do much for himself..

Me: Wanted something?

Khumalo: Just my pain killers and a glass of water

Me: You feeling pain?

Him: Yes

Me: Can't we do something? Those painkillers won't help.. You need medical attention, serious medical attention

Khumalo looked at the guards and then he looked at me..

Him: Most people don't like me around here

Me: That shouldn't b-

Him: Let it be Dawn.. If you mess with the wrong people here they will get you killed, these guards are corrupt. They run operations with most of the prisoners here and some of the prisoners have changed their ways by coming to the church, that's why they hate me.. So stay away from such situations or else you will get hurt. Remember, you not like the rest of us. When the Coroner issues the report you will be out don't ruin your chances of getting out of here and don't worry about me.

—

NOMVELO

I watched as my Uncle started the whole ceremony if I could call it that, he started with burning the insence and went to the bathroom with it since it was said that, that's were she

took her life. Next to the incense was a small tree branch that we have to take home with us when everything is done. Sway had given us privacy, she went back to the house.. I stood at a far distance as they knelt down, my Uncle turned and looked at me..

Him: Are you going to join us?

I looked at them..

Him: Nomvelo?

Uncle 2: Even though you married to a Pastor or whatever he is, you will respect our culture. Plus we didn't force you to come, you wanted to come

Uncle 3: Yekani umntwana.. U Velo wakwa Buthelezi manje, Yekani ingane ilandele imiyalo yakwa Buthelezi (Leave the child alone.. Velo now belongs to the Buthelezi family, let her follow how things are done in the Buthelezi households)

Uncle 1: Mapholoba, Nyuswa, Fuze, Mavela,
Mafuz'afulele njengefu lemvula. Mashiya
amahle ngath azoshumayela, Dambuza,
Mthabathe, Mabhala ngozipho abanye bebhala
ngepensela. Mavulankungu kuvel'ilanga.
Sididane, Ngongoma, Maqadi amakhulu, Mbili!..
Ngcobo!!

He cleared his throat..

Him: Nkululeko Ngcobo, lo okhulumayo
uMalume wakho uSkhumbuzo Ngcobo. Ngila
ngize nabanye Oomalume bakho. Sizokulanda
Ngane yam' Sizokulanda ukuthi uhambe nathi
ekhaya, khona ksasa uzokhona ukuyobekwa
uwamukelwe okhokho bakho. Sicela uhambe
nathi, ngeke ukwazi ukuhlala la akusikho
ekhaya. Sicela ubuyele nathi ekhaya ukuze
uzokhona uku Lala ngoxolo (Nkululeko Ngcobo.
It is me your Uncle Skhumbuzo Ngcobo, I am
not here alone but I'm with your other Uncles.
We are here to fetch you my child, so that

tomorrow you can be buried and be welcomed by your Ancestors. Please come with us, you can't stay here it's not your home. Come with us so you can rest in peace)

I know that Nkuli and I weren't seeing eye to eye anymore but this hurt me, it hurt me deeply that I walked out to get fresh air and wiped my tears. Why? Why did all of this mess had to happen to her, Now I lost a sister and a friend. It truly hurt I don't wanna lie..

.

To be continued

No edits

I got busy hence the post was delayed, we will have one later..

139

TUMI

The boarding school seemed like a good

environment. It was clean, the building was old but it was still in good condition. It is a multiracial school and the students seemed to be well behaved. Some were sitting under the tree with their books, others were sitting at the tables by the park and chit chatting.

Furthermore a few of them were playing sports. I was even surprised when that they enrolled Rethabile, I thought that there would be no space seeing that it was the middle of the year. I was also happy that her previous school didn't give us a tough time with a referral letter. Shine remained in the car since there's bad blood between him and Retha, I was the one who went in with her..

The rooms were a bit smaller than what I expected I hope that she will settle in pretty well. I looked over at the other bed and it was neatly made up, her roommate wasn't around. It had been a busy week, after registering her we had

to buy her uniform and textbooks it was a lot to do in just a week. She won't be required to cook since there's a cafeteria at the school, the only thing that I can buy her are snacks. They not allowed to go out anywhere alone, there's supervised visits to the mall twice a month and nothing more. The only time when they go home is on school holidays or if there's an emergency...

She has been really down ever since the changing of schools, I know that deep down she hates me but it's for the best. Retha needs to be independent..

Me: It seems like a good school

She sat down on the bed..

There was an awkward moment between us.

Me: Look I know th-

Her: Please.. Don't make this more harder. It was your decision to put me here even after I've

done research and this school has a lot of abuse cases but you still put me here. If anything happens it'll be on you, I just hope that you will be able to live with yourself

Emotional blackmail is the hardest but I can't drop the ball now..

Me: Nothing will happen.. As long as you follow the rules then you won't be disciplined

I extended my hand and she gave me her cellphone..

Me: We will send each other Emails, at least there's free wifi you can use your laptop

She kept quiet..

Me: I'm leaving now..

She still didn't say anything and it broke me to leave her here like this..

–

SWAY

This will be my very first time visiting Dawn ever since he got locked up, his mother agreed to babysit Angie while I come here to see him.. It has been hard without him and I pray that the Coroner turns in the medical report so that they can free my husband..

Something about prison that is unsettling, it was scary and you ask yourself how the prisoners survive being locked up like Animals. There were guards standing in all 4 corners of the room, and there was one standing by the door. I looked around and the room wasn't that full of visitors, I think it was 5 of us. I looked at the time and then took a deep breath, I was very nervous..

The door opened and the guard walked out first, followed by Dawn. I was expecting an orange jumpsuit but they were wearing differently. Blue pants, a white vest and a blue jacket though Dawn wasn't wearing the jacket. I stood up as

he made his way to me, I got all emotional seeing him. He looked okay at least he was still in one piece, that was a good sign..

He smiled at me and I soo much wanted to hug him but the guard didn't allow. We sat down, he sat opposite me..

Me: You look.. You look good

I wiped my tears as he looked at me..

He forced a smile..

Him: When was the last time you had a good night sleep?

I shrugged my shoulders..

Me: I don't remember.. I toss and turn most of the time.. Sleep eludes me

He nodded..

Me: Did they really have to cuff you?

Him: Unfortunately Yes..

Me: It's unnecessary

Him: I know but.. That's how they do things

Me: Are you eating well? Is everything okay in there

Him: Everything is fine.. I'm good

I nodded repeatedly with tears burning my eyes..

Me: The Coroner hasn't said anything and Nomvelo hasn't read the letter too.. I don't know why the Coroner is delaying to submit the report, I don't-

Him: Hey

He looked around and then held my hand..

Him: Everything is going to be okay

Gaurd: No touching

He let go of my hand..

Me: Can't we just contact our Lawyer?

Him: No.. If we get our Lawyer then the case is

going to drag and that will make me look guilty, Bronx has to be behind everything she wants me to crack

I exhaled in defeat..

Him: I'm sorry that I got us into this mess..

Me: No.. It's not your fault, you were just trying to help

Him: How is Angie?

Me: She's good but I think she can sense that you not around

Him: Did my Mom come?

Me: Yes she did.. She's looking after Angie

Him: Okay that's good

Me: I should've brought you something to eat

Him: Sway I don't want you to worry about me, I want you to go home and get some rest. I don't like seeing you this broken

[SILENCE]

Me: Nkuli's funeral is tomorrow

Him: At what time?

Me: 9am.. I wanna go

Him: You can go.. I think Nomvelo would appreciate it very much

Me: Just come home please.. I miss you a lot and I need you

Him: All of this is going to be over soon.. I promise

–

NOMVELO

With everything that's been going on at home I decided to go out a bit and get some fresh air. I took Nosi with me and we drove to steers, I needed time alone to read Nkuli's letter. Gugu has since been babysitting Nosi considering how busy I have been, but today I'll be sleeping

over at her place since my Grandmother's house will be full. I missed spending time with Nosi though after 5min of us being here, I was already getting tired of her. She couldn't keep still, just a little bite of the burger she wanders around busy disturbing other customers by trying to push their chairs. She would come for another bite and run around again, she was giving me a headache. I looked at the envelope with my meal right in front of me, I haven't touched it. I looked at Nosi and she was busy running around and then I opened the envelope. I took the letter out and started reading:

"Dear Nomvelo

If you reading this letter then that means I am no longer around, it means that my suicide was a success. One might see my act as foolish but trust me, no amount of help from the world could've mended my troubled soul. Yes maybe the exorcism could've worked but I don't think I

would've been able to live with what I have done to you. You don't know how sorry I am, I wish that I could go back in time to rectify everything. I wish I could go back and make different decisions.. You might forgive me but I'll never forgive myself and my life would be empty without my family. Let's be honest forgiving me wasn't going to make any difference, our relationship wasn't going to go back to how it used to be and I couldn't have that. I kept on thinking about life without my family and it seemed so lonely. Once more I am sorry Velo, you wasn't going have a normal life because my face would always remind you of the pain that I caused you. I hope that you will find it in your heart to forgive me, I did this so that you can live free. If I'm not around then I won't be able to hurt you, and Please extend my apologies to Dawn. He really wanted to help me.. May your God continue to give you strength, till we meet again in the next life..

Signed:

Nkuli

I was so taken by the letter that I didn't even feel Nosi who was busy pulling my dress, up until I saw the mess on the floor. I think my being unresponsive she pulled everything down the table, including my ribs and chips.

I looked at her and she pointed on the floor.

Her: Look

I closed my eyes while shaking my head..

Her: Mama look..

I went from Lelo to "Mama" I think Gugu is the one who has been teaching her to call me that..

—

DAWN

Seeing Sway in that state was very difficult for me, she looked very drained. I really need to get

out of here.. On my way back to the cell I was met by a pool of blood, Slovo was on the floor laying in his own pool of blood. The guard opened and we both made our way in, I went to him and tried to locate his pulse but it wasn't there. He was gone..

It didn't make sense, who would come into our cell and kill Slovo. That kid had no problem with anyone and he was always doing his own thing, trying to make a few cents by selling cigarettes..

Who would do something like this?? He was stabbed a lot of times.. While the guard called for help, I noticed that he was bleeding on his hand too. I looked at it and he had a deep cut of an upside down cross. I looked at him again and noticed a paper inside his mouth, I took it and it read:

"Khumalo is next, and then you.. Tick tok! Tick tok!"

.

To be continued

SEASON FINALE

—

140

DAWN

It had been a long and tiring day with the mysterious murder of Slovo. At least we weren't here when it happened or else we were going to be the first suspects. I'm not saying that I don't feel sorry for the poor kid, I do but then a murder case would totally ruin Me. I needed to get out of here, this was beginning to be more and more messy.

I was alone in the cell, Khumalo had been out to argue with the guards about protection. Even with the threat they still don't wanna give us the protection that we need..

Ramiel showed up as I was laying on my bed reading a book..

Her: Don't give it away that we talking.. Keep the book closer and pretend that you reading out loud to yourself, no eye contact just focus on the book

Me: What's happening?

Her: Bronx is indeed a devil worshiper, Lucifer thought that by using a human being this time around he might get an upper hand

Me: So what are we going to do now? I can't stay here forever

Her: You will be out by next week, all you need is to trap her with the Devil's trap. She will be coming for you tonight

Me: I thought a Devils trap only worked in demons and Lucifer himself

Her: You have to expand your knowledge Dawn..

You an exorcist, I told you to keep up with Bible scholars. Bronx is a devil worshiper that collects blood for high ranked devil worshipers, she mostly causes accidents. She's a high rank devil worshiper herself, she can conjure her spirit out of her body at night during the witchful hour and get to any car that she wants then she can roll it over. There was one accident in particular that she caused not aware that inside the vehicle there was a child of God, a Prayer warrior to be more exact. She was to do a nightshift, and she had prayed before leaving then immediately when their work transport took a turn in a very dark road Bronx was waiting for them. As they were driving through that road the lady felt an urge to sing a certain song, and she started singing. Her colleagues weren't disturbed by her singing because they knew that she was a devoted Christian. Bronx got in and the lady started singing that particular song and though Bronx did cause the

accident by they all got out with minor injuries, they all survived. From there on Bronx stopped collecting blood from prayer warriors or God's children because the blood weakness them..

Me: I thought she was just a small fish

Her: Not entirely.. A devil's trap will work on her because she has sold her soul, she will be forced to have you released if she doesn't want to be trapped forever.. I mean what reason would you give to your colleagues in why you standing in one place and don't wanna move

Me: Why me though?

Her: Why not you?

Me: You can't answer a question with a question

Her: Doing what you do doesn't necessarily mean that you immune to attacks, you need to be armed and ready at all times. The devil works tirelessly in trying to collect a lot of soul,

if you let your guard down you handing over many souls to the devil in a silver platter. Yes trust God but don't be too proud

I heard voices..

Her: Don't ever let your guard down, there's a difference between relaxing because you trust God and being too proud

She then disappeared..

Ramiel was right, there was a time when I was starting to become too proud in what I do.

There were times when I thought I could exorcise on my own without involving the holy spirit. This is a wake up call, I shouldn't rely on what I think I know..

—

NOMVELO

Nkuli's coffin had arrived at around 17:30. I think after 30min of it arriving the neighbours,

close family friends, and family were already getting busy with peeling the vegetables and setting up everything to make it easier for tomorrow morning. When Nkuli's coffin had been taken out from the hearse and put down on the ground just close to the gate, my Uncle put that small tree branch ontop of her coffin and started talking. Immediately when she started talking the weather changed. It got cloudy, and there was a bit of wind and it started drizzling a bit. The weather only got better when her coffin was inside the house..

I couldn't wait for the funeral to be over and done with, this whole grieving and mourning process has been very emotional draining. I just want everything to be done so that I can pick up the pieces and mend my broken heart again, I still can't believe that my cousin is gone. Life is indeed very unpredictable..

—

NAZO

This was my last sermon and I was very happy with how successful the revival was.

When I was praying earlier on the holy spirit revealed to me that a lot of souls needed healing. Physical healing, and emotional healing. It was touching to come into the realization that the devil is holding a lot of souls captive through pain, some are being held captive by Depression.. Before I could start with the healing, I needed to share something for those who were mentally held captive by depression. Those souls that have given up all the will to leave because of circumstances and traumatic experiences..

Before uttering even a single word I looked at the crowd that was gathered here again, God showed me a few souls but it went beyond the human eye. I saw them in spirit and the message I got was "This is who they are in

spirit, most of my children are suffering from scars and wounds that bleed internally" they looked so beautiful and strong on the outside, by in their spirit form they carrying a lot. They being held captive and most were bleeding inside. It wasn't a pleasant thing to see, it was heavy on me. Their pain was heavy on me..

Me: We all have our different experiences with life, some experiences cut deep pass the flesh and they touch the soul. Tonight I want everyone to view life from a different perspective. Now, I'm going to create a scenario one that almost everyone is going to relate too. We often hear that life is a journey, that's no lie. It is indeed a journey.

Life is no different from buying a bus ticket to a destination of your choice, say you buy the ticket today in advance and your bus leaves in two or three days. Keep in mind that the destination of your choice is the future that you

envision for yourself, and what you do in the meantime to get there is very crucial. When you were born God had already created your future, your future is always bright but whatever you do and how you live your life in the time being of you going to your destination (future) can either break or make you. Now back to the bus scenario. Say the time for you to leave has finally arrived now usually in the bus not everyone gets off at the same destination, there's people who will get off before you and People who will get off after you or you might just be the last one to get off. It all depends on your destination if it's shorter or longer. Say the trip is roughly 6 hours long and thinking about those hours that you going to spend in the bus you will get discouraged because you don't wanna be patient, you wanna get there as fast as you can and at your own time. Now the journey doesn't depend on you, it depends on the bus driver. The bus driver is the one who

knows the route very well that will lead you to your destination, the bus driver knows very well where you headed and he won't let you get off at a destination that is not meant for you. He will make sure you get off where you supposed to get off. That's how it is with God, you make him the driver that's going to lead you to your destination (Future). He knows where and when you supposed to get there and no matter how impatient you're as long as you trust him he will never let you get off at a stop or a destination that is not yours. Many will succeed before you, and many will succeed after you but whatever success is meant for you. It will come at the time that God sets for you. When you in the bus, you have no choice but to trust the Driver, and his goal is to get you there safely.

He is very cautious with your life and he will make sure not to drink nor resort to anything that will cause you harm. In the bus most

people have good views and most people don't have good views, most people see beautiful buildings and most just see trees and nothing more. In this journey of life we all have different views, some see it worth living (Beautiful buildings) and some see it not worth living (Tress, thorns, and dead grass). Say the bus stops at different destinations and people get off, you sitting there and you envy them because your journey is taking longer. Now that's when you see most of your friends or cousins or your age mates making it before you and that discourages you because you also wanna get there. Going back to the journey that's when at times you get minor breaks to get refreshments then continue with your journey, life is like that too. At times it will give you joyful days and when you think that it's now looking up, the journey will start again. Some of the friends you made in the bus they get off before you and now you all alone never to see

them again, they look happy to have arrived and they tell you that you will get there too. That's how it is at times, the friends you started the journey with or family when time goes on and their lives start to look up they leave and never to remember you again. Then you have to continue the journey alone, buried in your thoughts until you get there. Your journey might take longer but you will get there, when the bus stops and the driver says "You have arrived" You get a sense of relief, you don't believe it but at the same time you get happy. Though you might be tired and what not but at the end you will arrive at your destination and you will even forget that it even rained at some point and there was traffic too that slowed the journey down. You forget about all the hiccups and you get happy that you have made it, and the bus driver that you trusted never failed you. If the bus breaks down he doesn't say "Let me go you will see how to get there" No he carries you

through until you get there. That's now God is, he will never leave nor forsake you even when times get difficult. He will carry you through until you get there. Be patient, have faith in your bus driver (God) he will lead you to your destination (Future) don't even envy those who get off before you, because what you don't know is that your destination might even be more than theirs. That is how life is..It's a journey..

The hall went wild, people were screaming, crying and praying. The message really touched those who needed to hear it, the holy spirit was moving around delivering those who needed deliverance. I requested a song and I went to the crowd placing my hands on most individuals and healing those who needed healing.. It was a very blessed service

—

DAWN

The cells have this small mats inside, incase for rainy days you can wipe your muddy shoes there. It's something that came about last year, so I was told. Before going to sleep I took the sunlight bar soap and started drawing a Devil's trap right at the spot where the mat was. I then put then mat over, when she sneaks in tonight she will be trapped there, or rather her spirit will be..

Khumalo came back from taking a shower. We shower before going down to the hall to have dinner..

Him: hai mfo.. We have to move fast and get to the hall before it gets full, I don't want another small portion just because those who got there before us had more than enough

Me: Ya we should go

He looked at me..

Him: Are you alright?

Me: Ya I am.. Just a bit disturbed by Slovo's passing

Him: I understand.. Nami ingiphethe kabi (It doesn't sit well with me)

I looked at his leg..

Me: I'll have a friend of mine come take a look at your leg this Monday

Him: A friend of yours?

Me: Yeah he is pretty good

Him: Ngingabonga (I would appreciate it)

The guard came to our cell..

Him: asambe sboshwa (let's go prisoner)

I looked at Khumalo..

Him: It's time to go and eat

I moved closer to him and he put his hand on my shoulder for balance and we made our way out..

.

To be continued

No edits

Excuse any errors

SEASON FINALE

—

141

DAWN

We wake up very early to go and shower, then we eat and do chores. Chores including cleaning our own cells under strict supervision. I slept late last night because I spent most of my time praying and lost deep in my thoughts, I miss my wife, I miss my Daughter and I miss my Excorsim sessions. I basically miss my life.. When I woke up the next morning I stumbled upon the biggest surprise of my life, Bronx was trapped and she couldn't move. She was

standing on the mat of which had the Devil's trap drawn under it..

Khumalo: Good morning mfo

Me: Good morning

Before we could start a conversation the Guard showed up and opened up..

Khumalo got up and limped his way out, passing through Bronx. I was taken, it wasn't her physical being that was trapped but it was her spirit. Meaning last night as usual her spirit was at work, she probably was looking for ways on how she could have access and harm us but then she got trapped. She probably wouldn't have been able to harm us personally, but she could've encouraged us to harm each other. Unlike Slovo I think that she sent someone to kill him.. The warden looked at me.. I sat up straight and cleared my throat..

Me: Uhm.. I would like some time to myself

Him: Time to yourself?

Me: I am a married man I always share my bed with my wife, unless I'm travelling. I have been here for what? A week now, it is a very difficult situation for me

He looked at me without saying anything..

Me: There's no privacy in the showers

Him: You need to go and shower so we can search your cell

Me: I'm asking for 5min

He wanted to decline but then I gave him no choice..

Him: 5min

Me: That's all I'm asking for

He walked out while locking..

I looked at Bronx..

Her: That was smart I gotta give you that

Me: I only asked because I need to find my soap, I misplaced it last night when I was drawing the devil's trap

I started looking for the soap till I found it..

Me: Ohh well I have to go and shower

I took my towel and headed to the bars..

Her: Weight

I stopped..

Her: We can cut a deal

I went back to my bed..

Me: You lost that privilege when you started messing with Me, I can leave you trapped like this forever. Come to think of it, if you don't turn up for work you will be reported missing. Then your body will be found at your apartment, unfortunately not only your body will be found there but also a few other things. Charms and everything else that connects you to the other

world. They going to run a story on you, I'll make sure they do and you will be buried with the title of being a Devil worshipper. It will be a shame for your Mother who is a Christian

Her: I only follow orders Dawn.. I..

Me: Why?

Her: There was a point in my life where things weren't going well. My Mother told me to never stop praying, she told me that everything is going to be okay I should never lose my faith in God. I kept on but things never got better, it was taking time and I was at my lowest point. The thing is God's timing is never that of a human being, he doesn't get God when you want him to get God. He has his own time. Lucifer on the other hand riches from him are quick, but you pay the price. He owns your soul and your soul will do anything that he wants to do with it. I got what I wanted. I was promoted, I am the best detective. I have power and the pay is good, I

moved up the ranks.. I am a powerful devil worshipper and I follow orders. We thought Nkuli was going to be our gateway to you but she grew a conscience and guilt ate her alive, she couldn't live with the guilt.. Instead we used her death to get to you, we wanted to destroy your image. We wanted to break you

Me: I have a good mind of trapping you here for a long time

Her: I have the medical report from the Coroner, I will turn it in next week

Me: And you expect me to believe you?

Her: Do you have much of a choice?

I looked at her..

Me: Let me see your code name

She remained quiet..

Me: If you want out then you will show me your code name

Her: What are you going to do with it?

Me: It's for insurance.. Incase you don't do the right thing

She showed me on her shoulder..

Me: "76667"

Her: Happy now?

Me: Very

I went and lifted the mat and rubbed off a part of the drawing so that she could be free. If she doesn't keep to her end, I can still conjure her spirit back into the trap by using her code name. If she knows what's good for her she won't mess with me..

—

NOMVELO

We decided to have the funeral at home, there was a tent erected at the front where everything was going to take place. My Grandmother's

Pastor was the one who was going to preach, at first he didn't want because he said Nkuli never stepped foot at his church. My Grandmother had to beg him and because of my Grandmother's faithfulness to the church, he came through for her. The service was going to be from 9:00am till 11:00am. At 11:00am we meant to leave for the cemetery. We were all gathered outside in the tent, I kept my eyes on her coffin. Deep down I couldn't believe that she was gone, my cousin who was full of life and enjoyed the life she chose for herself was no more. No matter how much I wanted to hate her for what she did, deep down the sisterhood love and bond that we shared made it impossible for me to hate her.. Nkuli was gone, Never to be heard from ever again. My Aunt was broken, despite the endless fights that they had. Nkuli was her only child I know that she loved her more than anything..

–

RETHABILE

I laid back on my bed while facing up, a lot was running through my head. I hated Shine, hated him with all that I had in me. Tumi would have never done this if it wasn't for him, now she just dumped me in a place that I don't even know. A place that holds no memory of "Home". I can't wait to complete my matric and just cut all ties with her. I won't even accept any visitations from her. I am done! This is how she wants to play then I'll play the game better..

–

NAZO

I was going back home today and I was very happy, I miss my wife and my Niece very much. I was proud of Nomvelo, she went through this all alone and not even once did she think of turning to the bottle. It does look like she is

growing up after all..

Agent: So what do you think?

I walked over to the sliding door and starred out looking at the pool, I liked the backyard. It was beautiful. Not far from the pool, it had a built in grill. Perfect for lunch outside when we have guests..

Me: I like it.. I really like it

The Agent exhaled..

Her: I can now relax

We both laughed..

Me: I hope my wife will like it

Her: Any woman would be happy to find out that her husband bought her a house that costs 1.5mill

Me: My wife is difficult.. She might surprise me, I hope she doesn't because I've been saving up for it

Her: May all the odds be in your favour

I looked around again, it was a beautiful house
no lie..

Her: We can go back to the office and start with
the paper work

Me: After you

As soon as we get the paperwork done and the
house is furnished, then we can move in. The
time has come for me to start my church here
in Mpumalanga..

–

TUMI

I walked over to the couch and watched TV, my
Aunt walked in..

Her: Tumi

Me: Good morning Aunty

Her: How are you?

Me: I'm good I guess

Her: Still worries about Retha?

Me: Yes.. When I called yesterday at 19:00, I was told that she's refusing to talk to me

She walked over and sat on the couch..

Her: She's going to come around, Rethabile is being Rethabile

Me: I do hope she will come around.. I hope I didn't make a mistake by sending her there

–

NOMVELO

"uJehova ubephile, uJehova uthathile.

Malibongwe igama lakhe, kwenzeke intando yakhe.. Sezalapha emhlabeni singaphethe lutho. Ngokunjalo sizohamba, singaphethe lutho.. Lala ngokuthula, Lala uphumule, Lala ubuthongo, obungunaphakade.." I looked at the coffin being lowered down at the cemetery as the church

choir bid her farewell with that song. When the coffin was buried deep in that hole, the Pastor signalled that the choir can stop singing now and they did. One of the church members took a shovel and carried it through to the pastor. It had soil on it. He took a handful of the soil and poured it in the coffin..

Him: Umhlabathi entlabathini.. Uthuli ethulwini..
Lala ngoxolo, uphumulile kuzozo zonke
izinkinga zalo mhla a (Ashes to ashes, dust to
dust.. Rest in peace, you are now free from all
the troubles of this world)

They then asked us to go and pour soil on her coffin. I will never see my cousin again, she is gone.. She is gone forever

.

To be continued

No edits

SEASON FINALE

–

142

NOMVELO

3 YEARS LATER

Me: "Row, row, row your boat Gently down the stream.. Merrily, merrily, merrily, merrily

Life is but a dream" (Singing)

I looked at her and she was fast asleep now, I lowered my voice..

Me: "Row, row, row.."

Voice: Mommy!!!!!!

I sighed..

The bedroom door flung open..

Me: Nono keep your voice down Nae is sleeping

She made her way to us..

Nosi: Let me see

Me: Nosi No..

She tried to pull Naledi's foot..

Me: Nosi stop it!!

Naledi slowly opened her eyes and I gently rocked her to sleep again..

Me: Go and watch cartoons (Whispering)

She shook her head no..

Me: You want me to call Daddy?

She made her way out. 7 months back I gave birth to an adorable baby girl, we named her Naledi. Nosi doesn't really like Naledi, I thought that maybe as time went on she would let it go but even today she still doesn't like her. I think it's jealousy because Naledi is a baby and she gets a bit more attention than her so she doesn't like it....

I don't even know where to begin, my life has changed from how it was 3 years ago. One day I

just woke up and decided to tell my story, I told my pain from word to word and I got a lot of attention. It was just random home made videos that I uploaded on YouTube and they got a lot of views. Before I knew it I was doing interviews, being invited on seminars to motivate it has been busy. Following my videos my followers encouraged me to write a book titled "Nomvelo", I went and poured my heart out. I wrote about my Mom's death, My Uncle, how I lost everything and moved to my Grandmother's house. I wrote about my relationship with Niso, then about Nazo and the whole Nkuli saga. People couldn't believe that I've been through all that and still standing, my book sold a lot of copies globally. Now I'm getting interview requests from other countries, I never thought that things would get to this point. Wherever I go almost everyone recognizes me it's a very overwhelming situation. I understand now, most of the things

that happened to me were leading me here. If my Uncle didn't die, If Niso didn't die then I wouldn't be where I am today. Some of my pain was shaping me to be strong both mentally and emotionally. I had to see the power of God working in me, I had to see his Grace upon me for me to grow spiritually and have a more healthy relationship with him. Nazo finally built a church in Mpumalanga, currently we standing on approximately 300 members and the church is still growing that we now have extended the building. Nazo is really doing a great job there's a lot of projects at our church that we running and I am full hands on in helping. I am in charge of a project that supplies sanitary towels and toiletries for girls who can't afford, we also buy groceries every month for families that can't afford, we have a mobile kitchen that feeds homeless people, and we buy school shoes with school bags for a number of kids. that's just some of the projects that I am in charge of.

Every year we pay registration for most first year students who can't afford it, we sponsor orphanages with food and hospitals that don't get much funding from the government. We use the money for offering and tithes to fund the projects, Nazo also takes some money from his company since now it's also here in Mpumalanga and there's also a few sponsors that we have who lend a helping hand. The more that Nazo gives the more and more God blesses him financially, both his companies are doing very well and he wants to expand more maybe have another branch in Cape Town and KwaZulu-Natal. Shine is full hands on at the one in Gauteng whilst Nazo is busy with the one here in Mpumalanga. There's been a lot of financial breakthroughs at our church mainly because he is a good leader, he takes all that money from church and use it to help those who are in need then in return God blesses the church. Never and not even once has he ever

pleasured himself with any financial contribution from the church, instead we live off from his monthly salary. We never even had to touch my money because he makes soo much from both his companies.. We are richly blessed..

After putting Naledi down I went to Nosi's room. Mpumi was also fast asleep, she's visiting us for a few days. Mpumi and Nosi are very close, it's funny how Nosi loves Mpumi more than she loves her own Sister....

I went to the Tv room and Nosi was watching cartoons, I sat down on the couch..

Me: Nono come here

Her: I'm still watching

Me: I know you watching.. It won't take long

Her: Nooooo

Nosi is very stubborn and cheeky, she only does

that with Me though because I'm a bit of a softy. Unlike Nazo he is big on discipline, so most of the time I'll threaten her with him if I want her to do something. She got up from the carpet and made her way to me, I held her hands..

Me: We have had this conversation a lot of times and we going to still have it until you accept that Nae is your baby Sister

Her: No she's not

Me: Nono

Her: She's not my baby sister

Me: Yes she is

Her: She's not.. She is the hospital's baby sister

Me: Nosi you not listening to me

Her: You not too listening to me mommy

I let go of her..

Me: That doesn't even sound right

He shrugged her shoulders..

Her: It doesn't matter

She sat down and watched Tv again..

–

TUMI

I made my way to the kitchen, Rethabile was washing dishes..

Me: Hey

She wiped her hands with the cloth..

Her: Good morning.. Want me to get you your chair?

I took a deep breath and exhaled..

Her: You okay?

All of a sudden I started being emotional..

Her: Awii what's wrong?

Me: I'm very exhausted

Her: That's why I asked if I could get you a chair

Me: I don't want a chair.. I want him to come already

Her: He will come.. You 8 months pregnant now remember?

Me: That doesn't make it better

Her: Let me get you a chair and then make you something to eat.. How about that?

Me: I don't know (Crying)

Her: Ahhh Tumz don't cry

She came to me..

Her: Don't cry

Rethabile is way better than how she was back when she was 16. A few months of her being at the Boarding school 3 years back our Aunt passed on, by then I was still in the process of moving out. Life got real for her, she started being rebellious and she failed her grade 10.

Shine suggested that we take her out of the boarding school and she moved in with us, things got worse. Rethabile was stressful but Shine was able to be strict with her and enforced discipline, if you could see her now you would even deny that she was once a headache. She's 19 years old now and doing matric, I am really proud of her for turning her life around.. She came back with the chair...

Me: Thank you

Her: Want me to make you something to eat?

Me: No I'm fine

My Aunt's death sort of fixed things between us and our relatives in Botswana, or should I say when they learned about my financial stability all of a sudden they wanted to be family again. I really don't want much to do with them, even when Shine and I decide to get married I don't want them to come..

Speaking of the devil, he walked in. Shine has been very busy lately. He is doing some business training part time since he is now running the company singlehandedly. If he was doing it full time then he would be done in 1yr6mnths, then if it's part time the training will take 2 years. Actually this is his last year. He started last year..

He's English has gotten better, he had no choice but to take it seriously we now dealing with high profiled clients. Retha has been helping him here and there and he's getting there, he's English has improved.

He was home today only because it's a long weekend..

He hit Retha on her forehead, that's how he teases her from time to time..

Retha: Violence in the house?

Him: That's hardly violence, angikuthintanga

nokuk'thinta (I didn't even touch you)

He came to me..

Him: and nou?

Me: I'll be fine

He squeezed my cheeks and kissed me..

Him: Ringa nami.. K'hambani? (Talk to me..
What's happening)

I don't know why I wasn't able to control my
emotions..

Shine: Rex??

Retha: She's just not feeling well.. I guess it
happens

Shine: It happens?? I pay a lot of school fees for
you to come and say "It happens" biology nyana
yenu ithini? (What does your biology say)

Retha: It's Life Sciences now

Shine: Same thing

Retha: But it's now life sciences we no longer do biology.. It's not Bantu education
Shine chuckled..

Shine: But biology is biology

Retha: Life sciences

Shine: In my house it's biology

Retha: Where I live it's life sciences

Shine: uhlala kwami (You live in my house)

They like to joke a lot even when something is serious, at times they just irritate me..

I slowly got up from the chair..

Shine: Let me help you

I pushed him back..

Me: Ngi right! (I'm alright)

I made my way to the bedroom..

Shine: Sengenzeni manje? (What did I do now)

–

SWAY

Her: How does it look?

I looked around..

Me: Let's change the duvet again

Her: This is the 3rd one that you don't like Mam'

Me: I want her to feel at home

Her: It's not her first time coming here

Me: It's her first time sleeping over

Sway is coming later today, she will be here for almost the whole weekend. Tomorrow she has a big day ahead of her, she has a seminar at Purgatory early in the morning from 10:00-15:00.

I am really proud of her, she has come a long way and she's doing very well for herself. She's very well spoken and she has inspired a lot of women with her book "Nomvelo". I am very proud of her..

Dawn walked in followed by Angie, Angie ran to the bed and touched the duvet with her dirty hands..

Prudence: Ohh No!!!

I looked at her and she had chocolate all over, I turned and looked at Dawn..

Dawn: She got a little bit too much with the chocolate syrup

Me: How much of it did she have?

Dawn: Errr.

Angie wiped her hands on her tshirt and then she looked at me for a comment..

I looked at Dawn..

Me: I'm not even going to say anything

Dawn went and picked her up..

Dawn: Let's go get you cleaned up

Dawn spoils Angie a lot, whatever she wants

She gets. Not that I'm complaining though but at times it's too much..

.

To be continued

Naledi

SEASON FINALE

—

143

DAWN

Ever since I got released from prison I promised Khumalo that I'll keep in contact and also get him the medical attention that he needed.

Indeed I kept to my promise, and it turned out that he has type diabetes. Bronx kept to her end of the deal, I let her go and she submitted the medical report which stated the cause of death being hypothermia and too much loss of blood. It also proved that the wounds were self

inflicted considering how they were cut, and also the letter that she wrote to Nomvelo helped me. After that whole deal she asked for a transfer and I hear that she's somewhere in Cape Town. After that incident we never crossed paths again.. I looked at the prisoners enjoying themselves with their loved ones, they looked so happy and relaxed..

Khumalo: hai kanti Mfo things are better since Bronx is gone

I had proposed that Khumalo should appeal his case, he refused and told me that jail is the only place that he knows. He told me that this is home for him, he has been here for a while now..

Khumalo: Thank you for coming

Me: I've meant to come with my Daughter but..
Maybe next time

Khumalo: Ya maybe next time

I had brought food along and we started eating..

Me: I almost forgot.. I have brought you this book to read

He took it..

Me: It's demonology

Him: Thank you Mfo

Me: It will help you since you run a church here

Him: Hai ushaye khona (this is good)

Khumalo's life is very sad, ever since I've been here haven't seen any visitor stopping by. He once mentioned it to me that his family hates me, they hate him a lot for what he did..

–

TUMI

Me: Look at the screen phela

Nomvelo: Can you see Mommy??

Mpumi nodded..

Me: Hi Baby..

Mpumi: Hi mommy

Me: I miss you soo much

Mpumi: Miss you too

Me: How is-

Nosi: I also wanna see

Nomvelo: See what? Mpumi is talking to her
Mommy

Nosi: I wanna see!!

She snatched the phone from Mpumi..

Me: Nosi hi

Nosi: Hi

Me: How are you?

Mpumi got closer..

Me: Are you girls behaving?

Mpumi nodded..

Nosi: Yes

Me: Nosi how is Naledi?

Nosi: She's not my Sister

Nomvelo: If you going to be like that then give me my phone

Nomvelo took the phone..

Me: She still doesn't like her?

Nomvelo: Not at all

Me: That's sad

Nomvelo: How are you holding up by the way?

Me: I'm tired.. Just want him to come already

Nomvelo: He will come.. I hope he doesn't come out looking like Shine, all that 9 months for him to look like Shine

I laughed..

Me: You and Shine will never like each other

Nomvelo: Not in this life time.. Well later on I'll be gone so you guys will have to call Nazo since

he will be the one babysitting for the weekend

Me: Okay thank you

Nomvelo: Be good and don't worry he is going to come

She lowered the phone..

Nomvelo: Mpumi come and say bye to mommy

–

GUGU

My life has changed a great deal in the period of 2 years, from the ghetto to a high love. Richard and I had a small wedding ceremony, only close family and friends attended. It was a very beautiful ceremony..

I never thought that at this age it was possible for me to be this much in love again, Richard is the best and I'm so happy to spend these remaining years of my life with him. Though we old but he hasn't lost his charm, he still makes

my heart melt..

Tonight we were leaving for the weekend, he was taking me to Thailand. We did say that we wanna spend most of our time traveling..

Me: I feel bad about leaving, Nomvelo has a big day tomorrow

Him: I know but we bought these tickets way before she informed us about the seminar

Me: I'm very proud of her.. She has come a long way

Him: She is a special woman

Me: How is Thailand?

Him: I've been there a few times.. The weather is a bit unstable at times but don't pack the whole closet

I laughed..

Me: I wasn't planning on packing the whole wardrobe

Him: Yeah and I believe you

He's phone rang..

Him: I need to take this, it's the boutique

He walked out and I continued packing..

—

NOMSA

MaNgcobo: Hai ulipheka ngcono kunami (You cook it better than I do)

Me: Hau ngeke (I don't think so)

Her: Uyazi I Misjudged you, I should've spent more time with you

Me: It's all in the past now

Danger and I we have always been close, ever since JJ was still alive but at that time we were just friends. I think that bond made it easier for us to feel something more for each other because in our midst of spending time with

each other lately, we ended falling head over heels with each other..

I am soo happy that I am in a relationship were I am this much happy, not forgetting that Nomvelo and I we have a much better relationship now. I can say that I am in a happy place for once in my life, and furthermore into the blessings my business is doing very good. Way better than how I had imagined..

–

TUMI

I've been locked up in the bedroom for the whole morning but now since I've spoken to Mpumi I felt a whole lot better. I got out of bed bedroom and Shine was in the living room, sitting at the table with a few text books and documents..

Him: How are you feeling now?

Me: Better

I picked one of the text books and looked at it..

Me: How is it going?

Him: kuyancengeka (I'm getting there)

Me: That's good

He stood up and came to open the chair for me, I sat down. He put his hands on my shoulders and kissed me on my neck..

Him: Hade neh? (sorry)

Me: For?

Him: for the whole pregnancy situation.. Kube kuyangami ngabe siyashintshisana (if it was up to me we would be taking turns)

Me: I just want him to come already

Him: Sekusele kancane (you close to giving birth)

He kept on massaging me..

Me: I love you

Him: I love you too

He kissed me again..

—

NOMVELO

I looked at the watch.. In a couple of hours I'll be leaving, I am very nervous about tomorrow. Purgatory is a different crowd and a very big congregation, I don't think I'm ready for that. I packed my clothes nicely in the suitcase trying not to think much about tomorrow.. My little bundle of joy crawled her way in.. She crawled to the bed pulled the duvet so that she can stand up, luckily my suitcase was on the bed so the duvet didn't fall over..

Me: Hi Nae.. Hi baby

I picked her up and put her on the bed, she reached for my clothes in the suitcase..

Me: No Nae..

I think Nae is going to start walking first before she can talk, she hardly says anything she always wants her pacifier in her mouth...

Nazo walked in..

Me: Look who's home Nae

Nazo: What's happening here?

Me: We packing-

Nae took out my clothes from the suitcase..

Me: Nae stop it..

Nazo picked her up..

Me: Where is Nosi and Mpumi?

Nazo: They watching Tv.. Didn't even look at me

He put Nae down and she crawled around the room..

Nazo sat on the bed..

Him: At what time are you leaving?

Me: At around 18:00.. Are you going to be cope alone with the girls? Should I call the Nanny?

Him: I'll be fine.. Plus I wanna bond with them, it's been a while

Me: It has been a while

He pulled me closer to him and I got in between his legs..

Him: I'm very proud of you do you know that?

Me: I'm proud of myself.. I might even be bigger than you

He chuckled..

Him: Ya keep on dreaming

Me: My last video on YouTube got more views than yours

Him: I don't have a video.. I have videos, you only have what? 3?4? I've been a GOAT

Me: Ohh listen to your Ego talking

Him: It's not my Ego if it's true

He leaned closer and kissed me..

Him: I'm going to miss you very much

Me: I'm going to miss you two

We continued kissing and he was squeezing my waist I had my arms around his neck. He lowered his hands and squeezed my ass..

We hardly get time to ourselves especially with the kids our busy schedules, so whenever we can get free time even if it's 3min we use it to our advantage...

He moved his hands up to my breasts, he squeezed them and my breast milk shot through.. He laid back on the bed as I laughed..

Him: I forgot

Me: It's okay (Laughing)

Him: Eish

Me: It's not that bad come on (Laughing)

When I was about to get ontop of Nazo I heard Naledi falling, she screamed. I quickly made my way to her and picked her up..

Naledi needs to be monitored when she's standing and holding on to something, sometimes her small hands slip and she falls or gets too excited and starts dancing then she falls..

Me: I'm sorry baby

Nazo came to us..

Him: Didn't she hurt herself?

Me: I don't know.. I'm not sure

He got her from me, her cry was so sad that it pierced through my heart..

Nosi and Mpumi made their way in..

Nosi: Haaa mommy you wet!!!

I took her again from Nazo..

Me: Let me try and breast feed her

I sat down on the bed..

Mpumi: Why she crying?

Nazo: She fell

Nosi laughed.. Nazo gave her a serious look,
Mpumi came to us and started patting Naledi
on her head..

Mpumi: Sorry Nae

Naledi calmed down as I breastfed her while
Mpumi still stood next to us for emotional
support..

Nazo: Nosi say sorry to Nae

She folded her arms..

Nosi: No!!!

Nazo: I'm not asking you I'm telling you

Nosi moved back to the a corner with her arms

still folded and a frown on her face..

Nazo: Nosi..

Me: Babe leave her

He moved closer to her and crouched..

Nazo: I said go say sorry to your Sister

Nosi kept quiet..

Nazo: Look at me.. I said go say sorry to Nae

Mpumi: Nosi say sorry

Nosi: Shut up!!

Nazo gave her a spanking of her dear little life..

Nazo: You don't talk like that to others do you understand me?

She nodded while crying..

Nazo: Say sorry to Mpumi

Nosi: Sorry Mpumi (Crying)

Nazo: Say sorry to Nae

Nosi: Sorry Nae

Nazo: Are you going to be disrespectful again?

Nosi: No.. (Crying)

Nazo: Promise?

Nosi: I promise

Nazo: Give Daddy a hug

She hugged him and Nazo picked her up..

He walked over to us..

Nazo: Come Mpumi, let's go out to Spur

He held Mpumi's hand..

Nazo: We'll be back

Me: Okay

Mpumi: Bye Aunty

Me: Hau you coming back nje.. Or are you g for good?

Mpumi: No

Me: Ncoooh you such a sweety

I looked at Nosi..

Me: Bye baby

Nosi: Bye Mommy

They walked out..

Sometimes I worry a bit about Nosi's attitude..

.

To be continued

No edits

Nomvelo

SEASON FINALE

—

144

RETHABILE

I have misjudged Shine, honestly speaking

underneath all that tough act he is a very good person. Which guy would take in his girlfriend's little sister who had an attitude, then take care of her as if like she was your baby sister too? He is a bit strict here and there but he is a very good person. He's putting me through school, one of the best private schools and he is helping Tumi in saving money for me when I go to varsity. I have a good relationship with her Sister Ntokozo, Ntokozo changed the course that she was doing previously she's now doing accounting. I like her a lot she is a very good person and a good influence..

I have a boyfriend we go to the same school and he is also doing grade 12, he is a good rugby player but the only problem is that he is white. Our relationship is good but we don't know how our loved ones are going to feel about it. Tumi is definitely going to okay with it but Shine is unpredictable sometimes, I don't

know how he is going to feel about it

Me: Hey I ordered pizza

Tumi: Big as I am you want to get more big? I'm trying to eat healthy so I can have a natural birth

Me: I doubt that you will put more weight plus it's not like you eat pizza everyday

Her: Thank you but I'll pass

Me: Okay

Her: How is school going?

Me: School is going well so far .. No complaints

Her: I'm glad to hear that

(Silence)

Her: How is your boyfriend?

I looked at her..

Her: most of the time you're on your phone busy smiling like a retard now I doubt your female friends would bring you such a smile

Me: Uhm..

Her: Does he also go to your school?

Me: Yes

Her: You love him?

Me: I do

Her: That's good just don't fall pregnant, practice safe sex and don't let your relationship get in between you and your studies. Matric is a very critical year

Me: I know and thank you

Another moment for silence passed by..

Me: He's white

Her: Sorry?

Me: My boyfriend.. He's white

Her: Wow I.. That's unexpected

Me: I know

Her: Wow Retha..

Me: I know it's bad

Her: It's not bad just unexpected

Me: I hope he's family won't have a problem with me should our Relationship go any further

Me: I hope so too

—

NOMVELO

I was on the phone with Gugu, she won't attend my sermon tomorrow so she called to wish me good luck..

Her: She just feels like Naledi might be getting more attention, having to get used to the fact that she's no longer the only child is what makes her to dislike Naledi

Me: It's been 7 months now, thought that she would've gotten used to her by now

Her: Niso never got used to the fact that my Mom loved Nazo more, the only reason why they were close was because Nazo loved his little Brother more than anything. When he started getting into trouble that's when their relationship was affected because Nazo couldn't stay at home for that long since cops were always looking for him. Nosi takes after her Father though Niso was worse

I laughed..

Me: I know you as a person who do not tolerate nonsense, but when it came to Niso he seemed difficult for you to handle

Her: Niso was very stubborn and disrespectful, the only person who was able to get him in line was Nazo

Me: Nazo is very big on discipline

Her: That he is.. Where are the kids?

Me: They watching Tv

Her: Well I'm about to board soon so I'll call them tomorrow, I'll call Nazo

Me: Okay enjoy your trip

Her: Thank you baby and may all go well with your sermon tomorrow

Me: Thank you

Her: I love you

Me: I love you too

Her: Bye

Me: Bye

I hung up and made my way to check on the kids. Only Naledi and Mpumi were in the Tv room..

Me: Mpumi

She looked at me..

Me: Don't let that one fall

Her: Okay

She moved closer to Naledi..

Me: Where is Nosi?

Her: I don't know

Me: Okay

I went to look for Nosi and I heard Nazo talking with her in the guest room, I stood halfway to eavesdrop before I could disturb.

Nazo: And who is this?

Nosi: That's.. That's my other Daddy!

Nazo: What's his name?

Nosi: Niso

Nazo: Where is he now?

Nosi: He is with the Angels... Is he going to come back?

Nazo: No he is not going to come back

Nosi: Why did he leave?

Nazo: Because the Angels wanted him to come and live with them

Nosi: Are you also going to go and live with the Angels?

Nazo: No I'm not going

Nosi: Are you going to go tomorrow?

Nazo chuckled..

Nazo: No.. Not even tomorrow

Nosi: Not even tomorrow tomorrow tomorrow?

Nazo: Not ever

Nosi: If you go are you going to go with me and Mommy? And Mr Barney the dinasour?

Nazo: What about Naledi?

Nosi: And Naledi

Nazo: You know Naledi is your little sister.. Meaning that you as her big sister you need to love her and always look after her, making sure

that she doesn't fall and hurt herself

Nosi didn't say anything..

Nazo: Just like your other Daddy he was my little Brother and I always took care of him. That's why when he left go live with the Angels he made me your Daddy so that I can love you and protect you always

Nosi: Is he Naledi's other daddy too?

Me: Well something like that

I walked in on them..

Me: Hey guys

Nosi: Mommy my other Daddy is not coming back, the Angels don't want him to come back

Me: I know Baby

Nazo put her down..

Nazo: Go play with Naledi and Mpumi, make sure that Naledi doesn't fall

Her: Okay

She ran out..

Me: it's heartbreaking that she never met Niso, she's only going to know him from the Pictures. I don't know why Connie never contacted Niso and told him, he deserved to know

Nazo: Ya I know.. If Nosi was introduced to us earlier maybe that was going to be reason enough for Niso to change his ways

Me: Ya maybe

Nazo: At what time are you leaving?

Me: 19:00

Nazo: I still think that you should've left earlier than that, I don't want you driving alone at night

Me: I'll be fine

He looked at me..

Me: I'll call you every now and then

Him: That's better.. Don't take shortcuts, they dangerous

Me: Yes sir

Him: I'm serious MaButhelezi

Me: I'll be fine.. I promise, I should be asking you if you will be able to cope with the girls

Him: I will cope plus it's been a while since I last spent time with them

I went closer to him and wrapped my arms around his neck..

Me: Well I hope you do have fun babysitting tomorrow

Him: It might just be fun

His hands moved down to my butt and he grabbed my ass while he kissed me, we always have stolen intimate moments when the kids are sleeping or being kept busy by cartoons. Even at night it's a bit of a difficult situation

especially when Naledi slept in the afternoon, it becomes challenging for her to sleep at night. So we have to stay up till late, not forgetting our busy schedules that clash a lot.. We moved back while still kissing to close the door, and then he pinned me against the closed door..

Him: Are you still on that injection?

Me: Up until we decide to have another baby

Him: That's good

He kissed me again and I snuck my hand inside his trackpants, he was getting hard already. I started massaging him while he gently bit my neck, I could also feel his warm breath as he started breathing heavy. There more I kept on massaging him there more he became vulnerable, he was glued to me. He pressed his lips hard against mine and then after he picked me up and he sat on the bed, with me sitting ontop of him. I took off my tshirt and he started

leaving wet kisses all over. He got me off him and placed me on the bed, I took off my leggings while he also undressed. I opened my legs more wider and he came ontop, he rubbed himself against me while he kissed me in between my moaning. He then moved down and ran his tongue in circles around my belly button, he then moved down and came in contact with my already throbbing bean. He played around with his tongue there while he inserted his finger deep inside, it only started being uncomfortable when he inserted another finger but as he continued pleased kicked in. I enjoy his tounge playing around my bean, the warm and the wetness makes it more and more nice. I was in other state, I really didn't know what to do with myself. When I tried to close my thighs his strong arms would open wider again..

Me: Ooooooooooh Nazo

My hand was running at the back of his head, I

was at the point of no return. An orgasm was building up and my body was responding to that by almost curling up, he moved back up and kissed me and then he slowly entered me. Staring deep in my eyes while pinning my hands against the bed he went for it, he really went for it..

–

DAWN

Since I've learned about the possibility of Angie becoming an Exorcist in the near future I have decided to train her while she is still young so that it can be easier for her to tap into it when she is older. I had a hologram of a demon, or I created one rather I want to see how she would respond to it. I put it in the middle of the room and put her close to it, she stood there looking at it. The hologram of the demon looked so real that it wasn't still but there was motion from it, I made it look like it was alive.. I looked at Angie

as she moved closer, when she was very close the demon hissed like a snake and she started crying and ran to me. I picked her up..

Me: It's okay baby

Sway: What are you doing?

She walked in..

Her: Is that a hologram?

Me: Yes

She took her from me..

Her: Practicing an Exorcism?

Me: Yes but not for me

Her: Huh?

Me: It's..

I cleared my throat..

Me: For Angie

Her: What do you mean for Angie?

Me: Sweetheart there's something that I have to talk to you about

Her: What is it?

Me: Angie.. She.. Angie is an Exorcist

Her: She's a what?

Me: She will have to relieve me in future

Her: Dawn I don't understand.. You telling that my Daughter is..

She looked at Angie..

Sway: But how?

Me: I'm not an Exorcist by training, I'm an Exorcist by birth. I was born an Exorcist and I've only learned about my gift at a later stage.

When I was young I could see things that I didn't understand, my parents since they weren't much believers in such thought that I had a mental sickness of some sort. I was put on medication, therapy, I was subjected to a lot of

unnecessary things. I don't want Angie to go through that too, I don't want her being scared when she sees a demon or senses an evil spirit. I want her to know and understand who she is

Sway: I...

She went and sat down then looked at Angie..

Her: My Daughter is.. I.. I don't know what to say

I moved to them and sat next to her..

Me: I know

Her: It's scary Dawn

I put my arm around her and kissed her on her forehead..

Me: I know it is.. It was also scary for me when I realized that she has the gift of exorcizing

–

NOMVELO

Nazo came deep inside of me, this time around

we went longer without being disturbed. He remained ontop of me while we caught our breaths. I couldn't feel my legs, opening them that wide made them numb...

Him: if it was up to me we would do this all night until one of us passes out

Me: That's a great idea but unfortunately I have to bath and go

I kissed him..

Him: Come on

Me: It's already getting late

His phone rang..

Me: Plus you have a call

We kissed again and then he got off me, he searched for his phone until he got it. He looked at the screen..

Him: It's Shine.. He probably wants to talk to Mpumi

He put on his briefs and his jeans then he walked out, I laid there for a couple of seconds and then I got up. Didn't even realize his sperms had come out, until I saw them on my thighs. I looked around and there was no towel..

Nosi: Mommy!!!

I sat down and put the pillow on my thighs, she walked in with Naledi. She wasn't even holding her properly..

Nosi: She is crying for you

She put her down as she caught her breath..

Nosi: Mommy why are you naked?

Me: I was bathing

Her: Why are your clothes on the floor?

Me: I told you that I was bathing

Her: Your hair is untidy Mommy you didn't comb it

Me: Bring Naledi to and stop asking a lot of questions

She got Naledi and brought her to me..

Me: Go to Mpumi Daddy is going to run you guys a bath

Her: Okay

Me: You know that Mommy is right?

She nodded..

Me: You going to behave right?

I nodded..

Me: Good girl

She ran out.. Nosi is way too smart for a 5 year old, and she asks a lot of questions too..

.

To be continued

Nomvelo

FINALE

–

SNAZO

The next day for me was very difficult. At least Mpumi and Nosi woke up and brushed their teeth, then they asked me to make them cereal. After that they were glued to the Tv as always. Naledi on the other hand she hasn't been her usual herself, she was crying most of the time and just didn't wanna do things that usually does when Nomvelo is around. She was too clingy, even when she was on my arms she would still cry. She woke up exactly at 6am and at around 9am she fell asleep again, after I had fed her and made sure to change her nappy. When she was sleeping I prepared a bath for Mpumi and Nosi so that they don't bother me as the day goes by with bathing, after bathing they went back to watching Tv.. As they were entertained by their Disney Channel I thought

that I could catch up on some work, but then Naledi started crying again. I seriously don't know how my wife does it because the Nanny comes part time to babysit, she only babysit when Nomvelo is not around...

Our Nanny is actually our helper, we wanted to hire both a nanny and a helper but she availed herself for both positions. So the money that would've went to the nanny goes to her.. I would call her to come but I don't wanna disturb her, we have given her a two weeks paid leave. She really needed to rest because she does soo much around here.. I walked out of the living room and went to get Naledi from the bedroom..

Me: You okay baby I got you..

I really don't know why she was acting like this, I mean I did everything on the list. I fed her, I change her nappy constantly and I give her the bottle though she refuses it..

We walked out of the bedroom to go and check how Nosi and Mpumi were doing, Those two rascals weren't watching Tv. I looked for them until I spotted them in the kitchen, they were up to no good as always. Nosi had claimed a chair, she was getting M&M sweets from the pantry and giving them to Mpumi who was stacking them in that small basket that Nosi used when she was my Mother's flower girl. I looked at them stealing the sweets and they were only made aware of my presence when Naledi started crying. They were surprised to see me..

Me: What is going on here?

Mpumi: Nothing

Me: Really?

I looked at Nosi.. She remained quiet...

Me: Get down from the chair please

She got down with Mpumi's help..

I looked at Mpumi..

Me: May I have the basket please Mam'

She handed it to me..

Me: Thank you

I looked at them..

Me: Now you girls just proved to me that you not meant to be trusted.. I asked you nicely to look after the baby but you didn't.. There won't be Tv for a few hours, I want you both to sit in the TV room and stare at the blank screen of the Tv until you guys realize that what you did was wrong.. Do we understand each other?

They nodded..

Me: Thank you.. Now let's go

I followed them..

Nosi: We not going to watch Mommy on tv?

Me: Not anymore.. You guys lost that privilege

when you decided to steal

I put Naledi down next to them but she started crying again, she's done been crying that she had hiccups now.. I really didn't know what to do..

Me: Nosi go get Daddy's phone in the living room

Nosi rushed to get my phone and I put Naledi on her electronic chair, you just plug it and it rocks her back and forth...

Me: Mpumi go get her pacifier in the bedroom

Mpumi: Okay

Nosi came back..

Nosi: Here is your phone Daddy

Me: Thank you

I took it and went through my contacts. Can't call my Mom she's out the country, Sway and Bonolo are already at Purgatory plus Bonolo is

the MC so they won't pick up. I wouldn't dare call my wife, I don't want her thinking that I can't babysit.. I ran through my contacts again until I stumbled on Nomsa's number I called her. I waited for her to pick up while I looked at Nosi trying to calm Naledi down..

Nosi: Shhhh Nae.. Do you want Mommy?

Mpumi came back with Naledi's pacifier and went to put it in Naledi's mouth..

Nomsa finally picked up..

Her: Hello Nazo

Me: Hey hope I didn't catch you at a bad time

Her: Not really is everything okay?

Me: Not really

Her: Is that Naledi crying?

Me: Something like that.. She doesn't want to stop crying

Her: Did you give her-

Me: I did everything.. Still

Her: Nomvelo is still breastfeeding right?

Me: Yes she is

Her: Ya Naledi is going to give you a problem, plus she spends more time with Velo than she does with you

Me: I know but what do I do?

Her: Shuuu this is difficult.. Try to rock her sleep and try to give her, her bottle until she sucks it

Me: Okay I'll do that.. Thank you

Her: Good luck

I lowered my phone and looked at them..

Me: Nosi go get her bottle

Nosi ran out to get Nosi her bottle, this is going to be a long day..

—

SHINE

The best thing that I ever did for my child was to eliminate that useless Mother of hers. Sbosh was toxic, Mpumi wouldn't have had a good upbringing if Sbosh was still around, though I won full custody she was still going to be a thorn in our lives because she wouldn't get money for maintenance anymore. What I hated the most was the fact that she had different niggas around my child, what if something happened? What if they sexually violated my baby? Not to mention the heavy consumption of alcohol. Those are some of the main reasons why I decided to get rid of her. Tumi was the best thing that has ever happened to Mpumi, she's a good stepmother and a bloody good girlfriend. That's why I have decided that after the birth of our Son we should get married, but only when our Son has turned one of two..

—

NOMVELO

only 3min to go before I climb the stage, it was so full that I started to get nervous. I have never been in front of such a large crowd, but God wants me to share my story here and I know that everything is going to go well. I just need to speak from the heart. I was a bit unsettled, I could sense that Naledi was missing me and crying for me. I know my baby, she's always like this when I'm not around. We always together when I'm around and I was also missing her. Last night I even hardly slept. I felt like going out and calling Nazo but I didn't want him to think that I didn't trust him..

–

TUMI

I was really missing Mpumi, Shine is going to fetch her tomorrow. Today we were having a mini braai, we have invited Ntokozo and

Mamezala. As always they were right on time, Mamezala wanted to handle the cooking since I struggle a bit to do things. Ntokozo and Retha were going to help her. I am happy with where my life is right now, I don't wanna lie I am truly blessed. I wish my Mother was still here to see my life and the good I've done, but I know that wherever she is... She is looking down on me..

.

NOMVELO

it was a bit quiet, everyone was looking at me and waiting for me to say something. When I climbed the stage, they gave me a round of applause and they made a joyful noise. They here to hear me speak, so I got this.. I took a deep breath and exhaled, I have already greeted..

Me: If I didn't go through what I went through, then it would be useless for me to stand here

before you and talk like this. I had to go through the most cruel pain known to human beings so that when I stand here and talk about pain you will understand. I had to forgive someone who hurt me so bad so that when I talk to you about forgiveness, I'll know what I'm talking about. My pain is no longer a heavy burden because now I understand, I understand why I went through everything that I went through.

I felt tears nearing..

Me: People usually say "You have told your story so many times and it still makes you cry"
Yes it does because I always feel like I'm telling it for the first time

I lowered the mic as I tried to hold back the tears..

Me: Before I even touch on my life and everything I've been through, I want you to know that whatever you going through.. You going to

come out of it, alive. You will get through it! I don't care what anybody says but know that you will get through it. Take heart over the fact that God knows, that situation you can't seem overcome he knows it.. The tears you cry every night alone when everyone is sleeping, when you act like everything is okay trying to keep up appearances and smiling everyday but deep inside you breaking. He knows! God knows!!

I took off my heels and took the mic from it's stand, I started moving around..

Me: I feel better when I'm free.. Within a few seconds I'll be jumping around and screaming don't fret that's just me

A few people laughed...

Me: I know that most of us always say "Why me" Why am I going through this? Why am I going through that? Dear if not you then who?? Aren't you here now? Aren't you still breathing?

That proves you stronger than what you going through!!! Situations come and go but you still here, you not shaken and you still going to be here!!!!!!

They started clapping hands and a few of them stood up, I knew that I was on the right path. Once upon a time I had plans of my own, but what I didn't know is that God already had his own plans with my life. That spoiled rich girl who was doing Fashion design, she is now a Mother, a Wife, a motivational speaker, best selling author, and a preacher's wife. This is who I am, and this is what I destined for...

—

NAZO

Naledi cried up until she gave up and then fell asleep, she gave us time to watch Nomvelo. She was live on the Purgatory channel, while she was busy being her crazy self all jumping

around and everything I checked comments on Twitter and she was trending. I was really proud of her, just to think she was a mess when I first started dating her, I know God doesn't make mistakes but I thought he made a mistake with Nomvelo. Until now, now I understand he didn't make a mistake.. That is my wife and the Mother of my kids, I am so proud of her..

Nosi clapped her hands in excitement..

Nosi: That's my Mommy!!! Mpumi look that's my Mommy!

I decided to let them watch with me even though they still being punished, I didn't want them to irritate me..

I heard someone ringing the bell, that was weird. The person didn't press the intercom.

I got up from the couch and went to open, it was some lady standing at my door step. I have never seen her before.. She didn't look good,

she looked pale and a bit sick..

Me: May I help you? And how did you get in without pressing the intercom?

Her: Really Nazo?

Me: Pardon?

Her: May I come in?

Me: Who are you? And how do you know me?

She wasn't evil... I couldn't sense any evil around her..

Her: Excuse me

She pushed me out of the way and walked in

Me: Who are you?

Her: It's Me Nazo.. It's Helena

Me: What??

My jaw dropped.. I closed the door..

Me: Helena?

Her: Hi

She held on to the kitchen counter, preventing herself from falling..

Me: Wha?? How??

Her: She was dead.. I used her body as a vessel

Me: You possessed a dead person?

Her: I didn't possess her.. Well not in so many ways, she was dead already when I entered her body. Rest assured she's not from around here

Me: Aren't you supposed to be in Purgatory?

Her: I escaped

Me: You escaped? You escaped Purgatory?

Her: Let's talk about you forgetting me..

Thought we were a team, Partner!

Me: Dammit Helena! Ramiel could be anywhere right now

Her: I k.. I.. I..

She collapsed and I rushed to her..

Me: Helena..

I gently pulled her hair back that was crowding her face..

Me: Hey wake up.. Wake up

She slowly opened her eyes..

Me: You alright.. I'm here

Her: Think the body is too.. I think the body is too weak to contain me.. I..

Me: Its okay.. You don't have to say anything

She smiled and then closed her eyes again...

I looked at her..

Me: I knew that you were crazy.. I never knew you were this crazy..

Her: Naz-

Me: Shhhh I got you

She held on to me for dear life..

Her: Don't let them.. Don't let heaven get to me

I held her tight...

Me: It's okay.. We going to think of something..

You going to be okay

In my life of being a preacher and healer, this is the most hardest thing that I had to deal with..

I AM NAZO BUTHELEZI, AND THIS.. THIS IS ANOTHER STORM ON OUR PEACEFUL LIVES. I HOPE WE SHALL GET THROUGH THIS TOO

*****THE END*****